



Arifureta After II The Obstinate Princess Lily

AN: The title is different from my advance notice?

Yes, when I notice I had written too much and I couldn't reach until part time work leader Lily in one chapter.

Part 1

tap tap tap tap- The sound of typing keyboard resounded. The force of that typing was fierce. It was as though it represented they typing person's fury, or perhaps their desperation. That sound ruined the chic atmosphere of the office that was consolidated with wooden furniture.

□Uu, there is work today too. Tomorrow will be work too. The day after tomorrow too, and the day after that too and the day next after that will be work too-! Even though, I'm not a princess anymoreee!□

The sound of *tap tap tap-* finally became a *da-da-da-da-da-da-* sound that resembled a shooting machine gun. Right now the fingertips striking the keyboard were leaving behind afterimage.....such thing didn't happen, but the force of the fingertips was to the degree that gave such illusion.

The one who was skillfully using the modern earth device as a matter of unpleasant necessity with teary eyes for some reason was the beautiful girl who once was the princess of Hairihi Kingdom at another world Tortus——Liliana S. B. Hairihi, that person.

Liliana was fourteen years old when the other world summoning was carried out with a face that still had childishness remaining in it at that time. But now she was about to reach twenty years old. The six years and also the rich experience she went through during that time had polished her beautiful face even further.

Her hair that was like flowing gold threads, her eyes that were overflowing with gentleness and intelligence, her rose-colored cheeks, her gracefully moist lips, and then her elegance and personality that were oozing out even without her particularly doing anything, all those factors were enough to captivate anyone regardless of gender.

In fact, Liliana who accepted the invitation of her beloved and migrated to this earth had been receiving immense fame——no, rather than fame it was more accurate to call it worship from a lot of people.

It showed from this.

knock knock, knocking sound resounded a bit loudly, and when Liliana responded, a woman entered the room.

□Excuse me, your holiness. About the additional material for the case that will be discussed at the afternoon.....□

□I had finished it-! Yes, I finished it already! After all I was dealing with that since six o'clock in the morning you see!□

The woman who was wearing a business suit looking perfectly like a career woman was handed over the script of document by Liliana in a snap.

The woman who was Liliana's secretary——Sandra Winchester slightly opened wide her intelligent eyes and she accepted the document while replying□As expected from your holiness□with a voice that was crammed with admiration.

Now then, about this designation that Sandra called Liliana with——"your holiness".

Yes, it wasn't "your highness", but "your holiness".

They were at earth, where there was only limited number of people who could introduce themselves as royalty, so naturally Liliana had abandoned her title as princess in this world, but the title “holy woman” then clung to her as though in replacement.

This was exactly the reason, why Liliana was teary-eyed since six in the morning while she exhibited her typing skill that was like a storm while discharging grumbles of complain.

□Your holiness. About the enquiry from several countries that will question regarding the standing of “Hairihi Faith” at the conference today.....□

□It’s not “Hairihi Faith”, it’s “Hairihi Volunteer Association”!cough-. Anyway, give them the answer as indicated in the document. This is the draft. Please send it to the media correspondence department. I’ll entrust them to proofread it to a certain degree, but please caution them earnestly that they are not to use any words that will endear to any faction.□

□Acknowledged. After all this will affect the hundreds of thousands of the believer from here on. I will enforce your holiness’s will thoroughly. Also, the madam chief of Britain’s state security department has called so about that□

□It’s not “believer”, but “association member”. Please delegate the whole thing with Magdanese-san to Kousuke-san. Also, I think that Vatican will also come with the attempt to make contact, but delegate that to Kousuke-san too. He has a relationship that knows each other with the leaders of both organizations, so delegate it wholly to him even if he comes crying or complaining. If he try to escape, please tell him that I’ll tattle to demon king-sama then.□

□Yes. Aa, also, about secretary general that will be our conference partner, it seems that he already arrived.□

□Uguh. He, he arrives really quickly. I guess that shows just how much he is holding expectation and suspicion. If the conference this time recognize our “association” formally as an “international volunteer group”.....we will be able to clear the strange misunderstandings, and I too will be able to throw all the work wholesale to someone e——cough, to reach out my helping hand to a lot more people. No matter what, we have to sweep away the perception to our association that see us as a suspicious “newly rising religion”.....□

□That’s right. By using that kind of official stance to make use of the UN, we will permeate into every religion, and someday the teaching of your holiness’s sublimity will spread to the whole wor——□

□It won’t spread-. I’m not someone like a certain scheming demon king somewhere!Our association is purely a volunteer organization until the end, it’s not a religious organization I told you-. Or rather, recently I tended to ignore it, but don’t call me “your holiness”, but “chairman”!□

□Yes, chairman-sama(your holiness).□

□Hey you. Just now, you are attaching brackets there right! It’s plain to see you know! Ah, wait, what’s with that expression that seems to say□It’s fine, I understand everything clearly□! You completely don’t understand anything!□

While Liliana’s voice that was mixed with straight-man retort was reverberating, Sandra was directing a gaze that was filled plenty with affection and respect toward the holy

woman who was also modest today, and then she reverently bowed before taking her leave.

Inside the office that was filled with silence once more, the *tic tac* sound of the watch was echoing excessively loudly.

Liliana dropped her waist powerlessly on the chair and hung her head down while holding it with both hands.

And then, she muttered briefly right from her heart.

□How, did it turn out like this.....□

Now then, Liliana was supposed to be a normal girl without any title whatsoever in earth, but in less than two years her believer swelled up to hundreds of thousands and she got worshipped as the founder of a new religion—a “holy woman, the government of every country and other religions were unreasonably cautious toward her, she had overcome brutal events like scheme behind the scene and assassination, and now she was preparing for a conference with the top brass of the United Nations in order to turn her association into a publicly recognized volunteer organization where after that a press conference that would be broadcasted to the whole world would be opened. In the end, just what kind of sequence of events that made her ended up falling into such situation.....

Liliana put her hand on her stomach that was making cute sound□kuu~□in protest of her failure to eat breakfast while her gaze was looking at the faraway distance outside the window. And then she began to reminisce of the happening in these two years and few months.

Part 2

Inside the office where there was silence and bright sunlight shining in, there was only the sound of moving pen *scratch scratch* and the sound of the clock that sounded like a chirping bird *chirp-chirp-chirp-chirp-* resounding.

It was a really calm place that was optimum for doing paperwork.

But, the owner of that room was in a state that couldn't be said as calm at all. The hand moving the pen didn't stop, but it was only her gaze that kept glancing briefly at the clock many times over, she then looked at the mountain of paperwork and sighed, then her shoulders dropped after measuring the height of the paperwork.....she then started reducing the mountain of paperwork diligently, got fidgety, and got dejected.....

□Liliana-sama.....I understand your feeling, but no matter how many times you checked the clock, the time won't progress faster you know?□

□-, I, I'm not, worrying about anything you know?□

□No, I'm not fooled at all. Because you are already fidgety like that.□

Liliana moaned□Uh□having that pointed by her exclusive maid.

□Today is the day your beloved husband can cross over here isn't it? Starting from that "Kouki-kun is abducted too many times- Case", demon king-sama seemed to be busy with various things and got dragged into turmoil, so it has been five months since he can properly take time to meet you. That's why, isn't it fine even if Liliana-sama doesn't force yourself to do your duty just for today?□

□I cannot do that. If I shirk off my duty by using that person as excuse, then there will be no meaning to my resolve that decided to be left here in this world.□

The maid suggested so, however, Liliana rejected it while smiling wryly.

A month after the legendary decisive battle. Even though at that time Liliana was worked to death with the revival of her motherland, but she still fiercely appealed at Hajime firmly. Perhaps that also worked in her favor, that after many twists and turns (especially with the first wife), she managed to be accepted by Hajime along with Aiko who was also fiercely appealing similarly like her, and she spent a brief time of happiness, but.....

Liliana was a princess.

Furthermore his majesty the king of the country was absent, and her younger brother that would be the next king, Randell was still immature. Although Liliana's mother Luluaria was working hard, as expected there was a limit in the middle of the situation where the kingdom's capital was annihilated. The postwar processing that was done by Liliana who had gathered much sympathy from her great effort as the commander-in-chief at the decisive battle became something indispensable for the kingdom.

Therefore, although Liliana was conflicted, she made the decision to not abandon her position. It was unknown whether Hajime and others who would return to their home would be able to open the gate to Tortus once more. And so, there was even the possibility that it would become a parting for their whole life.

Even so, Liliana couldn't abandon her motherland.

Liliana told Hajime that she would stay behind with the resolve for everything. She declared that resolve of hers, however, Hajime smiled happily instead. Liliana remembered that smile clearly. Of course, that smile wasn't because Hajime was happy that he could part with Liliana. If that was actually the reason, then Liliana might throw herself off the tower regardless of her resolve or anything.....

Anyway, that determination became one of the great reasons, and there was no doubt that she had accomplished joining the wives group. The night before the return to earth, it went without saying how the resolved Liliana was blazing more than usual.

□.....Princess. Please come back to reality. And then, please wipe up your drool. Your face has turned into something that must not be shown toward other people.□

□Hah!?□

Liliana had gone completely into a trip from recalling the passionate night she spent with Hajime. The exasperated voice of her exclusive maid caused her mind to return to reality with 'hah'. And then, she took out her handkerchief and thoroughly wiped the saliva trickling from the corner of her lips.

□Princess and Hajime-sama's relation is really harmonious isn't it? The voices of envy among the maids also still hasn't stop. Similarly I also feel really envious.□

□It, it's not that great.....□

The words of her exclusive maid caused Liliana's cheeks to go red and she began to deal with the paperwork in high-speed to hide her embarrassment. For her to hide her embarrassment with high-speed paperwork processing, perhaps it was just as expected from the talented princess of the kingdom.

□.....Princess. At the "gate opening" this time, what will you do?□

□What do you mean?□

The exclusive maid who was gazing smilingly at the embarrassed Liliana then went through a complete change and she asked with a serious expression.

□With the help of the artifacts that Hajime-sama exclusively left behind for the craftsmen, the royal capital is reconstructed in astounding speed. Seventy percent of the whole has been finished in this one year and half. The plan for the new royal capital's formal ceremony of the revival proclamation has also began.□

□.....That's right. Certainly, with the help of everyone from the empire and the beastmen, the truly new royal capital is in the process of being built by also taking in the style of many nations. The functional beauty of the empire capital, the nature beauty of Fea Belgen, and then the traditional beauty of Hairihi Kingdom.....it's a wonderful city that harmonize all of those.□

□Yes.□

□It will become a symbolic city that is worthy for the new era that has freed itself from the rule of the mad god. The ceremony has to be a grand celebration that include the fresh start toward the new era.□

Liliana's gaze was directed from the window to the outside. Ahead of her gaze there was a beautiful townscape taking shape. If she sharpened her ear, she would be able to faintly hear the hustle and bustle of the reconstruction and the work activity.

Liliana's cheeks loosened and her eyes squinted fondly at that. She felt like it was worth it for her to work so hard there was barely any time to sleep for her.

□Yes. This matter should be almost fixed already with the agreement of the empire and the beastman clan too. And above all else, as long as Liliana-sama's spouse is that "Goddess's Sword".....no, the "Godslaying Demon King", there won't be any problem that can occur that easily.□

□.....What is it that you want to say?□

Liliana returned her gaze from the window toward her exclusive maid. A suspicion dwelled inside her eyes. The exclusive maid told her master that she respected with a voice that was filled with gentleness and sympathy.

□Isn't it enough already?□

□Enough.....□

□Yes. His highness Randell-sama has grown remarkably, he also has excellent retainers with him. The reconstruction of the capital and the relationship with other countries, they

have reached a point where we can take a breather. It's my humble opinion that even without Liliana-sama leading in the front, the kingdom is already able to keep advancing forward even then. Then, Liliana-sama, don't you think that it's better for Liliana-sama to start chasing after your own happiness?□

□.....□

'Is that really the case?' Liliana questioned herself while staring once more at the new capital outside the window.

Even so, certainly it was the fact that recently the work where it absolutely needed Liliana to be handled had decreased remarkably. And then, at times where she could relax, her thought would run toward her beloved every time. She would think of him especially vividly at night when she was all alone by herself, constricting Liliana's heart painfully.

□Hajime-san.....□

□Fufu, isn't that the answer, Liliana-sama?□

□-□

A voice that wished for her beloved unconsciously leaked out. The exclusive maid that caught that voice laughed merrily with loosened cheeks as though she had seen something delightful or perhaps something charming. Liliana felt somewhat awkward getting seen through like that, she averted her face with her cheeks reddening.

The exclusive maid chuckled even more from seeing Liliana like that. Surely, if in this place there were other servants who were serving under Liliana, every one of them would surely made similar smile from seeing their master's cuteness.

Everyone was holding really deep thought of respect and gratitude to Liliaan.

Liliana was already loved by the servants and also the people due to her personality. And yet she didn't stop just there, when the capital was once attacked, she slipped out of the palace by herself and went to call for help. Such event was well-known due to a certain merchant with a name that was similar with an energy drink.

In addition, it was also known how she tried to offer her body to the empire in order to save the kingdom that was weakened by the attack.

And then, in that legendary decisive battle.

While the people of the capital were sent to evacuate toward the empire, they asked what she would do with unease in their heart. To that, Liliana said with a smile.

—Even though the royal capital will become a battlefield, if I the princess don't fight, then who will fight

She became the commander-in-chief and took the command of hundreds of thousands of warriors in the battle that staked the existence of mankind. That gallant figure was spread far and wide by the surviving soldiers, mercenary, and adventurers.

Her fame had risen up with a momentum that pierced the sky already. Regardless of man or woman, young or old, in spite of race or occupation.

That was why, the exclusive maid could say the words—it's enough already—with conviction. That it was the general consensus of all the people.

Liliana threw her gaze to outside the window once more, at the reconstructed city. She felt the warm gaze of the exclusive maid while wearing an ambiguous expression, unable to be convinced whether it was really fine for her to be liberated from the responsibility as royalty and chased after her own happiness crossing over the world.

But, at that time, *ri—n* a sound that was like a wind chime rang. That was a signal from the room in a corner of the palace that was used for “gate opening”. The sign that the door to another world was opened.

□-. Hajime-san!□

Her gloominess until just now vanished somewhere. Liliana’s expression bloomed brightly in a flash like a child. She said to her exclusive maid□I’m going to welcome him!□before going out of the room with energetic footsteps without even waiting for reply.

The exclusive maid was silently bowing toward the door that was opened vigorously.

Hajime who appeared from the gate was jumped by Liliana with obvious happiness. And then without stopping she pulled Hajime’s hand like a kid and guided him to her own room.

Midway, they passed by the servants of the palace and several nobles, each time they faced Hajime with unconcealed respect while their expression greatly softened seeing Liliana who kept tugging on Hajime’s hand in her grasp as though to say□Hurry-, hurryyy□.

Every time Liliana passed by someone she would greet them politely, but it seemed she didn't notice their warm expression. Surely after some time passed and she calmed down, she would become like a ripe apple then.

Hajime was wearing a troubled smile seeing such Liliana while he was getting dragged cutely. At Liliana's room, he received black tea that was personally brewed by her.

□Nevertheless, today Hajime-san comes alone then. I thought that Yue-san and others would surely come too though.□

Liliana was placing a tea snack that looked like cookie on the table while asking Hajime with her head tilted. Hajime made a smile that vaguely looked mischievous and asked back.

□What? You don't like being alone with me?□

□Suc, such thing.....couldn't possibly be true.□

Liliana cheeks faintly reddened and she dropped her waist on the chair with a thump. Hajime's gaze that was oozing a bit of S aura caused her gaze to wander and her body to fidget around without any composure. And then, Liliana became unable to endure Hajime's atmosphere that seemed to enjoy her state and she changed the topic.

□And, what about Hajime-san? It seemed that you were really busy from "Kouki-kun is abducted too many times-Case" though.....□

□.....That naming, it really caught on?□

□Yes, well. After all, after that other world summoning, Kouki-san was further summoned again and dragged Hajime-san

then right? I heard the story that at the third summoning Kouki-san got dragged in with teary eyes while also dragging in Hajime-san. That story is already spread around here. Ryuutaro-san and others were telling that story looking really amused.□

Hajime half-smiled at Liliana's words.

Just as Liliana said, Kouki who went into an atonement journey in this Tortus, but in the middle of his journey when he stopped by in the palace, he got summoned into another world somewhere.

There, Kouki faced his own way of living and through many twists and turns he saved the world but.....

At that time, when Hajime who was begged by Kouki's childhood friends and his wife rushed to where Kouki was for assistance, just when the series of event were resolved and they were going 'no, let's go home', another summoning assaulted Kouki as though to say□Next one, please take care of ii~t□.

Kouki was on the verge of tears while yelling□I don't want anymoreeeee~~~□and he wasted no time to cling tightly at Hajime who was nearby him. Demon king-sama got flustered□Wai-, you-□but it was already too late.

While the childhood friends and wives were staring in a daze, both of them intimately went through another world summoning for the third time.

To tell the truth, after various things were happening at that world, they got summoned for the fourth time. Kouki was a softhearted person, but as expected it seemed that he snapped toward the goddess that requested□I want you to save the world□, and in front of the watching Hajime he,

□You stupid idiot-. Why are you giving up like this! Do your best-, do your best! You are a goddess right! If it's you then you can do it-. You can do it by yourself! You surely can! Believe in me who believe in you! If you give up, then it's the end for the world y'know!□

Like that, entrusting himself to the momentum Kouki insisted□Please manage it somehow by yourself□. In a sense he had done something astounding. It was a heartfelt insistence to the degree it made Hajime to be unconsciously in admiration.

As the result, currently there were her majesty the queen of the second world and the materialized goddess of the fourth world at both sides of Kouki, staring at each other with sparks scattering between them.

Back to the story

Hajime recounted the experience with a bit of faraway look. He then noticed Liliana who was staring at him in wonder and he coughed before returning to the topic.

□Well, it has calmed down somehow. Right now I'm going to college while trying to expand my business. Well, even though I said that, in earth there are also dangerous bunches and guys with dozens of loose screw in their head as it is, so I'm busy there in its own way.□

□Is that so. Come to think of it, I heard that Kousuke-san is running around to resolve that kind of case. He introduced several women who will live in this side.□

□.....Those Hauria bunches are sprinting to even weirder direction from obtaining earth's knowledge. It's tiring already thinking about those guys.□

The 'hyahha' life of the head-reaping rabbits that exhausted even the demon king. Just where in the world they were going toward? In a sense it was worthy of admiration how a certain girl in lab coat and side-tail hairstyle was still working hard. And then, as for a certain agent who recently became obsessed with wearing rabbit ear hairband and in a mistake forgot to take it off and casually went into her workplace, surely she was completely beyond hope.

Hajime was about to get a faraway look once more. In order to make him return to reality, Liliana opened her mouth with slight panic.

□Even so a college student is it.....how should I say it, I have some doubt if there will be anything that Hajime-san and others can learn at college after this far.□

□Well, I cannot deny that. But, you know, the college students all over the world are relatively noncommittal don't you think? We too, it's not like we took the examination with serious thinking of wanting to learn something. It will be a long life after all. We just thought that it won't be that bad to have experience of being a college student.□

□I, is that how it is? I heard that what is called college at the world over there is the highest institute of education, so I thought that it would be a gathering of those who are serious with their study.□

□Of course, there are also the serious bunches there, and that's also the correct way of going through college. It will be a different story if I'm using my parent's money, but I'm paying everything, the tuition and also the living expenses by my money that I earned myself. Whether anyone will do it seriously or loosely, it depends on each person. What I'm

saying is, just what is bad about going there in order to enjoy the student life.□

Hajime said that with a shrug. His feeling of wanting to experience university was true, and it was also a fact that he was learning the major of archeology and folkloristics because he was interested with them.

Although, his biggest reason was something that couldn't be helped that was "wanting to see the female college student Yue". The experience hearing lecture while sitting side by side with Yue in appearance of around twenty years old really satisfied Hajime. Of course, he wouldn't say it out loud.

By the way, just like always, his harem situation and the wives' beauty caused a university somewhere to be still in the middle of chaos and mayhem.

□Enjoying school life.....is it.□

Liliana let out a small mutter. It wasn't like there was particularly great emotion filling that mutter, but the small hope that was implicitly included in that mutter couldn't be hidden.

Because she was a princess, Liliana was unrelated with student social status. Something like a springtime of life in the middle of school life like a normal girl was something that she only knew from book. She had a longing for it, and she also dreamed about it.

It was possible that she could experience high school life with Hajime and others if she acted selfishly in the past. If she abandoned the kingdom and her status as princess and shook off everything behind, then perhaps such dream could become reality.

She thought until that far, however, Liliana thought "How stupid" with a self-depreciating smile and shook her head. Abandoning the people to run toward the dream with a man, that kind of woman wasn't herself.

— I am Liliana S. B. Hairihi The only princess of Hairihi Kingdom.

She had longed toward normal girl. But, if she discarded being a princess for that, then the brilliant soul of Liliana would die out. It would be no other than Liliana herself that couldn't forgive her if she abandoned the people and ran away from her obligation. If she did something like that, surely Liliana would continue to scorn herself for her whole life.

Just when she thought about her own personality as "What a difficult personality", a small laugh suddenly reached her ears. When she raised her gaze in puzzlement, there was Hajime with a smile on his lips staring fixedly at Liliana while resting his chin on his hand. His gaze was awfully kind in contrast with the smile on his mouth.

"E, err, what is it?"

For some reason she couldn't look at Hajime's eyes and she turned away slightly while asking. Her heart was beating fast hammering in her chest.

"No, nothing. I'm just thinking, that you are proud like usual."

Liliana tilted her head from not understanding of what Hajime wanted to say. Hajime's smile was turning increasingly kinder seeing that while he spoke the main topic that he came for today.

□Enough about me for now.....what about the kingdom? I more or less let out reconnaissance planes right after I arrived, and have a look at the situation. Based from what I see, it seems that the reconstruction is going along well.□

□That's, right. I also talked about it just now with my maid, but even the plan for the celebration ceremony of the new royal capital completion has began, I also hasn't heard of any serious problem with the empire, the beastmen, and the rebirth holy church. I believe that we will be able to proclaim our revival in less than half a year. Of course, the new capital has the concept of "an open city to other country and race", so there is a huge mound of small problems.□

Even while feeling perplexed with the radical topic change, Liliana answered like that with a wry smile. She also said □Come to think of it, I came here after leaving a mountain of paperwork that I have to go through□with her tongue playfully sticking out.

But, Hajime only narrowed his eyes at that joking gesture of Liliana without particularly laughing back, and he then asked quietly.

□About that, is that a problem that cannot be resolved without Lily here——without princess Liliana S. B. Hairihi here?□

□Eh?□

Liliana lost her words hearing Hajime's question. The content of the talk was similar with her conversation just now with her exclusive maid.

□Is this country unable to progress forward without Princess Liliana? Will it mean that you abandon "the responsibility of

royalty” by leaving now? Is crossing over the world will hurt your pride?□

□Pl, please wait a second. Just, what is this about.....□

Liliana waved around her hands from being unable to understand the surge of questions and asked Hajime to stop.

.....Of course, she actually understood, just what Hajime was saying to her. The fast beating in her heart didn’t show any sign of stopping. Her face was so heated that she was aware of it herself.

But, honestly she also felt perplexed. She had been a princess since she was born. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that it was her identity. Even though she understood that her happiness lied in another place, it wasn’t easy for her to make the decision.

As though seeing through that perplexity of Liliana, Hajime smiled wryly□You are thinking too hard on it□while adding further on his words.

□I’m not asking you to abandon being a princess. This is just a matter of the order of priority. Leave the role of being royalty to other people for a bit, and live for your own sake a bit more——won’t you be like that any time now? That’s what I mean.□

□I, I am.....□

‘Is it really fine?’ Liliana tilted her head again with such doubt.

Hajime’s expression turned half concerned and half exasperated from seeing the princess who was still

conflicted with feeling of reluctance and guilt to leave her country *for her own sake*.

And then, he scratched his head a bit roughly as though he had finally grown impatient.

□Good grief.....you really are an obstinate princess.□

□Hajime-san?□

Liliana who understood what was the intention of Hajime giving her that kind of question gazed anxiously at Hajime who was looking like that thinking□By any chance, has he fallen out of love with me?□.

Hajime also returned an exasperated gaze at that gaze of Liliana while replying,

□Stop acting like this already, if you won't act at least a bit selfish.....I'm going to kidnap you, you know?□

□Hee!?□

He said such thing.

Liliana raised a hysteric voice while jerking her body that his chair made bumping sound. Hajime then grinned broadly while making additional blow by saying□A demon king kidnapping a princess.....that's not strange at all right?□.

Naturally, it caused Liliana's face, no, all of her visible skin to be dyed bright red to the degree that it looked like she might explode.

Liliana kept opening and closing her mouth wordlessly. Hajime shrugged to that, and then, thinking that there wouldn't be any progress like this, he suddenly took out a

crystal ball from “Treasure Warehouse II” that looked like the item used in fortune-telling and put it on the table.

□If you are that doubtful whether it’s okay for you to live for your own sake, then let’s just ask directly instead.□

□Wha, what are you planning to do?□

The demon king took out an artifact—that fact caused Liliana to feel a bad premonition blaring in her mind and her cheeks twitching. The princess laid bare her wariness in a complete change while the demon king activated the artifact with a really nice smile.

And then, he took in a deep breath facing toward the crystal ball that was faintly shining and,

□AT~~~~~TENT~~~~~ION-!!□

He yelled really loudly with that kind of voice. Instantly there was exactly the same voice and word

□AT~~~~~TENT~~~~~ION-!!□resounding from outside the window.

Liliana turned her startled face to outside the window, and while her mind was in chaos□E? Eee!?, the demon king-sama who was also in perfect form today raised his voice uncompromisingly toward the people of the new capital projected inside the crystal ball, where they were also similarly looking around at the surrounding with their mind in chaos.

□This is too abrupt but—I’m the demon king!□

□Certainly it’s just too abrupt!□

Liliana acted the straight-man from her heart. From the crystal ball there were also the voices of several people who similarly acted the straight-man, resounding inside the room.

It seemed that this artifact had the function that connected the image and voice. Just now Hajime said that he launched reconnaissance planes to the new capital right after he arrived, so surely this artifact was linked with those countless planes with two-way connection to broadcast the voice.

Hajime smoothly ignored Liliana's retort and sent his voice to the middle of the capital.

□People of the new capital, I'm asking all of you. —Do you still need Princess Liliana?□

□Ha, Hajime-san!?□

The capital people inside the crystal ball were showing a bewildered expression. The amplified voice that was reverberating everywhere caused the people indoor to come outside too and they all looked at each other's face. Hajime told them that he was using an artifact to talk all over the capital and that if they answered from where they were, their voice would reach his ear.

Liliana who guessed what Hajime was trying to do went 'awa awa' in great panic.

□Right now, I'm in the middle of courting Liliana. I told her, just come with me to my world right away. But, the situation is unfavorable. It seem that this princess-sama is worried about you guys, she is really worrying that she cannot bear it. —What do I do now? At this rate I'm going to get dumped like this, even though I'm the demon king.□

□REA~~LLY, JUST WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUTTTTTTT-□

The demon king-sama was venting his anger□Because of you bastards I'm about to get dumped here, asshole□to the people all over the capital. Liliana was getting teary eyes from shame and everything while screaming to such demon king. She stood up so quickly the chair fell down and then she kept hitting repeatedly *poka poka* at Hajime's head to make him stop.

His head was shaking all over *ka-kun ka-kun*, however, the demon king-sama didn't stop.

□Therefore, I'll ask, one more time. Does all of you, does this world, still need Princess Liliana? Are all of you toddling chicks that are so helpless that she cannot take action from worrying about you guys?□

The people looked at each other after hearing that question thrown at them once more.

And then, with a bewildered expression on his face, a stern-looking uncle that seemed to be the foreman of a construction site,

□No, even if I'm asked that.....Liliana-sama, she is still staying in the palace until now?□

He said such thing.

Hearing that voice resounding from the crystal ball, Liliana went□Heh?□with a really strange voice. Even while she was astonished like that, the voices of the people of the new capital who were talking to the people beside them in a mood like gossiping were starting to reach through the crystal ball.

□Oh dear me. I was completely under the impression that her highness has been living happily at the other world since a long time ago already.□

□Eh, how strange. I heard that she already has a child with his majesty the demon king already though.....□

When the wife of an ingredient shop said that, the shop's owner the husband cocked his head in puzzlement and replied like this,

□If I'm not mistaken, the demon king-sama has been living at the world over there with his other wives since a long time ago I'm told. By any chance, our princess-sama, she got left out?□

□Eh, Liliana-sama, she is alone?□

□No, wait. The relationship between the wives should be great. Yet, for Liliana-sama to be still here mean.....by any chance, she didn't get along with her mother-in-law.....□

□Princess, she got bullied?□

In front of the new main gate, when the soldiers of the kingdom were talking to each other, the male and female adventurers nearby were looking to the sky with sympathizing expression.

Liliana's cheeks were starting to twitch uncontrollably. She had never imagined even in her dream, that during the time she was desperately taking care of works day by day, the people that she worked for actually thought that she had eloped since long time ago. Furthermore, her still being in the palace was starting to make strange misunderstandings spreading!

□Wai-, wait everyone~~! I'm not being left out and also not being aloneeee! I even get along well with my mother-in-law Sumire-sama! A, also, something like chi, children.....I don't have them yet. I am just doing my work pro~~perly here!□

Liliana reflexively gave explanation with a loud voice, but that voice was picked perfectly by the artifact that was pointlessly high-spec and it was sent until every corner of the capital.

The pathetic sounding explanation of their beloved princess caused the people to look at each other for the third time, and then they laughed with each other as though they had arranged it beforehand.

There wasn't even a shred of emotion that was making fun in their laughter. Those laughter were overflowing with warmth.

The foreman of construction site whose voice got picked up the very first tensed his dirty face while sending his words.

□In that case, there is only one answer to that question of his majesty the demon king.□

The foreman then glared at his surrounding, there his several dozen subordinates made similar expression. And then, with their voice matched together,

□□□□□We don't need the princess anymore!□□□□□

The wife and husband of the ingredient shop just now, and the surrounding people were,

□□□□□We are fine already!□□□□□

The soldiers, adventurers, mercenaries,

□□□□Please don't treat us like a helpless chick!!□□□□

Liliana's eyes were nailed toward the crystal that kept changing the projected image with the voices of those people getting through.

The people of the capital right now were facing at the palace and they raised their voice.

The people who were in the middle of working stopped moving their hand, the people indoor got outside, regardless of adult or child, they all were saying things like□Just how long princess is going to keep working□or□Her highness worry too much□or□If princess do nothing but work, then his highness demon king will fall out of love you know□that pierced relatively deep into Liliana without batting an eyelid.

But, their expression was uniformly warm, that was why the heart of the people was conveyed toward their beloved princess Liliana with nothing to spare.

Namely,

——Enough with the tedious talk. It's fine already, so just chase your happiness right away

That.

The warm lovely thing overflowing out from Liliana's heart turned into tears that trickled through her cheek. She leaked out a sobbing voice and she formed her words desperately even while her voice stuttered many times.

□E, everyone! Thank, youuu!!□

The formed reply became a ripple that spread through the new capital. Whether those words of gratitude were conveyed or not, the expression of the people that seemed to say "That's our line" gave the answer more eloquently than anything.

Hajime hugged the small shoulder of Liliana who was letting out large drops of grateful tear. That small shoulder had been continuously burdened with the country until now. Hajime circulated his words of conclusion through the artifact.

"You guys, that really helped. Even the obstinate princess finally folded. This is sudden, but I'll take Liliana right away."

"Eh? Eeh? Hajime-san!?"

Liliana turned bewildered feeling her body floated lightly, and then when she noticed that she was being held in princess carry, her face turned red instantly.

Liliana turned small on Hajime's chest from shyness and happiness. Hajime gave her a glance while taking back the crystal, but his movement suddenly stopped from remembering something.

"Aah, that's right. I'll say this in advance to the people of the new capital. Liliana in the end cannot stop being a princess, she is a woman with kindness, sincerity, and love. Therefore, from here on too she might unexpectedly come home here to take a look at your situation. At that time, if you guys show Liliana predicament that make her sad..... know that my 108 harassment will rain down on you all."

"Wait what are you saying there!"

A demon king was someone unreasonable. And this one here was an extreme one.

Liliana retorted with a convulsing face at the demon king's proclamation of disaster and the faces of the new capital's people were also convulsing all at once. And then, the people swore in each of their heart. "Let's live seriously with our all" like that.

It was the day people would live with their all, half threatened.

At that day, the princess who had continued to devote herself to the kingdom and the people was kidnapped with a princess carry by the demon king to another world.

.....By the way, regarding Liliana's personal effects, thanks to her exclusive maid standing by in front of the room of "gate opening" with complete preparation crammed into a large bag, there was no problem at all.

The bag of Liliana that was presented right away was received by Hajime like it was only natural along with a praise "Good work", while the exclusive maid acted humbly saying "It's a great honor" like it was only natural. Needless to say, Liliana yelled "You act more like a servant compared than when with me! Or rather, you two absolutely plotted this behind my back already!" when she saw that exchange.

AN: Next chapter will be uploaded at around seven.

Arifureta After II The Part-Time Leader Lily First Part

AN: I'll submit one more chapter for the commemoration of the resumption.

Part Time Leader Lily Second Part will be at around 8 or 9 o'clock.

□Hafuu~□

That kind of sigh which was free of tension resounded inside the room that gave a sense of cleanliness with its white tone.

Her own sigh that unexpectedly echoed loudly caused Liliana to be taken aback and she frowned with a speechless expression, perhaps because she was letting out that sigh unconsciously.

For some reason or another, she kept leaning her back deeply on the reclining chair she was sitting on, then she kicked on the floor with her bare tips of the toes and tried turning around. The good quality chair lightly rotated and the state of the room was reflected in Liliana's sight in order.

It was a room that was half the size compared to her room that she used until just some time ago in the palace.

Liliana herself thought that this size was just right, but if the nobles and servants in Tortus knew about this, then they might yelled “How can the princess made to live in this kind of small dog house!” with a look like Edvard Munch’s The Scream.

A few months had passed since that day, when “Princess Liliana” went inactive and she arrived on earth. The more she passed the passing months and days, the more her made in earth accessory was increasing bit by bit.

The puppet “Dancing Davis-kun” that she received from Myuu at the moving celebration was emitting its presence excessively. Surely the expression “quivering” suited the puppet more than “dancing”. It was vibrating *jiggle jiggle* like a dangerous person who was going through withdrawal symptoms.

Just from where in the world Myuu obtained this Davis-kun.....

Honestly speaking it was eerie, but when she recalled Myuu’s smiling face when he thought of throwing it away, she was unable to throw it away.

“Fuu~~n”

Liliana was letting out a strange exhalation that lacked in tension while she rotated her chair one more time. She then stepped a bit and rotated in reverse. Whirl whirl. Whirl whirl.

“Nothing, to do.”

It seemed she had spare time.

□How amazing. Liliana is now experiencing by myself that “spare time” I heard from rumor.□

It seemed she really had a spare time. To the degree that she narrated the present condition of herself by herself.

For Liliana who was born as a royalty, what was called “spare time” was the same like a fairytale.

After all she was the sole direct descendant of the royalty until her little brother was born. She began going through education for the gifted since she was old enough to be aware of her surrounding, and even when Randell was born and her possibility to ascend to the throne decreased, but the necessity for her to receive many training in her role as a spare or in order to function as a tie toward the empire didn't decrease at all.

And then, when she was in her youth at fourteen years old, she went through a year of chain of event that was like surging waves, to which the word dense wasn't enough at all to express that experience. And after that she was swamped with work for the sake of the reconstruction.

From the time since she was born until before this, she was in a position that was understandable for her to never experience this thing called “free time” or the like.

That was how Liliana was before, but then she was taken away by Hajime, had her official papers made in forgery, deceived the administrative official, obtained social status peacefully by slapping public safety in the face, and currently she was going to the same college with Hajime and others.

Before this she had been taken to visit earth several times, so she understood that earth was a world that was like a

jack-in-the-box. Even so, the “school life” and “learning experience of another world’s college” that Liliana yearned tickled her curious mind and gave her fresh enjoyment. It was, but.....

Whirl whirl. Whirly whirl. The princess of another world was rotating in twirls using the chair of another world. And then, she came to a stop,

□.....Davis-kun. It’s nice to be you huh. You look busily quivering.□

Finally the princess started talking to a doll. Davis-kun quivered back and forth looking troubled.

But, at that time, the sound of the entrance opening could be heard faintly.

If Liliana had animal ears growing in her head, then right now it would surely snapped up in attention *pikon*. She wore her indoor slipper and exited her room with rhythmical steps *te-te-te—* in order to welcome the person returning home.

She went down to the first floor and encountered Sumire who was holding large quantity of bags for some reason.

□Welcome home, Sumire-okaasama.□(TN: The kanji for okaa-sama(honored mother) here is written with the kanji of mother-in-law)

□My, you are home early today, Lily-chan. I’m home!□

Sumire fixed her hold on the large amount of bags with a rough huff before Liliana went to help her in a hurry. She took several of the baggage and when she glanced inside

them, it seemed their content was a large amount of side dish.

□Say, Sumire-okaasama, this is?□

□You see, this is today's dinner.□

□Dinner?□

□Yes. The dishes that were served in the event had leftovers, and I pilfered them all! They were really delicious. I heard that they called a really famous cook to make the dishes. I thought that I should let my uncute son and his cute wives to try them.□

□Is, is that so. Thank you very much, Sumire-okaasama.□

□Your welcome!□

Liliana's expression crumbled softly seeing her mother-in-law who was all smile.

Frankly speaking, this is Sumire they were talking about so she surely must have forcefully swiped the dishes for "takeout" without even minding the eyes of the surrounding drawing away from her. If not, normally someone would stop anyone from bringing home this much.

It seemed that today there was an event for the live-action film of the manga that was authored by Sumire, so the people there too must be only looking at Sumire who was packing up the food happily while thinking□No way we can anger sensei in this event huuh~□.

Nagumo Family was in prosperity.

Sumire herself was a big name shoujo manga artist, and her husband Shuu had made his company bigger in these few years. And above all, the businesses that Hajime reached out his hand toward here and there were making absurd killing.

From the standpoint of a royalty, it wasn't like Liliana wasn't thinking that they had the allowance, so they could just directly employ that chef to cook directly for them.

But, no matter how much they were earning, no matter how prosperous they were, displaying a dynamism that was not forgetting this kind of "fun" was the shared trait of Nagumo family. It was a tacit precepts of the family.

Liliana became really ticklish seeing Sumire who showed off the dishes—I came with the delicious cooking that I snatched off——!—for the sake of herself who was a daughter-in-law.

They carried the large amount of dishes to the kitchen before Sumire tilted her head—Come to think of it—while speaking out her question.

—You aren't together with Hajime and others?—

—Yes. Hajime-san and others still have lecture, so they are still in the college. The lecture that I was scheduled to have became cancelled.....—

—My, that's nice. Doesn't a sudden lecture cancellation make you happy for no reason?—

—Eh? Eer.....—

It seemed that Sumire's common feeling wasn't transmitted to the serious and diligent princess. After all this princess

was someone that would start talking to a quivering doll when she had too much free time.

□Or rather, even if you don't come home, you can just go to the lecture that Hajime is going to. Even just chattering aimlessly will be fun right?□

□No, Sumire-okaasama. As expected, thinking that it's fine to chatter while receiving lecture is just.....□

□Eeh~. It's fun exactly because you are doing it secretly behind the teacher's back.□

□Sumire-okaasama.....□

Liliana's shoulders dropped in dejection. Her blood-related mother Luluaria was fundamentally a sincere character that was strict and diligent to herself. And so, Liliana couldn't say anything anymore to the irresponsible statement of her mother-in-law whose sense of value was completely different with her real mother.

But mysteriously, the relationship between Sumire and Luluaria was good even with this, that was why it was something mysterious.

They put the dishes for the this evening with a thud at the kitchen. Sumire was moving the many dishes that were her war booty while she threw her gaze to Liliana who was helping her serving the food with similar nimbleness.

□And, how are you recently? Have you get used to this world? At the time when you only just came, you spent all your times studying various things, but recently you aren't like that anymore.□

□Yes. I have grasped the earth's affair in general. The economic and politic, the religion and history, the situation of every nation, culture, fashion.....every book in this world is compiled systematically, and even if there is something I don't understand I can investigate it immediately using internet. It's really convenient.□

□Aa~, yeah, I see.□

□Yes. Especially the more I learned economics and statistics study, the more I feel how deep they are. The density and the fruits of labor that has been accumulated by the predecessor of this world are something that I cannot find in Tortus. Every day I feel like I am shown just how falling behind the study of the world there compared to here.□

□I, I see. How amazing~□

□Yes. Right now over there is still in the middle of reconstruction, even if an advanced system is suddenly introduced, I can see that it will only end up in failure, so it won't be able to happen right away, but someday I believe that the kingdom has to adopt this. Regarding the field of economy, the coordination with Fhuren——□

□St, stop! Sto~~~~~p! That's enough there, Lily-chan!□

□Heh?□

Sumire hurriedly raised her voice to stop Liliana who was spouting a torrent of speech.

Liliana was lifting her face in puzzlement, but even now her hands were moving continuously without pause and served up the packed dishes as though they were palace cooking. Her speed was twice of Sumire's. While her courteousness was triple.

□Geez, Lily-chan, even though you should have leave the position of princess and come into the family, but when you are talking about your mind you are only talking about the kingdom.□

□a.....□

Liliana finally noticed herself what she was talking about after getting stared by Sumire's half-admiring half-exasperated face. Her cheeks reddened.

□When you just arrived here, you felt like 'Everything attract my interest so there is no time for that!', but when you calmed down after grasping the situation to a degree, as expected you become concerned with your homeland aren't you?□

□N, no, such thing.....is not true.□

Seeing Liliana who stuttered, Sumire put her index finger on her chin muttering□Uu~n□in a thinking gesture before she spoke something that was shocking for Liliana.

□Is that so? But, recently Lily-chan is making a face that look like a lost child somehow you know?□

□Eh.....□

Sumire walked toward Liliana who was staring at her in blank amazement with her eyes turned round, and then she stooped down a bit to put their eyes in the same height. And then, after Sumire confirmed that those blue eyes were reflecting herself properly, she asked calmly with a gentle and kind expression.

□Do you want, to return home?□

It was a gentle voice that was filled with concern and sympathy toward Liliana without any blaming tone in it.

For a moment, the questioned Lily showed an expression that didn't understand what the meaning of the question was. But right after that, she unconsciously raised her voice.

□I'm not thinking anything like that!□

□Wawah, wait Lily-chan, calm down.□

□Sumire-okaasama, it's true! I'm not thinking of going home or anything! I'm not feeling any discomfort or dissatisfaction! I love everyone! I'm happy I can come here! It's true!□

□I get it, I get it already!□

Sumire spontaneously hugged Lily tightly.

It seemed that Liliana jumped to the wrong conclusion thinking that Sumire's question had the implicit meaning of □If you are dissatisfied with the life here, perhaps it's better to go home?□

Of course, Sumire didn't mean anything like that. She was only thinking in concern□Perhaps she is slowly getting homesick?□, thinking that anyone would be driven by their feeling for their homeland. She wouldn't say anything like 'go home' even if she got her mouth ripped open.

Because, Sumire's feeling toward Liliana was,

□A princess! The real thing! From another world! Just who would let you go! Fuhehe, everyone in the world! How can this be, this lovely princess-chan, she is my daughter! Thank you very much! Dyufu, dyufufu□

It was fixated like that.

Liliana who knew nothing about that and was tightly embraced on Sumire's chest, guessed that she was misunderstanding and her cheeks reddened once more.

□I'm sorry, Lily-chan. Looks like I'm off the mark.□

□No, it was me who jumped to the wrong conclusion.....
thank you very much for worrying about me.□

□I'm your mother. Isn't it natural for me to be worried about my daughter? If there is something, then don't be reserved at all and consult me okay?□

□Yes-□

Liliana smiled softly at the gentle hand of the mother-in-law that was caressing her head. And then, they began moving the dishes on to the plates once more. Liliana didn't even suspect that inside her heart, Sumire was jumping in joy thinking□No good-, the destructive power of a genuine princess's smile is extraordinary yaa~~!!□

After that, Liliana was enjoying tea with the kind mother-in-law until Hajime and co returned home.

A lively family.

A quiet time with the beloved people.

Liliana was feeling the happiness she hoped for. There wasn't any falsehood in it.

However, for some reason Sumire's words were remaining inside her head and it didn't vanish like a small bone that

got stuck in her throat. It caused her to have a feeling that she couldn't express in words.

That night. Liliana who returned to her room had finished all her preparation to retire to bed, however, she didn't lie on the bed and sat on the swivel chair while being in a daze.

The words "Like a lost child" from the afternoon were replayed many times over inside her head.

When she suddenly dropped her gaze, there was the unmoving Davis-kun there. It was unmoving without even a twitch with an expression that was like it was going to raise an American laugh "HA———, HAHAAHA—" anytime now.

"——O wind"

Liliana spoke a verse of chant. Immediately, a breeze flowed and Davis-kun started to move *shiver shiver, tremble tremble* as though it came to life. It was really comical. As though it was making fun of Liliana who was even now harboring a mist that couldn't clear up.

".....Damn you, Davis-kun."

She tried hurling abuse with a tone that was out of norm for her. Hurling abuse when it moved even though she was the one moving it herself, it seemed that Liliana was considerably "loosening".

But, at that time a knocking sound suddenly rang. Liliana twitched, and in shock she replied even while her voice slightly turned shrill.

Like that the one who entered was Hajime.

□Yo, can I bother you a bit?□

□Ye, yes. No need to say a bit, please feel free to do as you please. But, there will be a lecture first thing in the morning, so if I can possibly let to sleep at early hours.....□

□This isn't night crawling. Or rather, you think I'm a really frivolous guy that will say something like "let me do it a bit" huh.□

Hajime smiled wryly at Liliana who was in a thorough misunderstanding while retorting. And then, he sat down on the bed and directed his gaze at Liliana who was red faced from her misunderstanding.

□Well, it's also not something as big as business or anything though.....how are you doing lately?□

□.....Fufu. I was also asked that at the afternoon by Sumire-okaasama. Do I really look that unusual I wonder?□

Seeing how the mother and son were equally worrying for her caused Liliana to leak out a chuckle from amusement.

Hajime scratched his cheek awkwardly while answering.

□You aren't acting unusual or anything. It's just, it's the fact that you look like you aren't energetic. And from that, it looks like you are gloomy, because it seems that Lily yourself doesn't understand just why you aren't energetic.□

Liliana felt a ticklish feeling 'he really is looking properly at me huuh' while she hugged her knees on the chair. Her figure that turned small on the chair with only her toes

peeking out from her largish and loose negligee was really charming.

□Thank you very much for worrying about me.□

□What are you saying. I'm your husband you know? It's obvious for the husband to worry for his wife.□

Once again it was a similar line from the mother and son. This time Liliana became excessively amused that she chuckled a bit louder.

□I'm fine, Hajime-san. Really, it's only that sometimes I felt a bit gloomy. It's nothing big at all.□

Hajime sighed at Liliana who was saying such thing. And then, he suddenly stood up and lifted up Liliana in a princess carry.

Hajime sat down once more on the bed. However, this time he put Liliana on his lap in his arms.

□Err, Hajime-san? As I thought, yo, you will do it?□

□I'm not gonna. The inside of Lily's head is unexpectedly pink colored huh. No, perhaps it's not unexpected. In the first place you have delusion hobby.□

Liliana's cheeks reddened with her hand on her own clothes. Hajime directed a warm gaze at her. Liliana turned sulky.

□Don't sulk like that. Recently, I'm bothered. I'm asking not for Lily but because I want to know. Listen to your husband's request.□

□u. That way of talking is not fair.□

Liliana groaned in small voice.

And then, strength left her body as though she was giving up and she began to talk about her emotion lately that she herself wasn't clear about.

According to her, the time she spent in Nagumo family was really happy.

According to her, the lecture in the college was also really interesting.

According to her, there was nothing more easeful for her heart than this situation where she could play, learning what she like, and having a day where she didn't do anything.

According to her, right now she was living just like in her dream, without any anxiety or pressure, spending happy days being surrounded by her beloved people.

According to her, everyday was really meaningful.

The more she talked, the more it felt like there wasn't any problem. But, the expression of Hajime who was staring fixedly at the talking Liliana was gradually turning amazed, no, to speak more accurately there was a color of exasperation that was starting to dwell in that expression.

If asked why his expression was like that, it was because even though Liliana should be talking about happy things, yet her expression looked vaguely unsatisfied.

Liliana didn't notice the expression of Hajime that was like that and at the end she summed up her own feeling.

□Most likely, I'm lacking in objective inside myself. Surely what I ought to do is to find a great objective and devote myself to it just like Hajime-san and others who are doing their best in order to manage the businesses. Yes, that must

be it. It feels like I can see it while I was talking. For the time being, I'll learn economics to the end because it will be useful in the futu——□

□No, that's not it.□

Liliana finally looked up to Hajime after getting interrupted midway. And then she noticed. That Hajime's face for some reason was absurdly exasperated!?

□Ha, Hajime-san? Did I, say something strange?□

□Aa~, yep, what to say. You are strange. Especially in your head.□

□That's cruel-!? That's an unthinkable abuse! Just where is it in me that is strange!?□

As expected Liliana couldn't forgive Hajime's abusive language and she snapped angrily while questioning him. It caused Hajime's expression to turn speechless.

Liliana guessed that somehow Hajime had noticed something that she didn't notice herself. So she waited for an answer even while puffing up her cheeks.

Hajime suddenly stood up and the he casually tossed Liliana on the bed. Liliana bounced *poyon* and she looked up at Hajime in a girl's sitting posture.

□Listen well, I'll say it starting from the conclusion. The true identity of your gloominess, that is "insufficientness".□

□Err.....that's why, I said that I'll find an objective and work hard.□

□No, that's not it. Even if you do that you won't be satisfied. It won't be enough at all. Your murky feeling won't get cleared up for even a bit. I can guarantee it.□

□Ee~. Then, what is it that you mean?□

Liliana tilted her head in wonder as though asking 'In the end what is it that you want to say?'. Hajime opened his mouth looking like he got a headache, as though this was something unexpected.

□Work that is forced on you.□

□Yes?□

□Approaching deadline.□

□Err.....□

□Cases that caused stomachache. Tremendous pressure.□

□Excuse me~, Hajime-san? What are you.....□

□A problem where running away is not permitted. The word responsibility that crossed the mind.□

□A, are you listening, Hajime-san.□

□The mountain of paperwork that is piled up mercilessly despite you on your last legs already from lack of sleep.□

□.....□

Liliana finally fell silent before Hajime yelled as though to deal the finishing blow.

□Work, work, work-, so much so that you are literally "swamped with work"!! A work with grave responsibility that

you feel like vomiting-!!

.....kufuh

Liliana twitched. She looked around while saying "Just now, did you hear some kind of strange laugh?". Naturally, there was no one inside the room except Hajime who was standing imposingly and the quivering Davis-kun.

"No, it's you just now, you."

"Eh? What do you mean me....."

The gaze of Hajime whose hypothesis had turned into conviction, it now had gone past exasperation and turned instead into pity while his hand took a mirror that was on the table.

"Lily. Try to confirm, just what kind of face you are making right now."

"Hajime-san's words and act are cryptic since some time ago though....."

Even while saying that, Liliana obediently accepted the mirror then looked at her own face and—she stiffened.

That was understandable.

After all in the mirror, there was an incomprehensible expression that was scowling in displeasure, yet even so for some reason the eyes of that expression were blazing fierily, while a fearless smile were merging on the lips. If it was said without any dressing up, then it was a really creepy expression. And that expression was pasted on her own face!

Liliana tilted her head thinking "Dear me? By any chance, is there another world inside the mirror?" while she tried knocking on the mirror, turning it upside down while waving it around. But no matter what the creepy Lily there wouldn't disappear.

Liliana stared at her own face for a while before she suddenly tossed away the mirror *pei-*. And then she turned her gaze at Hajime while putting her face between her hands.

"Ha, Hajime-san! Just what have you done to me! It's cruel that you make my face turn like this!"

"I ain't doing anything. It's only Lily's real nature surfacing on your face."

"What do you mean with real nature!?"

For the time being Liliana laid the blame of her terrible face at Hajime, but Hajime then pointed his finger with a snap at her.

'What does real nature mean? If you don't understand then I'll tell you.'

With eyes glinting like a detective cornering the criminal, Hajime exposed the truth to the world!

"Lily. You are—a genuine, and what's more it's at super level, or rather it's at abnormal pervert level, WORKAHOLIC!" (TN: Here Hajime said it in Japanese English, wookaahorikku)

"WHA, WHAT DID YOU SAY——!!No, wookaa.....what is that?"

Liliana tried to get shocked following the mood, but she then tilted her head at the vocabulary that she heard for the first time.

□It refers to work addiction. First in the list is work, second is work, third and fourth is also work with work in the fifth. Personal life? What's that, is it delicious? Hobby? It's work, you got a problem? It refers to that type of person. Furthermore in Lily's case, it doesn't apply to mere normal work. You aren't able to feel it sufficient anymore unless it's something forced on you, with heavy responsibility, and its quality and quantity are in super hard mode, you are a work addict in abnormal pervert level.□

□E, ee!? Yo, you are wrong! Rather I actually hate working!□

□.....Actually, recently there is this case where a friction is happening which concern the public safety, there might be dead victim coming out if the discussion failed. Lily, I'm thinking of leaving it to Lily——□

□Eh!?□

Lily-chan's eyes were sparkling brightly.

Hajime quickly picked up the mirror that was thrown *pei-* just now and thrust it in front of Liliana. It entered her eyes, the sight of her own face with incomprehensible expression that looked displeased while also looking delighted, in a sense it was an expression with superb harmony between the two emotions.

□My, my real nature is, a workaholic.....what's more it's at abnormal pervert level.....□

Liliana crumbled down. She fell from the bed, and then she trembled *quiver quiver* just like Davis-kun while her eyes

were losing focus.

Even though she should have got away from the duty of royalty and crossed over world to chase the happiness as a normal girl, but as expected it was insufficient when she didn't have duty.....

However, when it was pointed out to her like this, then certainly it was exactly like that. Even when she obtained the knowledge for living, even when she strived to study in the university, even when she built new human relations, even when she went somewhere and did something, all of those were *for her own sake*.

No matter what happened, the consequence would only affect herself, when she failed there wouldn't be any considerable loss or anything. Even if for example an unexpected situation that surpassed the acceptable range occurred, in front of her new family everything would be nothing more than a trifle.

It was truly a life of Easy Mode.

Compared to standing on the top of a country, leading the people, and fought a mighty enemy, this life was truly, truly.....

——Lukewarm

□Hau!?□

□O, oi, Lily? Are you okay?□

The feeling toward her life on earth that was spontaneously welling up inside her caused Lily to crouch down with her hands pressing on her chest.

——Liliana S. B. Hairihi, 17 years old. The princess of Hairihi Kingdom.

Since she was born, she had been continuously immersed in “things that must be done no matter what”. From that, her body had become something that couldn’t be satisfied by “things that she can choose and want to do herself”!

Give more work! Works that troubled the mind so much it feel like the head’s blood vessel will burst! Pressing problems that are nothing but excessive-. Paperwork that is piling up like a mountain range, that make you hallucinate like it won’t end for eternity-!

□I’m not that kind of dangerous woma——n-!!□

□Oooi-. Seriously are you okay, Lily!!□

Liliana held her head while writhing around due to her real nature. Even while feeling creeped out, Hajime went to soothe her somehow.

Thirty minutes later.

Liliana who calmed down somehow was now sitting while hugging her knees feeling dejected. While she was like that, Hajime folded his arms and he wracked his brain□H~m□.

□.....Hajime-san. Perhaps it’s better if I go home.□

□Hm? I somehow understand what you are thinking but, why?□

Liliana’s body was stirring restlessly, she raised her chin that was put on her raised knees and spoke with a complicated sulky expression.

□As I thought, no matter where I go, I'm still a princess. No matter what I do, in the end I'll summarize it into the point whether it will become advantage for the kingdom or not. And then, the "insufficientness" in earth, it caused me to trouble Hajime-san and Sumire-okaasan like now.□

Her shoulders drooped and she delicately muttered something incomprehensible□Someone like me after all is just a princess that cannot become a normal girl□.

Hajime smiled wryly while answering.

□Well, whether you are going home or remaining here, it doesn't really matter which one you are going to choose though.□

□That's cruel-!? Is that something you can say to your wife!?!□

Hajime's wry smile deepened saying□I'm joking□at the enraged Liliana while he continued speaking.

□Look here, I understood from the start that you cannot stop being a princess you remember? Your princess level is a bit above my expectation but.....if you want to do work as a royalty, then I won't stop you. If Lily wish for it, then I'll make it so you can even come and go to there from here everyday. I'll need to concentrate a bit and improve the gate but.....well, I'll manage somehow. That's why, don't say you are going home looking desperate like that.□

□Hajime-san.....□

Of course, Liliana herself also didn't seriously say that she was going home. But, as expected it was something joyful to be told□Don't go□by her beloved like this.

Hajime continued talking at Liliana whose cheeks loosened up.

□I told you this several times already but, Lily, speak more selfishly. After all no matter what kind of impossible demand it is, I'll do it somehow.□

□.....yes.□

Hajime said that while patting her head gently. Liliana's body trembled as though she was in anguish. Her eyes were starting to carry heat. Hajime averted his gaze from such Liliana and returned to the talk.

□And so. Becoming a commuting princess is also one way.....□

□Commuting princess.....it's the first time I heard that kind of vocabulary. But, I have the feeling that like that in the end I'll be swamped with work where I cannot stop even if I want to stop.□

□Yeah, I also think so. And so, how about doing work other than the work of the royalty? Even though I said that, you will still get swamped with work all the same, so you will be moderately busy doing things with moderate responsibility, like that little by little you will get used to "moderate work", and eventually your body and heart will get accustomed with "enjoying free time". Something like that.□

□So it's like, a rehabilitation then. I somewhat feel complicated.....□

'Am I a sick person, ah, I'm an addict.....' Liliana made a complicated expression with that thought. Hajime then suggested to such Liliana whether he should leave several businesses for her to manage.

Liliana pondered for a little before she shook her head.

□No, I'll refrain from work where I act as Hajime-san's representative. I know that even by doing anything else I'll still have the sense of security that everything will be fine no matter what happen, but even so I believe that doing work that is unrelated with Hajime-san for my first rehabilitation will be just right.□

□Hm~m? Is that so. However, in that case what will you do then?□

Liliana suddenly stood up and while bouncing *poyon* on the bed she thrust up her fist and proclaimed.

□Yes, I decided. I'll do part-time work!□

Honestly, it wasn't like Hajime wasn't thinking□Is it fine doing part-time work?□, but it seemed better for Liliana to be in a place where she didn't have the backing of Hajime, so he didn't really say anything.

And then, Liliana said□My aim, to be a normal girl! I won't let anyone say that I'm a workaholic anymore!□with rough breathing from her boiling up motivation, with Hajime giving her a noncommittal applause□Oo, do your best~□.

Arifureta After II The Part-Time Leader Lily Second Part

Part 1

ding ding The bell chimes rang. It was a withdrawn sound that felt pleasant to ear.

□Welcome.□

The two young male customers who entered were immediately addressed by a voice. The voice came from a bit away, but it was a pleasant and refreshing voice that didn't lose to the bell's chimes.

When they directed their gaze to there due to the lure of the voice, there was a stunning beautiful girl there. It was a blonde haired and blue eyed girl wearing a cute apron. Her luxuriant hair was tied on the back using a largish frilly ribbon.

Looking from the logo on the apron, the silver tray in one hand, and the plate placed on the other hand, it was obvious from a glance that this was this restaurant's employee.

□Dear guest. I will guide you to your seat right after this, so can I please ask you to wait for a bit?□

□□Ah, yes□□

The two male customers replied in a beautiful harmony. The waitress-san smiled cheerfully. The two of them staggered.

The waitress advanced smoothly through the gap between the tables with light footsteps and she set down the cooking

she carried with a movement that even displayed elegance somewhat. The two female customers who received their ordered cooking were staring in a daze at the waitress.

After that the waitress once more gave a stunningly beautiful bow and smiled like a blooming flower at the two female customers who unconsciously returned the bow. The two female customers were shot through.

The waitress returned back toward the two male customers and bowed. A sweet aroma spread gently from the swaying hair of golden thread.

□I'm sorry for making you wait. Smoking seat or non-smoking seat, which one will be your preference?□

□E, either is fine.□

□Me, me too.□

The two male customers followed behind the waitress as though they were being lured by the constant smile. Even after they were sitting down, their gazes kept glued on the waitress who was going to bring some water and wet towel.

They were handed the menu by the returning waitress. She said□Please call me when you decided your order□before she was going to withdraw, but one man reflexively called out.

□He, hey. Before this, you weren't working here right?□

It was a sudden question, but the waitress that guessed this costumer had also gone to this restaurant before this nodded briefly.

□Yes. I worked part-time here just recently—I'm called Liliana. If I can become the acquaintance of you honored

customer from here on—that will be great.□

She cutely smiled while bowing with her fingertips slightly clutching the tip of her skirt. That gesture swiftly shot through the two males with something. The way how at the end of her sentence her polite language broke down slightly, it caused a sense of familiarity to well up inside the two male customers.

□I super will become your acquaintance.□

□Rather already we are become your acquaintance.□

The Japanese of the two male customers crumbled.

After that, there was a profoundly mysterious happening when Liliana came to take their order, for some reason they ordered the menu one after another, even things that they didn't feel like ordering were ordered following Liliana's recommendation. The two looked like they were satisfied on the whole.

□Yuuka-san, I bring more order. Please take care of it.□

□Yes ye~s□

The chef who was wielding the frying pan inside the kitchen—Sonobe Yuuka replied back lightly.

It seemed that she had just finished cooking. She beautifully served the content of the fry pan on the plate and she faced toward the counter with the plate in one hand.

She was wearing a pure white chef coat and a crimson scarf on her neck. The limp beret on her head was also crimson colored.

At her student days, she had serious character but her appearance was showy, so she gave an impression that looked like a frivolous gal. But right now she was a splendid war potential of the western restaurant that was managed by her family. She was a chef who would become the second generation of this restaurant in the future.

It was only her dyed chestnut colored hair that didn't change, but the atmosphere she was clad in was somehow mature and kind. The look of her eyes that should be called as sharp if it had to be said, also seemingly looked like they had softened. Naturally those factors also dragged up her charm that had existed since the beginning by several times over.

In fact, there were a lot of regular customers who frequently visited this western restaurant "Wisteria" aiming at the beautiful chef. Also this restaurant was established just a bit before Yuuka was born, so it had already welcomed its twenty year anniversary, there were also a lot of veteran customers who extremely enjoyed seeing the growth of Yuuka who often helped since she was small.

"Yes, this is Kuban-san's meat pie, take it please. So, the next order is....."

Yuuka looked at the order tag she received from Liliana and her eyes blinked repeatedly. And then, she leaned out her body from the kitchen counter and took a look at the table where Liliana had taken the order just now.

Over there were two young male customers.

Yuuka dropped her gaze at the order tag once more. No matter how she looked there was order for about six people written there.

□.....Since Liliana worked here, the customers became really big eater huh.□

□Yes, Japanese people are all gormandizer isn't it.□

Yuuka lifted her gaze from the order tag and sent an unblinking stare at Liliana, but then she sighed seeing Liliana putting a friendly smile.

□Well, they all ate the food without leaving any, so it's not a problem but.....be careful to not make them force themselves too much okay.□

□Please leave it to me, Yuuka-san. It's my specialty to see through where is the limit. I'll use every method available and make the sales and repeater to be double the last month. I'll bet on my honor as a former princess!□

□It's fine even if you don't bet that. Anyway calm down first, former princess.□

Seeing Liliana whose nose breathed roughly with overflowing motivation, Yuuka acted the straight-man while smiling wryly.

□Now then, it will be the time soon when the customers will come in force. Let's put in our fighting spirit. I think it will be fine because Otou-san and Okaa-san will also return back soon, but until then spare me from the amount of order that I cannot deal with alone okay?□

□It's fine. I have finished grasping Yuuka-san's ability. I will take order in the amount where Yuuka-san can just barely manage!□

□Ah, yep. —This, rather than being a rehabilitation for Liliana, isn't this actually a trial for me?□

Liliana said 'Leave it to me!' while putting the meats pie on her tray and headed out to give it to the customer. Yuuka murmured so while seeing her back.

After that, the two parents of Yuka returned from their business and the number of customers increased sharply when it was evening. Liliana who made the Sonobe family screaming from the orders that were coming like a surging wave then clocked out when it was time for her to depart for another part-time work.

After that, everyone of Sonobe family were left behind looking dead tired.

The customers also became sparse and after about an hour when it became time to close the restaurant for the day, *ding* the bell rang.

□Welco——wait, what, isn't this Nagumo.□

Yuuka had left the kitchen and was now sorting the cash register's sales slip. Just as she said, ahead of her gaze there was Hajime.

□What do you mean what when you are greeting a customer.□

Hajime entered the restaurant with a wry smile while sitting on the seat at the edge of the counter with a practiced movement. That spot was tacitly a reserved seat for Hajime who now had become a regular customer.

Since the party of the one year anniversary of returning home, Hajime who was pleased with this restaurant's cooking and coffee and also because of the friendly atmosphere due to the management who were his classmate and her family sometimes visited now and then.

The other classmates too, even after graduating high school they would aimlessly dropped by several times a month, and when they gathered for meal they would mostly gather in Yuuka's restaurant, so this place became something like a hang-out place for the another world summoning group.

.....Although, Hajime was also made to feel an extremely unwilling feeling because for some reason he received an extremely disgraceful impression that said "He is like a man going to his mistress's place for an affair" from among his family and friends.

Even though most times when he was here he would be with one or more of his wives, yet why he was still evaluated like that..... It was something that was greatly baffling for Hajime.

And then, those wives who were mostly with him when he was here, especially recently they would be staring at Yuuka with a fixed gaze, just why was it.....

When Hajime sat down, Yuuka's father that replaced her to cook in the kitchen—Hiroshi, and Yuuka's mother Yuuri, they addressed Hajime "Welcome" looking very happy.

Hajime returned the greeting and then Yuuka who left behind the sales slips asked him.

"And, you are coming to eat? It's rare for you to come alone."

"No, I finished having dinner already. I came here just to drink coffee a bit and also ask about how our part-time princess is doing."

"Aa, I see."

When Yuuka turned her gaze to her father, Hiroshi nodded as though to say "I don't mind". In exchange Yuuri moved to take over sorting the sales slip. For some reason she was giving a thumb up at Yuuka while she was at it.

Yuuka asked while pretending to not see her mother who was like that.

"You are okay with blend coffee?"

"Ou. Or rather, you are the one making it?"

Hajime tilted his head, because if he remembered right, even though Yuuka had become able to be entrusted with cooking, she shouldn't have been entrusted with making coffee yet.

Seeing Hajime's questioning face, Yuuka showed a bit of a triumphant look while she swiftly prepared making the coffee.

"Yesterday I finally got the okay. I also took the barista qualification already. This is more or less the first blend that I will serve to a customer, so drink it with care."

"What's with that condescending attitude huh?"

A wry smile leaked out once more. The exchange between Hajime and Yuuka was very relaxed with each other from this kind of visit that spanned through several years. This was related with the impression of "He is like a man going to his mistress's place for an affair", but the two of them didn't have the awareness of that.

A fragrant aroma enveloped the space. Hajime made a wondering expression at the coffee that was presented to him and brought it to his mouth to test how good it was. And

then, a beat later, he went “Oh” with his eyes snapped open in admiration. And then without pause he took the second and then third gulp. From that it seemed that Yuuka’s first blend was a good work.

Yuuka made a delighted expression that was mixed with a little bit of relieve while she slouched forward a bit and rested her chin on her hand above the counter. Her other hand was playing around with her crimson scarf with her fingertips twirling it, one of her feet was tapping *ton ton* on the floor with her toes.

“So? What is it that you want to ask? Lily is doing really well here though?”

“Is that so? She is a princess and she shouldn’t have any experience in service trade, she doesn’t become a bother about various things because of that?”

“Nope, rather she is serving the customer so perfectly it is wasted for this kind of neighborhood western restaurant. She is elegant and refined—and it looks like there are already customers coming here for Lily.”

“Just from two weeks?”

“Yep, just from two weeks. And not just that, she even gave advice for the management. It’s to the level that it feels like we got the scale falling from our eyes. You know, she was having fun when she calculated how much the expenses this month got reduced.”

“As expected from the addict of office job. Just why she is doing consultation even though this is part-time job huh.”

Hajime sighed in exasperation. A smile emerged on Yuuka’s lips with a chuckle seeing such Hajime.

□Well, I too was anxious at first though. Suddenly a call came from Nagumo telling me□Wont you try hiring a former princess for part-time work□, what's with that. I myself am still a novice and it's the best I can do just doing my own part. But, well, now I'm glad that Lily came to work here.□

□Is that so..... I too was really worried letting Lily go for part-time at a place I don't know about at all. In that point, if it's Sonobe that I can trust you, and so I entrusted her here.....it's great if her being here also benefited this place.□

□.....As always, you are overprotective toward your relative huh. Today too you come directly here to expressly check on her.□

Yuuka's expression turned into an exasperated one. However, her fingertips were twirling and toying her crimson scarf even more. The tapping of her foot became even more rhythmical *ton, toton-*.

For some reason, the mother who was in the middle of sorting the sales slip was grinning broadly seeing such Yuuka.

□Well, I can deny being overprotective but.....I'm coming today because that girl is starting to act unexpectedly, no, in a sense it's just as expected from her I guess. Hey, Sonobe. When she was in the middle of working, did Lily's atmosphere feel like she is unsatisfied somewhat?□

□Eh?H~m, I didn't really feel anything like that. She was really in high spirits taking the order, she was scattering around courtesy so much it was sly to increase the repeater. Why are you asking? By any chance, did she say that working part-time here is dull for her?□

□No no, she isn't saying anything like that. Rather she was saying that she is having fun.□

Yuuka tilted her head at Hajime who spoke evasively.

Hajime hesitated a little before he confirmed to Yuuka□I've told you the detail about why Lily is working part-time right?□. When Yuuka nodded, Hajime continued.

□Since a week ago, that Lily, she often didn't come home.□

□Somehow, that line sounds like something that would be said by a no good husband who let her wife run away.□

□Shut up. And then. When I tried asking what she is doing, it seemed that she is also starting to work part-time with the supplier that is doing business with your place. She said the work is completely desk job.□

□Eh? Is that so?□

That fact caused the eyes of Yuuka who didn't know that to turn round. But, it appeared the story didn't stop there.

□It seemed, the fare configuration of that supplier is problematic, and then while Lily was talking about various things to the supplier, she then got scouted by the person of that company. I don't know what kind of talk she had with them though.□

□He, hee. I wonder since when it became like that.□

□Yeah exactly. But, even with that, it's unthinkable that she would be so busy that she needed to absent from several lectures of the college and became unable to come home. I'm only guessing but.....□

□She is doing more part-time work?□

□Yeah.□

Hajime who nodded while looking like he got a headache. Although it seemed he didn't have a positive proof, that was why he thought of asking a bit to Yuuka, whether Liliana was feeling insufficient just working part-time in this restaurant.

□You can just ask her directly.□

□That girl is giving me the slip. I don't want to get the answer out of her forcefully. And observing her with artifact will make me look like a controlling husband, so I don't feel like doing that.□

□Oh, really.□

Hajime drank his coffee miserly while looking really worried or perhaps overprotective, and yet for all that he behaved indecisively. Yuuka replied curtly with an expression that looked disappointed to that.

□In the end, what are you going to do? When she is working part-time at our place, she doesn't look like she is feeling insufficient, she look like she is having quite some fun you know? Should I indirectly tell her that Nagumo is worrying? I don't know if the workaholic Lily will be able to restrain herself by doing that, but perhaps she will talk to you by her own initiative what part-time work she is doing right now.□

□I, see. Can I ask you to do that?□

□Yes yes. It's fine, doing just that much.□

Yuuka nodded while lazily waving her hand. Hajime drank up his coffee and said thanks before standing up.

□My bad that I sounded like whining there. I feel relaxed when I come here every time. I guess it's not just for show that you are the second generation owner of the place for relaxation that lured even the demon king.□

□Even if you praise me I cannot give you anything except delicious western meal and coffee okay. There also won't be any discount.□

□Uh oh, that's unfortunate.□

The two cracked jokes to each other. Yuuka's scarf was twirled around so much it was already starting to fray, while her tapping toes were already like a tap dance.

Hajime said his goodbye to Hiroshi and Yuuri and then exited the restaurant. Yuuka saw him off before closing the door and when she turned around, there were her two parents there with a truly nice smiling face.

□.....What?□

Yuuka asked with obvious wariness. In respond, the gentle Yuuri,

□What to do, Hiroshi-san. This daughter of us, her trait is completely a mistress.□

□H, h~m. But from my standpoint, I wish that she will marry properly though.□

□Lo, look here! Just what are you two speaking about your daughter! I'm not Nagumo's mistress, and I also got not plan to enter that guy's harem!□

Yuuka howled. However, the chain of events just now where a man with wives and kid unexpectedly showed up, then she

treated him with food, heard his complaining, and gave him comfort—those acts, even considering that this place was a restaurant, seen from the side she looked enough like a mistress.

Seeing her parents who lightly deflected “We get it, we get it” toward her words of denial, Yuuka became especially displeased.

However, it was natural that her words didn’t have any persuasiveness.

After all, Yuuka’s toes tapping *ton ton* on the floor was her habit when she was in a good mood. And furthermore that habit wouldn’t come out just from being in good mood, it would only come out if she also felt embarrassed at the same.

In addition, there were the crimson scarf and limp beret that Yuuka was wearing. Actually those items had a lot of color variety, but Yuuka only had those items in crimson color, even including the spare. When she went to buy replacement, as expected she would pick crimson again. The same color with the light of magic power of a certain someone.

And then, her habit of rolling around her scarf with her fingertips was a new habit that was formed in these several years. It was an unconscious habit that came out only when she was talking with a certain someone.

“Heey, Otou-san, Okaa-san? Are you two listening?”

“Yes yes, we get it already. We better start closing up the restaurant soon~”

□The most important thing for Otou-san is that Yuuka is happy, that's all.□

□I, told, youu~~~□

The famous western restaurant□Wisteria□. The frequently changing emotion between joy and anger of the second generation owner was also the specialty of this place.

Part 2

A month after Hajime showed just a bit of good-for-nothing act at Yuuka's restaurant.

Currently, everyone was gathering in the living room of Nagumo residence. The 120th something of Nagumo Family Meeting was opened.

The one who sat at the center of the large dining table was Hajime, and right in front of him was Liliana who was sitting with an awkward expression.

Now then, Lily. Do you know what is the meaning of this family meeting?

u, mo, more or less.....

Liliana averted her face quickly to the side, but ahead of her gaze there were Yue and others who weren't even hiding their exasperated expression. What gouged her heart especially deeply was that even Myuu was looking at her with eyes as though she was looking at someone hopeless.

Hajime was about to open his mouth toward Liliana whose gaze was swimming *sui~* to the opposite side.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.

□Ah, oi, you□

Liliana looked the other way even when Hajime raised his voice while putting her own smartphone on her ear. And then, what could be heard after that were only words related to business like contract or client and so on.

Before long it seemed that they had reached an end and Liliana cut off the call. Seeing that, Hajime sighed while opening his mouth.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

□Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.□

□.....□

She answered the phone. This time it seemed there was a problem occurring regarding the shift at her part-time workplace. Liliana was listening to the phone while going 'uh-huh, uh-huh' before she quickly started to give out instructions, like who to call, who to substitute the shift change, what to do about the lacking place such and such, and then what she want to be dealt with next and so on.....

Hajime wanted to act the straight-man 'Managing shift schedule obviously ain't the work of a part-timer right!', but for the time being he endured it.

Before long the talk came to an end and Liliana cut off the phone. Hajime then sighed while opening his mouth.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

□Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.□

□.....□

Liliana answered the phone. For some reason there was a sobbing voice coming from the other side of the phone. Liliana was consoling her talking partner while sometimes she also reprimanded, and then in order to deal with a grave problem that seemed to occur from some kind of miss, she took out one more smartphone from her pocket and quickly began to give out instructions.

Before long it seemed that she finished and Liliana cut off the phone. Hajime who got a vein pulsing on his forehead was opening his mouth.

But, before he could, *gatari* the sound of someone standing up from a chair resounded.

□I'm sorry, Hajime-san. It seems that the section chi——cough-, a regular employee who was entrusted with an important project made a miss, and it turned out into something that a part-time worker like me has to deal with. And so, I'll go out for a bit!□

A part-time worker that followed up for a regular employee's miss. Or rather, a regular employee who came crying to a part-time worker even though it was his miss. Furthermore, it seemed this regular employee was a section chief.

Since when the definition of part-time work had changed drastically like this.

Liliana quickly put her outfit in order while saying things like □At this rate the two hundred employees there will be out in the cold! As a part-time leader, I have to do something□ before she tried to go outside.

snap- One more vein emerged on Hajime's forehead. And then a word.

□Shia.□

□Yes sir desuuu□

From behind, the rabbit-eared wife who was dancing to the same beat with the husband embraced Liliana who right now was about to exit the room.

□Shi, Shia-san? I'm sorry, but I'm going to wo——□

□Yes yes, I'll just make you cool your head a bit heree□

□Eh? Wai-, NOOOOOO-□

Liliana screamed, and then after that she received an artistic German suplex and the floor struck the back of her head.
□My head-, my head hurts like it got splitttttt-□The former princess was shouting while rolling around on the floor in agony.

□Uu, just what are you doing. After this I have an important work.....□

□Is that, something more important than the family discussion?□

Liliana complained while rubbing the back of her head with teary eyes. Hajime asked her with a sigh mixed in it.□Uu-□
Liliana was at lost for words, and Hajime said in respond.

□If that's how it is, then I'll attempt to solve the root of the problem and make it so you lose your reason for going.□

□E, err, Hajime-san, what do you mean specifically?□

□.....Today's weather is sunny, it seem that there will be random meteor shower later.□

□Let's have a discussion.□

Indeed, the root of the problem would be cleared. If there wasn't any troubled person, then there also wouldn't be any trouble.

Feeling how unbearable it would be if the meteor shower that once annihilated the capital of her own country was dropped on her part-time workplace, Liliana took her seat in panic.

□Look at you, even though recently you were grieving because not to mention me, you weren't able to even converse satisfactorily with anyone in the family because of work, work, work, but then you tried to get out abruptly from the discussion to talk about that, just what's with that?□

□Tha, that's, obviously, even I is also fed up here you know, Hajime-san? I really want to yell out loud, just why are they all relying on just me, please manage it somehow just by yourself. But, before I realized it everyone relied on me and I was placed at a position with responsibility, and now it's really hard to break out from it.□

□Even though it's part-time work?□

□Even though it's part-time work, yes.□

Hajime sighed for who knew how many times already. He then handed over the mirror he had prepared to Liliana who was talking with a voice that couldn't hide her emotion of □I'm fed up already□.

The face that was reflected in the mirror, was the creepy face of workaholic Lily with fierily blazing eyes.

Liliana gently put down the mirror.

□This is a mistake. It's not like I'm starved or anything. This is a misunderstanding. Thanks to doing moderate amount of work from the part-time, day by day I'm in the process of getting closer to become "a normal girl" —□

□Including the part-time at Sonobe's place, how many part-time works you are currently holding?□

□.....I, it's, seven.□

□The job description?□

□A, a bit of managing stocking and dealing with the client.□

□Other than that?□

□Something like fast food restaurant.□

□The specific.□

□.....I'm in charge of the part-time at the main restaurant while entrusted to coordinate the surrounding seven branch restaurants.□

□The call just now?□

□At another establishment related with food and drink where I'm working part time, various things happened and I worked like an advisor of the head office trade section.....it seems there was a miss at the transaction that was started from my advice where the company's fortune is at stake, at this rate it would get complete revocation. If that happen, depending

on the situation there is even the possibility that the company will go under.□

Hajime wordlessly pushed out the mirror. It was as though he was an exorcist that was pushing out a cross toward a girl who was possessed by a devil! What was reflected in that mirror was a creepy face that seemed to say□This is a heavy responsibility you know, Lily! Gufufuh□.....

Immediately,□Stoopp— . Don't show me the mirrrrr—!!□Liliana writhed in agony.

.....She was completely like a girl who was possessed by a devil.

□Yes yes, at~~ten~~tion! Now that we have confirmed that presently Lily-chan's workaholic level isn't improved at all, everyone please state your opinion!□

Sumire who held the role as the chairman of the meeting tapped the table *kan kan* with a spoon and asked for opinion from everyone.

□Yes!□The one who raised her hand the very first was Myuu. Sumire pointed with a fork at Myuu□Yes, Myuu-chan!□. Her manner was really bad.

□I think that Lily-oneechan's addiction, it won't be fixed even if she died!□

□Kafuh!?!□

Myuu launched her words like a bullet of anti-material rifle grade with a cheerful smile on her face. Liliana pressed her chest and collapsed.

Next, "Yes desuu!" was Shia with her rabbit ears standing straight. Sumire pointed sharply with long chopsticks "Yes, Shia-chan!". Just where did she take it out from?

"I think that something like rehabilitation, is meaningless to fix a person's core nature desuu!"

"Guhih!?"

That opinion actually had much persuasiveness. A~ll of Shia's family were people with screwed up core nature. Incidentally, Shia's self-proclaimed best friend the princess of the elf was also a pervert at the core. Soon she might turn from her best friend into her step-mother. However regarding this case, Shia was averting her rabbit ears from the reality.

The next one who hurriedly raised her hand was Tio. After her Remia also raised her hand while smiling. Sumire said "Yes Tio-chan, Remia-chan!" while pointing with a snap using a ladle. For a moment it looked like the ladle materialized from empty air.....was that just an imagination?

"For example, if I hath mine butt spanked moderately in the name of rehabilitation, and then asked if this nature of mine can be fixed by that or not, then the answer is it's impossible! This art the same."

"What a hardship. Even though she wishes to stop working and be together with family, but without working she will be frustrated.....it will be great if there is something else other than work that she can do."

"Uu. I'm the same like Tio-san.....even if you ask me something other than work.....after all I'm just a hollow person.....hics-"

Liliana lost her nerve. And then she fell down before starting to trace circles on the floor with her fingertip in an easy to understand gesture.

□Nn-□Yue raised her hand. Sumire said□Yes, Yue-chan!□while pointing with a fry pan for rolled egg so hard it made *buon* sound.It looked like she took it out from her cuff though.

Beside Sumire, Shuu's eyes were sparkling, □Sumire, you, your party performance skill had gone up again!□his tension was climbing up to the sky.

□.....You want, remodeling?□

□Hihi!? No thank you!□

‘That difficult nature, want me to remodel it along with your soul?’ Yue wriggled her hands while standing up from her chair. In respond to that, Liliana screamed while dragging her body backward.

Hajime gave a glance at Liliana who was trembling like Davis-kun before he scratched his head and opened his mouth.

□Well, it's positive that this nature of Liliana cannot be fixed just from doing part-time work.□

□Uu, Hajime-san?□

Liliana's shoulders dropped despondently.

Hajime's gaze ran around toward Yue and others. He judged that they all had reached a conclusion. And then, he made Liliana to sit on her chair in order to tell her that conclusion.

□Lily. Anyway, these two months of rehabilitation turned out meaningless, that's why, how about if in the next two months you don't do anything?□

□Not doing, anything?□

Liliana was bewildered. Hajime nodded□Yeah□. In a sense, this was a shocking proposal for Liliana.

□Resign from all your part-time works, and then, become a shut-in NEET for two months.□

□Eh?□

Like this, with the unanimous vote from□The 80th or 130th, well it doesn't matter which of Nagumo Family Meeting□, it was decided that the princess of another world was to become a shut-in NEET.

By the way, regarding the mismanagement of a certain trade department that made a miss, it was resolved in moderation by Hajime due to Lily's entreaty. Of course it was resolved using a way that wasn't a random meteor shower in a sunny day.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I uploaded three chapters consecutively for the celebration of this story's resumption, but for some reason this Lily arc didn't end.

Unexpectedly I have fun writing and unconsciously the story got dragged on.

Especially, how it became as though this is Yuuka's turn even though this is Lily arc.....Lily, how pitiful.

Now then, my deepest apology, but next week's update at Saturday will be Lily arc too.

In this After II, I'm thinking to try to write about the wives or classmates that didn't get spotlight.

And when I finished with that, unexpectedly there are a lot of wishful voices and Shirakome himself is also growing in the mood for it, so I'm thinking that perhaps I should try writing about the story of Kouki-kun got kidnapped too muchhh.

Well then, please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta After II I Become the God of the New World? First Part

AN: I'm sorry, Lily arc hasn't end.....

Next chapter! I will finish it next chapter without fail!

PS

I got the chronological order pointed out, so as soon as I have time I'll revise it.

Until then, it will help if you readers can think that this is how it is with the hopeless Shirakome just like usual and look the other way.

Part 1

☆ NEET Queen Lily

Two months had passed since that□It's troublesome already to count the number y'know, Nagumo Family Meeting□where it was decided for Liliana to become a shut-in NEET.

During that time, in order to rescue the workaholic former princess, Liliana who was constantly drifting around from too much free time was consoled by everyone of Nagumo family with every kind of amusement. It was so that she could forget the matter of work even for just a little.

Everyone was worried from the bottom of their heart about their family member who was addicted to work in abnormal level.

Then, specifically what kind of amusement was provided for her? For example there was something like this.

The one who moved the very first even among the Nagumo family was Myuu. She visited Liliana's room with toys in her hands.

□Lily-oneechan, let's play this!□

The thing that Myuu brought and presented to her with a lot of energy like that caused Liliana to tilted her head.

□Err, what is this, Myuu-chan?□

□It's Raptor nano.□

‘I’m not asking in that kind of meaning’, while thinking that, Liliana dropped her eyes toward that thing that was handed to her—a 1/48 model of a fighter aircraft of earth, multi-purpose tactical fighter F-22, alias Raptor.

Myuu nodded in satisfaction at Liliana who accepted the model even while she was in bewilderment, and then she took out another model of fighter aircraft. □Flanker-tan is also hard to discard, but it cannot win against the charm of variable wing. Tomneko-tan, I pick you!□She did that while saying such thing.

□Now, Lily-oneechan. Shut-in NEET Lily-oneechan who is only staying indoors. In order to master being a shut-in NEET, let’s blast off to the sky while secluding yourself inside the room nano!□

□Err, Myuu-chan? I wish you won’t repeatedly call me shut-in NEET too much like that..... It’s more or less something decided in the family meeting, it’s something like a medical treatment.....□

□Shut your mouth, warrant officer Lily. Do you want me to beat you up? nano□

□.....Recently, you are increasingly growing similar to Hajime-san aren’t you, Myuu-chan. Especially in that unreasonable aspect.□

Surely, if there was the entry of “unreasonable” in the status plate, then Myuu’s parameter would surely extended out with terrific momentum.

Before Liliana realized, Myuu who seemed to change completely into a military personnel was clad in something like a pilot suit, equipped with a short mustache, and a teardrop type sunglasses sharply put *sucha!* on her face.

And then, she handed over a matching sunglasses and short mustache along with something like a game joystick to Liliana. Perhaps for Myuu, speaking of a military personnel meant short mustache.....

□Warrant officer Lily. This is a flying toy that papa created. Something like a drone. A distant viewing stone is used for its cockpit screen, and its field of vision can be shared through this sunglasses. The control is performed using this joystick. Do you understand? nano□

□Ah, yes. No, I don't understand. First of all, what's with the warrant officer?□

□Ah, Myuu is the flight lieutenant and is above Lily-oneechan, that's why properly call Myuu as captain nano.□
(TN: Should I use lieutenant here or captain? This is how the raw is. I don't really get the structure of military command.)

□No, that's not what I'm asking.....□

Myuu already opened the window and put her F-14 Super Tomcat in standby. Whether when she was a princess or when she wasn't princess anymore, the point where she was ignored didn't seem to change.

□Preparation OK. Demons squadron, Demon 1 Super Tomcat. Launch- nano!□

□Eh, do I need to say that too? E, err, Demon 2, Raputar? La, launching!□(TN: When the word Raptor is Japanized, it was spelled as raputaa)

The fierce gleam from Myuu's eyes emitted a wordless demand. Liliana who sensed that spoke in a matching sentence with Myuu. There wasn't any runway, but Captain Myuu's first aircraft and Officer Lily's second aircraft floated

lightly using gravity control, and then both flew outside the window.

After that, the sight of the vast sky that was visible from the sunglasses cleared up even if just temporarily the gloominess of Liliana who was feeling depressed from not working.

Liliana was opening her mouth to thank Myuu for her consideration and her invitation for this wonderful playing time, but when she glanced to her side, for some reason Myuu was making a fearless smile that was just like her father. Seeing that Liliana was assaulted by a fierce bad premonition.

Right after that, "Finally they are coming huh. Fine then, I'll play with you nano" Myuu spouted out such ominous words. Liliana was glancing to such Myuu from the corner of her eyes while she became speechless from the scenery that was visible through her sunglasses.

After all, there was a "real fighter aircraft" flying in parallel with their model aircrafts.

Liliana questioned Myuu with naked agitation, but according to Myuu's careless reply, it seemed that the place their toys were flying was right above the base of JDF.

Actually, before this Myuu already had previous offense of flying on the JDF base while raining down missiles that were crammed with ketchup and mayonnaise.

The vehicles and facilities on the base, and also everyone of JDF who came outside to shot down the aircraft model, they were all dripping with ketchup and mayonnaise at that time. It seemed they were flying into rage already from that. Perhaps because of that too, this time even the fighter

aircrafts of JDF finally scrambled just for facing a small fighter aircraft□That damned screwing around drone came again!□that was displaying a performance that was unbecoming compared to the existing drone of modern era.

The pilot of the aircraft flying parallel with them for the time being moved around his hand from the cockpit pointing down, he was demanding them to land down.

□Myu, Myu Myu Myuu-chan! What are you thinking! As expected, this is crossing over the limit of things that can be done!□

□Lily-oneechan. There are great saying in Japan nano—it's not a crime if it's not exposed.□

□Hajime-saa——n! Remia-saa——n! Myuu-chan here is dashing to an improper directionnn! Please revise the education policy-! Or rather stop her quicklyyy!□

□Fuh, naïve. Both papa and mama, and also everyone else are away from home nano. Myuu has made no oversight!□

Ignoring the shaken Liliana, Myuu said something like □Demon 1, engage!□while controlling the plane with pointlessly refined piloting. And then, the cockpit of the startled pilot was fired at by vulcan.

Right after that, *bichi bichi bichi-* small bullets hit the canopy of the JDF aircraft. Naturally, the canopy was dyed bright red. It wasn't the pilot's blood, but ketchup. Furthermore, there might be some kind of particular composition included in it, because the ketchup was clinging stickily without getting blasted away by the wind pressure.

The pilot's movement stopped. No, he was starting to move slowly. He was moving his hand. His hand was once more moving lower——tracing his neck, and then his thumb dropped downward. It was obvious what the pilot meant, "Fall to hell" he gestured.

It went without saying that after that it turned out into a grand dogfight against JDF aircraft.

Even while pleading for them to just go home already while half-crying, Liliana continued to escape from the JDF aircraft with excessively skilled piloting. Myuu said "If we escape here, it will be the shame of woman of sea!" while displaying beautiful midair maneuvers one after another like Immelmann turn and Cobra and so on. She didn't stop her grand rivalry with the JDF aircraft. Naturally even Liliana's straight-man act "Woman of sea you say.....this is the sky!" was ignored as nothing.

But, the end visited so suddenly.

Because out of nowhere, the back of Myuu's head was tightly held in eagle grip.

gi gi gi When the short moustache and sunglasses Myuu turned around like a machine that forgot to be oiled, there was the figure of her papa there half-smiling.

After that, the drone was forcefully self-exploded in the blink of eye, "Aa!?" Myuu's Tomneko-tan! even such scream echoed in vain and signaled the end of Myuu's "playing".

And then, the main offender Myuu met a punishment of a hundred strikes on her butt by Hajime from going too far in playing, and in that day a sobbing voice was echoing in Nagumo residence without stopping until the dinner time.

Liliana who got the feeling that recently Myuu's attitude was becoming too flashy was looking at Myuu who was reflecting with teary eyes. She thought, 'perhaps it ended all right like this'.

.....She felt like for an instant she saw a color of ecstasy at the expression of Myuu while she was rubbing her swollen red butt, but surely, without a doubt that was just her imagination. Because if that wasn't just her imagination, then one black dragon would surely vanish from this world without trace.

At another time, she was also invited by Yue and Shia and tried working diligently at sewing steadily.

Yue had the experience of tailoring Hajime's outfit at her period in abyss, right now sewing was becoming half a hobby for her. Shia was a rabbit skilled in housework from the start, so sewing was her forte. Taught by the two of them, Liliana's sewing skill was improving conspicuously.

There, Remia who recently became known as an up-and-coming designer who was enveloped in mystery with unknown face offered an idea, and Liliana tried to sell the clothes and accessory she created through the internet.

When she did that, it unexpectedly sold well and Liliana was having fun more and more.....

She established the marketing and advertisement of the internet sales, what's more she started to investigate the procedure in order to start up a company—and got a knuckle dropped on her head from Hajime.

It was understandable why Hajime did so. After all she got shadow under her eyes from thinking of the prospect of internet marketing in the future from morning until evening.

Most likely, the environment where she was made to be a shut-in NEET caused her to manifest withdrawal symptoms. No matter how much work she was chased with, it didn't show up at all on her surface for even once. That was why it showed just how much she was starving for work that her face's complexion changed.

And at the end, in the midnight, Myuu rolled out from the closet of Hajime's room looking scared because she could hear a strange voice. She was clinging in tear on Hajime.

.....Let's put aside for now just why she was hiding in the closet of Hajime's room at midnight.

Let's also put aside for the time being, the appearance of Myuu who was wearing adult lingerie with black tone unbecoming for a ten years old girl.

While we were at it, let's also put aside the fact how without anyone noticing there was a hole opened in the closets of the rooms of Hajime and Myuu with a size that could be freely entered by a child.

Even while his expression was grandly twitching, Hajime carefully wrapped Myuu inside a futon and put her into sleep. He then entered "the place of strange voice"—the room of Liliana. When he confirmed inside, he found Liliana making noise from a nightmare there.

She was breathing roughly looking like she was in pain while moaning.While sometimes,「fuheh」she was raising a strange giggle. Her expression was the usual creepy face.

It seemed, even inside her dream, she looked like she was going「Ge, geez-, this is really hopeless. Fine then, I'll do it already. If I don't do it, then who else will do it☆」, it seemed

in her dream she was being happily chased by work even while acting displeased.

This princess couldn't escape from work whether in dream or reality.

Hajime devised a plan.

In the first place, Liliana had a habit of fantasizing. Especially regarding love affair. And then, in this house there was a leading person of that road. Yes, it was the famous shoujo manga artist Sumire.

With the work of such Sumire as the first in the list, the book collection of shoujo manga that was deposited in large amount at her workplace was given to Liliana.

Because of her seriousness that came since birth and her workaholic nature, since Liliana came to earth she was busy in learning various things and didn't really come into contact with this thing called manga. For Liliana, her reading was mostly thick learning book. She wasn't familiar with book that mainly had picture in it.

Because of that, at first Liliana was smiling wryly from the really unfamiliar experience, but because it was something prepared for her with effort she gave it a try,

And the result was,

□Munch munch-, gulp-.....puhah. Aa, what's with this good-for-nothing. What are you doing just seeing her off there. Good grief, you don't understand a woman's heart..... Nn, continue to the next volume. Eerr, the next one, the next.....□

She got addicted, and she was not just merely, but totally addicted in the world of shoujo manga.

Liliana was lying down on the bed while right beside her was a bottle of Co○ Cola and a bag of potato chip constantly in standby, she brought them to her mouth while still lying down while dragging her body forward and reaching her other hand toward the next volumes of manga piled up without rising up her body at all. She had reached this kind of advanced level now.

In addition, she was in a state that wasn't concerned at all with her rolled up skirt, generously exposing her thighs that recently had become somewhat plump, in addition, she sucked up *chupa-* her fingers that got gleamingly oily from the potato chip before wiping up those fingers on her flipped up skirt.

Already, there wasn't even a shred of atmosphere as a former princess from her.

She was an existence that shut herself inside her own room in broad daylight, equipped with carbonated drink and potato chip, and continuously adventured to the world of literary creation without getting tiring of it.

Liliana S. B. Hairihi.

Right now she had become a genuinely splendid shut-in NEET without anything that could be complained of from her!

□How did it turn out like this.....□

Hajime who was standing beside the door of Liliana's room while looking at the state of such Liliana was pressing his head with one hand looking pained.

Certainly, it was Hajime who handed over the great amount of shoujo manga so that Liliana could enjoy her free time a bit. But, while that might be the case, he wondered just why in mere one month that work addict in abnormal pervert level could become a splendid shut-in NEET like this.

Hajime sighed while feeling troubled "Was the recoil from the work addiction too powerful?" at the former princess whose way of living was overly extreme.

And then, he approached toward Liliana who wasn't even noticing that Hajime was right behind her while she kept lying down and indulged in manga with her bare legs swinging up and down.

Standing beside the former princess whose panty's visibility wasn't just in glimpse anymore but already at completely exposed level, Hajime let out a deep sigh once more and held that plump butt in an eagle grip.

"Hinyah!? What is thisss!?"

Liliana's butt twitched up with her panty still fully exposed. Even so she didn't let go of her manga and she also didn't even stand up and only looked back across her shoulder. She then went "What, it's just Hajime-san" in understanding and smiled before returning to the world of manga without pause.

"No, don't go back there. Look over here, butt-naked princess."

"Bu, butt-naked princess.....that's a really cruel remark."

As expected, Liliana couldn't just accept the way Hajime called her and she raised her body squirmingly. Yet even so,

she only moved to a girl's sitting posture with her slovenly state unchanged seeing her skirt was still flipped up.

□And so what business do you have Hajime-san? As expected, it's to grope my butt? Ufufu, even though the sun is still high up.....the love of my husband is strong.□

After saying such thing, Liliana fidgeted around while closing her eyes and she pushed out her lips□Nn□. An oily lips that was gleaming from potato chip remains.

Hajime's shoulders was falling in dejection at Liliana who didn't have even a shadow of the proud princess in the past while inside his heart he was complaining□In a sense, Liliana might be number one if speaking about the level of things not going as planned□.

And then, he gently used a tissue to wipe up the lips of the potato chip princess who was waiting for a kiss.

Liliana felt an out of place sensation on her lips and she showed a puzzled expression at Hajime who kept wiping.

□Your current appearance, I wonder what the bunches at the kingdom will feel if they see it.□

□? Won't they think, 'she is really living in happiness', like that? I'm happy you know?□

□.....You also have potato chip and cola with you.□

□No, not really, that's not.....certainly, they are really delicious though. I also think that they are the strongest combo.Want to eat?□

Liliana tilted her head thinking□Perhaps, he want to eat too?□while she rolled her body and took a bag of potato chip

that was placed beside the pillow. And then, she rolled once more and returned to her former position with a really natural motion to get back to a girl's sitting posture.

And then, when she felt the lightness and silence of the potato chip bag she was presenting, she blinked "Eh?" and confirmed its content. The inside was already empty.

"Err, I thought it still has some remain....."

Giving only a glance at Hajime whose expression was gradually turning speechless, Liliana rolled and rolled once more to move to the edge of the bed. And then, she reached out her hand while still lying down and rummaged around under the bed searching for something.

"A, there is.Here, Hajime-san. Please take one."

She lifted up a box with a familiar movement, and then she took out that from the bag while hiding it with her body before she held out her hand smoothly toward Hajime. Right after that, from her arranged fingers, *chakin!* a po○ky flew out.

Liliana's face looked triumphant. It seemed she saw a commercial and wanted to imitate it. And then next while she was at it, her other hand that was held in front of her chest also had a po○ky *shakin-* flying out. She ate that one herself.

"....."

"This is really deliciousss"

Seeing Liliana who was smiling cheerfully while wordlessly doing 'aa~n' at him, Hajime was starting to show a tired expression all the more.

□.....So, about my business.□

□A, that's right. What's the matter?□

□No, it's not really a big matter, today is exactly the second month. I'm wondering how it turn out.□

□.....Ah, now that Hajime-san mention it.□

It seemed that she had completely forgotten the aim of being shut-in NEET. Liliana was making Ocky sticks went *shakin shakin* from her fingertips while nodding in understanding.Her fingertips *shakin* was surely using magic. Truly a waste of magic use.

Liliana smiled cheerfully and spread her hands widely as though to flaunt herself.

□Please look, Hajime-san. Hajime-san's strategy is right on the mark! I am splendidly free from any withdrawal symptoms even without doing any work, not just that I had turned into a normal girl who can think from the bottom of my heart that I don't want to do anything like work anymore!□

Liliana proclaimed energetically. An ambiguous groan □uboa□ leaked out from Hajime's mouth.

It was truly just like this princess-sama who was unable to live except in an extreme way of living. No, perhaps it was exactly because she was a royalty that she could only live extremely.....

□Lily. I don't know if you remember, but until the end this is a rehabilitation to cure your workaholic, it doesn't mean that it's fine for you to just roll around like this for your whole life you know?□

□Eh.....but, Hajime-san. If you work, you lose isn't that right?□

Hajime went□uboa□once more. This was no good, this former princess was no good already. Just within two months, she had thoroughly become a regretful princess.

□Listen, Lily. I am also an otaku, in my roots I'm with the indoor faction. That's why, I cannot unsparingly reject the saying to work is to lose. Tou-san also told me in the past, that a person who can become shut-in with their own money is the winner in a sense.□

□Hear that, just as I thought, we lose if we work!□

□Oi, are you listening to me? I said “your own money” just now.□

□Ee~rr, but, I am Hajime-san's wife.....in short, Hajime-san's money is my money——higyahn!?□

An iron forehead flick burst out toward Liliana who was talking like Giant.□My forehead-, my foreheaaad-□Liliana screamed while writhing around.

Liliana's skirt inevitably got rolled up once more with her panty completely laid bare. A vein pulsed on Hajime's forehead while he spitted out□I'll stop being gentle□and he put an eagle grip on her plump thigh.

□Fuwah. Wha, what are you doing Hajime-san. As I thought, you are craving me right from the afternoo——□

□This thigh has become really plump huh. It feels chubby.□

□Eh? Is, is that so?□

□Yeah. Far more than two months earlier.□

Hajime was giving an unblinking gaze while□This place too, and also here too huuh□he grasped at Liliana's butt and her upper arm.

Guessing what Hajime wanted to say, Liliana's girl power finally reacted. Her complexion was turning pale drastically.

Hajime's fingertip was sliding toward the most dangerous place on her body. Hajime's eyes kept being unblinking and he ignored even when Liliana tried to stop him, and pinched at that place.

——puni-

□Stooppp——!! Don't pinch my stomachhh-□

□Oi oi, what's this. What's with this flabby stomach? Hmm?□

□Tha, that's not it! This is, there is just a bit of that going this, should I say that it's.....□

Liliana was pressing on her stomach while her eyes were rolling round and round while she was desperately searching for excuse, but the scattered wreckage of snacks, the remains of carbonated drinks, they all stole the persuasiveness from her.

Hajime turned his heart into demon king and dealt the finishing blow to such Liliana.

□At this rate, in one more month.....the overweight princess Liliana will be completed.□

□O, overweight princess.□

Liliana crumbled down. It seemed that a sense of danger for her current situation was finally sprouting. She threw her poc○y *pei-* still with teary eyes. Furthermore, she took out Hap○y Turn from under the sheets and *pei-*. She took out a great amount of gummy from under her pillow and *pei-*. She reached out her hand under the bed and took out every kind of potato chip, Tonga○ Corn, Pota○ta Yaki, Do○tachos, boxes of ○maibou, Country ○'am, Cho○ Pie, etc.....and threw them all *pei-*. And for the last, she hopped up and down *pyon pyon* which caused candies to fall down from all over her clothes. She threw *peeeeeei-* all of them altogether. (TN: [Happy Turn](#), [Tongari Corn](#), [Pota Pota Yaki](#), [Dontachos](#), [Umaibou](#), [Country Ma'am](#), [Choco Pie](#))

The snacks built a mountain at the corner of the room. Just how much she had piled up?

□Hajime-san. It appears that I have the fate that I have to work no matter what.□

□You are going extreme again. Why cannot you do things in “moderation” huh?□

□I am Liliana. A woman who can only choose white or black, one or ten!□

□No, even if you proclaim like that it's still□

Liliana who was growing somewhat completely desperate caused Hajime to scratch his cheek wondering what to do.

But, at that time,

□I have heard the story!□

The closet of the room was thrown open *bam*. From there, the one who leaped out with a pointlessly refined somersault

was the mother of Nagumo family——Sumire. Just what was going on with the closets of Nagumo residence? It was terrifying because it felt like it would access another world at this rate.

Hajime ignored Sumire and investigated inside the closet. While he was doing that, Sumire made a cool pose while pointing with a snap at Liliana.

□Lily-chan! Become mine(my assistant). If you do that, then I'll give you half the work!□

□Yes, happily!□

In respond to that sentence of invitation that was like a certain demon king somewhere, the former princess replied swiftly like a certain pub worker somewhere. (TN: Anyone know the reference here?)

□Saay, Okaa-san. Just from where in the world you entered into this closet? There is no hole inside, and there is no way I won't notice if it is hidden.....□

Hajime turned around while his head was cocked in puzzlement. There was already no one else there.

□What.....the.....□

Hajime who didn't notice their presence exiting the room at all was astonished.

Hajime couldn't suppress his shudder against his mother who recently seemed to learn the skill of appearing at unexpected places and at unexpected moments. Actually, in the world of publishing business there was a rumor that Sumire-sensei was a real life Dorae○n though.....

It was story of a bit later when it was finally known that it was because Sumire was using and applying the artifacts that Hajime created in preparation for the worst case or artifacts for making the daily life convenient.

Hajime knowing the fact that his mother was using the artifacts even more skilled than himself which caused him to fall on all fours, it was also a story of a bit later.

Part 2

☆ Shoujo Manga Artist Lily

□ Thank god~, you really saved me, Lily-chan. I thought that you can become a battle-ready force because your fingers are dexterous, but this surpass my expectation.□

□ I'm honored that I can be useful. I myself is having fun getting involved with the creation work of manga.....□

It was about a week after Sumire took away Liliana without Hajime even noticing to become her work's assistant.

Because several of Sumire's assistants who were working with her until now suddenly got sick or had family problem, she became short of hand all of a sudden and in need of substitute assistant in a hurry.

Of course, because Sumire was a big-shot manga artist, the publisher would prepare excellent assistant even in such situation. But, Sumire who knew that recently Liliana got really addicted with shoujo manga thought that this was a good chance and she tried making Liliana became her helper.

As the result, Liliana who was skillful and possessed uncommon concentration power from the start managed to learn the skill that wasn't inferior even when compared with veteran assistant in just a week. Now she had become a very satisfactory battle force.

It appeared that manga creation work suited Liliana. The work also had a moderate pressure where she couldn't bear to make a mess of the manuscript that was drawn by Sumire who was someone she loved, it needed precise attentiveness, it had a clear time limitation that was the deadline, and the work amount was also quite much.

And then, the best thing for Liliana above all else, was that this work "wasn't a work that she was forced to do". It was a work that Liliana liked where the factor that she was helping Sumire was strong.

In a sense, it could be said that this work was fit for Liliana to a T.

□Fufu, Lily-chan. Right now you are making a really good face you know? You have shadow under your eye, but it feels more like something healthy and fulfilling.□

□Yes. Perhaps this is the first time I'm getting absorbed in work with an excited feeling like this.□

They had just somehow finished the manuscript in time right before the deadline. Now they were talking to each other leisurely while drinking café au lait that was filled with a lot of milk. The other assistants were also unanimously praising Liliana's work attitude.

Here she wasn't standing in the lead. They all were working hard together where everyone was praising their peers. It was something really fresh for Liliana and gave her a great sense of fulfillment.

□So Lily-chan. I asked you to come helping for the time being but, what will you do after this. If it's okay with you, I'll employ you formally.□

□Sumire-okaasama——no, Sumire-sensei, if it's fine with you then please, by any means.□

The two exchanged a firm handshake with each other.

Like this, the workaholic part-time leader had gone through being a shut-in NEET and finally become a shoujo manga artist's assistant.

Half a year after that.

□Haa, Sumire-okaasama. As I thought, it's just no good. It's fine already, so please go back to your own work.□

□What are you saying now. There is still time. It's too fast for you to give up.□

□Uu, but.....□

Liliana dejectedly turned her eyes to the clock on the wall. It was just a bit more until the time limit.

Well-balanced meal and the fierce and violent battlefield that was the approaching deadline had shaved off the excessive fat from Liliana's body. However, in reverse her body build became just right—even though she was slim, yet her style became voluptuous and her sensuality increased considerably. There was also how her age had turned seventeen years old, her charm as a woman was increasing by far and away.

Liliana who was putting on such adult sensuality was now in a state that was being down, for some reason it caused anyone who was looking at her to harbor various desire without reason.

□Come one, don't be that down. Lily-chan is the prized pupil of this Sumire-sensei, that's why hold yourself more confidently.□

□Sumire-okaasama.....that's right. Besides, even Hajime-san is a person who won't give up until the end. It's no good if I give up now.□

Liliana clenched her small fist and made an appeal of not giving up.

Now then, if it was asked what Liliana and Sumire were waiting together for, they were waiting for a call.

In this half a year, Liliana whose heart was completely stolen by the world of literary creation had increased her skill by a great margin. And then, she made her superabundance delusion to erupt and secretly drew her own shoujo manga, but Sumire who knew that invited her to apply for the Rookie of the Year Award.

Today was the day where the winner would be announced. If someone won a place then they would be told by phone. If there wasn't any call until the appointed time, then that meant that their work was rejected.

The work where she poured her heart and blood got evaluated by other people. This experience that was the first for her was heightening Liliana's nervousness to a new height.

Seeing Liliana who was staring fixedly at the needle of the clock, Sumire who thought inside her heart□The nervous face of Lily-chan who recently grew into a completely lewd body—not that, she recently look adult.....it's unbearableeee□unconsciously reached out her hand squirmingly, it was at that time,

——purururururururu-

□!?

□I'm sorry-, it's just a sudden impulse! Forgive me!□

The resounding ringtone caused Liliana to stand up in a flash. She left behind Sumire who for some reason was apologizing while making excuse and took her smartphone into her hand.

She answered the phone timidly, and a beat later, her expression turned bright in a flash. She expressed words of thanks□Thank you very much-□many times while bowing her head repeatedly as though she was a pure Japanese person.

Like that after Liliana cut off the phone, she leaped toward Sumire who was smiling broadly from guessing the result.

□I did it, Sumire-okaasama! I, I did it!□

□You see, it's just as I told you right? I told you it will be fine if it's Lily-chan. And, which place you won?□

□Yes, it's the first place! The number one! The grand victor!□

□Oh my. I thought that it might be possible, but you actually really took it. As expected from Lily-chan.□

It seemed that Lily's submitted work took first place.

After that, the work of Liliana who took the Rookie of the Year Award obtained an explosive popularity and it sold out like hot cakes.

Surely her being a relative and also a prized pupil of that famous shoujo manga artist great Sumire-sensei was also one of the factors of her high newsworthiness.

By the way, the story of the manga was about the journey of a talentless young man who was summoned to another world, where he brushed aside adversity until he defeated an evil god, in the process of that journey the main character was connecting his heart with the princess of the kingdom. It was a really common love fantasy genre.

In the middle of the journey, the princess of vampire, rabbit-eared girl, a dragon onee-san, a widow and her daughter, the teacher and girl classmates who were summoned together with the young man made their appearance and they had a nice atmosphere with the young man, but the young man's heart was leaning toward the princess of the kingdom. Like that, there was also the desire of certain someone laid bare in the content of the story.

It went without saying that Liliana was given a coo~~~Id chilly gaze from the wives who were reading the manga.

Although, even though the story was something common, the emotion of the characters, the story's development, and the scene depiction were something overflowing with realisty as though the creator had seen it with her own eyes. It seemed that caused it to be received by the readers.

Now then, Liliana who had discovered something for her to live for, became Sumire second gen, and took a seat in manga world, inside such person there was a trait that couldn't be ignored by the people related with business world.

That was her elegance as a royalty that she had recovered from discovering something to live for. And then, her personality and beauty that once in the past charmed millions of people. In addition, was her refined sex appeal that recently she was clad with.

In short, she had the appearance and personality that was extremely appealing for media.

Because of that, once she showed up in things like autograph session or interview, her popularity exploded greatly separated from the manga.

After all, because she was a former princess she was used with going out in front of a lot people, she also had the full knowledge of what kind of expression she needed to give the impression she wanted to other. Compared to probing the gut of each other against foreign negotiator or noble, just making herself to be received favorably by the mass was just too easy.

Because she was recognized as the prized pupil of great Sumire-sensei by society, there was no way she could smear mud on the face of her treasured mother-in-law. She also wanted to respond to the feeling of her fans who said to her that they liked her manga.

Liliana who was thinking like that displayed her princess skill in full without holding anything back.

As the result, a year after Liliana started her activity as shoujo manga artist, at the time when her manga was decide to be turned into anime in an unprecedented speed, Liliana was,

□Everyy~~one! Thank you very much for coming today! Anime decision☆ Congratulations! This is Lily who will sing the theme song as the work's creator dee~~su! I'll sing with my all, so please enjoy it okay!□

——WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!!

While a thousand fans raised their loud cheers (because the ticket was limited, only a thousand people could enter), Liliana stood on a stage wearing a cute outfit like an idol, and then she sent a wink *pachin-*

The former princess, former part-time leader, former shut-in NEET, and the popular shoujo manga artist, was now turning into an existence that was laying her hand on the seat of top idol.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry that Lily arc turn long.

I'll end it in the next chapter, after that I'll write a bit of the wives who didn't get spotlight, and I'm also thinking of trying to write about the Getting Kidnapped Too Much Case.

Incidentally, in the main story, is there any section that feels like□This part is written vaguely, more detail please□? Sometimes in the middle of writing I often thought 'I want to try writing it in more detail someday', but the After and extra story are too fun that those things are completely at far distance of the memory.

If you have request, then please don't hold back and tell me whether through review or message.

The next update is planned to be be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II I Become the Deity of the New World? Second Part

AN: This chapter is a bit late, I'm sorry!

Part 1

☆Top Idol Lily

In the center of a dressing room that was quite large, Liliana who was buried in bouquets and also presents and letters from fans was moving her pen with a terrific momentum *scratch scratch scratch scratch* while still dressed in a cute stage dress.

Without even feeling bothered that her fingertips were dirtied with ink, she kept moving her pen with a momentum that felt like it would even produce afterimage. The reason for this was of course in order to draw her manga.

There wasn't even thirty minutes until her next show. And then once she stood on the stage she wouldn't be able to make it to the deadline. Therefore, she had to finish her manuscript in less than this thirty minutes!

whoosh Liliana's left hand reached out. What that hand grasped was a Calory Ote. It was a really excellent ration if you ignored how it would turn lumpy inside the mouth. She had no time to eat since the morning, so she replenished her nourishment like this. (TN: I never ate Calorie Mate before and the author here is using a word パッサパサ(passa pasa) that I cannot find the meaning, to describe the sensation. I just put the word lumpy as placeholder, anyone know how to describe the sensation of eating Calorie Mate?)

And, at that timing, regardless of how Liliana's had asked the staffs so that no one entered the room until she decided

time, the door of the dressing room was knocked.

Liliana whose princess skill was lively even in this kind of time was replying brightly with a voice that would make anyone who heard it to feel happy despite how Liliana's eyes didn't even look away from her manuscript and how her hand also didn't stop moving.

□Ye~~s. The door is not locked~□

□Eerr, excuse us.□

□E, excuse us for the intrusion.□

Seeing the people who entered, then indeed, they were people who weren't a problem even if the staffs let them enter.

□Ah, Kaori! Also even Shizuku! You two really came for me!□

Just as Liliana said, the people who timidly entered inside the dressing room were Kaori and Shizuku. The two of them were making a really speechless expression toward Liliana who was surrounded by bouquets and many other things, wearing a showy dress, yet her fingertips were dirtied by ink while diligently drawing pictures.

□Somehow, you really feel like an entertainer here..... Eer, so, Lily. You suddenly sent that kind of mail, □Emergency! Emergency! Hee~lp-. Especially Kaori!□, just what in the world with that?□

Just as Kaori said, Liliana sent reinforcement request to the wives.

It seemed that she especially needed Kaori's reinforcement, the reason for that was,

□Yes, I'm glad that it's Kaori who arrived first. I'm sorry for the hurry, but please use the magic to prolong time. Also, it has to be finished in about twenty minutes.....for now, please expand the time difference to ten times. Ah, Shizuku sit over there, please help with the inking.□

□□Eee~~~□□

It seemed this former princess at last found herself lacking time and she now attempted to solve the problem using magic. Asking to use magic that interfered even with the principle of the world in order to finish a manuscript—it was a special bargain sale of an age of god magic. In a sense, it could be said that this was really fitting for a wife of the demon king.

Kaori and Shizuku couldn't hide their complicated face after hearing the reason they were called here.

□I understand that you are really in trouble but.....somehow I don't really feel it at all.□

When Kaori unconsciously muttered that, Liliana lifted her face and showed a crisp expression.

And then,

□Kaori.□

□Eh, wha, what is it, Lily?□

□I am Liliana. A woman who will do anything if it's to protect the deadline.□

□Aa~, yep, that's right.□

Kaori went "Well, isn't it fine" and sent a half-smile at the crisp Liliana while releasing her age of god magic. With this, a ten-fold time difference was created between inside this room and outside it.

For a while, the sound of *scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch* and the sound of *splat splat, plop plop* resounded inside the room. Putting aside the content of the manga, both Kaori and Shizuku knew very well that Liliana was working hard, so they seriously endeavored to help her.

Like that, after around an hour, some more reinforcement arrived. It was Hajime, Yue, and Shia. Even while they too showed an exasperated face at the reason they were called here, their thought toward Liliana was already like "Good grief, just go until as far as you can go", and so they began to participate in helping her.

"Hey, Lily. When we passed through beside the stage just now....."

"Yes? What is it?"

While Yue and Shia were obediently helping, Hajime suddenly started talking.

"Somehow, two people who I recognize really well were wearing black suits and sunglasses while doing otagei with really smooth move. That wasn't just my hallucination right?" (TN: Otagei=Fans who were yelling and dancing at pop concerts)

"Aah, about Shinji-san and Yoshiki-san."

".....As I thought, it's those two huh."

□Yes. You don't know Hajime-san? Those two right now are starting up a security firm and working as bodyguard that specialized in protecting celebrity. This time they are accepting to guard my concert also because they are acquaintance.□

Liliana was tilting her head while saying incomprehensible thing like□Since they became a hot topic that “the otagei of the black suited bodyguards is godly”, it seems they are also undertaking the role of the captain of the groupies□.

Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki.

Those two who were the bunches who once were doing spiteful harassment toward Hajime, after the death of Hiayama Daisuke and Kondo Reiichi who they often hanged out with, they began to change little by little. They displayed a desperately earnest fight in the legendary decisive battle even when facing the apostles and right now they didn't hold any antagonism even against Hajime.

Such Shinji and Yoshiki, after graduating from high school they were living aimlessly without doing particularly anything, but just recently they started up a security firm that specialized in guarding celebrity.

They were wearing uniform of black suit and sunglasses which would make anyone want to give a straight-man retort that they watched too many movie, but their skill as bodyguard was super first class. Their experience in facing monster and god's apostle in another world was something that couldn't possibly be surpassed by the like of suspicious person, so it could be said that this was only natural. They had already piled up many achievements and received deep trust from the world of show business.

And those two, from piling up many days of being the security of idol concert, they saw the groupies who were doing otagei activity and it seemed that for some reason they got triggered. While those two were standing at both sides of the stage to keep a watchful eye for anyone suspicious, they displayed generously the physical ability their body was blessed with and completely and thoroughly copied the otagei moves.

Since a video of two bodyguards wearing black suits and sunglasses doing otagei with really smooth move was uploaded in a certain video site, they were treated as god of otagei world and won a popularity that wasn't inferior even against the idols at the present from a part of the community.

Rather, their fame was so much that there were even people who came to the concert just to witness the “dancing black suited bodyguards”.

□Nn, their dance was really amazing.□

Yue said that while lifting her hand midair. She connected spaces using space magic and tried to secretly have a look.

Like that a hole manifested midair and the spectacle at the other sight of that hole was——

□Lily-, Lily-! Fuuh, fuuh, fuuh, fuuh!!□

□You guys-, put your soul more into it! Heat up the concert with your whole body and spirit! Here are the audience seats. But this place is also another stage-□

Shinji was waving around a light stick with really smooth moves while inciting up more shouts of support for Lily. Yoshiki was showing a movement that was completely

synchronized with his partner while passionately leading the groupies.

□Ca, captain. The movement is just too intense, my stamina is already.....□

□These dancing bodyguards.....they are monster.□

One person, then one more person, the group of otaku was collapsing before the concert was starting. By the way, the captain referred to Shinji, while Yoshiki was called as the demonic vice-captain.

Shinji who was dancing single-mindedly while dressed in a smart black suit shouted at the collapsed otakus.

□Is this fine with you? Ending it here like this.□

□Eh?□

□Are you fine with this, giving up on everything.□

□Cap, tain?□

The group of otaku who was heaving and drenched in sweat, turned their eyes toward Shinji who was smoothly dancing.

□We are, the people who protect the idols. We protect their body, their heart, we are the people who offer them our life so they can shine!□

The smoothness in Shinji's dance was gradually increasing. It was truly a master-class otagei that was filled with soul and spirit!

□Stand up you guys! Never Give Up! If someone doesn't give up, then they will surely be able to reach the summit of their dream! A man taught that to me!□

The gazes of Yue and others turned toward Hajime. Surely if talking about a man who exerted strong influence to Shinji and others, then it could only mean Hajime.

Shinji's words that were overflowing with spirit caused one of the collapsed otaku to ask in amazement. Even during that time, Shinji was drawing a beautiful trajectory of light stick in the air while demonstrating an artistic dance.

□Captain. Just what is your dream? Just what is it, that make you go until this far!?!□

It was a heated question that came from an otaku who was somehow swallowed by the place's atmosphere. Right now, the people who collapsed, and also the people who didn't, everyone was drenched in sweat while directing a serious gaze at Shinji.

□What is this for, you ask? That's obvious.□

Shinji looked at them, and then he looked at his pal, then he declared powerfully!

□It's to-, HAVE A SHOTGUN WEDDING WITH IDOL-!!!□

DOLL DOLL DOLL~~, the proclamation of Shinji was echoing inside the concert venue that was in the middle of preparation. It echoed really clearly.

.....It seemed, that was the main reason why they founded a security firm that specialized in celebrity. Yoshiki beside Shinji was looking up to the sky while his lips formed a thin line as though he was biting his lip against something.

□Wha, what are you saying!? Something like that is obviously impossible! It just cannot happen!□

The otaku who asked just now argued. But, such words didn't reach Shinji. The reason was, because Shinji had seen it. In a world where he was walking along right beside death, he had witnessed the indomitable spirit of that man!

□No, it's not impossible! Because I know! I know a man who even though he was dropped into the bottom of hell, even though he faced nothing but despair-, yet he continued to struggle without giving up and created a harem-. A man who day after day, is always having a debauch party with transcendently beautiful girls-. The man who reached the summit-□

gachari A sound rang. When Yue and others came back to their senses with a 'hah' and turned their gaze toward the sound, over there they saw the figure of Hajime drawing out Donner. It seemed he was planning to snipe at Shinji through the connected spaces. In panic, Shia moved to stop him using Cobra Twist.

□Even we, if we don't give up we should be able to achieve a shotgun wedding with idol! We should be able to do it! Or rather, about this matter, even if we put aside Nagumo, I just cannot grasp how the hell that Endo can create harem-. Why, why Endo? Why am I no good huh? Forget harem, there ain't even any sign I'll be able to get a girlfriend y'know. Or rather, there ain't even any encounter. There ain't even a tiny bit of it! I ain't popular at the level 'am I actually cursed as retaliation for harassing the demon king in the past?' level already here! GODDAMN IT ALLLLLLLLLL-□

Right now the light stick was leaving behind afterimages while Shinji's otagei was showing a movement that was unthinkable to be at the level of human. That was, the dance of someone who had stepped their foot into the territory of god! The manifestation of the overflowing yell of the soul!

□Captain.....a person like you is.....□

□Are you trying, to challenge the impossible.....□

□Heh. What an idiot. But, I don't hate it yeah, a passionate idiot like you.□

The otaku group was starting to stand back up! Perhaps they felt sympathy at that yell of the soul that laid everything bare. A fearless grin was emerging on every single one of their——

Yue closed the space.

□.....Nn. Lily. Is this okay?□

□Ah, yes. Yue-san. Your precise work really helps.□

□Yes, Lily. I also finished here. What's next?□

□As expected from Shizuku. That's an excellent work. Please do this next.□

They resumed their work as though nothing had happened. It seemed they decided that they didn't see anything. Even Hajime who ate a smooth transition from Cobra Twist to Triangle Choke by Shia also obediently go back to his seat.

□Come to think of it Lily. Is there anything particular in your surrounding?□

□Anything, particular?□

Hajime asked while he was rubbing his neck. Liliana sent Hajime a glance while tilting her head without dropping the speed of her pen at all.

Hajime was putting tone on his manuscript page while nodding "Yeah".

"Look, recently my existence became known right? Especially because Kaa-san dropped the bomb."

"Yes. Well, even if Hajime-san called it dropping the bomb, but I too am calling Sumire-okaasama as "okaa-sama" normally, so it became known with natural flow though."

"No, not just about your relationship with me, but also about this and that in private."

Those words caused Liliana's face to spontaneously turn red.

Just some time ago, when Liliana received interview in television, Sumire also participated there as a special guest. At that time, Sumire jokingly said "Liliana is the wife of my son you know, so don't make a move on her okay~".

If that was all then it would be nothing big because it was something already known, but Sumire who got carried away then dropped the bomb by frankly exposing a part of the married private life between Liliana and her son. That was already a talk that could smash apart the dream of the male fans into pieces.

Furthermore, Sumire also casually said "It's not just Lily-chan you know~" while giving hints that Liliana's partner actually also had other women and he had an indulging relationship with those women too.

Naturally, there was no way the media wouldn't bite at the impure private life of Liliana-sensei who was a beautiful manga artist and also an idol who was at the peak of her popularity, though Hajime crushed the commotion before it could create a stir.

Thanks to that, *for some reason* the topic wasn't getting excessively discussed in TV shows and the like, but even so it didn't mean that there wasn't any effect at all.

One of the effects was the rash acting of a part of the wildly fanatic fans.

□Before this too, you almost got attacked by a reckless fan right? Who knows what can happen.□

□Perhaps that is so but, currently there is no sing like that. Besides, I'm not so weak that a civilian can take me by surprise. I have also trained much in "Hauria-style close quarter hand-to-hand combat art ~This is the bunnies' way y'know~" from Shia-san's direct teaching.□

□.....□

Hajime's gaze turned toward Shia. Shia looked aside. When Hajime muttered□It's really fresh how the style name is accompanied with subtitle there□, Shia's cheeks blushed with a puff. There was no doubt that her currently invisible rabbit ears were surely a flopped down rabbit ears from shame.

□Rather than that, everyone. Can you all come to listen to my concert today?□

Liliana changed the topic to wave off Hajime's worry and also implying that she was fine. Hearing that question, Hajime and others looked at each other's face.

This was the stage where their important family was standing on. Although they had attended her concert several times before this, it was impossible for them to go home after coming this far. Their answer could only be one.

With an unanimous decision, they would cheer at the idol wife, and idol fellow wife.

After that, Liliana who somehow managed to finish the manuscript before the deadline handed it over to her editor with a really nice smile. The editor gave a thumb up with a posed look before she straddled her beloved motorcycle Kawasaki's Ninja ZX10-R and vanished into the city.

—Though she was a woman who finally welcomed her 60th birthday this year.....

Like that the last concert for today began. Liliana in her fluttery and frilly dress lavishly sent winks and *twinkle-☆* and heated up the venue.

Below that stage, even the two black suited and sunglasses bodyguards who were taking position as security while demonstrating smooth otagei like they were possessed, they were greatly heating up the venue by becoming one with the otaku group whose gaze seemed to conceal some kind of determination.

After the concert closed the curtain with enthusiasm and excitement and fulfillment, surprisingly there was still works for Liliana to attend an autograph and handshake session. Even while Hajime and others were getting exasperated with just how much work she was doing, they still stood from slight distance away and watched over Liliana who was currently mass producing fans with her 'former princess & real idol smile-!'

Fan number 1——a silver haired and mismatched eyes young man with atmosphere like a stepping stool reincarnator. (TN: Fumidai tenseisha (stepping stool reincarnator) = a term for characters who are used as foil to make other character look good, or characters that tried to carry out wicked scheme only to meet unfortunate end themselves at the end. Like Kouki or Hiyama, I guess. I just looked up this term in a hurry, so please correct me if my understanding is wrong.)

□ Lily-sensei. I'm a great fan! It's a lie that you have a husband right!? □

□ Thank you very much. Can I trouble you to teach me your name? □

□ Eh, ah, I'm Satoshi. □

□To Satoshi-san, here. Thank you very much for always coming to my concert. Please come again next time okay? □

□ Yo, you remember me.....yes-. I'll absolutely come! I will cheer for you! □

Fan number 2——a girl with her front hair styled like Sada○.

□ Sensei. What do you think about love between the same gender? □

□ Can you please tell me your name? □

□ u.....○ko, desu. □

□ Aah, you are the person who were always cramming your fan letter with the words "I love you" aren't you? Thank you

very much. I'm happy that a cute girl like you is supporting me.

a, u

Please support me from here on too.

yes

Fan number 3—A male hero wearing a high-class suit that had the embroidery of super-deformed Lily.

Lily-sensei. I come here today bringing a marriage registration. Please, give your sign at here.

That's a splendid embroidery no matter how many times I see it. What's more, it always has different pattern each time. If I remember correctly, you sewed it yourself right? I feel embarrassed somehow, thank you very much. So it's fine if I sign here then. Fufu, what a humorous person.

Say, Lily-sensei. I cannot read this though.....are these letters from a country somewhere?

They are Hairihi Kingdom letters.Is it, no good?

-. Don't be absurd. Though I will be happy if next time I can have you write it in Japanese.

My. Ufufu. Then, please come again at the next concert okay?

Of course.

Fan number 4——An onee-sama person who was strangely muscular

□Lily-chaaan! The concert today is also reeaally great!!□

□Dear me, I'm totally moved□

□Fufu, thank you very much for every time. It's because all of you onee-sama are always cheering up with loud voices(deep voices) that I immediately notice when onee-sama's group is coming.□

□Oh noes, how embarrassing. When we are excited, our voice unconsciously turned ju~st a little bit burly you knooww□

□Oi, just now, someone said□It's not the level of burly anymore. That voice was completely like the voice of beast□, who's the guy saying that, aaa!? I'm gonna butche——cough-. I'll give him punishment mon.□

□Now now, Kenji——cough-. Reika-san. If you make that kind of gallant face(berserker face), everyone will be charmed(traumatized) you know? Rather than that, please come next time too without fail. I also want to meet all the other onee-sama.□

□Ah geez, Lily-chan, you always know what to say to make us happy. Yes, of course, we will come to cheer for you again. After all we, the members of “Manly Woman Path”, all of us love Lily-chan so much!□

Even while conversing intimately with the fans, Liliana was still handling the long queue so swiftly it was a mystery.

Seeing her like that, Hajime commented briefly.

□So deep.□

It seemed he commented about the fans.

By the way, all those fans would participate in the event where Liliana appeared every time without fail, so Hajime and others also knew their face. And then, Hajime became really uneasy with their speech and conduct, so he investigated their background from feeling worried.

What he understood from the result was, for example the fan number 1 the young man, his appearance was completely like a stepping stool reincarnator, but actually he was a splendid monk with priesthood. He disguised(?) himself using wig and colored contact and attended Lily's event secretly.

Furthermore, fan number 2 the girl, she was actually the young daughter of Japan's preeminent great conglomerate that managed long-standing department stores. Fan number 3 the male hero was the oldest son of a lawyer family that had continued for generations, a son of the current chairman of JF○A. Fans number 4 were the Japan version Chrysta—the leaderships of an organization that took control of the underworld of the underworld of the pleasure district of the whole Japan. (TN: Japan Federation of Bar Associations. Btw, will I get any problem by brazenly putting the censored names like this? Should I put some censoring?)

Other than them, there was a frog faced virtuoso doctor that was said to possess god's hand, a detective that often said 'in the name of my grandfather', a super high school student level female high school student, an unfortunate looking young man that called a fat kitty cat□sensei□, a foreigner whispering□The human of this star is——□while holding a

canned coffee in one hand.....etc (TN: See at the reader comments below if you want to know the reference.)

Certainly they were really deep. Those fans came from a deep fan stratum. There was no doubt that inside Liliana there was an ability to attract people. And then, she conversed intimately with those men and women of deep character, sometimes she ignored them, sometimes she led them on, and she then ended the conversation in a pleasant note and sent them back. Seeing her figure like that reminded Hajime and others of the princess who once fiercely fought against the nobles and empire diplomats using smiling face and dignity and words (thorn and indirect implication are optional).

□It's true they have deep personality but.....how should I say it, Lily's personality, it's different from normal idol, it's.....□

Kaori spoke in hesitation while her cheeks were twitching. Yue and others supplemented on her saying with an expression that seemed to say that they really understood what she meant.

□.....They are clingy.□

□I can feel obsession from them desuu□

□Perhaps this is saying too much but.....recently I also feel something like worship from them.□

Exactly like they said, actually a really small proportion——in places like BBS in internet and so on, a topic that talked about 'there are a lot of fellows with screw loose among Lily-sensei's fans' was spreading.

□Is this really fine?□

Kaori was staring at Liliana worriedly. Following her, Hajime and others were also staring at the figure of the idol princess who was showing a natural and perfect smile that was overflowing with so much elegance and intimacy.

For Liliana who had been competing against veteran nobles and foreign diplomats since her childhood, it was a trifling matter to pound a degree of information of her fans into her head. If she could exchange words with them for just once, she would never forget their face, and if she conversed with them just for a bit, even from just that she would see through what kind of gesture and way of talking they would like and dealt with them using that.

Against someone like that, there was no way an idol fans wouldn't have their heart captured, which continuously increased the production of fanatic fans even now.

Like that, by the time the line was handled until only half remained, the worry of Hajime and co became reality.

□Sorry but, you can stop right there.□

Before Hajime and others moved, Shinji who was standing by near Liliana quietly walked forward and called at one of the fans to stop moving. At the same time, Yoshiki moved casually beside Liliana.

□Eh, eh? Wha, what is it?□

□.....I won't say anything bad. Just go home for now. I don't want to create a disturbing topic in this kind of place.□

It was a man who looked like a fan who was told right to the face□Please leave□by a black suited bodyguard. The fan looked cowering without any composure, but behind his

hanging down long hair could be seen a glaring gaze peeking out.

The young man argued vehemently with small stifled voice why it was only him that got stopped like this. Shinji's gesture and gaze expressed that he would never let the man pass. The overwhelming pressure from Shinji that was different from a civilian greatly scared the young man while also made him lost a bit of temper.

The bright atmosphere until now completely changed and the fans and staffs at the surrounding felt a strained tension in the air. While they were staring uneasily between the young man and Shinji, Liliana who guessed the situation stood up.

□Shinji-san. I'll be fine, so please let that person through.□

□No, but still. This is also pretty much my work.....□

Liliana called at Shinji. Shinji frowned with a troubled look while looking behind over his shoulder.

But, at that time, the atmosphere of the young man who was shrinking away from Shinji suddenly changed entirely. His fingertips that were moving restlessly stopped still.

□Shinji? Right now, you called that man by name? That man who should be a mere security guard?□

That voice was small and sounded a bit stuttering like before. However, a hint of dangerousness that came from boiling great emotion could be felt from it.

Perhaps the people at the surrounding also felt that hint of danger, they were starting to take distance like a tide drawing back.

In the middle of that, it was only Liliana who kept staring straight at the young man and she nodded.

□Yes. I called him by name just now. Because he is my friend.□

□You act as you please again in a place where I don't know. What a bad child. You always always, with other man at a place where I don't know. Even though I have been this patience like this. Even though I was thinking of forgiving you about that self-proclaimed husband too.□

□Forgiving? Why, do I need your forgiveness? What is that forgiveness for?□

□Shut up-. I won't forgive you anymore-. Unforgivable-□

The young man was talking incoherently, however, seeing Liliana who was staring straight at him without faltering and asked him back, the young man faltered in return and he shouted.

Like that, he entered his hand into his breast pocket and took out a kitchen knife from there. Before this the security had carried out inspection when audiences entered at the beginning, so it was unclear how this young man could bring in something like that. Shinji and Yoshiki grimaced at the hole in security.

The surrounding people screamed and they backed further away. They were forming a circle around Liliana and the others where there was nobody else other than them.

Hajime looked like he was going to move at the corner of her sight, but Liliana stopped him with her gaze. In respond Hajime scratched his cheek before he leaned his back on the wall to show he that he was watching carefully. That

gestured showed his trust toward her, at the same time it also expressed Hajime's intent that no matter how the situation ended up he would help her dealing with it. Liliana's cheeks loosened slightly seeing that.

Although, for the young man, it seemed he saw that smile as something that was mocking him. He shouted "So you are also laughing at me-" while charging forward with the kitchen knife raised high.

Shinji sighed while clenching his fist to subdue the young man. But, beside him a silhouette stepped forth smoothly.

Of course, it was Liliana. Behind, Yoshiki leaked out a stupid voice "Ah".

"You-, you forever, belongs to meee-"

"First, you should hear what other people say."

The kitchen knife was swung down. The surrounding people held their breath. They screamed and averted their eyes from the tragedy that would happen in the next moment.

In an instant.

The up and down of the young man was reversed.

"Ah, eh?"

The young man leaked out a confused voice at himself who before he knew it was rolling on the floor with just a light impact.

"I don't know what kind of life you have experienced until now, but I'll feel troubled if you are demanding from me the

responsibility for that feeling where things cannot go as you wished it.□

The young man came back to his senses from those words of Liliana. He forcefully stood up once more and rushed while shouting again. He thought that surely just now he only slipped.

But, the result was the same.

Just before he could touch Liliana, his field of vision was overturned in a circle and he then faced up to the sky along with a light impact.

This time he understood. That he was thrown down by Liliana.

The humiliation and the reality that wouldn't move like how he wanted caused the young man to spew out words that were already hard to comprehend while this time he charged forward trying to stab his knife.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected. The arm that he thrust out was softly grasped, right after that the young man's body revolved around Liliana once like a satellite in contrary to his wish. He was swung around back to the path he just came from and then he was pushed away by one of Liliana's hand.

□I'm very good in remembering people's face. However, I don't remember you.□

The screaming young man charged. Liliana's arm rolled up his arm, and then she twirled beside him as though she was dancing on the stage and she flung away the young man with a really natural flow.

□You-□

□In other words, you had never came to an event where I participated even once. Isn't that correct?□

The young man was only thrown without any pain. The young man whose face was dyed bright red from shame and rage was rapidly approaching while swinging around his kitchen knife senselessly, but.....the arms of Liliana who smoothly stepped close to the young man gripped his collar, at the same time, the young man was thrown down to look up to the sky without being able to offer any resistance.

□Most likely, you had watched me through television at home. And then, it caused you to hold an emotion that lead you until you are causing something like this. But, is that really something that you wished for?□

Irimi Nage(Stepping-in Throw)

Kote Gaeshi(Wrist Reversal)

Shihou Nage(Four Directions Throw)

Tenchi Nage(Heaven and Earth Throw)

Kokyu Nage(Respiration Throw)

Kaiten Nage(Rotation Throw)

Liliana was talking about the situation while continuing to knock down the young man unharmed with her techniques at the center of the empty circle.

□Oi, Shia. Is that the “This is the bunnies’ way y’know” you taught Lily?□

□Please don't mention the subtitle..... I don't really teach her anything. I taught her the basic of hand-to-hand fighting, and also the basic of Aikido more or less, but in the first place I'm not someone who is using that kind of flowing Aikido.□

□But, isn't that guy practically handled by bunnies there?□

□That's why please stop it with the bunnies, Hajime-san. That's something that Lily-san learned by herself. It seems she watched the technique in internet video and copied from that.□

□What's with that learning aikido through correspondence. Is that girl actually a hidden buggy character huh?□

□Isn't that right desu. She is already in the level where it might be dangerous for me if I don't use physical reinforcement in our bout. I tasted the terror of Aikido before this. Well, even so I don't really have the motivation to learn it though. As I thought, for a rabbit it has to be an impactful battle that made your blood boil and your flesh dance.□

□Just what kind of rabbit you are huh? Ah, you are a rabbit from another world.□

While Hajime and Shia were conversing about Liliana's hidden talent, a sobbing sound was starting to echo in the venue before one knew it.

When they looked at there, the aforementioned young man was crouching while raising a sad weeping voice. As for Liliana, there wasn't even a single crease on her frilly idol dress and her breathing also wasn't disordered at all.

The audiences were still petrified from admiration and shock. Shinji and Yoshiki were taking out Uma○bou from

somewhere and turned completely into spectators. What happened with being a bodyguard?

Liliana approached the young man who was continuing to do nothing but crying in a posture that looked like half prostration. And then, she began to gently brush the young man's head.

□It's painful isn't it? It's so tiring, so much so that you cannot stand up anymore isn't it?□

It appeared that while Hajime and Shia were conversing, Liliana had gotten out the circumstance of the young man from him. And it seemed that Hajime and co had interest in the young man's circumstance and emotional state as much as they had interest with the darkened skid mark on the road that they completely failed to hear the story.

Feeling the sensation of the gentle brushing on his head, the young man raised his head in astonishment while crying. Liliana smiled gently to him. And then, she whispered something into his ear.

When the young man received those words, his face that got soppy from tears and snots became even more disheveled and he broke out crying loudly once more.

Liliana gently brushed the young man's head once more. She looked like a mother consoling her child.

It appeared that she succeeded in persuading the madly rampaging young man. A completely speechless air was flowing inside the astonished concert venue.

Hajime ran his gaze through the venue, before he suddenly started clapping. Of course, it was in order to prompt the praising toward Liliana who even though she was attacked,

instead she admonished down the attacker. He did this because he didn't do anything, so in exchange he would at least give cover fire.

The scheme of Hajime who took the role of being a hired applauder splendidly struck home. At first there was only sparse applause, but gradually it was getting louder before at last grand applauses reverberated like thunder along with cheers.

Even though there wasn't any encore or anything, yet the venue was filled with repeated call of "LILY-! LILY-!".

In the middle of that, Liliana who seemed to guess Hajime's intention sent a glance at expressed her thanks to him with her gaze. Right after that,

".....Oi, did you see?"

".....Nn. Her lips, for an instant, really it was only just for an instant but—it grinned."

"It felt like she said 'just as planned'.....don't tell me, this assault situation is planned?How terrifying."

"No, Shia. There is no way, surely it's impossible to plan for that young man to be here. Everything from the persuasion and then Hajime's applauding act until the reaction of the fans, it isn't anything like 'just as planned'."

"Shizuku-chan. As for me, rather than saying it's 'just as planned', I think it's more like 'Ku-ku-', seizing the mentality of the mass is no trouble at all". Remember, even at that time in the decisive battle she also said something like "Manipulating the mass is just too simple".

When Hajime and others returned their gaze to the scene while feeling slight shudder in their back, over there they saw the figure of Liliana responding to the applause of the fans while smiling gently like a holy mother and helping the young man to stand up.

What was truly terrifying was this most excellent queen who properly possessed both purity and impurity.

The beautiful girl that was a famous shoujo manga while also being an idol, she had suppressed an assailant right from the front using martial arts, and she didn't stop there, due to the dramatic development where she reformed the assailant, the fans in this place became delirious with passion and went wild with enthusiasm.

Surely this unexpected occurrence would become news at night today that would be broadcasted to the whole country. Like that, Liliana's fame would be going to a new height without knowing any place to stop.

After that, just as expected, Liliana's fame was climbing high with a momentum that pierced the sky. Even people who held no interest to manga and anime watched and read the dramatic and touching news and began to hold interest to Liliana's existence itself.

And then, Liliana freely used her inherent princess skill and responded to the people's wild enthusiasm in entirety.

And not just that.

The young man who was reformed from Liliana's words talked how Liliana was a being that was overflowing with kindness, that he was saved by her, that she was exactly the goddess of kindness and salvation who descended to the present world, and with a respond to a television's news coverage as the impetus, sometimes there were fan letters or blog posts with content that talked frankly about the sender's troubles reaching Liliana.

Naturally, Liliana wasn't able to personally go to resolve those troubles, and she also didn't have any intention to do such thing.

But, even though Liliana herself was unable, Liliana knew a lot of acquaintance who were able.

There was the chunibyou monk, or the yandere young daughter of a great conglomerate group, or the lawyer wearing a painful-to-look suit, or the group of one-sama who were running in full speed through the path of manly woman, or a doctor, or a detective, or an apparition, or an alien.....

Of course, she also had a lot of connection that she obtained from her days of working part-time.

And then, Liliana was a former princess. She *excelled in using people* more than anyone else.

After that it went without saying.

With pure virtue and correct calculation, Liliana used her fans to help her troubled fans.

If you ask then you will be helped.

When such story spread, naturally the quality and quantity of people asking for help increased.

When six months passed, the number and content of the requests for help became something that Liliana couldn't possibly deal with by herself. However, if she said "I'm stopping already" here, a riot would occur with certainty. After that Liliana devised a plan while feeling that she became unable to pull out.

That plan was,

——Liliana Aid Network

Such thing, in a manner of speaking it was the starting up of a "jack of all trades".

The difference with the normal jack of all trades was how it didn't have any employee who would bind the contract or act at the scene other than employee that dealt with the paperwork.

Liliana who categorized the gathered troubles in the dedicated site, aggregated them, and scrutinized their degree of priority and the content would then make her judgment. And then, she would choose from among the registered members of her fan club the person capable to resolve that problem.

There wouldn't be any reward. If there was any reward, then it would be the direct call from Liliana that asked "please" and preferential right for her event. And then, the words of "thank you" that they received directly from Liliana at the dawn when the trouble was resolved.

But, this system was surprisingly functioning.

The Liliana fan club members with deep personality and who were ridiculed by a part of the community as bunches with dozens of screws loose in their head, they would move with the readiness to work like a slave for the sake of “please” and “thank you” from Liliana.

That was already a kind of great wave. The great wave that was sometimes generated at the turning point of the era, that also should be called as the flow of the world.

The saved people became fan club members, and then those members would then save other people, and those people who were saved would become the fan club member.

That cycle was without end, and before long it surpassed Japan and spread even overseas. “Liliana Aid Network” became a foundation before she knew it and even began to reach out its hand toward world scale relief activity.

One time it stopped a regional dispute, one time it established infrastructure in a developing country, granted education and goods to unfortunate children, planted greenery on a completely withered land.....

And then when she realized.....

□□□□Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-!□□□□

□□□□Holy Mother of Kindness! Holy Mother of Kindness! Holy Mother of Kindness!□□□□

Hairihi Volunteer Association, became Hairihi Religion.

□How did it turn out like this.....□

In an event that commemorated the production of her manga's live-action movie, Liliana who was standing on the stage in order to sing the theme song was muttering with twitching cheeks.

Part 2

☆Living God Lily

□Uu, really, just how did it turn out like this.....□

Liliana who was doing the final check of the paperwork while doing ten second charge inside the office in preparation for her conference with the secretary general, returned to reality from her long reminiscence that she did before she knew it. It was actually really like Liliana for her to verify her paperwork and eating simultaneously even while reminiscing. (TN: Ten second charge seem to be the slogan of a jelly drink in Japan.)

Liliana was unconsciously letting out her complaint while thinking that recently she wasn't able to meet Hajime and others again. But suddenly a reply came back in respond to her complaint.

□That's obviously because you are a princess.□

□Howah!?!□

There should be no one other than her in this office. Naturally, Liliana who let her guard down because there should be strict security in this place raised a strange voice.

When she turned her gaze, she saw there a rift in space and the figure of Hajime who came out from there.

□Hajime-san! Geez, please don't startle me.□

□That can't be helped. Even though I'm your family, but in this place with a really strict security where the secretary general of the UN is also in attendance, how I can say something like 'I came because I just want to talk a bit though, I'm also family so please let me in'. There is a limit even in being unable to read the atmosphere.□

□.....Hajime-san. Before I realized you have become someone who is trying to read the atmosphere. You have really become an adult. Just as I thought, a person will mellow when he have as many as seven children.□

And then, 'I'm always getting a late start.....' saying that Liliana's shoulders dropped in dejection.

□Just what are you saying? Even though you cannot even go home enough from getting so busy with the work as the founder of a new religion.□

□Uguu. It's harsh getting told that.□

Liliana pressed on her chest as though she was getting stabbed, but she immediately pulled herself together and made a fearless smile.

□But, that too will be over soon. If I can have this association recognized as an official volunteer organization from this conference, I too will be able to beg off from all duty. In the content of the agreement with the UN, there are requirements to establish an inspection division that is configured with only UN personnel as a monitoring mechanism, and also a decision-making body that has to accept at least one person from every country where they will vote to make decision. This association will stop being an organization where anything is decided with the will of just me alone. It will be a democracy you know Hajime-san,

democracy! Like that my authority will be shaved and I will fade out naturally from here!□

□.....Is that kind of plan going to be okay?□

□It's fine, there is no problem.Fufu, if the conference this time can go well, then I will retire. And then, I too will make a child with Hajime-san and devote myself in parenting!□

□Somehow, it feels like you are raising up flag there.□

Hajime's expression turned lost for word seeing the holy woman going 'ehehe' in a trip of delusion about her calm and happy future.

□Oops, come to think of it, Hajime-san, you want to talk? You are coming expressly in this timing, does that mean there is anything important?□

Liliana noticed Hajime's expression and she went 'hah' and returned to her senses. She tilted her head and threw a question at Hajime to varnish over her act just now.

Still with a complicated expression on his face, Hajime said □Aah, there is nothing really important□while shrugging.

□Well, how should I say it.....what I want to say is, I also quite like Lily who is working busily.□

□.....That's a surprise attack. What's more, I feel really complicated whether I should be happy or not.□

Even while she was saying that, Liliana's cheeks were blushing red.

□Wh, why so suddenly? Saying that kind of thing in this kind of timing, isn't that exactly something like a flag?□

□I guess. But, I want to say it ahead just in case. Remember, quite some time has passed already since your workaholic behavior was identified, but in the end you are undertaking completely staggering job like this. You aren't addicted to work anymore, but in the end, Liliana S. B. Hairihi is unable to change her way of life, isn't that how it is?□

□That's.....□

She retired from being a princess and wished to grasp the happiness like a normal girl—like that the kingdom's people saw her off and she came to this world. Even though it should be like that, yet right now Liliana was going to tackle a conference with the top of the world where her fate was at stake.

Even though she tried doing part-time work, even though she tried to become a shut-in NEET, even though she tried to become a manga artist, even though she tried to become idol, but in the end perhaps the path that the human called Liliana was walking would always ended up converging to a path where she took responsibility of many people and stood in the lead to guide them.

It was because she was a princess. It was because she couldn't stop being a princess.

Was it just as expected, that she was unable to live the way she aspired for? In the end, was a person like her an existence who would put her beloved as secondary?

Liliana's shoulders dropped and she answered her own question.

Hajime who was watching such Liliana with a wry smile slowly approached her side. And then, he gently pinched at the cheek of Liliana who was showing a depressed expression.

□I came here not to make you wear that kind of face. Didn't I say it? I also like Lily who is shutting herself inside the office like this while getting chased by work.□

□Hajime-san.....□

□Isn't it just fine, even if your aspiration stay as aspiration. Isn't it just fine, even if you put your husband as secondary. It is also not bad in its own way even if there is at least one wife treating me roughly. You see, it's Liliana's individuality that other wives doesn't have.□

□I don't want that kind of individuality at all□

Even while saying that, Liliana was fawning on Hajime by rubbing her cheek on Hajime's cheek.

□Well, that's how it is. Just go without getting too worked up. Because no matter where Lily is going, I'll properly run after you everywhere.□

□Fufu, thank you very much. Hajime-san. But, as I thought, I will do my best here. Because I am Liliana. A woman who won't let my aspiration stay just as aspiration. Or rather, I want a child.□

□That's what you're stressing on?□

They smiled at each other and their lips overlapped naturally.

But, at that time, a reserved knocking sound that sounded like it was being considerate to the two's tryst was resounding.

□Looks like it's time already.□

□Ou, go do your best, your holiness.□

□Geez, please stop saying your holiness. I am the chairman.□

After joking, they smiled once more at each other and Liliana left the room behind. She didn't look back at Hajime who was left behind and she straightened her back with dignity.

And then the result of the started conference.

Before the mass media, the UN secretary general declared with blushing cheeks.

□She is truly-, the goddess who descended into this world! She is a living god! Hairihi religion will bring about salvation to the world!□

The populace gathering outside the conference building while watching the broadcast in real time, and the people watching television, they all raised cheers simultaneously.

□How did it turn out like this!?□

The scream Liliana raised was lost among the cheers that were raised even by the press people and vanished in vain.

Before, at another world, an existence that introduced himself as a god talked about his ambition that he would also become a god in earth. He proclaimed that he would become the god in the new world for sure.

But, the result was that the mad god was defeated by the demon king.

And then right now, in the place of the mad god, a wife of the demon king——

Became the god (?) of the new world.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

In the middle I didn't know anymore what I am writing.....

Thank you very much for the many requests.

I took notes of them, so I'm thinking that I want to try writing them someday.

For now I'm thinking that I want to write about the other wives a bit at the next chapter.

Something like Tio and Hajime getting spirited away, or Shia going bunnies in world of martial arts, or Yue and Hajime tackling underground world.....or Remia.....she is difficult~

After that, I'm thinking that I also want to try writing a bit long extra story.

The next posting is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II Spirited Away

AN: I'm sorry it's late.

This is Tio arc.

Part 1

□Come to think of it, Goshujin-sama. I saw something strange in the middle of coming back here.□

Tio was throwing those words from a garden in a tranquil rural landscape.

Hajime was relaxing by lying down on the edge of the house's eaves like a sleeping Buddha statue while feeling the gently blowing breeze, the chirping of small insects, and then, the breathing sound of a beautiful woman wrapped in bamboo mat while being hanged up from the tree in the garden. He then directed his consciousness along with a suspicious gaze at the woman.

□Did you perhaps see a mirror?□

□Kufuu!? What excellent comeback. It's tough to be loved too much by Goshujin-sama.....□

Tio was being hanged up like a criminal while her cheeks were reddening and her body was meandering and wriggling.

□Haah. It's fine even if you normally reflect on yourself sometimes you know? Even though we finally came to visit the house of Jii-chan and Baa-chan, you suddenly made an introduction that was lacking in common sense, and then you created an urban legend at the shopping district.....□

□Goshujin-sama, thou said that, but exactly because they art family that it's only natural to convey the truth without any falsehood in it, art not that correct? I don't wish to speak deceiving words toward those two.□

□It's only your words that is wonderful. But, don't you forget that it was that unvarnished truth that almost sent Jii-chan and Baa-chan to heaven.□

Just as Hajime said, Tio had finished her meeting with Hajime's grandparents. Of course, it was done together with Yue and others.

Currently Nagumo family was in the middle of homecoming at the home of Shuu's father.

Because Shuu was a son who was born late, his parents were already in a really late age. They were in the age that would enter their ninety soon. Therefore, it was hard for them to rush and personally visit Hajime who had returned from the disappearance incident like the parents of Sumire.

In the end, with the persuasion of Shuu and Sumire and also Hajime himself, Hajime's grandparents were waiting for this day where their son's family would go to their home.

The two of them were really happy that their cute grandson came to meet them safely without harm.

Although, the moment they saw the many beautiful girls and women behind that grandson and they all introduced themselves as□I'm his wife□, their teary smiling face petrified completely. Their face stiffened so much it felt like they could hear *crack* sound.

What's more, when Myuu politely gave her greeting before energetically explaining her position as□I'm papa's

daughter!□, both of them harmoniously staggered.

After all, no matter how they looked, Myuu's appearance was around five years old. In other words, their grandson impregnated the daughter of other people when he entered middle school, or perhaps it was even when he was still in elementary school.....

The psychological impact on Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan was unfathomable!

But there, even more pursuing blow came from Myuu! The princess of Nagumo family was merciless even against the elderly!

□But, Myuu is also a bride! Myuu is planning to someday push down papa and make a fait accompli nano!□

‘noo~noo~noo~’ The end of Myuu's sentence echoed.

Obaa-chan collapsed. Ojii-chan supported Obaa-chan with shockingly agile movement. However, his severely trembling legs and waist didn't come just from his old age but a display of the deep damage that was dealt to him!

Incidentally an incomprehensible voice□Ubooa□leaked out from Hajime's mouth. Surely he was feeling joy(shudder) from his daughter's growth. He thought□This girl, she is closing the paths of escape!□.

It was at that timing, □If I don't assert mine assistance here, then it will be mine shame as dragon race!□Tio for some reason was showing out her determination.

Toward Obaa-chan who somehow managed to hold on to her consciousness and the Ojii-chan who was desperately supporting such Obaa-chan, Tio launched words of self-

introduction□I'm Goshujin-sama's sex(love) slave□that were lacking in common sense with a self-triumphant expression.

Obaa-chan's eyes turned white. Ojii-chan's soul was slipping out from his mouth.Even so, Ojii-chan's hands that were supporting Obaa-chan didn't let go.

Hajime who snapped by this point first of all he wrapped Tio in a bamboo mat, then he tied her on a missile and launched her flying to the other side of the mountain.

The draconic woman that was flying in a beautiful arc with red flare trailing behind was surely witnessed by a lot of the local people, while they were listening to a joyful shout of □I'LLLL, BEEE, BAA~~~~CKK!□

Incidentally, punishments of butt spanking and seiza + weight on lap were waiting for Myuu and the criminal instigator Remia respectively. Of course, for Remia there was additional punishment of leg poking after she reached the limit.

Both of them seemed to be reflecting properly on their fault so far as it goes. On the surface.

Although, when Remia's numb legs got poked repeatedly, she screamed things like□Dearrr, please forgive me alreadyyy. Aaahn□a little seductively, so Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan who somehow managed to revive then crumbled down once more.

In addition,□We heard that Hajime boy has returned?□the old people of the neighborhood also came bringing some gifts and also to make their greeting but.....

They, witnessed it. The figures of a foreign beauty on all fours while raising coquettish voice (?), and "Hajime boy"

torturing that woman.

Needless to say, they wordlessly turned on their heel. It was curious how the neighbors who knew Hajime from the past would deal with Hajime from here on.

After that, Nagumo family somehow explained the existence of Yue and others, and for the time being they acquired the understanding.....abandonment of thinking, or possibly escapism from Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan.

In the middle, there was the phone call from Kaori's father and then the return of Tio still wrapped in bamboo mat like a caterpillar while she was dragging behind her the missile. Ojii-chan who witnessed that from the darkness got his soul slipped out from his body, but he survived without problem thanks to Yue's soul magic.

The total change of their grandson and then the behavior of the wives that were lacking in common sense caused the cheeks of Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan to keep twitching from start to end. But even then by the time they had dinner, the two of them became able to converse mostly calmly.

Like that, through the flow of the conversation, the two grandparents became curious with how their grandson encountered the girls who later would become his wives. Yue, Shia, and Myuu then talked passionately to the two of them how much they were saved.

It was a story that struck them dumb, but even so they understood that their cute grandson had helped others, and as the result those people who were helped wanted to be together with him, and now he brought those people like this to meet the two of them. Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan smiled happily for real this time.

Of course, after they heard the story until that far, they became curious about the last person, about the beginning of love with Tio. Obaa-chan asked that with a gentle expression.

Hajime was flustered. Shia got a faraway look. And hten, Yue shrugged her shoulders with a wry smile. Hajime who was opening his mouth to change the topic was obstructed by Sumire with a whip of udon noodle.

Using that opening, Tio spoke with a proud expression, as though to say that there was nothing to be ashamed of at all.

□Truly. How wonderful for thee to asketh, Obaba-dono. When I first met Goshujin-sama, that was the moment when mine life and sense of value changed for good. After all, that was the first time for me to be beaten up so viciously like that!□

□Eh.....□

□Yes, yes. I can remember it so clearly even now. That blazing gaze which was sparkling so brutally. The impact that resounded until mine deepest core. I was vomiting blood and raised a pitiful cry, however Goshujin-sama only continued on hitting and kicking me violently without a shred of mercy even then!□

The hopeless dragon hugged herself and talked about her important memory while wriggling her body around with bright red face.

Ojii-chan got a coughing fit and udon spurted out from his nose. Chopsticks fell from Obaa-chan's hand and they fell with a clang.

Hajime repelled the approaching udon whip with finger bullets using crunchy bits of tempura and returned the udon to the bowl while he opened his mouth to stop Tio. But there a fried tofu from the father launched a direct attack!

The large fried tofu clung on Hajime's mouth like a mask. Like a baddie in a drama trying to make the victim fainted using a handkerchief that was soaked in chloroform, the father pinioned his son from behind while blocking his mouth!

Hajime who got vein twitching on his forehead raised a protesting voice "Mogah" and tried to tear off Shuu from himself, but there the mother joined in. She took out from who knew where something that looked like a chakram. It was an artifact named "Anywhere Clothes Drying Frame Without Care of the Place☆", it produced string for hanging clothes on it to let them dry, where the string would be fixed in space. The mother then restrained her son along with her husband!

Although it was only temporary, but Hajime who got restrained by a string for hanging clothes that could seal even a god's apostle became unable to stop his wife's outrage!

"And then there was that, the attack that bestowed to me a deep emotion that I wouldst be unforgettable for mine whole life....."

Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan looked at each other's face. They harmoniously put down their chopsticks and watched Tio with smile. That expression, was the expression of someone who had prepared themselves for the worst before the end of the world.....

□Yes, Goshujin-sama, toward the buttocks of I who was wounded all over mine body by that point, he stabbed a hard and thick metallic stake into there!□

□□Ubooa□□

Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan were invited to heaven——Yue's soul magic! It brought back Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan who were rising to heaven with contend smile! As expected from the legal wife. It was a really fine play.

Of course, Hajime snapped. Just how many times his Jii-chan and Baa-chan needed to get invited to heaven before they were satisfied?

Tio's bed was decided at that time. It would be at the garden's tree. She wasn't allowed to sit or lean. But there was no problem. She would only become a bagworm just like usual.

By the way, the current time was after a night had passed. It was currently just before noon, the other family members were going out to the town. It was to mitigate the urban legend created by Tio while taking lunch in the restaurant that was recommended by the grandparents.

Yue's soul magic had been playing a very active role. Naturally, Tio was house-sitting so that there wouldn't be any more pandemonium. Just in case, Hajime who made the origin of the problem was also house-sitting doubled with monitoring Tio so that she wouldn't crawl down and chased after them.

About this time, Yue was surely piling up communication with the grandparents and deepened their mutual understanding and healed their mind. Incidentally there was also no doubt that she was restoring the honor of her

husband and fellow wives. As expected from the legal wife.
As expected of the legal wife-.

□And, soon it will be noon, how do you feel after getting hanged up for the whole night?□

□The love of Goshujin-sama who even though art saying this or that while acting like that, yet watching over me from a position where I can see. My underwear art crying that it wouldst be the limit soon.□

□.....No good huh. Recently you are sleeping soundly even when you are hanged up.....perhaps, I should consult with Adol-san for once.□

With a whisper, Hajime hung his head down dejectedly toward the pervert who recently was increasing losing her restrain while he called to mind the grandfather of that pervert. Even among Hajime's acquaintances that were filled with a lot of unrestrained people, he was a respectable "adult" who was few in number.

Without showing any sign of noticing that whisper of Hajime, Tio started the course correction of the talk topic that had diverted by a lot.

□Rather than that, I was talking about strange thing just now, Goshujin-sama.□

□Hm? I think that there is nothing stranger than you in this world though.....and? What was it that you saw?□

The casual abuse caused the toes of Tio's dangling feet to go really taut. A strange voice□Nfu□also leaked out from her mouth.

□Ri, right. When I was launched away by Goshujin-sama and impacted the mountain side, the first thing I did was to roll down the slope in order to get out of the woodland path.□

□That's a really daring idea. As expected from the black dragon whose selling point is her toughness.□

By the way, if at that time there was someone who witnessed that figure which was earnestly spinning in full speed like a somersault or spinning top sometimes even while rolling down the slope, surely that witness would yell □Ah, a real Roll○ Girl!□without doubt. While it was a ghastly way of falling, but it was also a fall that vaguely gave artistic impression.

□And then. Midway I made an error in the balancing and mine face struck a thick tree that I stopped in place.□

□Normally anyone would die from that.□

□What, something like that, the attack from Goshujin-sama art far more luscious. There art no need to worry.□

□Who is worrying huh. Don't speak like I'm feeling jealous to a tree.□

Ignoring Hajime's straight-man act, Tio continued to talk while throwing her gaze to empty air in remembrance. Wind was blowing and the bagworm Tio was swaying back and forth.

□Now then, I was about to roll down once more, but at that time I suddenly felt a pressure. It was as though mine body was wrapped wholly with silk floss while getting pulled in. It felt like that.□

□? You felt it? You didn't see anything?□

□No, it was after that. I felt curious and went a bit toward the direction where I was pulled in. It was hidden by the slope and trees really well, but there was a small cave there. That cave, it wouldst not be found easily unless they art diving down the slope like me.□

□Hee. Well, after all around this area is a countryside that still has a lot of nature. It's not strange even if there are a lot of that kind of place.....but it doesn't stop there right?□

Tio nodded□Truly□.

From the other side of the stone wall, suddenly a child's face jumped out. It must be a child from the neighborhood. Perhaps he heard their conversation and peeked in curiously. Naturally, what he saw was a beautiful woman hanged up on tree and a man that was gazing at the woman while lying down on the veranda.

The child silently withdrew his face. He had seen something that he shouldn't see. It was a mysterious experience of his childhood.

□I guessed that it was a mist. Something like a white mist was coming out slowly from the cave, however, it then drew back as though the cave was breathing. Perhaps it was caused by the flow of wind, even so it was also strangeth how a mist was occurring locally like that. Added with the strange pressure, it is a mysterious story isn't it?□

□Certainly. I have never heard of any phenomenon like that. A white mist coming out from a cave.....it's curious.□

□Right?□

□Then, in the end, you didn't ascertain the true shape of that?□

Tio answered Hajime's question with a triumphant face.

□Right after I was going to ascertain it, mine foot slipped and I rolled down!□

□Aa, hm, I see.□

It seemed after that she became a Ro○ng Girl once more.

Tio's eyes were shining in expectation.

□How is it, Goshujin-sama. Everyone also won't come back for a while. Won't thee, go in an adventure for a bit with me?□

□Adventure huh.....□

Her smile wasn't from a perverted ecstasy as usual. Tio was sending him a bright smile that was obviously from pure feeling that wanted to go in a little mysterious trip with Hajime. Hajime was looking at such Tio while showing a thinking posture for a bit,

□I guess. Being Buddha statue like this is also boring. I'm also tired looking at you hanged up like that. Let's go amuse ourselves to a small adventure for a bit.□

□Ri, right!E, even though Goshujin-sama was the one hanging me.....to get tired looking.....this damned Goshujin-sama-. Haa-haa□

Tio was whispering something while breathing roughly, but Hajime normally ignored her. And then, he moved from his Buddha statue posture using one arm to spin four times in a display of pointless technique that was pointlessly refined while landing on the garden. While he was in midair before

the landing, Hajime had properly worn his shoes and even put on his jacket.

Hajime approached Tio and untied the rope binding her body. He then locked the door of the house and turned around.

There Tio's voice called at him.

□Goshujin-sama. Can thou bring mine footwear for me?□

Hajime looked back and he saw Tio's feet. Her white and smooth bare feet were fidgeting around. Come to think of it, she was bounded inside the room and then hanged up from there—Hajime who recalled that grinned while replying.

□You need it?□

□!?!□

Tio-san was twitching in shudders.

Even though they were going to an adventure in the middle of mountain after this, yet she was asked□Something like shoes is too good for the like of you, do you need it?□. It was a critical hit for the perverted dragon.

.....Although, the true critical hit was surely how even after saying something like that, Hajime brought her shoes before personally putting it on Tio's feet.

Hajime reverently, as though he was treating a fragile thing, he gently—Tio who was treated like that retracted back her usual perverted smile and went bashful like a really normal girl.

Part 2

□Above here?□

□Right. Look over there. There are the tracks where I was slipping down correct? There art no mistake.□

Hajime glanced at the spot where Tio was pointing at, over there he saw a track where there was a straight concave. It was as though something landed there face first before sliding down without getting peeled off.

Hajime returned his gaze as though there was nothing there. Ahead he saw trees and grasses growing densely along with a really steep slope expanding in his view. Depending on the place there was a slope that wouldn't be an exaggeration to be called as a cliff.

□There won't be anyone looking in this kind of place. Tio, lead the way.□

□Acknowledged. Let's go right away Goshujin-sama. I wouldst determine with this dragon eyes of mine, whether thy hath grow dull or not.□

□Bring it on. You yourself, don't show anything unsightly like slipping and then falling down.□

They made frivolous talk. Tio grinned fearlessly and then she instantly waved the edge of her clothes and dashed away suddenly.

ton- With a really light sound, at the next moment she was far above.

A beat later, Hajime also jumped out.

to-to-to-to- Leaving only those light sounds, the two of them were jumping up like acrobat using tree root, slightly sticking out rock, or from branch to branch.

Tio sent a glance at Hajime who was following her. She leaked out a joyful chuckle“Fufuh”and increased her speed further. Hajime made a bit troubled smile at that and he also followed her by increasing his speed.

Seen from the side, they only looked like shadow climbing up the mountain with fierce speed. If, by any chance there was a witness here, then undoubtedly there would be a new urban legend created that Tengu was living in this mountain.

Turning into modern era Tengu, the two of them sometimes shifted their course a bit, sometimes they meaninglessly climbed tree while sprinting down slope playfully. After a while,

“Muu? This is strange.”

“What is?”

Tio landed from a big jump and came to a stop before she tilted her head.

When Hajime copied her by tilting his head, Tio stayed silent while pulling on Hajime to get closer. Their standing position changed by just a bit from doing that.

Hajime looked suspicious. But he saw the place Tio was pointing at and reflexively leaked out his voice“Oo”.

□This is, it's like a natural camouflage.....no, if I have to say which, then perhaps this is more like a trick art?□

□Isn't it splendid? Just by changing our standing position a bit, there art nothing that could be seen except a slope. It is exactly because we art in this angle and position that we art able to notice this cave.□

Just as Tio said, before when Hajime was right before Tio, he was observing the surrounding attentively looking for a cave, but he didn't notice the cave over there at all until Tio led him to the spot he was currently standing on.

The cause of that really should be called as trick art. If they weren't standing on a particular spot, the surrounding landscape and the miraculous bulge of the slope would cause the cave to be unseen.

Hajime was feeling admiration while asking Tio once more.

□And, what is strange about it?□

□No, Goshujin-sama. In the first place what was the reason that I who was rolling down the slope noticed this place?□

□Aah. A strange pressure and absorbing force, was it?I don't really feel anything here. There also doesn't seem any mist.□

□Correct. I too don't feel anything right now. Let's see, was it perhaps mine mistake.....□

Tio cocked her neck while groaning 'uumu'. Hajime approached the cave and peeked inside. It seemed that the cave continued quite deeply.

Hajime turned around after confirming that.

□There is no way we can dismiss the senses of a dragon race as a misunderstanding that easily. Besides, we came this far for adventure. Then we cannot just go home without even stepping in or checking it right?□

Those words of Hajime that were inviting adventure were responded by Tio□Indeed□with a nod while her shoulders shook happily.

□Even though this art a world without great labyrinth or monster, but for some reason I am getting thrilled.□

□What is called an adventure is not looking for danger. It's looking for the unknown. In that meaning, the conquest of great labyrinth cannot be said as an adventure then. In a sense, this might be our first adventure you know?□

□The first adventure, with me and Goshujin-sama? Fufuh, perhaps Yue and others would be jealous with this.□

Tio raised a delighted chuckle for sure this time. Hajime also joined her with a cheerful grin.

□Then let's go. Dragon race of another world.□

□Right, let's go. Godslaying demon king-dono.□

Both of them thrust their body into the cave jokingly and also in high spirits.

.....

.....

□.....Goshujin-sama. Mine butt got stuck completely. Please pulled me from inside.□

□Slo, sloppy.□

Even though they had put up a front and stepped inside, but now the voluptuous butt of the dragon-san was splendidly getting stuck.

Tio faced back and she twisted in her body as though she was going down a ladder, but her plump butt only changed its shape *mugyuuuu* and couldn't get in.

Feeling that it couldn't be helped, Hajime was sighing while he grasped Tio's legs and pulled in with a jerk. The butt was going *mugyuuuu-*. It still couldn't enter.

□Hrrgh-□

□Aah. My butt, if it's treated that violently-□

A scream that sounded a bit happy echoed. Hajime put even more strength. The charming butt shook *furu furu* as though in resistance. It still hadn't showed any sign of getting in.

Hajime took a breather□fuu□, and then he proposed to Tio who was kicking around her legs as though to say□Come ooon haul it in□.

□.....Tio. It doesn't look like it will go in at all. There is no other way, so how about I tear off your lower body so that I can pull in your upper body?□

□Suddenly I'll turn splat!? There art no way I'll agree! Such thing art beyond the limit even for I who love pain!□

Tio couldn't hide her shudder from Hajime who made a brutal suggestion like a demon king. Hajime said□It's a joke□ while putting his hand on Tio's thigh.

□Anyway, it doesn't look like you can enter like this so.....I'll take it off okay?□

□What? How.....aa, by storing it inside the Treasure Warehouse. Yosh, then cometh, bring it on!□

Today, Tio's fashion was pants-look. And so, if her pants was transferred away into "Treasure Warehouse II", then a space would be liberated from it gone.

The "Treasure Warehouse II" fitted on Hajime's finger shined crimson for an instant. By doing that, at the next moment Tio was reduced into a female pervert with her panty fully exposed.

□I, it's really breezy down there.....□

Tio kicked her legs up and down looking a bit embarrassed. Hajime held the voluptuous thighs in front of him using his arms and then he pulled in once more.

However, Tio's large butt was unexpectedly obstinate.

□Ada-, adadada-. Go, Goshujin-sama! My butt's skin art getting bruised!□

□Good grief, it's really a stubborn butt.□

Hajime cursed, because he was pulling Tio forcefully, her panties dug into her crotch and now it looked like she was wearing T-back panty. Hajime glared at the shaking butt.

And then, seeing no other choice, he also transferred the panty into Treasure Warehouse.

□.....Goshujin-sama. By any chance, I hath also lost my last fortress now?□

□It can't be helped. It's in the way.□

From the entrance of the cave, there was the lower body of a woman getting suspended without even a shred of cloth. If the people of the dragon race village who idolized her as a princess even now saw her like this, surely they would have out-of-body experience without doubt.

Hajime took out from his "Treasure Warehouse II" something like a thin stick and inserted it between Tio's shivering butt that was looking pitiful somehow and the rock where it got stuck.

□Muu? Something cold art on mine butt.....□

□I'm pouring oil for lubricating machine. With this it will be smoother to pull you out.□

This was the same idea with using soap to take off ring that couldn't come off. The overflowing oil trickled from the gap between the butt and rock and flowed down on Thio's thighs. Each time Tio twitched and shivered and she leaked out trembling voices.

After pouring in a lot of oil, Hajime readied himself and pulled in Tio's legs.

□Oo!? It's slipping in! It's working, Goshujin-sama!□

□Yosh, just a bit more. Do your best, butt-naked dragon!□

□Haua!? Not forgetting to insult even in this kind of time..... this damn beloved Goshujin-sama!□

The two was strangely getting roused up for some reason.

Right after that, *nupon-* a strange sound rang and Tio's bombastic butt slipped out from between the rock.

And then,

□.....Goshujin-sama. It's a bit hard to say this but□

□Don't finish it. I know already.□

Tio-san, also had a bombastic breast.

Her shirt was rolled up and her back was fully exposed, however, this time it was her gigantic twin hills that got stuck. For the time being, Hajime embraced Tio from behind to try pulling her in but.....

□It's happiness to be embraced tightly by Goshujin-sama but, mi, mine breast felt like they wouldst get torn off.....□

□Haa. Let's just go with the same method.□

□Please be gentle.□

Like that Tio——became stark naked.

She limply sat on the floor of the cave with her cheeks blushing faintly. Her butt and her breast were glistening because of the oil.

□At the start of the adventure, the proud princess of dragon race got stripped naked and became all slimy.....Goshujin-sama, honestly speaking, what doth thy think?□

□I'm thinking it's pitiful.□

Tio didn't look happy like usual, she was wafting off sorrowful aura and agreed□That's right□with a faint smile.

Hajime wordlessly handed her a towel.

Tio wiped her body using that while taking out the traditional garment of dragon race—the kimono that was a blending of Japanese and Western styles from her own “Treasure Warehouse” and she quickly put it on.

□.....Say, Goshujin-sama. Thinking really really carefully, I was stuck because of the rock correct?□

□Hm? Yeah.□

□Then, wouldst not it be better to use transmutation?□

□.....□

Hajime halted. Tio also halted. Inside the gloomy cave, Hajime and Tio looked at each other.

□Now, Tio. The unknown is waiting ahead from here! Our adventure will begin from here-□

□O, ou! That’s right! It’s from here on!□

It seemed that for now they would get over it with mood.

Both of them started walking deeper into the cave with a strange tension.

After walking for a while, inside the cave was unexpectedly starting to show aspects of cavern. The deeper they went, the wider the cave turned.

□Somehow, this is nostalgic.□

□Might it be about Orcus?□

Hajime muttered in small voice. Tio guessed what he was thinking and asked.

□Yeah. There is no light of green light stone here, but as expected, speaking about cave for me just means Orkus.□

□I can imagine that. It was the starting place for the current Goshujin-sama, and then—it was also a place of a precious encounter.□

Tio sympathized with Hajime with her voice vaguely containing gentleness. Hajime walked while illuminating the surrounding with light while glancing at Tio beside him.

□That encounter tied Goshujin-sama, spun a bond with Shia, and connected toward me. Most likely, if there art just one of those lacking, then I wouldst not be here like this.□

□Don't make a solemn talk like that so suddenly. It's rare for you to talk about what-if. That's a meaningless supposition right?□

□That's right. Indeed, it's meaningless. But, I feel happy with our time right now that art like a miracle, so much so that I'm looking back like that. Being solemn sometimes art also not bad.□

Saying that, Tio made a really hard to describe smile, even so there wasn't any shadow in it by any means. Even though it was just for a moment, but Hajime's eyes were definitely stolen by that smile of Tio.

□Oh? What's this, Goshujin-sama. Art thou falling in love all over me again? By any chance, the possibility of surpassing Yue art.....□

□It's completely none.□

Hajime's immediate answer dealt critical hit. A sweet voice leaked out from the hopeless dragon-san. "If only she kept smiling like just now, no matter from where you look she is a wonderful princess of the dragon race, yet" Hajime was staring at Tio with disappointment filling his eyes.

"Or rather, you, you are aiming to surpass Yue?"

"That art really a late question. There art not a single woman that art not aiming for that. Of course it wouldst not be something that art done bloodthirstily, but a chase to overtake that art done enjoyably, it's something like a serious playfulness between fellow wives."

".....I thought that it's just Kaori who is like that."

"Fufu, you still hath some way to go Goshujin-sama. Everyone like everyone else to the greatest degree, but that art that. This art this. Because we art woman, then as expected we want to be told as "number one", we desire to be "the only one" for the man we loved. Even Yue often said it art not she? "I'll accept any challenge anytime, anywhere, no matter how many times".

"I see."

A wry smile emerged on Hajime's lips thinking that he still "had some way to go" while he scratched his cheek. Even though normally Tio was just a pervert, sometimes she would give Hajime "understanding" with significant words smoothly said like this. She was by nature really thoughtful, and that was also one of her charm.

Hajime wanted to say something to the smiling Tio and he opened his mouth.

But, before he could speak,

□Ah?□

□Mu?□

Hajime and Tio simultaneously ran their gaze at the surrounding. Sharpening wariness resided in their eyes.

Before they realized, it was truly before they realized, mist was manifesting around Hajime and Tio. It was an extremely thin mist. However, seeing this it was clearly unnatural for mist to be appearing so suddenly inside a cave like this.

And above all, what they were feeling right now proved that the mist was abnormal.

□I see. Indeed, this is a strange pressure, and I also feel a pulling force into deeper inside the cave.□

□It appeared that it wasn't just mine misunderstanding. Now then, what about Goshujin-sama's magic eye stone? This art definitely not a magic, but perhaps it's one of the mystic of this world?□

□My magic eye stone isn't reacting at all. But, it's unthinkable that this is a natural phenomenon. It seemed that a rare phenomenon is really occurring for real right now.□

Even while they were conversing like that, the pressure and pulling force were growing stronger. The restraining force was strengthening as though it wouldn't let the two of them got away while trying to drag them in.

Hajime took out a reconnaissance plane from "Treasure Warehouse" onto his palm and made it fly deeper into the cave.

The place was advancing deeper unhindered and its view was shared with Hajime so he could look at the situation inside.

Like that, after it advanced a little ahead,

□-. Oi oi, seriously?□

□Goshujin-sama, what's the matter?□

Hajime made a bit of dry chuckle. It seemed there was an unexpected situation that made Hajime unable to hide his surprise.

Hajime kept his eyes fixed deeper into the cave while answering Tio's question.

□The reconnaissance plane was swallowed.□

□Swallowed? What doth that mean?□

□Exactly like that. The mist is getting thicker the deeper you go ahead. The shared view turned pure white and nothing can be seen at the surrounding. And right after that, my link with it got cut.□

□That's.....□

Tio gulped. She understood well how powerful Hajime's artifact was. Even though it was just a reconnaissance plane, it was impossible for its link with its master to be severed that easily.

Hajime gave even more shocking words to the surprised Tio.

□That's not all. Just before I lost the plane, it was just for an instant but.....I could see sea of clouds.□

□Sea, of clouds? Wait a second Goshujin-sama. It wasn't the sky, but thou couldst see a "sea of clouds"? In other words——□

□Yeah, the scene I saw wasn't something I could see from a cave even if the ceiling here is transparent. Hahah, we are really inside a cave right?□

Hajime and Tio looked at each other's face.

And, at that time,

□Nno!?□

□This is!?□

The mist moved. No, the mist around Hajime and Tio increased in thickness so suddenly they mistakenly thought that, at the same time the pressure and the pulling force were also generated.

□Aa, this is bad Tio. Just maybe, this cave is a "natural gate". At this rate perhaps we might get thrown out to another world somewhere.□

□I see. The true identity of "spirited away", by any chance it might be this kind of place or phenomenon.□

Even while Hajime and Tio were speaking out their hypothesis, they were trying to turn around toward the entrance.

But, it seemed the phenomenon of spirited away was something that couldn't be escaped from that easily.

□Ah, this is no good.□

□Truly, I understand this sensation. ——We art caught.□

With those words as their last, Hajime and Tio's figure was enveloped by the abnormally white mist.

And then, a few minutes later, the mist finally cleared up and the figure of the two weren't there anymore.

Right after the mist coiling around them cleared up, Hajime and Tio were,

□Oo, it's really the blue sky.□

□Entering into a cave and fall from the sky, this art truly something.□

Free falling in the great sky of an unknown world while they were folding their arms with unmoving thinking posture.
(TN: In the raw the author is using the kanji 大々(zessan/great praise) related with the free falling. When I google it it's related with the free falling stock market price, but to my shame I still really don't get what is the connection between great praise and free falling. Help please.)

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is Tio arc.

About how far it will continue, what kind of end it will have, there is no plot, so even Shirakome doesn't know.

But as expected I don't think that it will run wild like Lily arc.....

The posting of the next chapter is planned to be be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II in World of Sky

The wind howled roaringly. Wind pressure was striking everything. If one looked up there would be the vibrant azure sky. The light of sun was showering down brilliantly. The sea of clouds was shining silver from the reflection of the sunlight.

Surrounded by all those, there were two silhouettes freefalling with their arms folded.

□I wonder if it's my fate to enter a cave then freefall in the sky?□

□Who knows. But, at the very least this art a refreshing fall compared to before isn't that right?□

□This is really a pleasant weather~□

Just to make sure, let's specify it one more time. The two were in the middle of freefalling without parachute or lifeline.

□For now, should we try going under the sea of clouds?□

□Right. It looks like the weather art bad, but perhaps there wouldth be something that couldst make us understand

what kind of world this place art. After all there art nothing above the sky.□

Hajime and Tio plunged into the sea of clouds even while they were talking like that.

At that moment, they received the baptism of terrific air turbulence and random lightning. It seemed that this sea of clouds wasn't merely thick clouds or rainy clouds, but something that resembled a super vast cumulonimbus cloud. Seeing how there wasn't any sign of vortex it wasn't any kind of typhoon. It was a storm cloud with abnormal range that silently covered the world as far as the eye could see.

The lightning flying wildly about along with thunderous sounds attacked Hajime and Tio as though to remove the intruder.

Hajime's body instantly emitted red spark. The lightning that should strike Hajime's body directly was streamed away as though it was sliding off the body. It then flew away to the direction of the beyond.

As for Tio, she seemed to normally endure the lightning by using dragon scale hardening. She used regeneration magic to repair the hole opened on her clothes with an unruffled air.

Only a few seconds past.

bobat Both of them came out at the bottom of the sea of clouds with some cloud part trailing behind them.

Without delay, fierce wind and rain attacked the two mercilessly.

□Uwaa, this is just terrible.□

□What to say.....art this world, ended up already?□

Gravity control type multipurpose assault unit——Cross Velt. Hajime summoned eight of them to put up a cube shaped barrier around him and Tio. They looked from the inside at the rain water trickling along the barrier's surface and they unconsciously leaked out their voice.

Their reaction was understandable. No matter how they looked, the heavy rain pouring down toward the world like waterfall looked like muddy water. The rain water that hit their skin dyed the spot pitch black.

Tio used wind magic to shake off the black rain and while she was at it she combined it with fire magic to warm her and Hajime's wet body while drying out their clothes in high speed. She was doing that while expressing her impression toward this another world with a really astonished voice.

Her gaze was looking at her own arm that was wet with the black rain just now. Countless red specks were coming out from there. It seemed the place that got touched by the black rain was getting inflammation.

It was a world with obviously harmful black rain pouring down.

Of course, perhaps this was a characteristic phenomenon of this region, but at the very least it was obvious that the dark color of the ocean spreading below wasn't caused just because the sunlight didn't reach. This black rain was pouring down so much that it colored the sea black.

And then, if the sea that was polluted to this degree followed the sea current and flowed through the world.....they

naturally could imagine the hopelessness of this world.

Hajime took out his smartphone and made a drop of black rain to fall on the display. Right away, a ripple spread on the display. A loading screen appeared for a few seconds.

□Unknown composition just as expected. It doesn't match anything from the data of Tortus or earth. Its effect to human body is.....oou, looks like Tio's impression is seriously bull's eye. Look here, this rain has the effect to cause necrosis to the cell.□

□.....Oh dear. However, no matter in what kind of environment, what art called as living thing wouldst find a way to adapt in the end and survive. There art still possibility of organism that manages to adapt in this place. Besides, perhaps even this black rain art limited to this area.□

□Well, you're right. Anyway, for now let's return above. This rain doesn't has much effect to us and we can heal the effect right away, even so this kind of muddy black world is depressing.□

□No doubt about that.□

Hajime and Tio took one last look at the raging black world before charging into the sea of clouds once more with the barrier still activated.

They went through the sea of clouds and returned once more to the clear azure sky.

□If someone meet spirited away phenomenon, they will get thrown off to a world that is really hard to survive huh.□

□It looks like it. What wouldst we do Goshujin-sama? Art we going home?□

Tio asked without even any doubt that they would be unable to return to earth. With “Compass of Guidance Crossing” and “Crystal Key”, it was possible to return home to earth no matter what kind of world they were in. That was the reason that the two weren’t flustered at all even when they were going to be swallowed by the white mist inside the cave.

Hajime turned his gaze to Tio’s question. He showed a thinking gesture□Hm~□and asked back in return.

□What do you want to do Tio?□

□.....We should return. This adventure is not in the level of going to mountain for a bit anymore. I wouldst consider looking around for a bit if this is a good world though..... Also thinking about the time until Yue and others return home, even if we art going to adventure, we should return once to take Yue and others together too.□

Tio made a wry smile just for a moment before she advocated cautious theory. Indeed, although they could return anytime, the scale of this situation was too big to be a little fun that was done while their family wasn’t at home, the state of this world was too turbulent.

It was really an opinion with prudence that was just like Tio.

Hajime narrowed his eyes to such Tio before he showed a bit of thinking gesture once more. And then, perhaps he had finished scrutinizing Tio’s opinion because he smiled wryly while agreeing□I guess□, and then he activated his “Treasure Warehouse II” to take out the “Compass of Guidance Crossing”.

Right after that,

□Hm? Hmm?Damn it. Now I've really done it, Tio.□

□Mu? What art the matter, Goshujin-sama.□

Hajime was scratching his head awkwardly which caused Tio to tilt her head in puzzlement. Her expression froze with a snap at Hajime's next sentence.

□The compass, I forgot to bring it with me.□

Hajime was jovially saying□I'm beaten, I'm beaten□while laughing 'tahahahaha', with Tio staring open mouthed in a daze and amazement at such Hajime.

A beat, two beat. Finally the meaning of Hajime's words seemed to soak into Tio, her complexion changed and she began to press questions in fluster.

□Wha, wha wha, what do thy mean with forget!? It was inside the Treasure Warehouse wasn't it!?□

□Haha~. I just recalled it only now, just before this I lent it to Yue but she hadn't returned it to me. That's really careless of me.□

□Tomfooleryy——!! Such important thing art not something to be forgotten!□

□Oo, I got scolded by Tio.....this is really a fresh experience.□

□Art this the time to say thattt———!! What to do....., we couldst not go home.□

Hajime's attitude that was too overflowing with irresponsibility caused Tio's shoulders to drop dejectedly.

She was in a state that she didn't even realize that for the first time she had yelled angrily at Hajime.

□Well, don't be that upset.□

□What? Goshujin-sama, thou art really composed. Art there any prospect of us going home?□

□We have no prospect to go home, but looking from the opposite it means that Yue is carrying the compass, so we don't particularly need to get flustered isn't it? I am carrying the Crystal Key, but if she find me using the compass then it's possible to search in reverse.□

□.....I see. Now that thy said that, indeed there art no reason to lose composure. If Yue use the compass to find us who didn't return home, we wouldst be able to return home at that point of time. Fumu, mine apologies Goshujin-sama. I was showing something unsightly.□

Being able to understand that their situation wasn't particularly serious after getting told so, Tio casted down he eyes from shame of her disordered state.

Tio who averted her eyes didn't notice, but the expression of Hajime who was looking at her embarrassed gesture was extremely gentle. Different from the normal Hajime who was usually dealing with Tio in full S mode, his warm expression now was emitting a definite affection.

Everything was because he understood the reason why Tio unusually lost her composure like just now.

Tio wasn't feeling uneasy at the possibility that they couldn't return home itself. In front of her there was a man who had obtained the mean to cross over worlds with only his determination when at the start he didn't have anything

at all. Doubting that they couldn't return home was instead nothing more than an insult to Hajime.

Therefore, the reason why Tio was flustered was something else. That reason was in the fact that she separated Hajime from Yue and others through something that was caused by them doing something that she suggested. She had no doubt that they would be able to go home. But, the problem was the time. At how long Hajime would be separated from Yue and others.

In short, her lost of composure at their inability to go home was the manifestation of her consideration toward Yue and co. Although her sturdiness was her strong point, she was someone who wouldn't hesitate to turn her own body into a shield for her comrade's sake, her way of losing composure was really like herself.

□Well, under the cloud feels like the end of the century, but the sky is really not bad. Until it's time, let's go adventuring to see if this sea of clouds will end somewhere, and if there is we will look for land, Tio.□

□Right. Yes, yes-. Let's do just that!□

The embarrassed Tio raised a happy voice lively after receiving that order to resume their adventure. There wasn't even any need to mention her expression. It was truly a smiling face that would charm anyone that would make anyone who knew her to be amazed thinking□Even though if she can be always like that, there won't be anyone doubting her if she is really the princess of dragon race or not□.

A while after they began their sky journey, currently Tio had transformed into a black dragon where Hajime was riding on her.

At first Hajime was using his skyboard while Tio was also only using her wings from partial dragonification, after that she used wind magic to fly in human form, but Hajime requested her that he wanted to mount her.

Riding on a dragon's back to fly at the sky faraway—that yearning of every man had often been realized by Hajime, but he never got tired of it and if there was chance he would ask to ride Tio like this.

□It also has been a while since I fly with Goshujin-sama on my back. There wasn't that much chance since we returned to earth.□

□Yeah. What's more, we were flying mainly at night whether in Tortus or earth. It's really has been a long time since we last flew in the sky this clear.□

□If you wish it then we could fly anytime correct? The sky of earth is constrained, but if it's now then we could do anything using Goshujin-sama's artifact isn't that right?□

□Yeah. I can just make an artifact for jamming and camouflage. Just spare me from having dog fights with the ASDF.□(TN: Air Self-Defense Force)

Tio caught the wind and flew among the cloud chasms with a movement that was drawing an elegant curve. The milky road that was like a flowing cotton candy was an amazingly superb view.

The sea of clouds weren't only shaped flatly, at some places the clouds would make a gigantic mountain shape or chasm

shape like where they were at right now. There was also cloud that was arch-shaped and also a cloud that was shaped like a surging tidal wave. It was a magnificent view that should be described as a continent that was made on the sky.

Hajime was sticking still on Tio's back using gravity control so there wasn't any concern that he would fall. The wind pressure and air were also controlled within one meter from the body using a dedicated earring artifact. And so Tio was flying to her heart content without needing to give any consideration or restraint.

She broke out from the chasm with a steep climb and slipped through the gap between clouds floating lazily with while barrel rolling.

She passed under arching cloud and swiveled around a mountain of cloud as though she was dancing, she went through a steep climb before leaving her body to swoop down in a free fall. And then, she unfolded her wings with a force that blown away the clouds at the surrounding and flew inside the tidal wave cloud like a surfer.

□Having fun?□

□Yes, this art really fun!□

In contrast with the fierce maneuver, Hajime was asking with a calm voice. And the responding voice was an excited voice just as expected. And then a single roar as though she was giving a service. While it was a powerful roar, but the reverberation felt pleasant somehow. Hajime also raised a cheerful laugh at that.

But, it was at that time, as though in respond to Tio's howl, there was a faint sound reaching the two.

□O? Tio, just now.....□

□It seemed, we hath discovered the first villager——not, the first living thing here. It's truly auspicious that not every living thing here art exterminated.□

Even in this world where a black rain that caused necrosis on living cell was pouring down, it seemed there was still living thing here as expected. Right now the sound vibrating in their eardrum that was getting louder and louder was obviously coming from a living thing——in addition, it seemed to be a howl that came from a large type organism.

Hajime tapped on the black scaled back and Tio took a steep turn in complete agreement.

They passed through several cloud mountains and at the end they circled around a conspicuously large spiraling cloud. Then, there they were able to catch sight of black spots in the sky that looked like dribbling ink.

□Hou.....so there art mine fellow race even in this world.□

□As expected, this is a fantasy world huh. Well, we don't know yet whether they are like your race that can turn into "human" or "dragon", or if they are just a variety of monster.□

The specks reflected on the azure sky were gradually growing bigger. The two who possessed eyesight that was incomparable with the average people could clearly see the true form of those specks.

They were dragon. Not the snake type dragon of the east, but the western dragon. Their number was around ten. Their body was grey colored and their body length was around two until three meter. Their body build looked bad. Compared to

Tio's build, they looked really frail. Their howl that they sometimes raised to call at Tio sounded like a crying voice instead after the two saw their figures.

First thing first, Tio tried talking to the small dragons that approached nearby in the blink of eye in order to investigate their intelligence level.

□All of thee, art thee able to understand mine words?
Couldst thee communicate using mind?□

The respond that came back was only *gyau gyau gyao gyao*, a crying voice of beast. They were flying in circles around Tio who was hovering midair as though fawning at her——

□□□□□.....□□□□□

They took a second look at Hajime who was sitting on Tio's back. They were definitely taking a second look.

Seeing the grey dragons stopped crying and instead were staring fixedly at him, Hajime gazed back□Aa?□in suspicion.

Right after that,

□□□□□Gyuwa!?□□□□□

The grey dragons showed a reaction that looked like□We have seen something that mustn't be seen!□before running away in full speed. There was even a dragon among them that was too panicked it lost speed and almost fell.

Their state was exactly like an unfortunate victim encountering a monster, or perhaps like a villager A who suddenly bumped onto the demon king out of nowhere.

Like before they only cried out like a beast without showing any state of using language or even advanced intelligence. But, seeing how they were running away with terrible desperation while looking behind them several times,

——Ruunnn, quickly runnn

——Someone-, someone helpppp!!

——Oh god! Oo, god in heaven, please grant us your salvation-

——There is no way, I'm going to die in this kind of placeeee-

It felt like those kinds of scream of heart could be heard.

□.....Tio□

□Wha, what is it, Goshujin-sama.□

Tio replied back to that quiet voice in slight fluster. When she turned around her head and looked behind, she saw the figure of Hajime looking at the faraway there. A vague sorrow was drifting from his side profile.

□Am I, really that terrifying?□

□N, nooo, I think that art not really not the case.....□

□But, no matter how I look at their reaction, it's like they are a victim that encountered the devilish homicide in a horror movie. Even though I'm not emitting pressure or anything. Even though, I'm not doing anything.□

□Ma, mayhaps, they art not used to human? When they approached me because they thought of me as their fellow, they saw a creature that they hath not seen before and got surprised. Surely that art the case here.□

□Are they running away that desperately in terror because they are surprised?Recently I'm told that I was mellowing down, and I thought that I have adapted a bit to live in earth but.....□

□Goshujin-sama, mine motherly instinct art really tickled seeing thy rare disheartened figure, but for now how about we try chasing after them? After all they art the living thing in this world that we finally discovered.□

□.....You are right. Let's do that.□

Tio was writhing lightly seeing Hajime who was somewhat dispirited.

If it was him when he was at Tortus, something like this would cause vein to twitch on his forehead before he shot them down *dopan-*, so him being disheartened like this showed that he was in the process of acclimating to the life in earth. That was what Tio thought, but this was really a rare sight so she didn't say anything instead.

In exchange, she urged Hajime to chase after the change in this world that they finally encountered so that it wouldn't get away.

She flapped her wings once. Tio began to fly glidingly. The grey dragons that glanced back as though saying□They aren't following us? Are we safe already?□saw the following Tio—or more accurately Hajime who was riding on her back and their body twiiiitched and trembled.

Naturally, they began to escape with even more desperation than before.

□.....□

□Aa~, Goshujin-sama? This art surely that. They don't look like they hath intelligence in the level of human, they art genuinely a beast. That's why, they art instinctually sensing Goshujin-sama's strength——□

Tio followed up in a touching gesture. However, it was unclear whether her words reached or not. Hajime didn't react at all while his somewhat dispirited expression was starting to change bit by bit.

The disheartened face turned into a fixed stare, and next it changed into a small irritation. And then——

□Fine then. If they are asking for that kind of character from me then, aah, that's fine. I should answer their expectation. Ku-ku-ku-ku-□

□Go, Goshujin-sama, art making a sadist face like when he was dealing with me!? Run away! All of thee, quickly run awayyyyy-□

The demon king-sama stood up imposingly above Tio and widely spread his arms in a dramatic pose as though welcoming in the enemy. His lips split apart like a crescent moon while his eyes were blazing fiercely like a hunter cornering his prey!

Tio howled and urged the grey dragons to escape. The grey dragons that looked back simultaneously at that voice——saw it right away.

□Now, run, run, run! I'll leisurely hunt you down and devour youuuuu-□

They saw the demon king who was bursting with crimson magic power while loudly yelling something like that which reverberated to the whole azure sky.

Of course, it went without saying that the body of the grey dragons twitched. It also went without saying that they were starting to run away with even more desperation than before. From behind them

“HAAH———HAHHAHHAHHAH!!” a loud laughter resounded. Something shining could be seen glittering around their eyes even though they were dragon——surely that was just an imagination.

Around thirty minutes after Hajime turned demon king. Hajime who had just created one more black history was sitting on Tio’s back while grasping his knees. Tio who was taking the stance of “Let’s just leave him alone for now” finally called at Hajime.

“Goshujin-sama. Stop being down and look ahead.”

“Just leave me alone Tio. I’m disgusted with my own foolish act and lack of growth.If I don’t reflect back on myself a bit then I’ll turn completely into Endo.”

“If he heard that then he would get upset and indignant.....no, maybe, he would be happy because his comrade increased? Well, rather than talking about that, come now, stop acting like that and raise thy head. It’s worth it to chase after those dragons with some distance in between. I believe this is a sight that would make thy heart greatly throb though?”

“Dismissing my concern like that.....well, certainly the matter of Endo doesn’t matter but..... And, what are you saying about the sight——”

Hajime stopped hugging his knees while casually saying something cruel about a certain friend with thin presence and he lifted his gaze. And then, he lost his words while unconsciously rising voice of admiration "Ooo".

In the middle of the chase, the two felt that it was futile chasing after the grey dragons and they took distance from them while following behind without the dragons noticing. And now it seemed now they had reached the place where the dragons were dwelling.

"Is this a real Laputa huh."

"Aah, that masterpiece.....indeed, this resembled that. Though as for me this reminded me of the Holy Precincts."

The sea of clouds were continuing without end since the place they appeared at the beginning until now. There was only the sea of clouds as far as their eye could see. It was possible that perhaps this sea of clouds was covering the whole world. In that case, because the surface was ravaged by the black rain that was bringing fatality to the living thing, then where would the dragons rested their wings—the answer to that question was this.

—An island floating in the sky.

Yes, it was a piece of land that was floating above the sea of clouds without anything supporting it from below. It was as though a piece of land had been reeled up as it was, below there was the exposed earth and stones, above there was the verdant green ground, there was even a forest covering the center of the floating island with tall trees. Its size was around five or six Tokyo Dome.

"I thought that this is a fantasy world by the time there is dragon, but with this it feels even more like it."

□Before, there was no time to thoroughly observe the floating island at the Holy Precincts. I am feeling a bit thrilled. Goshujin-sama, the dragons before art likely to be here too, so it's better to land at the edge as to not surprise them correct?□

□Yeah, do that. I'll use "Presence Isolation" in advance.□

The more Tio approached, the more a commotion happened at the forest at the center. The trees were unnaturally shaking slightly, however, right after that the forest was filled with peacefulness. Surely the dragons were hiding there.

Tio landed on the edge of the floating island while feeling their presence. She landed gently with a softness that didn't fit her large body. Hajime jumped down from Tio's back and he stepped on the lush ground with his own feet.

Right after that, Tio dispelled her dragon transformation and stood beside Hajime. *rustle*, the sign of agitation was spreading from the forest.

□It looks like normal weed from the appearance. The composition of the soil.....it seems similar with earth and Tortus but.....hm?□

Hajime crouched and took a grass with his hand, he then analyzed the soil composition with "Mineral Appraisal". And then, □Oh?□ he blinked as though he noticed something.

□What art the matter? Art there some kind of mysterious composition mixed in it?□

□Rather than calling it a mysterious composition..... something that is really similar with a composition I'm really

familiar with is mixed in. What's more, it's scattered all over in wide scope like a fertilizer.

□Familiar composition? From thy speech, is it something from Tortus?□

□Yeah. They are small granulated mineral that is even smaller than sand. —□Converging Transmutation□□

Thinking that it was faster to see directly, he made his palm faced up. Right after that, Hajime was activating a transmutation master's secret art of transmuting without the hand directly touching the material to converge the mineral at the surrounding.

Sparkling sands were bursting out from Hajime's surrounding. They were like flowing large rivers of the cosmos, swirling like sparkling stars with Hajime as the center where they were gradually converging above his palm.

With an emission of crimson sparks, the item that was finally created by the compression transmutation was a fragment of shining azure mineral.

□This art.....it looks like god crystal.□

□Yeah. Though it's different in the finer aspects. It seems that the aspect where it takes in magic power and condenses it to manifest liquid is the same though.□

To be more specific, it couldn't retain magic power as much as god crystal, on top of that it also didn't have the power to create god water that possessed the recovery effect that wouldn't be an exaggeration to be called as regeneration. However, its ability to take in magic power into itself and then created liquid with abundant nourishment, and then its

circulation rate of going through those sequences were far faster and more efficient in the degree that couldn't be compared with the god crystal's production of god water.

Hajime acquired that knowledge from the analysis of his smartphone that was equipped with the advanced function of analyzing using "Mineral Appraisal" and Creation Magic and Metamorphosis Magic. Tio who received Hajime's explanation said "I see" in understanding and then she looked around.

"So that's how a land floating in the sky couldst be this verdant. The reason art because it hath that god crystal look alike."

"Looks like it. Although, that's not the reason why this land is floating though....."

Hajime stood up and turned his gaze at the center of the floating island. He was intending to go investigate there. Tio also nodded and she was about to walk, it was at that time,

"Mu? So they art coming out by their own initiative."

One dragon suddenly showed out its face from behind a tree. *jii~* It was staring at Tio.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other. For now they would try watching in silence. Hajime was using "Presence Isolation" in full power while also forming a simple barrier using a pencil sized Cross Velt. It wasn't an artifact for defense, but a barrier artifact that used space magic to bend the light for optical camouflage. It wasn't that powerful, but it more or less also possessed space isolation effect, so it blocked the body odor from detection.

The grey small dragon was looking *jii~* at Tio for a while, but seeing Tio wasn't moving while looking back at it with a calm expression, it seemed the dragon let its guard down just a little because it came out with unsure steps from the forest.

Behind that dragon, "Oi, is it really okay?" "Stop I told you! You are going to die!" the other dragons timidly showed their face from behind the trees as though to say those.

"It looks like they are calming down a bit there~"

The figure of those dragons that could be said to be charming in a sense caused Tio to loosen up her face. Perhaps Tio's atmosphere that was softening further encouraged it, the dragon in the lead was advancing a bit and stopped, then it advanced a bit and stopped again. It was repeating that action while approaching Tio bit by bit.

Before long, the dragon that had arrived until near Tio brought its snout closer to Tio and it sniffed her smell *sniff sniff*. And then, it nervously retracted back its neck and tilted its head before it brought its nose closer again and sniffed her scent *sniff sniff* again.

"Hmm. It appears they are confused, whether I am a dragon, or a human. In that case.....it's great isn't it, Goshujin-sama. It appears Goshujin-sama are not especially hated, this children seems to fear "human" itself."

"I see. In other words, that means human, or at the very least "humanoid" being is existing in this world."

Hajime replied using "Telepathy" just in case so the dragon wouldn't get spooked. While the two were doing that, the other dragons also seemed to lose to their curiosity toward this mysterious existence who smelled like their race even

though she was human. They were coming out from the forest even while looking timid with unsure steps.

Tio was surrounded by dragons in the blink of eye. She slowly reached out her hand toward one of the dragons that was bringing its snout closer. The dragon twitched and drew back, but when it saw Tio waiting silently with her hand still reached out, it approached back slowly.

Finally, Tio's hand touched the dragon's snout. And then, when Tio caressed it, the dragon blinked in surprise before it started to narrow its eyes pleasantly. Its shrill but low purr *kururururu-* seemed to show its fawning act.

Behind Tio, another dragon was pressing its snout as though to appeal 'me too'. Just when she thought that was it, the other dragons also pushed their snout forward from left and right too.

□Oi oi, all of thee. For the dragon race of all things to be spoiled children like this every single one of thou? What a troubling children.□

Tio chuckled while saying that. Although, even though she was saying that, the emotion dwelling in her eyes was an unconcealed kindness. She gently caressed them in turn with smiling eyes and loosened cheeks, looking truly like a mother.

Hajime also looked fondly at the figure of Tio surrounded by dragons while gently spoiling them. Even though normally she was very much a pervert, but her true nature was a noble person that was overflowing with prudence, kindness, and pride. That was exactly the charm of this woman, Tio Claus.

□Mu? I vaguely feel a passionate gaze.....now now, Goshujin-sama. Art thou envious that I am paying attention only to these children?□

While smiling mischievously, Tio accurately threw her gaze at Hajime who was hiding behind barrier of optical camouflage.

It was a fact that Hajime was captivated, so he smiled wryly while replying□Perhaps□. Getting that unexpectedly positive reply, Tio's cheeks blushed faintly. It seemed she was a bit happy.

To divert the attention from her shyness, she opened her mouth with a bit of rapid talk.

□Goshujin-sama. If it's now this children's wariness art lessened considerably, how about giving a try to pat them?□

□I guess. There won't be many chance of something like this.□

Hajime manipulated the pencil Cross Velt and deployed the optical camouflage as close as possible on his body. He was also in the middle of activating Presence Isolation in full force, so he should be able to pat the dragon if he reached his hand from a blind spot.

Hajime slowly approached a dragon. It was half closing its eyes from Tio's caressing, so it shouldn't notice anything even if he touched it a bit.

But, it seemed that wild instinct wasn't that naïve.

□!□

The dragon that Hajime approached suddenly leaped back from that spot. Furthermore that jumped happened so deftly and vigorously that for a moment there it felt like there would be a sound *hyuba-*.

‘Am I noticed?’ Hajime stared fixedly, but the dragon tilted its head□kuruu?□while looking around. It seemed it didn’t notice Hajime but it only acted instinctually.

Hajime tried taking a step forward. The dragon took a step back. Hajime tried taking two steps forward. The dragon took two steps back. Hajime tried to circle behind it. The dragon circled with a fixed distance preserved in between. It was as though there was an unseen wall between Hajime and dragon, the two sides were turning in circles without any change of distance between them.

It seemed that the dragon didn’t understand why it was acting like this. It frequently tilted its head.

□Ma, mayhaps it understand instinctually that there art something it hate there?□

Tio muttered such thing, perhaps from sensing how Hajime’s eyes were gradually turning scornful.

Hajime tried approaching the other dragons. The other dragons also took distance with natural movement. No matter where Hajime tried to go, the dragons would distance themselves from Hajime as though they were magnet of opposite pole. There was no doubt that they didn’t notice Hajime’s existence. In other words, they were avoiding him in subconscious level.

Hajime was hurt for a tiny bit. He was looking at the day after tomorrow with a faraway look.

But, at that time, perhaps it was just a coincidence but one dragon clawed on the ground with its hind leg. The soil that was hurled from that went splat on Hajime.

That action was as though, like what a cat or a dog would do to filth.....

□.....Go, Goshujin-sama?□

□.....□

Hajime didn't reply. He merely grinned.

Crimson magic power suddenly sparked. The dragons were still busy fawning on Tio. They didn't notice how they had stepped on a landmine.

Hajime slowly walked while still having the barrier and Presence Isolation activated and he took position at the center of the dragons by skillfully manipulating the distance.

There the dragons finally noticed the strange air and they looked around restlessly.

And then, they turned their gaze at the area centered around them that was for some reason was empty without anyone there.

——Stand B~y! Stand B~~y!!

——Now, everyone, are you all finished with your preparation?

——It's starting you know?

——Pe~~ek, aa~~~~~.....demon king!

The barrier vanished and the Presence Isolation was dispelled.

What appeared was a bursting crimson magic power with the demon king-sama grinning wideeeeeely at the center.

The result went without saying.

□□□□PIGYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!□□□□

The dragons' scream that was filled with fright resounded through the clear blue sky.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II

Mistaken World View

At a corner of an island floating in the sky, there was a demon king sitting on the ground grasping his knees.

It was Hajime.

□Even though thou understood this is how it wouldst end up.....□

A weeping back, eyes that looked like dead fish, a beautiful huddling posture. Hajime who was the personification of picture perfect “depressed person” was told by Tio with an exasperated expression.

□Guu□

He barely could let out a ‘guu’ sound. Seeing such Hajime, Tio snickered once more even through her exasperation. The situation that was the exact opposite of their normal act surely would make anyone who knew these two to doubt their eyes if they saw this. (TN: In Japan there is a saying of “he cannot even make ‘guu’ sound” to show how speechless or cornered the person is)

□Come on, Goshujin-sama. Come back to thyself quickly. Thou art going to investigate the cause of this island’s floating state correct?□

Tio squatted snugly beside Hajime. She peered into Hajime's face with a consoling smile. Hajime glanced at Tio. And next he glanced across his shoulder to look behind.

Over there were several fainting dragons with the white of their eyes completely exposed. Several of their fellow dragons poked at them to ascertain their well-being while several others were staring fearfully at Hajime and Tio. It went without saying that the fainted group was the victim of one of Demon King-Style 108 Harassment Skills, "Peek-a-Demon King!".

□Just leave me alone and take care of those guys. You see, I'm disgusted from the bottom of my heart of a foolish existence like me.□

□Well, certainly, it was really immature.□

□Gufuh. Getting told that by the like of a hopeless dragon.....depressing. I want to.....not die, I want to be a shut-in.□

□Even though Goshujin-sama's mind art damaged that much, but this natural abuse, nnn-□

Tio's cheeks reddened while her body fidgeted.

A dragon that was poking its comrade behind tilted its head □Oh?□, and a beat later it made a commotion *gyau gyau*. The other dragons that got startled and turned around then started to make similar noise. A fainting dragon had its tongue spilled out limply from its mouth.It seemed that it was just a step short from the death's door.

□However, for Goshujin-sama to make merry until this far, how rare this is.□

□Well, I cannot deny that my mood is uplifted more than usual. After all an *adventure* where there is no clear objective, no powerful enemy, and no companion's life at stake like this is the first.□

□Boy.□

□You say that, but you too are high spirited aren't you?□

□Yes. I couldst not deny that.□

One more dragon had its tongue spilled out limply. And then one more dragon, although it opened its eyes just for a moment, it then stretched its forelegs to the sky—before losing strength and flopped on the ground.

This scene was obvious to the trained eye. Right now, something that looked like a white vapor was rising out from the limply unmoving dragons toward the heaven with swaying motion! They were dying from the shock of “Peek-a-Demon King”!

□Well, for now, I'll depend on you to keep my disgrace a secret okay? As expected, if this is known by Yue and others, then I'll turn into a real shut-in from shame and self-disgust.□

Hajime stood up while making Tio to promise to keep this a secret. He then turned on his heel and walked away briskly. He was heading toward the dragons making *gyau gyau* noise at their comrades' death.

The surviving dragons were startled by Hajime's approach and their body froze before they escaped in panic.

□Fufufuh, a secret just between the two of us, that really art not bad. Very well. The childish figure of Goshujin-sama will

be locked inside mine heart.□

□Please, okay? Now then, you guys, don't go to the other side as you please.□

Hajime was talking with Tio while fitting his hand into a black glove that was overflowing with romance. He then suddenly reached out his hand to empty air and grasped something violently. And then, he drove it into the dragon below him.

The dragon with its tongue lolling out twitched and convulsed. The other dragons raised their cry while evacuating to the sky, as though to say□He is beating up a corpse!□

Not paying any attention to that, Hajime did the same thing to the other dragons, he caught something midair and then drove that something with a palm strike into the dragons' body.

□Still, looking at them from nearby like this I can really see it.....these dragons, their body is really frail.□

□Yes. They art scared against human, and then the polluted land, there art no doubt that this world is a harsh place without sufficient food for these children to live.□

While conversing like that, Hajime made red sparks running through the black glove. *bachi bachi* With that sound, the hand became clad in moderate electricity before Hajime's hand casually struck at the place where the heart of the dragon with lolling tongue seemed to be located at while he was still talking normally with Tio.

The dragon with lolling tongue twitched and trembled. At the next moment, its eyes opened with a snap and it

accomplished its revival!

The “Lightning Clad” seemed to be overflowing with casualness, but actually it had been superbly adjusted. Hajime also granted electric shock using that into the dragons that were ascending to heaven.

By the way, Hajime reaching out his hand to empty air was a direct blow to soul——by using the black glove that was a protection artifact, Hajime grasped the soul of the dragons that was ascending to heaven and returned them to their body.

The dragons that received the relatively rough direct resurrection treatment were shivering in terror as expected when they saw Hajime. Hajime muttered “Well, can’t be helped. I reap what I sow”. For the time being he took out food——meat that was preserved inside “Treasure Warehouse II” for the bean sprouts dragons.

Hajime threw it carelessly at the dragons’ feet. The dragons jumped in place because they couldn’t escape even if they wanted with their distance being too close to Hajime, even so their nose was twitching from the wafting smell from below.

They were bothered about Hajime. Or rather, they were scared. Perhaps they would be killed instantly the moment they took their eyes off from him.....

Even while thinking that, drools were already dripping like river from their mouth. In less than ten second their eyes were already glancing repeatedly at their feet.

They looked like a doggy that was told to “wait” .

Hajime smiled wryly.

□That's an apology for surprising you guys. You guys looking like bean sprouts even though you are a dragon race is also pitiful. Eat as much as you want.□

Saying that, Hajime also carelessly leave behind raw meats including the share of the dragons that were circling above while observing the situation. And then he drew back.

The dragons looked at each other. 'He is not attacking? What is this thing with good smell? Is it okay to eat?' It felt like those voices of heart could be heard from them.

The flying dragons hesitantly landed down. And then, their eyes were getting bloodshot from seeing the lumps of meat while drools were dripping down from their mouth like waterfall. The dragons looked at each other, and then, they glanced at Hajime.

Hajime was standing silently beside Tio. Beside the mysteriously kind great existence who was clad in the same presence like them.

Before long, one dragon became unable to endure anymore and bit at the edge of the meat. While the other dragons were watching over him□O, oi. You are okay?□, for a moment the dragon stiffened, and then its eyes snapped open instantly before it charged the lump of meat.

□GYUUOOOWAAAAA!□

Anyone could understand even without word. That was truly a roar of joy! 'How can something this delicious exist in this world! This is like a treasure of food~~-!!' Such voice of heart was resounding.

Naturally the other dragons also snapped at the meat. And then, they raised similar roar of joy.

One dragon exposed its white of eyes and its tongue lolled out from the excessive deliciousness and excitement. Its soul that looked like a white vapor was ascending to heaven. Hajime quickly grasped it, drove it *zudon-* into the body, and revived it with *bachi bachi*. The dragon then snapped into the meat once more.

□These guys, they are dying too easily. Just how frail they are?□

□Truly, this art too pitiful for a dragon race.....was what I wanted to say, but it looks like this art even their first time eating meat for these children. Most likely, they art surviving by living in this island eating fruits or something else. By the way, why art Goshujin-sama bringing meat like that?□

□Aa. Remember, we had barbecue before right? A lot of people came and so I bought a lot of meat in preparation in high spirits, these meats are the remains from that time.□

□Mu. Wait a second, Goshujin-sama. If I remember correctly, the meat at that time was really good meat correct? I remember that it was the brand product from somewhere.□

□Yeah. These are grade A5 meats.□

□.....The meat they art eating for the first time, art the top quality product. Perhaps it couldst not be helped if they ascend to heaven from that.□

Rather, this was an act that would make the meat producer to fly into rage saying 'don't use this meat for animal food!'. If Hajime was going to make excuse, he gave them this kind of meat because he only had preserved food other than this. Even Hajime felt a bit regretful doing this.

But, this act that was an extravagance in a sense brought an unexpected result at the present.

□Hm?Their wariness is lessening slightly?□

Yes, the dragons that were giving off satisfied aura as though to say□'I'm full!□were sending glances at Hajime. From those gazes, it certainly looked like the color of terror from before was lessening. Right now if he had to say they were more bewildered than scared.

□.....Are we mistaken perhaps? Who will ever thought that these guys who were that scared against human will change their heart like this just from a single food.□

□Muu. These children are too simple that it's worrisome. They are like children who would follow a stranger just because they are promised candy.□

It was unthinkable for a wild beast to so easily let go of the wariness they had harbored once. That was why Hajime gave them meat in the name of apologizing but.....at this rate, perhaps these dragons would react warmly against human who they actually ought to be wary against different from before.

The result of doing that would be the same like shortening the life of these dragons. Therefore, Hajime's expression turned a bit bitter.

□But if you look from the opposite, perhaps they are being so cornered to the degree that their wariness will lessen just from a single food.....□

Hajime sighed. And then, he exposed a really speechless expression before he suddenly changed his presence.

□Sorry. I didn't intend to toy with you guys but.....I did something bad. Get scared against human properly.□

Saying that, Hajime was about to emit "Pressure"—it was at that time,

□□□□Gyauh!?□□□□

The dragons suddenly turned around in panic and rushed in full speed into the forest.

□Goshujin-sama?□

□No, that's not me. I haven't emit Pressure. Just what in the——□

Tio turned a face that was questioning Hajime, but naturally Hajime responded with words of denial. Hajime himself was tilting his head in puzzlement why the dragons suddenly ran away.

But, the next moment, he noticed the cause and stopped his words. If it was the hell rabbit ear Shia, then it would be possible that she would notice in the same time or possibly faster than the dragons.

□What? Something is approaching? A living thing.....but this voice□

□Mu? I couldn't hear anything.....no, now I could. This is.....it sounds like motor?□

□Ye, yeah. I also can hear something like that.....□

From faraway the sound of *kiiiiiii-* was faintly resounding. Certainly it was just like Tio said, the sound resembled motor

sound. Yes, it was a voice that was raised by machine. Therefore Hajime couldn't hide his bewilderment.

A black rain that polluted the world, dragon, and floating island in the sky. In this undoubtedly fantasy world, something that was making a sound that resembled motor sound was approaching rapidly. It couldn't be helped that his image of this world was crumbling.

□Nevertheless, this thing is.....□

□Fast!□

The moment Tio continued Hajime's sentence, that thing showed its appearance along with a high-pitched sound.

A hard-looking frame in delta shape that had a trace of roundness with sky blue color that could be concealed by the azure sky. Several long and narrow tubes were attached at its bottom part. There were five of them, rushing straight toward the floating island with beautiful triangle formation.

Seeing those things flying away instantly above Hajime and Tio, Hajime said,

□Why fighter aircrafts!?!□

He grandly acted the straight-man.

Yes, those things were obviously fighter aircrafts. If compared to the existing aircraft in earth, then these aircrafts looked like space fighter aircraft that appeared in a movie of near future, but Hajime's excellent eyes certainly caught sight of a few things. That human was riding inside the cockpit installed at the front part of the airframe, and that the tube things installed below the aircraft resembled the missile in earth.

□.....Goshujin-sama. It seemed our world view art mistaken.
If we hath to say what kind of world this is——it's SF.□

□What's with this chaos.□

A black rain that polluted the world, dragon, and floating island in the sky, futuristic fighter aircrafts flying in the sky.

Certainly it was a chaotic world.

KIIII The hard sound resounded from the other world aircraft that drew a beautiful arc in the sky. The formation of five planes was circling above as though to observe the floating island and then they took distance for the moment.

□The other side should be able to see us too. It will be fine if they can communicate with us somehow.□

□For now, how about trying to talk with them using telepathy Goshujin-sama?□

Hajime and Tio talked with each other carefreely. Ahead of their gaze, one of the circling aircraft suddenly began to be clad with a strange light. The aircraft that was giving off presence that felt increasingly like SF——or rather like UFO, it released something like light ripple the moment it passed across the forest.

There wasn't any thunderous sound reverberating or the forest getting blown up. But, there was certainly a result from that.

KIIIIII-

A hard sound that was different from the motor sound struck the ear.

□-, this is□

□Sound wave?□

Hajime and Tio screwed up their face reflexively. Tio immediately blocked the sound wave using wind barrier, but even so that sound attack caused her headache.

Naturally, for the dragons whose hearing was better than Hajime and Tio and didn't possess any barrier, this was an attack that would make them feel outrageous agony.

□□□□KUWAAAAAAAAAH□□□□

The dragons raised a cry that sounded like scream and they flew out all at once from the forest.

It seemed they fell into panic. They frantically tried to distance themselves from the forest as much as they could. There, another plane fired its missile.

The missile that was approaching in high speed burst before it could impact the dragons, and from there a net was ejected.

The net spread widely and enveloped the dragons without even giving them time to twist their body. On top of that, the net wasn't falling down but it stayed fixed midair and restrained the dragons. It was as though the dragons were locked inside a cage that was created midair.

□A hunt, huh.□

□.....I see. We art not helping?□

Tio didn't sound blaming. She asked merely as a question. Hajime made a wry smile.

□If there is someone being a nuisance to a fisherman saying □What are you doing catching the fish huh!□, then that person is simply an idiot. No, rather he is a scoundrel that is hindering the fisherman's work.□

□Certainly. It's not something good if we who doth not know anything about this world interfere as we pleased.□

It was a completely sound reasoning. They only had a bit of interaction with the dragons, but it would be a lie if they said that they didn't feel attachment at all to the dragons whose reaction were like a stray dog. However, if they were asked whether they were so attached to the dragons to the degree that they would hinder the aircraft pilots who were possibly hunting the dragon to feed their family or for some kind of important work, then the answer was a big NO.

□But, I'm curious to the working of that net that is fixed midair and the sound wave attack and flashing phenomenon of the aircraft. No matter how I look, their driving force seem different compared to earth's aircraft.....perhaps, it might have the same principle with how this island is floating.□

□Either way, they art a party that we might be able to exchange word with. Letting this chance get away art not an option. The problem now, art how to form communication with them, but.....art we going to try sending them telepathy?□

□It will be great if my Language Comprehension and interpreter artifact can demonstrate their effect.□

Even while the two were conversing, most of the dragons that were flying out from the forest were captured. Hajime

was observing to see how the dragons would be transported, but during that time one of the aircraft circled around and it was facing its nose toward Hajime and Tio.

□Oh, as expected it looks like they noticed us. Seem the toher side is the one coming to contact us see?□

□Ri, right. It appears so but.....for some reason, I hath a bad premonition though.□

Tio's premonition was correct.

The moment *voo-* an instantaneous sound split the air and a sudden flash scattered from the lower part of the aircraft's nose—wind of killing intent assaulted the two.

What was fired without any warning was a machine gun. The storm of bullets that were concealing terrible destructive power mercilessly rushed at Hajime and Tio. The surrounding ground was rupturing as though getting blown away. The thrown up cloud of dust covered the two from view.

The aircraft passed overhead Hajime and Tio as though nothing had happened and it rejoined its comrade. It didn't even give any glance at Hajime and Tio anymore. It was clear that the pilot thought the two weren't existence that was worth anything. It was only mowing a grass at a corner of the garden that was an eyesore—that was how it felt like.

□.....Calm down me. This is another world. Don't judge things with our own common sense.□

□.....Those guys.....ignorance art truly terrifying isn't it.□

The cloud of dust was carried away by the wind. What appeared from there was naturally the unharmed Hajime and Tio. Cube-shaped barrier was deployed around them using Cross Velt. The strafing that had a might which resembled 30mm Vulcan cannon was blocked without even a single crack in the barrier.

However, it was doubtful whether the heart of the person inside could block that kind of uncompromising tyranny.

Hajime was folding his arms with vein pulsing on his forehead, even so he was trying to suppress his anger and persuaded himself. Tio beside him was directing a gaze that was shuddering in terror to the aircraft pilots. Of course, that shudder wasn't directed toward their strength, but at their attitude that was picking a fight against a godslayer right from the front.

□This is a world with polluted land. Then, a ground that is floating in the sky must be really important for human to live. Naturally, they should be managing and protecting it strictly. And now there are unknown people rudely stepping on it. I cannot complain even if I got shot without any warning whatsoever. Isn't that right, me? That's right, me.□

□Go, Goshujin-sama. I understand that thy art angry, so please stop that soliloquizing. Somehow it's terrifying in different meaning.□

The way to suppress anger Hajime-style——soliloquizing. Seen from the side, it was a skill that was wholly judged to be more terrifying than getting angry normally.

Because in earth there was no way he could uncompromisingly go “instant death for everyone♡” like when he was in Tortus, this was a patience skill that Hajime newly learned.

From afar, seeing how Hajime and Tio were unharmed, the pilot seemed to be taken aback and he directed its aircraft's nose toward the two once more.

Hajime cleared his throat once and he called for ceasefire while activating "Telepathy".

□Aa~, pilot-san, pilot-san. Can you hear? We don't have any ill intention. If we are trespassing illegally, then we will apologize and get out right away. That's why, first let's have a tal——□

Missile coming!! Without warning it went whoo~~~sh-!!

Of course, Hajime and Tio were unharmed.

□.....□

□Sto, stop it! All of theee, doth thee hath a death wish!? Let's hath a talk right now!□

Hajime was muttering to himself inaudibly.□Perhaps the telepathy didn't go through. No, perhaps they didn't understand the language. Perseverance is important in communication. Isn't that's right, me? That's right, me□He was soliloquizing again. His eyes were completely not moving though.

□Please, listen to us. We——□

Missile comi~~~ng-!! Yes, whoo~~~~sh-!!

Perhaps the missile this time was of a different variety, it didn't just explode but it had extra flame blast with viscosity. The surrounding was dyed crimson. However, inside the flame that was blazing rumblingly, the two were standing still unharmed as expected.

Tio was getting flustered 'awawawa' while glancing at Hajime, but when she saw Hajime's expression had gone past rage and he was starting to smile instead, she covered her face with both hands as though to say 'I cannot bear to see this anymore!'

But, it would be troubling if the current Hajime was looked down on. In order for him to live normally in earth at Japan, his homeland that believed in law and order, everyday he was working hard to not use violence, but instead he was learning different strength that was patience and perseverance, negotiation power and financial strength.

He wouldn't snap just from a bit of machine gun strafing and missiles!

.....It felt like the dragons would want to retort 'Then, why did you snap before this!?' if they knew it.

'Pilot-san, we——'

Hajime tried to call out once more with a voice that had lost any intonation. This time, finally there was a reaction. Although, the reaction wasn't something that "came back" to Hajime, but a complete ignoring of Hajime.

'Chih, what the hell is this. Don't tell me they are carrying shielding device in the same level with a warship?'

'Vans-san, surely that's impossible. Do you see anywhere any device with size necessary for shield of warship level?'

'Are they OOPArt owner?I want that.' (TN: Out of Place Artifact)

'No way, you think there is any explorer in this ear huh. Rather than that, look there. That woman. Her outfit is

strange, but she is an extremely fine jewel yeah? Hey, Vans-san? Looks like that guy is calling at us, so let's land down and kill just the man, then give me that woman. The woman from before is not usable anymore. I want to make her my new pet.□

It appeared these guys weren't really guys with class. At the same time, it seemed they were thinking that the conversation at their side weren't leaking out. Most likely they were under the impression that the communication method of Hajime and Tio was something like their own method, it seemed they thought that they couldn't be heard because they were in different frequency (?).

Hajime was silent. However, any color was gradually leaving his smiling face.

In the middle of that, the man who seemed to be the leader called Vans-san said this to the man who made a remark of wanting to kill Hajime and make only Tio as pet,

□Hmph? Certainly, I'm curious with that abnormally strong shield.Fine then. We will land down and pull information out from them. After that kill the man—and I'll take the woman.□

□Eeh!? That's unfair!□

□Don't make a ruckus. I'll lend her to you when I'm not using her.□

□A~a, can't be helped then~□

Their screwed up conversation was continuing. The five fighter aircrafts—if following what they were saying, it seemed the plane was called sky battlecraft—that were circling with their nose directed at Hajime and Tio were

lowering their speed and altitude. Currently in the conversation that was being leaked out clearly, the hot topics were about how they would kill Hajime or how they would rape Tio later.

□.....Haa, the fools. They art waking up a monster that is not necessary to wake up. They art getting their just dessert.□

Tio's words were muttered to herself.

The sky battlecrafts were approaching. The dragons were peeking at their direction from inside the net.

Hajime figure vanished instantly.

And then, the pilots of the sky battlecrafts, especially Vans who was flying in the lead as the first plane, were doubting their eyes.

□There is no need to get down. I'll send you all down to hell myself.□

A flat voice was resounding inside their head. At the same time, an impossible sight in front of them leaped into their sight.

With a giant weapon loaded with giant stake carried in one hand, a human silhouette jumped at the front of the flying sky battlecraft's cockpit while scattering crimson spark.

□Eh? Ah? What——□

That became the last sentence of the man named Vans.

□What.....the hell, is that□

□Just now, what happened!?!□

□What is going on!?□

□Shit-, is that seriously some kind of OOPArt!?□

Panicked voices resounded.

The sight that they witnessed.

It was a moment of a man jumping up for a few hundred meters with blood and flesh body, and then with one hand carrying a weapon that was unthinkable for any human to lift, he literally pulverized the first plane.

The wreckage of the first plane that was scattered into little pieces and shower of flesh and blood were raining down to the ground. A single black giant stake pierced the floating island like a gravestone.

The pilots that were cursing while rapidly turning their plane were treated with further absurd sight.

It was a sight of a barrage of giant stakes flying wildly everywhere.

□Sca, scatterrr!□

The plane that seemed to be the second in rank immediately gave a command, but he was already too late. One plane received a direct hit and got turned into scraps midair.

□Holy shit-, you bastard, I'll absolutely murder——□

The one speaking turned speechless. His eyes were opened wide. That was natural. After all, the target was calmly standing midair while causing crimson ripples, furthermore at the opposite hand of the hand carrying the weapon that

was shooting out giant stakes——gatling pile bunker, another giant weapon materialized.

The name of that weapon which was put on the shoulder was——Agni - Orkan. It was a weapon that displayed the most power in surface-to-air combat.

Instantly, a great number of missiles were launched.

The man that was about to spit out curse screamed soundlessly while steering his plane, but how could he possibly evade more than fifty missiles that were assaulting him from every directions. Naturally, his fate was decided.

One more flower of flame blast bloomed in the sky.

□Withdraw! We're withdrawing!□

□Mo, monster-□

The two remaining sky battlecrafts circled with a maneuver that was possibly even more outstanding that aircrafts made in earth. They tried to retreat from the battlefield right away with their highest speed.

Their speed was also amazing as expected, they had turned into the size of bean in one breath.

Hajime silently stowed away the gatling pile bunker and Agni - Orkan, and he took out the replacement weapon.

——Anti-Material Sniping Cannon Schlagen AA (Acht Acht)

Across the scope, a sky battlecraft escaping to the sky faraway was reflecting.

□That was a good lesson right? Use it as reference in hell.□

The trigger was pulled after that whisper. No matter how excellent the speed of the sky battlecraft, there was no way they could match the speed of a bullet that was accelerated electromagnetically. One plane was pierced from its back part until its front part, and then with a state that was like it was skewered, its figure was vanishing into the sea of clouds.

Hajime who was shouldering Schlagen AA called out to Tio.

□Tio. We are pursuing. We are annihilating—not, it appear that plane is returning back toward its comrade's location. Let's thoroughly have them tell us about this world.□

□Aa, yes. That's right.□

Tio was seeing Hajime tearing apart the nets capturing the dragons using cakram with a wry smile while transforming into dragon.

And then, Hajime rode on her back and she started flying in the sky with a terrific speed.

□Goshujin-sama, thank you.□

□.....For what?□

Tio didn't answer. Hajime also understood what it was about. She was happy that he exposed his wrath when the men said they would make her a pet.

Instead of answering, Tio's acceleration that was far smoother than usual told the answer more eloquently than anything.

□Now then. Was that the standard of this world's human, or else it's different, I'll have them show me.□

□Thy art really on fire.....□

Even while feeling a bit excited at the fierce gleam in the eyes of Hajime who was facing an enemy that she was seeing for the first time in a while, Tio was also feeling just a little pity at the vulgar residence of this other world who angered the demon king right from the start.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Recently, I'm becoming unable to make it in time.....I'm sorry.

Now then, just when you thought it's fantasy, it's actually half SF! That kind of story.

Tio arc, just where in the world it's going to? Even Shirakome didn't know.

But, I'm writing while picturing an enjoyable development. Just like usual!

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II Cannot Stay as Onlooker

The near future type aircraft made in another world was racing through the sky in a speed that left the territory of sound in the lurch.

It detoured a large cloud mountain with amazing turn to shake off something, it then accelerated in one go from its slight reduction in speed. The nozzle at the plane's rear was ejecting sparkling silver particles—the ejected amount increased explosively.

The sky battlecraft intruded into the world of the speed of sound once more along with an impact sound. The surrounding cloud was blown away from the shockwave. Its acceleration knew no end and it had easily surpassed Mach 2 already.

□NUOOOOOH-. THAT'S REALLY FAST-. AS EXPECTED FROM FIGHTER AIRCRAFT! IT'S GETTING AWAYYYYY-□

A beat later, a black dragon appeared by charging through the cloud mountain with a desperate look. A whirling black wind was deployed around Tio. Seen from the side, it looked like there was a jet black typhoon flying horizontally.

It was Tio's flying skill that realized flying in super speed by reducing the air resistance to the extreme and furthermore she caused a spiral shaped wind around herself to convert it into propulsive power. Even if one looked at the long history of the dragon race, there didn't exist anyone that entered the realm of the speed of sound.

Therefore, something like storming into an unknown territory of speed, and what's more it didn't stop there, furthermore she was flying while maintaining a speed that was twice the speed of sound. It was truly something out of common sense. A miraculous feat that couldn't possibly be realized without the age of god magic called sublimation magic and the assistance of artifact. Of course, there was also the delicate yet powerful skill that should be called as Tio's own special talent included in there.

Tio was unmistakably the history's fastest living thing in Tortus. However, even so it was the fact that against the aircraft that was continuously accelerating even now she was gradually getting left behind. She somehow managed to be hot at its tail because the aircraft would sometimes take evasive maneuver against the threat of Hajime's sniping but.....

□Hmm~, looks like it will be the limit soon even with the threatening. It seems he is starting to realize that we got no intention to hit him.□

□Nuu. I know that I couldst not win against fighter aircraft in a match of pure speed but.....when it comes to it, it's vexing to be left behind like this.□

□No, by the time there is a biological creature that can freely fly in the sky at speed twice the speed of sound, complete with heavy armor and high firepower, that's already a

nightmare. You too has deviated much from the scope of a living thing you know?□

□I'm happy to be praised, but it's only this that I couldst not accept even with logic.□

Tio was looking at far away at the sky battlecraft that was already looked nothing but a speck in the sky while moaning □Muu□in dissatisfaction.

Seeing such Tio, for a beat Hajime tilted his head as though he was thinking of something, and right after that he grinned—and took out something.

It looked black, thin, long, and elastic——

□Here we go, Tio. Let's show our combination move.□

□Mu? What in the world——-, tha, that's!?!□

Tio glanced back at Hajime's words and she opened her eyes wide in astonishment, her voice was raised half in shock and half if joy.

That thing which her gaze captured. That thing which was going to be swung right now.

——Black Whip ver 2.1 “This is not a weapon. It's for personal use desu”

It could be easily guessed for what kind of personal use it was used for.

□GO-, TIO! UNTIL THE OTHER SIDE OF THE SKY!□

The black whip was swung down. *hyun-* It split the air and dexterously flew to right behind and made a really good sound *bechin-*.

□AA——!! HOW COULDDDDDD- Thi, this sensation that hath been a while-□

□What's the matter Tio! Your strength shouldn't be just this much!□

Once more, *bechikon-!* The greatly twirling whip's tip was *donpisha-* striking Tio's butt.

□IT CAME IT CAME IT CAME-! MINE POWER IS OVERFLOWING OUT! MORE! HIT MY BUTT MOREEE! WITH THAT, I FEEL LIKE I COULDST GO FURTHER!□

□You said it! You matchless pervert dragon! I'll give you more!□

□BRING IT O——N-!!□

Tio's eyes were getting moist. Her mouth was leaking out heated breathing 'haa haa'. Her body was shivering in joy and the jet black tornado enveloping her was fiercely increasing in acceleration! By using her special skill "Pain Conversion", the reward that was granted to her by her master was giving her strength! Her speed was increasing endlessly!

The sky battlecraft that had turned into a speck was getting larger to the size of a thumb!

□PLEASE HIT ME! MINE BUTT, PLEASE TORMENT IT MORE!□

hyun hyun-hyuun- When the sound of slicing wind resounded, the sound of whip blow *bishi-, bashi-, bechikon-* was resounding as though in respond of that entreaty. By using the personal use artifact that was bypassing the black scales and granting direct and superb pain only to the

internal, the hopeless dragon-san was reaching her perfect form!

The sky battlecraft at the front was reeling for an instant.

Just when he thought that he had barely escaped with his life from the incomprehensible monster that destroyed sky battlecrafts using flesh and blood body, next a majestic black dragon that he had never seen before was chasing after him clad in jet black typhoon. In addition the dragon was moving in speed of sound and also equipped with something like laser cannon attack.

He lost count how many times he made mistake with his piloting and reduced his speed from shock.....

On top of that, a perverted roar that was mixed with excitement "HIT MINE BUTTTTTT" reached his ear as though that solemn voice was coming from the sky.

The pilot was in chaos! Next he became teary eyed! He couldn't understand what the reality was anymore!

"Glowser 4-. I believe in you! Get me out from this nightmare!"

The pilot called out to his beloved plane——Glowser 4 with a pleading voice. The mindless plane was naturally keeping silent, but due to the hard stepping on the slot pedal, it was displaying its ability until the very limit of its performance.

Based from the specification, it was a super fast sky battlecraft that could reach the maximum speed of Mach 4.4 in pure straight line. It left behind explosive sound that was like the air ruptured and dashed through the sky like a streak of meteor.

Behind it, the hopeless dragon-san was chasing right on its tail! The owner-san riding on her back was swinging around “personal not weapon” without pause in high spirits! Howls of joy were resounding through the vast sky! Tio Claus was outdoing modern aircraft!

□ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-, you got slightly left behind! Put your strength into your ass! This damned hopeless dragon-□

□AHHHHHHH! I CAME! I’M COMING TO BEYOND THE SKYYYYYYYY-□

□Just what the hell-. Please no more-. Someone HELP MEEEEEEEEEE-□

The sky was blue. The wind was refreshing, the sea of clouds was beautiful.

Amidst such magnificent nature, three different roars from three different people were.....

It was truly, a chaos.

A while after chaos was spread in the azure sky,

□Hics.....□

□Don’t cry Tio. You set a new record you know? You are without a doubt the fastest living thing in history. You are amazing. In various meaning.□

There was the figure of Tio who was flying in normal speed while sobbing and Hajime who was consoling her.

It stood to reason. Tio who reached the realm of four times the speed of sound even though it was just for a moment was unmistakably an existence that had deviated from the scope of living thing and could be said to have entered the realm of god. But, even so, she was unable to match the endurance of the near future type aircraft of another world that could maintain such speed continuously. In the end she was left behind like this and her pride got hurt.

□It's vexing, how vexing□

□Come on, stop crying already. You are amazing okay.□

Hajime exposed a gentle expression that was unthinkable coming from the person who just now was exhibiting a storm-like whipping while laughing loudly. He was patting *pon pon* and caressing Tio's black scale.

To be given the carrot after the whip, Tio drew in her tear of vexation and continued□But.....□while enveloped in aura of happiness.

□We let go of a source that we couldst finally communicate with. What wouldst we do from here, Goshujin-sama.□

□H~m, let's see. We can also return to the floating island just now and investigate the cause that make the island float, but we had flown really far from there. Let's try to go for a bit toward the direction that guy is flying to.□

□Well, in this first place this art an aimless adventure, I don't mind that.□

While saying such thing, the two continued to fly carefreely in pursuit of someone who they didn't know how far he had escaped.

Sometimes Hajime would change their route randomly saying things like "Let's try going over there" or "Let's try going toward that cloud". Tio would tilt her head thinking "He is not in the mood of chasing anymore?", even so there wasn't any particular reason for her to object so she would continue fly following the instruction.

Like that, they must have flew continuously for half a day.

Midway, they were discovering several floating islands while advancing through scenery that wasn't really changing. The time was finally starting to enter a period where the sun was starting to sink at the other side of the sea of clouds.

Inside the world that was painfully beautiful dyed in madder red color, it appeared.

"Hee. This thing is also really big. Is this a mother ship I wonder?"

".....It's not clear if this is the place where that guy escaped. Well, though it doth not feel like we art mistaken based on the direction and distance."

"Ou. We aren't mistaken."

For a moment, Tio directed a really speechless expression at Hajime, but she immediately pulled herself together and asked "What wouldst we do?"

Hajime showed a thinking gesture while staring at the thing ahead of his gaze.

It was a large flying warship vacantly shining dull grey from the illumination of the sun's orange light. Its shape was similar with a blimp in earth's term. It had a small but wide shape like a rugby ball. Thinking how it was made from

metal, its shape as a whole was unsuited for flying, but it was giving a definite sense of stability even seen from afar. It was ejecting out sparkling silver particles to the back while flying with considerable speed.

Its size was about as big as two aircraft carriers in earth. Seeing really closely at it, there were countless cylindrical protrusions on its exterior. There was no need to guess that those were weapons on board the ship. Countless small square hatches were lining up. There was no doubt that those were for the loaded weapon like missiles or the like.

‘This is becoming even more like SF’ —Hajime was thinking of such thing while speaking out their plan.

□Yosh, the situation changed from pure fantasy to semi-SF. We too will job change from adventurer to spy.□

□H, hmm? In other words, we are going to infiltrate?□

□Yeah, somehow I’m getting thrilled. Tio, dispel your transformation. We are sneaking into that mother ship overflowing with romance——Golia○ with camouflaging artifact fully deployed.□(TN: Goliath is a destroyer ship in Laputa)

□It feels like that temporary name are telling the fate that ship would meet though.....the flag of its sinking are as likely as a certain Titani○-san□

Tio was saying such thing while emitting a bright flash from her transformation cancellation. She was hovering with her wings showed out using partial transformation. Hajime also took out a skyboard from “Treasure Warehouse II” that he rode on. He activated pencil Cross Velt and deployed barrier for camouflage.

□Do those guys have the technology that can break our camouflage.....we won't know until we try it.□

□What wouldst we do if we art discovered?□

□Of course, we will have a peaceful dialogue. After all I am a virtuous and exemplary Japanese. If I tell them that I'll at least spare their life if they hand over the guy screwing around before this, then surely both sides will be able to build a friendly relationship.□

□Goshujin-sama, that's a joke correct? Thy face art serious and thy voice art flat, but that's a joke correct? Isn't that right?□

Haijme-san didn't answer. Since the ancient time a good Japanese boy was a taciturn person!

In a state that was without sound, and without shape if seen from outside, and furthermore without heat that couldn't be detected, the two of them approached sii~~lently from behind the mother ship. They could feel how big it was the closer they got.

The two who arrived above the mother ship removed away the skyboard and wings before landing on the edge of a giant deck.

□.....This is unknown metal, but it doesn't have any particular effect. I guess it's a normal metal.□

□So this thing art floating not because of the metal.□

Hajime whispered while kneeling on the deck with his hand crawling on the smooth floor. Tio was paying attention to the surrounding but there wasn't any human sign on the deck. At the central part there was a sticking out place that

seemed to be the control room of the mother ship. They could see glimpses of human silhouettes across the windbreak. They couldn't make the judgment whether that place was really the control room or just a watchtower.

□Goshujin-sama. Although we hath invisibility barrier, I just couldst not calm down no matter what by staying for long in a place this open. I couldst see something like an entrance over there, how about we hath a look for now?□

□I guess. I'm curious with the material and some other things but.....well, I can just take some sample with me.□

Hajime said such thing and he casually tore off a railing and stored it into "Treasure Warehouse II". The area part around ten meters from the door that seemed to be the entrance became uneven as though it had been gnawed by worms.

What a natural vandalism & larceny. Police officer, catch this demon king please.

Whether he actually noticed the amazed expression of Tio behind him, Hajime whose mood to be stealthy was zero despite being in the middle of infiltration was advancing through the deck briskly and reached in front of the door that connected to inside. He covered the whole door with barrier so to not ring any alarm from the difference in air pressure and the like and he put his hand on the door to investigate if there was any trap.

And then he used transmutation and changed the door into a mere hole and stepped inside also with a casual attitude. Tio followed in and the door was returned to its former shape again with transmutation. Lock or anything was meaningless in front of a transmutation master.

□For now, infiltration success.□

□How strange. This art different from the infiltration that I know though.□

Hajime nodded in satisfaction that there wasn't any alarm that got triggered. Tio's expression was really complicated.

Both of them paid attention to the presence at their surrounding while advancing forward. They progressed through the passage of smooth metal. Several places were gouged by Hajime-san's hand. He was like someone who was using coin to scratch cars on the roadside while casually strolling. It was truly a nasty prank (?).

□The driving force is likely to be at the rear of the hull. Also, that place n the highest position, it must be the watchtower or the control room.□

□That sparkling particles must be one of the reason the island art floating. Then, should we search the rear hull first?□

Hajime thought for a bit before nodding at Tio's suggestion.

□Yeah, I want to quickly carve the meaning of regret to that guy who got away but, well, we know he is inside this ship anyway, we can put him for later.□

□.....Right.□

Both of them vaguely headed toward the rear hull. In contrast with how big the ship was, the corridors inside were unexpectedly narrow. Three people walking side by side would feel cramped.

Naturally on the way they encountered a lot of the ship's crew.

Hajime and Tio who were able to detect the other party's position using Presence Detection before they bumped with each other kept advancing forward without getting discovered.

Even in the case they encountered a small group inside the small corridor, they would jump to the ceiling and pierced the ceiling with fingers thrust and clung there until the group passed, or created an appropriate gap on the wall using transmutation and pushed their body into there until the group passed.

The mood was really like a certain spy somewhere. Hajime's expression was in enjoyment as though his childlike innocence had returned to him.

By the way, when they were clinging on the ceiling, Hajime would turn into something like human hammock to take hold of Tio, and when they slipped into the gap created in the wall, Hajime would embrace Tio tightly, so Tio herself was also really having much fun with it in feeling embarrassed and happy.

□It seems there art a proper country existing. They look like military personnel. Their ethics art low, but they hath obedience for the chain of command.□

□Yeah. They are proper military with pecking order divided into ranks. The military can deploy an expedition of this scale means that their country also has quite the scale.□

The two made their conjecture based from the figures of the crews who were wearing unified uniform even if in different color schemes, the conversation the two overheard, and in addition how the weapon the crews were armed with were obviously guns also with uniform made.

Even while conversing like that, the two were enjoying their game of spy make-believe to their heart's content, slipped through several doors, passed through several spacious rooms, descended several stairs, and then they came out into a particularly large corridor at the lowest floor where they suddenly smelled an unpleasant smell.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other's face with a grimace at the familiar offensive smell and they followed the smell as though in invitation.

They could hear talking voices from the other side of the corridor's corner. Both of them peeked out from the corner.

□Oi, did you heard? Those guys from Glowser squad, they were annihilated except Higgs.□

□Is that, true? Just what in the world happened huh. Was it those Avenst bunches?□

□Might be. But, among the Glowser squad that *came out for supply*, it's only the messed up Higgs who came back in terror. That one seems true. Is it that scary just by getting attacked by those bunches?□

□That's.....perhaps, they used new weapon?□

□You think those bunches has that kind of power huh. They are just air pirate that keep spewing out delusional words like tradition or pride or whatever you know?□

□Then, why do you think Higgs got that scared against the like of those bunches?□

□Ain't no way I know that even if you ask me.□

The two men were leaning on the corridor's wall while speaking out several concerning information. The source of the smell certainly came from those two. It was obvious from a glance. The reason was because their work clothes that looked like overall was drenched in blood.

There was a large door in front of them. They must be doing work that drenched them in blood there. The two didn't really want to imagine what was being done inside there. Most likely the men were in the middle of break right now.

□Well, anyway, it's fact that we lost four sky battlecrafts. After all we are ordered to extract spare fuel for aircraft like this.□

□You're, right.□

The two workers sighed at their comrades' misfortune. It wasn't clear how strong their feeling of fellowship against their comrades from their conversation. However, it seemed certain that the work which drenched them with blood was necessary to replenish the sky battlecrafts that Hajime shot down.

The two workers took a puff of something that seemed to be cigar before returning inside the room feeling that it was bothersome. When they entered, an intense smell——blood smell was overflowing from behind the opened door.

□Goshujin-sama.□

□Yeah, let's go.□

The two's personality weren't so cute that they would falter just from smell of blood after this far. In order to ascertain the true identity of the "fuel" that was the source to make the sky battlecraft, and perhaps also this mother ship and

the floating island to float, Hajime and Tio approached the room.

The door was a sliding type, most likely it would automatically close after a certain time. Hajime and Tio slipped inside the room before the sliding door closed.

And then, they witnessed it. The cause of why those pilots were trying to capture the dragons alive. And also the true form of the “fuel”.

Inside the room was spacious. It had the height of two floors with length and width that could reach a hundred meter. Three sides of the walls were made from cages without any gap in between, there was some kind of work stand at the middle of the room. Several things that looked like crane and arm were protruding from the ceiling and floor.

The cages were filled with dragon and nothing else. The dragons' size, color, and shape were varied, but they were living things that were obviously dragon from a glance. There were also grey dragons like the dragons they were playing with at the previous island. Even the biggest of the dragons here didn't surpass three meter, most were only small dragon with size around one or two meter. There were also dragons with size around thirty centimeters among them.

The center of the room was truly in a state of sea of blood. There was a large work stand and a dragon was lying down there and fixed in place by several arms. The dragon already didn't have light in its eyes, blood was still flowing from its ripped open chest onto the floor.

There were around ten workers including the previous two. One of them was carefully washing a small silver stone that taken out just now from the dragon.

And then, the stone was entered into a machine nearby, and after the worker confirmed something that was displayed by the machine, he handed over the stone to other worker. The worker who received the small silver stone inserted it into another machine and he controlled the machine while confirming something several times.

Like that, the small stone that had uneven shape before this was processed into a clean square chip.

The silver stone that was processed into a square chip was then handed again to another worker. That worker inserted the chip to the bottom of cylinder machine that looked like a thermos connected to a cord. And then, after he pressed several buttons, the meter display at the side of the cylinder machine was starting to shine silver sequentially from below.

After witnessing until that far, Hajime muttered with a small sound and expressionless face.

□.....I see. So the dragon of this world also has something like a magic stone.□

□And by processing that, they couldst obtained this “fuel”.□

Tio who nodded beside Hajime was similarly expressionless like Hajime in contrast with her comprehending words. Her voice had no intonation at all.

□Surely the floating island also has similar ore like that. Geez, it will be fantasy world banzai if this end just with that. This really left a bad taste.□

□But, just because of that, we couldst not stop them or resent them. For them who are living in the sky because of the polluted land, dragon hunting art truly a matter of life

and death. Perhaps obstructing them from doing that art the same like saying 'die' to them after all.□

□Yeah.□

To say further, because Tio was a person of dragon race, she had just a little emotional attachment toward dragon species, even so, if it was said that these dragons were monster unrelated to her then that's that. Even in Tortus, she wouldn't hesitate to exterminate a monster of dragon species.

But, as expected, the likable dragons she first met in this another world flashed at the corner of her mind. Therefore, there was no way she could think nothing about this work of making dragon as battery replacement.

It was just as Hajime said, even though they could understand what they were doing, but it left a "bad taste" inside.

□Let's go Tio. It's enough already.□

□Right.□

They had seen and known something disgusting——Hajime and Tio left the room with such feeling. The weak cry of the dragons that sometimes reached their ear sounded like a cry for help to the two of them. Even though they knew that it was just their imagination, they couldn't help but sigh deeply.

Like that, Hajime and Tio were about to step out of the room, it was at that time,

gouuun-

A sound that resounded to the bottom of their stomach, and along with that G force assaulted their body as though the ship was accelerating all at once.

The sudden change was nothing for Hajime and Tio, but several of the workers were stumbling or fell on their butt.

□Announcement from the control room. Sighting of Avenst is confirmed. This ship will enter battle action from here on. All crew, go to your post right away. Repeat, this ship will enter battle action from here on. All crew, go to your post right away.□

At the same time with the shrilly alert sound inside the ship, a broadcast to the whole ship resounded. The announcement from the control room commanded the sortie of the sky battlecraft squad, in addition, an order that commanded the workers in this room to hurry with the resupply was given.

The situation inside the ship suddenly turned hurried. The workers put around ten of the cylindrical machine like just now into a case and put the case on a trolley before going out of the room with fast steps.

Following them, Hajime exited from the room while opening his mouth with a pensive look.

□Avenst, is that the air pirate those guys talked about just now?□

□Perhaps so. It's unknown whether this is a coincidence or inevitability, but it appeared this wouldst be a battle.□

The two didn't know the battle strength of the other party, but it was unthinkable for a regular army that belonged to a country could be done in by a "pirate" group at best.

However, even so, an army in possession of unknown battle strength would battle an enemy with similarly unknown strength. They would like to be spared from harmoniously staying inside this ship in the unlikely chance that this mother ship got shot down.

□Let's get out quickly. We grasped the cause of the floating phenomenon already, and I smell a bit of danger from the energy that might result from the destruction of the power reactor that grant the absurd propulsive force to this mother ship. Let's take some distance and watch the situation.□

□Right. That art the wise choice.□

Hajime was thoroughly ignoring the flurried activity inside the ship while taking shortcut to get outside by irresponsibly opening stair shaped hole on the floor using transmutation, before he opened his mouth as though he recalled something.

□Come to think of it, that survivor.....if I remember correct, his name is "Sniff" is it?□

□Indeed, I think that person kept sobbing without end since he encountered us, but his name art not Sniff, but "Higgs". Goshujin-sama, you only get the "i" correctly.□

□Well, it doesn't matter if he is Hics or Huggs. Sorry, looks like we don't get the time to beat him up.□

□Such thing.....I'm not really concerned of that. Just knowing that Goshujin-sama got angry for mine sake already made me need replacement panty.□

□No need to worry. I thought that might be the case, so I stocked panties for your use inside the Treasure Warehouse.□

□What, the? Thi, this art the first time I heard that.□

□Yue made me brought them. Some time ago there was a chance when I went out with just you right? At that time, she said something like□Did you bring your handkerchief? Your wallet? Tio's panty? Geez, it's no good to be forgetful. Nn-□.□

□What legal wife power.....□

The two of them were doing that kind of stupid conversation as though to wash off the unpleasant feeling from just now while Hajime used the hole that he arbitrarily opened out in the hull to jump out from the mother ship that was cruising in high speed to outside where the winds were buzzing thunderously. Tio also jumped out after Hajime.

Hajime wasted no time riding his skyboard while Tio also revealed her dragon wings. They were taking distance from the mother ship while starting to fly in parallel with it.

Hajime laid out a camouflage barrier that wholly covered both him and Tio, then he turned his gaze to what the mother ship was pursuing.

The flying ship of the air pirate called Avenst had similar shape with the mother ship, but its size was only a third of the mother ship. Different from the mother ship, its rear hull wasn't emitting silver particle, but white light that even looked colorless.

The speed difference between two sides was evident, the sky battlecrafts that flew out from the mother ship quickly caught up and began their offensive.

The airship of the air pirate endured the attack with skilful maneuver while intercepting using the weapon on board so that the sky battlecrafts couldn't get near. In addition, sky

battlecrafts were also launched from the airship of the air pirate, and they were also displaying splendid dogfight technique while protecting their ship from the assaulting enemy.

□It seems the air pirate is inferior in equipment and number, but their skill is better.□

□The speed difference art obvious, and their turning ability and weapons art also inferior in a glance, yet they art splendidly enduring. But.....□

□Yeah, the difference in strength is hopeless.□

Yes, no matter how skilled the air pirates were, their battle strength was overwhelmingly insufficient. Even from a quick count, the difference in number of sky battlecraft was three times, the power of their Vulcan and their missile weapon's maneuverability were so weak that the spectator would want to avert their eyes from looking.

Most likely, the air pirate's side would get shot down if they got hit by a single missile or several bullets from the Vulcan. In contrast, the sky battlecraft of the army side, putting aside the missile, it seemed like their battle capability wouldn't be affected even if they got hit dozens of times just by the Vulcan of the air pirate's sky battlecraft.

The air pirate was facing against an enemy with several times their number, they couldn't hope to shoot down the enemy without landing hits several times as many and they also couldn't shake off the enemy using speed. The preeminent skill of the pilots was displaying a miraculous defense that would make any spectator to spontaneously sigh in admiration, but it was obvious that too was only a matter of time.

□No matter how you look at it, it's not that the air pirate came attacking, but they unfortunately got discovered by the army.....something like that.□

□O, Goshujin-sama. It looks like the mother ship of the air pirate art changing course. Hou, it seems they art planning to plunge into those clouds that looks like a mountain range see?□

They could see a giant waterfall of cloud at the left side. The river of cloud was flowing down like vapor of dry ice falling to the ground from the towering mountain range of cloud that looked like it was continuing until the end of the world. It was merely a place with height difference among the sea of clouds, but seen from the side it indeed looked like a mountain range of cloud.

Inside the sea of clouds was a place where black rain that caused necrosis on the cells and fierce lightning were raging. As expected, was the airship and sky battlecrafts of the air pirate that seemed to have low spec able to endure that environment.....

No matter how they thought about it, this was obviously a sink-or-swim gamble. But, either way it was only a matter of time until the air pirate got shot down at this rate. There was no doubt that for the air pirate too they had no other choice then to make this gamble.

The airship of the air pirate was starting to swivel left as though drawing a large arc. It was already partly damaged from getting shot several times by the army's air battlecrafts. Even so, it was evading the powerful cannon and missile from the mother ship, so it was still an amazing skill that they were displaying.

Although, if it was asked whether they could escape like that,

□.....It will be harsh.□

□Yes.□

The mother ship was approaching until nearby already. The nearer it got, the more accurate their bombing became. No matter how divine the skill of the pilot was, there would be nothing they could do if the distance was closed further than this.

It was really unthinkable that the air pirate would be able to reach until the cloud mountain range.

Hajime and Tio were watching that sight. Of course, the two wouldn't head out to give reinforcement. These people were the "pirate" of this world. The outlaw that ignored the rule which protected many. This wasn't a good problem to be mucked up irresponsibly by people of another world who came just to fulfill their curiosity of wanting a bit of adventure.

No matter how problematic the moral of the army's pilots, no matter how the "fuel" production left them with bad taste, it was completely unthinkable for them to be the air pirate's ally because of that.

As expected, the environment and the way of living of the people in this world were a bit too severe for the two of them to purely have fun here——Hajime and Tio smiled bitterly. They didn't have the disgusting hobby of purposely enjoying the death of many people, so they averted their gaze thinking to withdraw from this airspace.

But, the destiny or something following Hajime and co around wasn't that good of a guy that would let them get away that simply. All the events that happened at other world Tortus, tumbling into another world like this when they came out just for a little stroll, then how that world had ended already, furthermore having the scene of a battle between two factions unfolding in front of their eyes like this.....

——Piiiiiiiiih

□Aa?□

□Mu?□

In the battlefield that was decorated with explosion roars, howling wind, and orange flame blasts, suddenly a high-pitched sound reverberated. It sounded like blown whistle, however, there was compelling desperation filled into that——crying voice.

Hajime and Tio who reflexively returned their gaze to the battlefield caught a presence of something small rapidly approaching them.

A shining silver small creature was flying, weaving its way through the orange gap of the explosions and the light of the setting sun that illuminated from the interval of the sea of clouds and sky. It was a small but magnificent dragon.

□Piuh. Piiiiiih□

The silver small dragon was desperately flapping its wings while raising a cry that sounded like it would tear up its throat.

‘A lost dragon?’ Hajime and Tio thought doubtfully, but they immediately noticed. That small existence was staring straight at the two of them, no, more accurately it was staring straight at Tio.

Hajime looked at the pencil Cross Velts floating around them. They were functioning normally. The camouflage barrier was going strong. Their form, smell, and heat shouldn’t be possible to be detected. But, the small dragon heading at their direction was going straight at Tio no matter how he looked.

Hajime suddenly brought his face closer to Tio and his nose sniffed repeatedly.

□Wha, what is it, Goshujin-sama? As expected it’s embarrassing to have mine body suddenly sniffed at.□

□No, I’m wondering if you have a unique smell that even my artifact cannot hide.□

□.....Right now, it shouldst not be wrong of me for thinking of wanting to hit Goshujin-sama.□

Tio who was unusually angry was pushing on Hajime’s face with her hand to make distance while her cheeks were blushing slightly.

Even while they were doing that, the small dragon arrived at their position, □Pii! Piih!□it was crying out while circling around the two. It appeared that it was really detecting their presence without any doubt whatsoever.

□Oi oi, what’s with it? It’s looking really desperate somehow.□

□.....Don’t tell me, is it looking for help?□

Tio stared at the tiny dragon with an expression that was lost for words. She was wondering why a dragon that should be fearful against human was trying to get involved with human conflict. Hajime was also cocking his head in puzzlement.

But, the strange matter was continuing further.

Of all thing, the pirate that should be heading desperately to the cloud mountain range was swiveling greatly while bending their path. The direction the ship's nose was pointing was at—the direction of Hajime and Tio.

□What's going on? Don't tell me the camouflage barrier is really broken?□

□No Goshujin-sama. I'm only guessing, but this child might be the cause?□

□They are turning midair to chase after a small dragon when they are in the brink of getting shot down anytime? I seriously don't understand what's the meaning of that.□

Perhaps the army also noticed the small dragon's existence seeing how the air pirate changed course, surprisingly several sky battlecrafts broke away from the front line and approached here. Even though they should be pressuring the greatly skilled air pirate's sky battlecraft, yet they still approached the small dragon even if they left behind a hole in their side's battle force.

At the same time, the sky battlecrafts of the air pirate also ignored the defense of their own mother ship and flew out toward the small dragon.

□.....Just who in world art thou?□

Tio unconsciously asked at the small dragon that was desperately pleading something. The air pirate that pursued the small dragon even if they had to throw away their life. The pursuing army that left behind the air pirate even though it was just a bit more before they could finish them off.

It was already obvious that this small silver dragon wasn't just a mere stray dragon.

□Chih. I don't know what's going on, but at this rate we will get dragged in. Tio, we are finished being a spectator. We are withdrawing from this airspace right away.□

□Mu, acknowledged.□

The two were curious with the small dragon's existence, but it was out of the question for them to get saddled with an existence that was unanimously pursued by the army and air pirate. Hajime and Tio nodded at each other and tried to leave that place.

That moment, as though guessing the intention of the two, the small dragon blocked their route. And then, it began to emit silver right immediately after.

Tio and Hajime unconsciously stopped moving seeing the dazzlingly shining small dragon that looked solemn somehow. Inside their head, a pleading resounded. It sounded vaguely childish, yet filled with a greatly earnest feeling.

□Help-, help! King, please! Everyone, my friends, help them-□

They didn't hear any clear words. But, that feeling was certainly conveyed to them.

Hajime and Tio couldn't hide their bewilderment. They looked at each other while standing still.

Instantly, a sound wave impact assaulted the area.

□Piuh!?

□Uoh□

□Nuwah. This art from that time!□

It was the sound wave attack like what the sky battlecraft emitted at the floating island. Furthermore this one had more power than that time. It even generated physical shockwave that mercilessly attacked Hajime and others.

Naturally, Hajime and Tio weren't damaged, but the small dragon wasn't unharmed. The small dragon that was emitting a mysterious silver light got blown away by the impact and furthermore it was falling limply as though its consciousness was cut off.

□Ah, hey, get a hold of thyself!□

Tio spontaneously leaped out and held the small dragon with both hands.

□Tio! Don't daydream!□

□Nu?□

The sky battlecraft of the army passed through instantly. When Hajime gave her warning, it was after the second planes following behind it had launched the missile that deployed net like the time at the floating island.

The special net burst in front of her eyes and it spread widely to envelop its target.

Hajime cut in between just before it could envelop Tio and the fainted little dragon.

□HAAH!!□

A yell of fighting spirit. The magic power that was gushed out directionally was converted into physical impact due to the skill “Magic Shockwave”. The crimson wave that possessed immense power blown away the cage net far away without any trouble.

After the second plane passed through, the third plane that was further approaching was decelerating while deploying something that looked like a hook from its lower part. Most likely it would use that hook to catch the cage net and carried it until the mother ship.

The pilot of the approaching third plane opened wide his eyes in shock.

After all, just when they were about to capture the small dragon by a beautiful coordination, suddenly a winged beautiful woman appeared midair and caught the small dragon in her embrace, furthermore the cage net was blown away by a crimson wave and in the end a man riding a flying board also appeared after that, that was why it was impossible for him to not get shocked.

Yes, Tio got out of the camouflage range when she leaped out, and Hajime also exposed himself because he fired the magic shockwave.

The tough-looking hook flying out from the rapidly approaching third plane’s lower part was about to hit Hajime and Tio and the small dragon behind him.

The fingers of Hajime's right hand bended like claws. He instantly swung his right hand toward the hook that almost hit him.

By doing that, what was left behind was the figure of Hajime that was reduced into a pile of meat and got sent flying——was naturally not what happened. There was only the sight of the torn apart wreckages disappearing into the sea of clouds.

The sky battlecraft that pursued after the army's sky battlecrafts swiveled greatly to avoid Hajime and Tio.

When Hajime sent a glance, as expected, the air pirate pilot was also showing a shocked expression as though his eyeballs were going to fly out. He looked really like "WHAT THE HELLLLLLLLLLLLLL"

"Tio, how is the dragon?"

"Hmm, looks like it's just losing consciousness without any serious wound.Forgive me, Goshujin-sama. Because I unconsciously jumped out, we are dragged into something troublesome."

Tio showed an apologetic face while approaching Hajime's side. Hajime shrugged while smiling wryly to that.

"If your body moved by itself, then that must be the action that Tio wants to do from your heart. Then I don't really mind that. First of all, it's too late already saying we are dragged into troublesome matter by this time. This kind of thing can also happen from putting on air as onlooker."

"Ye, yes. I see. Thank you Goshujin-sama."

Tio's lips loosened up greatly hearing Hajime's indifferent speech. And then, for some reason Tio seemed to be nestling even closer than before to Hajime.

Ahead of Hajime's gaze, the scene of the air pirate's airship approaching and the army's mother ship circling around the two of them was unfolding. The sky battlecrafts were circling around Hajime and Tio in circles with wariness and bewilderment.

Seeing that kind of sight, Hajime's wry smile deepened and he muttered.

□Now then, first how about we try starting with a peaceful "talk".□

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just a little notice, the comic version that is in the middle of serialization in Overlap-sama's homepage was update.

Damn, seriously damn. The impact at the fight against the claw bear among other things is just damn.

It really has impact and I can enjoy Hajime in his early day at abyss with another fresh feeling.

If you are interested, please take a look by all means!

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II The Legendary Dragon Knight

“Ee, everyone. This is sudden, but we are not anyone suspicious by any means. In this situation, we should strive to reach a mutual understanding peacefully, by means of communication like a cultured human shouldn’t we-”

The voice of Hajime that was amply filled with sincerity was resounding through the whole airspace. He was appealing by using telepathy, so his voice should undoubtedly reach both the army and the air pirate.

While the air pirate’s airship and the army’s mother ship that was located diagonally right behind it were approaching, Hajime was hovering midair while showing a friendly smile. The first impression was truly the most important thing in forming personal relationship.

Tio who was nestling close beside him was nursing the small dragon in her arms while acting the straight-man “No matter how they look, thou only look like someone suspicious though”, but it didn’t even give a single scratch at Hajime’s ignoring skill.

Hajime lifted up both his hands to appeal that he had no hostility while he continued his words like a cultured modern-day person.

□We don't have any hostile intention. No, honestly! I'm not lying at all! It will be a cold day in hell before I lie. A person like me is saying that, that's why there can be no doubt about it. We don't have any hostile intention!□

□It sounds extremely fishy.....□

Tio-san beside Hajime was saying something. But his ignoring skill level had reached the max value so there was no problem.

□Everyone, it appears that all of you are pursuing after this rug rat dragon, but the two of us don't need it! Rather, we are even thinking seriously whether we should just toss this thing away over there.□

'We don't have any intention of snatching your prey okaaaay!' Hajime appealed so, but for some reason hostility was overflowing from the pilots of both factions circling at the surrounding. Especially all the pilot-san of the air pirate, their rage was fierce. They were laying out their protest by punching *bang bang* at their cockpit's windbreaker.

□.....It was a joke. Just now was a joke filled with wits. That was my consideration to everyone trying to calm down this place. Anyway, we don't have any intention of snatching this thing, so we will hand over this rug rat. Owner-san, please come out to the fro~~nt□

For some reason, when Hajime said "rug rat" or "owner", the killing intent of the air pirate pilots doubled. Somehow he got the feeling that the more he talked the more their hostility got fanned up.

Even while Hajime was making speech like that, the airship of the air pirate had approached until nearby.

There, perhaps their mental petrification against the really strange duo was finally dispelled, the air battle force of the army side was starting to move.

It seemed that it was the fact that they tried to capture the small dragon alive, so instead of attacking Hajime and Tio, they resumed their attack toward the airship.

Perhaps it should be called as an abnormal obsession, because the airship was recklessly charging forward without even taking evasive action. It was getting bombed directly and got damaged all over.

The pilots of the air pirate side returned fire. However, because their number was reduced by the army's overwhelming attack, and how the airship wasn't taking sufficient evasive action, and then, because there were Hajime and Tio—or more accurately the small dragon nearby, their movement got restrained and they were unable to deploy in a defensive battle like before.

□Ee, everyone, let's calm down for now. I will hand over this rug ra——this young dragon, so both sides, please stop your ship. Let's talk it with each other about the handing over——□

□Please match your speed with usss-. And then, give Kuwaibel to me! Please-□

An amplified voice of a woman——no, a girl reached Hajime, cutting off his speech.

When Hajime turned his gaze there, he could see on the front deck of the airship that was charging to here, a girl carrying something that looked like a megaphone was leaning his body forward on the handrail that she looked like she could fall off anytime. Behind the girl was a tall blonde

haired young woman and a young man with the same blonde hair standing by, they were desperately holding the girl who looked like she could fall off anytime.

The girl's silver semi-long hair was wild from the strong wind. But, the girl's expression was even wilder than that. Looking closer she was a beauty. However, her eyes that were greatly slanting upward and her desperate look that even resembled an ogre were honestly at a creepy level.

But, her figure that was reaching out her hand earnestly and sincerely even when she knew that she wouldn't reach conveyed the seriousness of the girl.

The ship wasn't decelerating. It would get shot down if it stopped. It was something definite. That was why the girl yelled for Hajime to match his speed pleadingly.

The airship was passing through so close it almost grazed Hajime and Tio. The girl was still reaching out her hand with a despairing and grieving expression.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other's face.

□Aa~. It looks like they also know the name of this rug rat, and based on the situation, perhaps what this thing meant by friend refer to the air pirate—let's toss this thing to that girl and get away from here.□

□This hath really become troublesome in various aspects, I understand.□

They nodded once. Hajime and Tio started sliding backward with a sudden speed.

The movement that wholly ignored things like propulsive force or dynamics caused several pilots who were looking for

chance to open their eyes wide in shock.

Hajime and Tio instantly approached the airship's deck.

The girl's expression greatly brightened up. The blonde hair duo behind her looked wary.

Perhaps thinking that the small dragon was going to be handed over, the mother ship behind the airship launched innumerable number of missiles. It seemed that it took into consideration that the small dragon was nearby, so its main cannon the majestic 3-gun turrets stayed silent, but in front of nearly fifty missiles, it was hard to say that it was "fortunate".

The Vulcan cannon loaded aboard the airship spouted fire, shooting down the missile swarm, but in the first place it couldn't take evasive action. The sky battlecraft pilots also joined in the interception, but naturally by doing that the respond toward the army's sky battlecraft thinned down.

One plane slipped through the defensive line of the air pirate and launched its missile.

Most likely its aim was the bridge. Human silhouettes could be seen across the windbreaker of a place that was jutting out in the central position of the airship.

The girl and the blonde haired duo opened their eyes wide. They were staring dumbfounded at their last moment——

Ahead of their gaze, one smoking sky battlecraft barged in. It slipped between the bridge and the flying missile without any hesitation.

It was a shield with one's life on the line. For a "pirate", that skill, that spirit, that everything was noble.

Flame blast illuminated the bridge, the girl and others on the deck, and Hajime and Tio who were flying parallel to the airship.

The plane's rear part was pulverized and the front nose was torn to pieces. It was merely luck that the cockpit wasn't blasted off.

But, there wasn't any concept of bail out or anything for the pilot of this world. The reason was because there was nothing but the sea of clouds below when they ejected out, inside that was a hell that rejected human's survival.

□Bovid-!!□

The girl's pained voice resounded at the interstice of the wind's howl. Even though she wasn't using megaphone, but her voice resounded excessively clearly was surely because the pilot was an important people for her.

□.....Good grief. Well, I'm a Japanese after all?□

For some reason Hajime was making a strange excuse while taking out something from "Treasure Warehouse II" that he threw away. That thing which was flying in a high speed that was unthinkable to be reached just from a snap of the wrist slid right under the cockpit part that was about to vanish into the sea of clouds.

And then, that thing that spread out with *kashun-* sound——variable type chakram "Orestes" swallowed the cockpit along with the pilot through its center.

The girls and co leaked out□Eh?□, at the same time another Orestes that was also thrown on the deck unfolded and the cockpit fell from there. The deck got dented along with a

loud impact sound. The pilot who returned safely (?) looked dazed from being unable to comprehend what happened.

Hajime caught the returning Orestes while calling at the girl and co who were dumbfounded at the unbelievable sight.

□O~i, you over there! You are this guy's owner——not that, you're his friend? You are aren't you?□

□Eh? A, e, u, tha, that's rightttt!□

Hajime asked while poking at the small dragon Tio was carrying. The girl was in a state of 'presently in chaos!', however she somehow returned word of affirmative.

Hajime nodded□Yosh□.

□Then, I'll return him, so catch him properly okaaay!□

□Eh? Catch? Eh?□

Hajime directed a really nice smile at the girl was all flustered and all shook up. He ignored Tio who was speaking hesitantly□No, Goshujin-sama. Although the situation is as it is, that art a bit.....□, and he strongly grasped the small dragon in an eagle grip.

And then, he tossed it away□Hoi-□with a really casual feeling.

□WAITTTTTTTTTTTT-, WHAT ARE YOU DOINGGGGGG-□

The girl screamed, however she did that while running on the deck with surprising swiftness and performed a dive catch at the falling small dragon. At that occasion, she also seemed to perform a face sliding, but she seemed to be

unexpectedly tough because right after she lifted the small dragon to show at the panicked blonde hair duo.

That figure looked like an outfielder baseball player showing up his fine play, or it closely resembled a person of a certain unpopulated island going「I CAUGHT ITT——!!」. The blonde hair duo was rushing to the girl while applauding. (TN: Click [here](#) if you want to see the pose. I don't really know what this refer too. Perhaps some kind of TV show in Japan?)

Seeing their figure like that, Hajime showed a really satisfied smile that seemed to say「Today too I'm accumulating up good deed yeah」before he used telepathy once more.

「Everyone, with this we are not involved anymore. From the start we are just a passing by people of virtue, and so, we will quickly vanish so that we won't be a bother to everyone. Well then-」

Hajime prompted Tio and he rotated his skyboard. The skyboard turned 90 degree left from the course of the air pirate. That was a course that distanced away from the cloud mountain range. Hajime predicted that the air pirate who had recovered the small dragon would head toward the cloud mountain range in order to escape the army, so he chose a course that was the exact opposite from that route.

But, destiny-san wouldn't let such a shallow demon king-san to get away! It was impossible to escape from destiny-san!

「Piih!? Pii~~? Piih!? Pii———!!」

「Ah——, Ku-chan! DON'T GOOO-. COME BACK HEREEEEEE-」

Such cry and scream could be heard from behind.

When Hajime and Tio looked behind in surprise, the awakened small dragon was chasing after Hajime and Tio once more. Perhaps the girl had jumped out overenthusiastically, because she was diving outside the handrail, but the blond hair duo caught her leg in a narrow call.

The screams (?) of the blonde hair duo "Pr, princessss-. Do you want to dieee-" or "Aa, this is bad-. Roze-sama's clothes is slipping offffff-" who were looking desperate could be heard. The pilot who went through emergency landing on the deck jumped out from the cockpit in panic and joined in the rescue of the girl whose buttocks were getting exposed.

"Wai-, why are you chasing us!? Just as I thought Tio, a strange smell really is coming from you!?"

"That's a cruel remark don't thou know!? Even if it's me, I couldst still feel hurt here!?"

Hajime and Tio accelerated rapidly.

However, surprisingly the small dragon made its body to be clad in silver color and chased them steadily. In contrast with the tininess of its body and its pitiful 'pii pii' cry, it was unexpectedly a speed fighter.

"Uwaa, somehow everyone is following after us.....what's with this game of tag?"

"This art chaos."

In the world of twilight, Hajime and Tio were in the lead with the small dragon, the air pirate's sky battlecrafts, the army's sky battlecrafts, airship, and mother ship were pursuing in a straight line which created a bizarre sight. Hajime was looking weary while Tio's face was twitching.

Even when they attempted to camouflage themselves using pencil Cross Velts, but as long as the small dragon was chasing after Tio by somehow grasping her position accurately, there was no other way to get away other than shaking it off using speed.

Hajime withdrew Donner from his holster and loaded it with special bullet “Excise Bullet”. It was a special bullet that could change place along with the space around it to another space coordinate. By firing the bullet with electromagnetic acceleration and then exchanging place with it at the farthest distance, it enabled the user himself to move in the pseudo realm of electromagnetic acceleration.

“Tio, grab on me. We are teleporting.”

“.....Right. That’s fine but.....why, didn’t Goshujin-sama use it when chasing after that Higgs fellow?”

Hajime’s gaze wandered around a bit while, “You, it’s that you know, that. Yes, interfering at the battle between you and that guy is just inelegant right?” he was making a strangely lame excuse while his finger was about to pull the trigger.

But, just before he could,

“Whoops”

Hajime controlled the skyboard and made a sharp turn. The place where they were just at a moment before was rushed through by innumerable bullets.

Furthermore, the sky battlecraft squad that cut in at the path Hajime was turning to was carrying out a strafing with Vulcan to reduce Hajime and Tio into meat scraps without even a shred of mercy.

Hajime further barrel rolled to avoid that, but

□Oi oi, they are really feverish with murderous impulse huh.□

□Looks like they art losing their temper with this game of tag.□

Ahead of the gaze of the two who were turning around, there was the form of the mother ship that unnoticed had taken a steep climb and aimed its gun turret at its lower part from the far height. It seemed the turret was a type that could be stowed in, that turret that was protruding out from the ship's bottom was opening its large nozzle that had a diameter around two meter.

It was a caliber that was too big to shoot cannon ball, but it seemed what it would shot wasn't cannon or missile.

It had silver light converging in it. The energy was so immense their skin could feel it. No matter how they looked, it was in the preparation stage to fire a beam cannon like space battleship that often came out in SF.

Going with firing the main cannon of a mother ship that was boasting its hugeness just to kill two people, these guys were really bunches with screw loose in their head.

Naturally, Hajime was trying to take evasive action, but the aim of that cannon turret was detailed in contrast of its size. Furthermore, the army's sky battlecrafts were joining in the attack from all direction to seal their movement so they couldn't escape from the firing line.

Indeed, although this was for the sake of breaking the deadlock of the situation, but it was unthinkable that the height of this killing intent was coming from the bunches

who were refraining themselves from large scale attack in consideration of the small dragon's existence.

□Oi, we told you already before, we don't have any hostile intention, we also don't want anything with that small dragon! We also don't want to get involved with you guys! We are going to disappear right away, so pull ba——□

Hajime's persuading words resounded to the whole airspace using telepathy. But, before he could finish his sentence——the atmosphere burst.

GOU- The silver bombardment was fired from diagonally above and exploded the air. Due to the sky battlecrafts attacking in waves, a wall of bullet was created between the two and the pursuing small dragon, distancing the two sides.

Therefore, that merciless attack dyed the world that was in madder red color as though it was midday, pouring down on Hajime and Tio like iron hammer from the sky.

□Piuh! PIIIIH□

□Ku-chan-, Kuwaibel-! Come back quickly! Just what are you thinking about those two!?!□

The girl on the pursuing airship was desperately raising her voice using a megaphone at the small dragon that was forced to evade due to the shockwave that shook the atmosphere. Even the sky battlecrafts of the air pirate that got reduced in number were making a shuddering expression at the bombardment of the mother ship while circling at the small dragon's side.

The game of tag was over. The air pirate was now too far away from the area of cloud mountain range that was their

only chance of escaping. Actually, the inside of that mountain range area was relatively calmer compared to the sea of clouds, so it was the optimum place to conceal themselves, but it was impossible for them to return there from now. The only way that remained for them now was only to dive into the sea of clouds even though they would crash nine times out of ten by doing that.

And to do that they had to take back the small dragon into the airship even for a second faster.

But, the small dragon in question was only raising its cry at the silver pillar of light searchingly.

It was as though it was convinced at the survival of those two who had disappeared inside the pillar without even a one in ten thousand chance to stay alive.....

□Li, es.....impossible.....□

Those words were surely representing the feeling of all the people in this battlefield.

The silver bombardment from the warship was vanishing as though it was melting into air.

That attack should annihilate everything without leaving even dust behind. However, while the brightness that was like midday was vanishing and the color of twilight was returning to the world, the future that should be absolute was overturned.

What appeared was a sphere.

That solid metallic sphere which was shining gently from the reflection of the evening sun was further surrounded by jet black and crimson colored crosses around it.

□.....It was an unknown attack, so just in case I jointly used eight point barrier and Aidion at the same time, but it seems that attack doesn't have the power to break through the space isolation.□

□Well, this defense couldst even completely block the disintegration bombardment of the god's apostles. As long as it's not even a penetrating attack that ignore defense, it's next to impossible to slip through Goshujin-sama's defensive wall.□

kashun-kashun-kashun- With such sound, the metallic sphere——variable style large shield “Aidion” was undoing its omni-directional defense. It was several layers of shield sliding and contracting smaller continuously to its neighbor. Before long the sphere was switching to its normal mode of coffin form. At the same time, the eight point barrier also vanished.

The battlefield was silent. No, more accurately the sound of wind and the planes' thruster sound were reverberating, but the people in this battlefield were so speechless to the degree that it felt like that.

They were rightly amazed and dumbfounded. An individual was pulling through a direct hit that was fired by the main cannon of a mother ship class battleship unharmed. Everyone's reaction was understandable.

In the battlefield that became still as death, Hajime started to monitor the conversations at the bridge of the mother ship using the application of telepathy even while feeling his blood rushing to his head.

While they were all in a straight line chase, because the small dragon was in the line of fire the mother ship couldn't attack satisfactorily and left attacking to its sky battlecrafts,

yet why did they suddenly act decisively by attacking like that.....

Inside the bridge of the mother ship that Hajime was skillfully monitoring.....

□Shit-, even that was defended-. Those guys, as expected they are monster-□

□Impossible.....we had confirmed it from the recording of Glowser 4 but.....even though it was just sixty percent but that was the main cannon. Just what in the world are those two.....□

□Captain-. Quick, quickly prepare the next attack-. The one with the full power! If not, everyone will be slaughtered again!□

□Shut up Higgs! We, the soldier of the divine country is the chosen people that rule the sky, there is no way we will lose against just two pirates!□

□But-, those two aren't human! You see it right-? The male destroyed sky battlecraft personally, and the female transformed into dragon and pursued hot on my tail even when I used maximum speed!□

□Chih. Oi, someone take Higgs away! He is an eyesore!□

It seemed that surviving sky battlecraft had the system of video recording loaded in it. With that, they knew the incomprehensible strength of Hajime and Tio, and using the chance when they were distance from the small dragon, they launched an attack that could be said as excessive. That seemed to be the case.

The person who seemed to be the ship captain gave order with angry voice at his subordinates inside the bridge who were making noise from feeling shaken.

□Launch the air battle squads that are in the middle of standby! Don't let those two get near the air pirate and the monarch dragon! Helmsman, circle to the left side of the target with velocity 3! Replenish the main cannon, maximum power! Fix pod number 1 until 20 to the target. Bullet type Grog! Keep firing without pause! There is no way a shield that can block attack like that can hold out for long! Crush them with quantity!□

It seemed they were seriously planning to shot down Hajime and Tio.

The mother ship was starting to circle to the left side while spouting silver light. The Vulcan barrels and cannon barrels that could bombard using medium size bullet type were directed at Hajime and Tio.

Hajime's eyes narrowed quietly. He broadcasted a voice that was losing its intonation using telepathy.

□You can hear me right? Listen well, I'll say it one more time okay? We don't have the intention of getting involved with the dispute between you guys. We have the awareness that it's us who are trespassing at your territory. We the nuisances will disappear. That's why, don't direct your killing intent to us more than this.□

It was silent for a while. The army side was bewildered with the voice that was resounding in their head, however, the captain spoke his answer from his spot even while half in doubt whether his voice would be transmitted.

□Sleep talk after you go to sleep. There is no way we can just leave alone anyone with that kind of bizarre power and also obsessed so much by that monarch dragon. Originally we will want to catch you two for human experiment to search for the secret of that power, but you two are just too dangerous. That's to say nothing how you two had laid your hands at the pilots of our army who are the people of god. We will kill you two right here right now for sure.□

The main cannon of the mother ship was gathering an immense energy. Innumerable sky battlecrafts flew out from it. Their number were already surpassing fifty plane if combined with the planes that had came out from the battle before this.

The small dragon was trying to approach Hajime and Tio, but the army's sky battlecrafts were obstructing it with wall of sound wave. They also attacked at the air pirate. The air pirate's aircrafts were already less than ten.

□Piuh. PIIIIH□

Just what was making it trying that hard? The small dragon was desperately calling at Hajime and Tio. It didn't want to get separated from them, or perhaps, it was asking them to escape together.....it also looked like it was saying that kind of things.

Hajime loosened up his expressionless face a bit and pulled the trigger of Donner. Two streaks of light flew out. One went toward the small dragon, and the other one went toward the girl on the airship. Just before it shot them through in a flash, the special bullets "Excise Bullet" stopped still in place, and using its effect, the small dragon was instantly transferred to the girl's location.

□Just stay quiet at your friend's side. Okay?□

□Pii.....pih□

□Ku, Kuwaibel, is listening to what he is told?□

Those words that were said with unexpectedly gentle voice in contrast with the dangerous atmosphere the speaker was clad in made the small dragon to look alternately at Hajime and Tio restlessly, but after a slight hesitation it replied back energetically. The girl who embraced the small dragon so that it wouldn't run away for the second time showed a surprised expression at its behavior.

In addition, before they realized several Cross Velts were floating around the airship, forming protection barrier.

The focused silver light was already in critical point. The attack of the army's sky battlecrafts that became unreserved by the small dragon's distance was increasing in fierceness. Several thousand Vulcan bullets, several hundred missiles, and sound waves that were even accompanied with shockwave came in really absurd number that it was presumptuous to even call it overkill, and all those were concentrated toward just two people.

Flame blast enveloped the barrier, the figure of the two disappeared inside as though a small sun was coming into existence there.

They were receiving that much concentrated attack, however, Hajime who continued to defend using only barrier of space isolation turned his gaze at Tio beside him. Tio shrugged and answered back at the wordless question.

□Goshujin-sama who art still trying to persuade them somehow even when having killing intent directed at thee art also not bad but.....as expected, acting absurdly unreasonable with no question asked, that art what truly

worthy for mine master. Goshujin-sama, holding back this late art unnecessary. Mine will art always together with Goshujin-sama.□

Hajime displayed a fearless grin and embraced Tio. If the figures of a man embracing the waist of a beautiful girl on the skyboard weren't hard to see because of the flame blast from the missiles enveloping them, then surely the expression of the enemies would convulse grandly.

A calm voice resounded at the battlefield that was decorated with explosive sounds and impact sounds.

□.....This is your last warning. Get lost, right now.□

Not just the captain of the mother ship, all the people who heard that voice felt a shiver in their spine from terror. But, unfortunately, it seemed they converted that terror into rage using their elitism and pride that were oozing from their every single word.

□Don't falter! Fix them in place! They cannot move-. Their shield too shouldn't be able to hold out for long anymore-. Show our power as the soldier of the divine country! Main cannon, status!?!□

□Five percent left until the full charge, four percent, three percent.....full charge! We can fire anytime-□

□Fire at the count of five! Air battle squads, pull back!□

The madder red sky that was turning dark was dyed by the silver of midday once more.

It was incomparable with the previous one, it wasn't just the turret below the mother ship, even the 3-gun turrets installed at the front deck also fired bombardment in exactly

the same scale. The total of four silver bombardments tore through the sky with might that ripped apart the atmosphere. The diameter of its hit range could reach ten meter. If the after-shock was included then the area of further ten meter was a fatal territory.

Hajime and Tio's figure vanished along with flame blast that bloomed in the sky.

The world rumbled. The sea of clouds directly below was undulating and splitting from the impact. The cloud mountain at faraway had a large hole opened at its side and scattered away wholly.

Inside the light that should be called as aurora, the people from both camps who were fixing their eyes upon that scene by holding their arm over their eyes or through a visor——

They witnessed it right after that.

GOU- The jet black spiral that blew upward and pierced the sky.

In defiance of the silver light, that pure black looked as though it was wordlessly asserting that it wouldn't be dyed by any other existence no matter what.

□What's, that.....□Someone whispered.

At that moment, the jet black whisper converged tighter. It rushed out from the silver torrent and became a whirling sphere in the sky.

And then, it ruptured. As though the seal was broken. As though, born from a jet black cocoon——a figure appeared.

A single roar. A single flap of wings.

That form was magnificently, majestically, and gallantly conveying without scruple a dignity as the supreme ruler of the sky that didn't fear or hesitate against anything.

The large build that drew a line against the emaciated dragon of this world, and the overflowing dominating aura. Its existence's mightiness that the skin, or perhaps the instinct could feel.

□I'm concluding you guys, as my "enemy". I don't care whether you are from divine country, if you are a chosen race, or whatever, but you can learn it with your own body. That my wife, is the one and only supreme ruler of the sky.□

Those words echoed through the whole airspace.

The people who suddenly regained their senses with 'hah' noticed although at this late hour.

Of the existence on the back of the hovering black dragon with its wings spread and the blazing sun behind it. There, a man was standing imposingly, glaring down at everything.

Anyone couldn't help but to feel awed at that figure mounting the back of dragon that they had never even seen before.

Everyone held their breath and lost their words, in the middle of that,

The girl who was holding the small dragon murmured in astonishment.

A fairy tale that she knew since she was little. Yes, that was the legendary.....

□.....Dragon knight, sama?□

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta After II I am, Maou-san. Right Now I'm Right Behind You, You Know

(TN: Maou=demon king)

The first move of the battle's opening was a roar that shook the atmosphere and a jet black flash that tore apart event the world.

□Bre, break up-. Brea——□

□I won't make it in——□

The army's sky battlecrafts flying about in the twilight sky. The evasion order that pilot yelled vanished in vain due the jet black flash that was mowing down immediately after.

It was like a swing of a large sword that was wielded by a giant in myth. Tio's breath attack that finished charging in less than a few seconds annihilated three squads of five planes squad altogether with just one attack.

They couldn't resist or anything and didn't leave even wreckage behind. They were literally "annihilated". Just like

swatting irritating flies, the veteran sky battlecraft pilots vanished like a joke.

If anyone looked further, they would see the sea of clouds split into two. It was the scar from Tio's breath attack. An ocean trench was created in the sea of clouds.

□-, don't falter-. Crush them with quantity!□

A command that was filled with reprimand was given. The sky battlecrafts were commencing hit & run without pause at Tio and Hajime who was riding on her back. Their Vulcan cannons were spouting fire and countless missiles were rapidly approaching the two.

□Tio, let's go. Beat into them just what kind of being the supreme ruler of the sky is.□

□Very well. Then, thoroughly witness mine flying technique that I fostered and evolved in earth. Don't fall off no matter what, Goshujin-sama!□

gagagaga- Without even caring one whit at the bullets of Vulcan cannon that hit her body, Tio roared.

It seemed that the dragon scale of black dragon that was the most superior in endurance among the whole dragon people race couldn't even be scratched by the like of Vulcan cannon. After all it was something that only ended getting whittled on the surface even when it got hit by Hajime's railgun, so this could be said to be only natural.

The approaching missiles were drawing near from all directions like a cage, giving no place to escape.

But, Tio's figure vanished before those missiles could arrive and hit.

□——□Fang of Flame□□

Immediately after, it that was whispered along with a solemn voice manifested and accomplished its meaning. Around Tio who was flying with a motion that should even be called as rhythmless, four brilliantly blazing flame clusters appeared.

When all those were launched simultaneously, they accurately swallowed the missiles approaching from the front without leaving any and demolished them. While flower of flame blast was blooming in the sky, Tio who was flying while producing shockwave instantly took a sharp right turn.

She caught the back of a sky battlecraft that was trying to fly past.

The sky battlecraft pilot took a steep turn in panic to shake Tio off, but she followed closely behind as though mocking that wonderfully sharp turn. She launched a breath attack once more and blown up the sky battlecraft.

□Shit-, this bastard-. Eat this-□

Perhaps this one was a squad mate of the one just now. The sky battlecraft circled at Tio's back in order to save his comrade that was followed by Tio, however, unable to save his comrade he got driven by rage while firing his missile.

But, that missile that looked like it would hit based on the timing and position was evaded right after that along with an unbelievable scene.

□Thy movement art monotone.□

□Somer, saultiing——□

Yes, it was a somersault. Of all thing, the large black dragon before his eyes were somersaulting midair while flying with a speed that was nearly the speed of sound. Naturally Tio was losing speed, but the missile was unable to react to the impossible maneuver and passed through below her in vain.

And then, in a stroke of misfortune the pursuing sky battlecraft was tore apart by the black dragon's claw when they crossed each other, and ended up as a scrap.

Tio used the momentum of the somersault and descended below while recovering her speed. While falling, she rolled her body 180 degree and reversed her movement direction. By doing that, the sky battlecraft formation that was about to pass in front of her right at that timing.....

Naturally, breath attack and compressed exploding flame bullets hit the formation as though the attacks were absorbed toward them. Five flame blasts decorated the sea of clouds simultaneously.

□Thi, this is hopeless-. I cannot shake it off-. Someone help——□

Tio rolled her body 180 degree from climbing steeply into the opposite direction. She once more took the back of another plane with the opposite of the previous maneuver and blown up the sky battlecraft that was desperately escaping.

□The aiming won't get fixed-. I cannot get a lock on-□

Even though this pilot had taken her back by sacrificing his comrade, he couldn't lock on Tio who was flickering left and right with terrific speed like an outstanding aircraft.

And then, Tio spread open her wings and raised up her body. She instantly decelerated by receiving the wind pressure to her heart's content. When the pilot noticed his plane already passed over Tio. And as expected he got annihilated with one attack from behind.

□To, too fast-. What the hell is this monster-. Is this really dragon!?!□

There was an impact sound as though the air ruptured. Next white wall of air was generated. Tio who was easily rushing into the world of the speed of sound while making a steep climb rolled over midair.

□Use the Synthesizer-. Match my timing!□

Three squads were approaching Tio from below as though they were going toward the summit of a pyramid. Their plane's frame was starting to get enveloped with silver color. From that, this "Synthesizer" was most likely referring to that sound wave attack.

Although, Tio didn't even look concerned seeing that indication of the sound wave attack that could grant fatal action obstruction effect to the dragon species. Instead she began to swoop down.

The sound wave attack was fired. The air was undulating. Tio charged into that raging sound wave without any hesitation. Something like a free fall was lukewarm. She spread her wings while falling and with an elegant movement she rolled. Right away, a jet black typhoon was generated from that movement.

□Insolent. Fall altogether all of thee.□

It was like a divine spear that broke through a great wall. The black dragon moving in the world of speed of sound clad with black typhoon easily blew off the wall of sound wave and merely passed straight through the center of the formation.

A beat.

The sonic boom that arrived late instantly pulverized their plane's fuselage and drowned them into the sea of clouds.

Without stopping Tio opened up a great distance from the approaching missile using pure speed and maneuverability, she then blasted away one more squad with a mowing down breath attack.

And, it was at that time a large scale attack was fired at Tio from the mother ship. It seemed they couldn't get a lock-on because of Tio's overwhelming mobility, but 80% of their ally's sky battlecrafts had fallen anyway. Surely they were thinking that in that case they would just bombard the very airspace itself in a limited area.

It wasn't a high firepower that pierced through a point like the main cannon. What was approaching was a swarm of missiles that might reach a thousand in number. That swarm which was a bit too brutal to be called as a squall prided a size that couldn't be compared with the missiles launched by the sky battlecrafts. It was clear that it had an uncommon power without compare.

In front of the display of power of blowing up an airspace, Tio flapped her wings once and hovered in place.

And then, she bent her body greatly backward while sucking in air. *hyugoo-* She was making that kind of impossible

sound while sucking in air, which caused Tio's chest to swell up rapidly.

The missiles that were approaching in a number that even hid the mother ship itself behind them were.....

——GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

The wind died. The air ruptured. The sea of clouds was blown away in radial shape, the atmosphere shook.

It was just a roar. And yet, it was a roar of the dragon king that granted terror to anyone who heard it without question. Therefore, the mere roar became a violent shockwave that spread through the whole airspace. The approaching swarm of missiles was pulverized by the wall of shockwave.

It was as though there was an invisible wall there, the missiles swarm exploded one after another in the middle point between Tio and the mother ship.

The sky where the curtain of night was already descending was illuminated dazzlingly by orange flame blasts.

□Oi oi, I don't get any turn at all from the start here?□

□It was Goshujin-sama who ordered me to show the status of the sky's supreme ruler correct? For now, I tried doing it with only using pure dogfight technique, breath attack, and a bit of magic but.....was it satisfactory for thee?□

Turning back, Tio was directing a gaze that looked vaguely mischievous toward Hajime who was calmly standing on her back regardless of the heavy action.

Hajime was showing a half-amazed expression while,

□Those were midair battle maneuver things right? Kulbit and Split S, then Immelmann Turn and Cobra Turn? You also did various other maneuvers but, since when did you learn them huh? Well, it was splendid.□

□The fighter aircrafts in earth art wonderful. However, the sky art mine territory. Putting aside pure speed, mine pride wouldst not forgive myself if I lose in dogfight technique. I fished up various materials, played game, went to aerial show and learned. The most important thing art that it seemed that it satisfied Goshujin-sama.□

‘gururu♪’ Tio-san sounded her throat joyfully.

Because Tio could freely flew in the sky without anything like flying technique just by directly manipulating the wind, it was really bone-breaking for her to make the way of thinking like kinetic energy or potential energy to sink into her mind but.....there was no doubt that her flying skill had rapidly risen up from earth’s aeromechanics, so she was really happy to be praised by her master when she unveiled the result like this.

With scales that deflected Vulcan cannon, excelling in speed and maneuverability that were even better than missile, possessing unrivaled powerful attack method, pulverizing the opponent just from the sonic boom, and on top of that she even had super first class flying skill that didn’t rely on her spec.....

If the pilots of earth knew that their skill was stolen by a flying tank, there was no doubt that they would get teary eyed.

The flame blasts were gradually getting cleared by the wind flow.

At the other side, they could see the mother ship was charging its main cannon. The two didn't know how the enemy was planning to make the attack hit, but there was no other way of calling them other than foolish that they still hadn't escaped. They were overestimating their own existences too much.

The chosen people, the people that ruled the sky. The country of god.

Seeing words that dangerous lined up like that, it was clear that their pride was even higher than Everest, even so they couldn't avoid getting evaluated as being a bit too thoughtless. Or else, perhaps they still had some kind of different trump card.....

□Well, just because of that doesn't mean that we will just expressly wait for them though.□

Hajime was looking at even more air battle squad launching from the mother ship while the corner of his mouth rose up in a grin. Tio's body that didn't even twitch against Vulcan now twitched.

□I wonder, how does it feel to have your flank gouged out?□

The moment Hajime whispered that, the mother ship that was going to fire its main cannon anytime——wholly lost a part of its rear bottom.

It wasn't a destruction, it was a loss. Like joined together blocks had a part taken off from it, a part of the ship's bottom at the rear was coming off. While scattering crimson sparks.

The mother ship tilted violently. Furthermore there were a lot of people falling from that loss part. They couldn't hear

anything due to the distance, but they understood clearly that those people were screaming with expression of despair.

□Go, Goshujin-sama. Just what hath thee done?□

□You see, while you are fighting, it was boring doing nothing so I fired a single shell at them. Inside it was packed full with spider type living golem.□

——Special shell “Squirm Shell”

The shell that was fired didn’t even explode, but the shell that invaded into inside the mother ship was so to speak a cocoon. Inside it had a lot of super small spider type golem packed in, and they would be born inside the body of the enemy.

This time it was against a gigantic battleship so it was still better, but if this was against a large living thing.....

By the way, the shell could be filled with various things other than spider. Your favorite insect-san right to your position☆

□Ho, how terrifying.....or rather, thy hath created something nasty there-. I’m getting goosebumps!□

□No, right now you got no skin right? You have dragon scale all over. Well, anyway, I transmuted a whole lot inside the ship through the arachne bunches and forcefully purge only that spot, that’s all.□

□Avoiding the topic so smoothly.....cough-. Ri, right, that place over there art.....fufu, I see. As expected from Goshujin-sama. Normally thou art a heinously cruel savage and sadist bastard without compare, but the kindness thy

show in this kind of time art just unbearable. I'm falling in love all over again!□

□Thank you. I don't feel like I'm praised, so after this I'll give you your savage punishment.□

While his forehead was twitching at Tio's words, Hajime used pencil Cross Velts to cover the entire purged part—the place where the dragons were captured and treated as fuel—with barrier.

While the mother ship was recovering its posture somehow, perhaps with the intention to protect the mother ship, about forty sky battlecrafts were charging recklessly toward Hajime and Tio as reinforcement.

Tio flapped her wings once to begin the dogfight once more, but Hajime stopped her.

□Any time now they are going to struggle while holding delusion(hope) like “there is no way we can lose” or “we will surely win if we use this”. It will be too unsightly to watch, so we are going to crush them all in one go. Along with their heart.□

□Fumu, certainly. Shouldst I mow them altogether with a breath attack of maximum power?□

□I'll work out a bit too. At this rate, I'll be seen as a strange guy that is only riding on your back.□

Tio chuckled at that really childish line. The sky battlecraft squads were approaching closer even while they were doing that. Even seen from afar, their expression looked damned desperate. But, a hope that they would manage it somehow if they could pull through here also could be seen dwelling somewhere in them.

□I'm telling you that it's merely a delusion. Engrave into your soul, just who is it that you have turned into enemy.□

Right after that, what appeared was a swarm of black crosses decorated with crimson pattern. There were about two hundred of them lining up orderly midair behind Hajime. The scene of the swarm floating while clad in faint crimson light instigated a pure and bizarre terror. Despite the location being in the sky, the sight caused a vision as though they were lost in a graveyard.

Hajime's eyes could see the figure of the pilots whose eyes were opened wide. Without taking his eyes off from them, Hajime's hand elegantly waved like a conductor baton, pointing straight forward. The fingertips of that hand mimicked the shape of gun.

At that moment, the two hundred crosses rotated, the tip of their longer side faced forward.

□This is how to crush the enemy with quantity.□

A beat later. A thunderous roar.

The electromagnetically accelerated Burst Bullets fired from two hundreds Cross Velts were mercilessly launched in a rate of 1500 shot per minute. That was already like a wall of bullet that appeared in the sky. The battle of resource amount that was done by the army side before this was now returned back to them exactly as it was.

If they knew that if Hajime actually got serious, he could summon Cross Velts in the number of more than three times of now and several hundred Grim Reapers, just what would they think then?

The sky battlecrafts that got hit by the first attack fell into the sea of clouds in pieces. Even the planes that fortunately could dodge direct hit got their wings plucked by the Burst Bullets that were spreading lethal shockwave of crimson ripple midair and they fell.

It was just a round of offense and defense. Just from that, the sky battlecraft got their battle strength reduced until thirty percent.

□Something like this, is not battle anymore-. This is just massacre-□

□Just what the hell is that-. Where did he take it out from-□

□Is it still not yet-? The Negrade cannon, it's still cannot fire yet-?□

The pilots were in a state that could be called as pandemonium. But, that kind of *composure* immediately vanished. Because the bringer of death the two hundred crosses flew out all at once. With sharp angling and irregular movement that ignored aerodynamics, and sometimes while even generating something like afterimages, they were shooting down the sky battlecrafts one after another.

Indeed, it wasn't a battle anymore.

Amidst that situatin, the mother ship that succeeded in controlling its posture finally aimed its main cannon's turret at Hajime and Tio. It was focusing silver light, however, it seemed to be slightly different from its attack before. Inside the silver convergence, a muddy black was mixing like coffee dripping into milk. Looking really closely, the silver part also seemed closer to being white.

In a amoment, the white light mixed with black was fired along with a thunderous roar. Its power instead looked lower than the attack before, but Hajime's instinct that was backed by experience told him that it was something more repulsive.

In front of that unknown that was likely their trump card, Hajime wordlessly made his "Treasure Warehouse II" shined.

The sun had mostly set, while the blackness of night was covering the world, it appeared beside Hajime who was illuminated by the white light.

□I'll stamp it out from the front.□

Like that what was fired was the greatest light. The color of light shining brilliantly as though it was denying the night that it was still too fast for it to arrive, it was truly the color of sun that illuminated this world.

——Sun convergence laser "Burst Hyperion"

The horizontal firing of Burst Hyperion that finished charging. That was the true identity of the light. The sunlight energy that was converged and compressed to the very limit expelled the world of night in the blink of eye.

The white light of the mother ship's main cannon collided with the thick light of Burst Hyperion right from the front.

The power of the two lights rivaled each other, a fantastic phenomenon of lights blooming wildly that seemed unthinkable to be something of this world was occurring at the point of collusion.

□.....How can an individual, rivaled the main cannon of a warship.....□

The amazed whisper that leaked out from telepathy surely came from the ship captain. Hajime scoffed at that and replied back daringly.

□Rival? How long you are going to hold your delusion? Just this much ain't enough at all.□

Hajime spoke the release keyword.

□——"Second Compression Furnace" release.□

Burst Hyperion was loaded with exclusive "Treasure Warehouse" that converged and compressed sunlight inside, but no one said that there was only one of it inside. It wasn't strange at all even if multiple "Exclusive Treasure Warehouse" ——"Compression Furnace" were loaded inside.

What would happen if that second energy was liberated?

The answer was simple.

Something like a state of rivalry could be broken easily.

The attack of the mother ship's main cannon was swallowed, terminated, and got pushed back gradually.

□-. Attack-. Attack that man! Use bullet that focused in speed! The surviving sky battlecraft squad too, attack that guy from behi——□

He was unable to finish saying that command until the end.

□——"Third Compression Furnace" release.□

This must be how the death sentence of the death god sounded like.

Like being swallowed by a raging stream, the main cannon of the mother ship was swallowed by the extreme thickening of the sunlight laser without being able to show anything that resembled a resistance. The advancing light of Hyperion kept pushing and swallowed a third of the front deck along with the 3-gun turrets, and pushed on until the sky at faraway in the distance.

Perhaps it was an instantaneous judgment, or perhaps a coincidence, it was unknown which was it, but just before the mother ship got hit it suddenly descended that it avoided the fate of being the Titanic of the sky.

However, it didn't change that it was greatly damaged. It wholly lost its front and rear part as though something had taken bites from it. Seeing it tilting, with fires and black smokes, and also small secondary explosions rising from it, it was obviously in a tragic state, even so it was in a condition where it was barely hanging in the sky.

The mother ship was starting to turn around while spouting out silver light even with its altitude that kept descending.

□So they finally felt like run away.□

□I don't know what kind of effect that last attack hath, but that was surely their genuine trump card. And that trump card was defeated crushingly from the front and in addition they art almost shot down. If they don't run away even after that, then that art the realm of lunatic.□

The sky battlecraft pilots who were desperately running away even while getting chased by Cross Velts were also following the mother ship in panic.

The battle was over. The army's gigantic mother ship that boasted great fighting strength was chased away just by two

people.

While holding back the emotion that was overflowing from that fact, the air pirate's girl and small dragon were approaching along with their airship.

□Pi ih. PIIIIH□

□E, excuse me-. Kn, knight-sama-. True dragon-sama-. In this chance, we are saved from danger——□

When they were trying to call out like that,

□——“Fourth Compression Furnace” release.□

□Eh?□

□Pi?□

The extremely thick light blown off the rear of the mother ship that was running away in all broken up state. Along with the girl's words.

In addition,

□The flies are.....around ten. Then I guess it's enough with this.□

Saying that, what Hajime taken out was anti-material sniper cannon Schlagen AA. Hajime who captured the desperately escaping sky battlecrafts through his scope pulled the trigger at the interval of his breathing. The shells that drew a beautiful crimson line in the night sky were shooting down the sky battlecrafts that were performing random evasion without even a single miss.

□.....hiu□

□.....pii□

The side profile of Hajime who was dispassionately performing blood festival using the escaping pilots without looking particularly emotional caused the girl and the small dragon to tremble in their boots while hugging each other. With a plop, the girl fell to sit on the floor. The attendants blonde hair duo were also staring at their falling enemies with pale expression. It was only the surviving pilot who was whistling□hyuu~□in admiration.

□Goshujin-sama. That aircraft carrier art unexpectedly tough. It's still flying. Shouldst we pursue?□

□No, there is no need of that. I'll shoot it down after harassing them a bit.□

Hajime who finished shooting down all the sky battlecrafts put Schalgen on his shoulder while grinning broadly. Voices that said things like□Dragon knight-sama.....not?□, or□De, demon.....□, or□Ru, run away quickly□could be heard, but for Hajime who was making that wicked smile, all those were trivial things.

Seeing such Hajime, Tio said a sentence.

□Fumu. That is to say, they couldst not escape from demon king-sama is it?□

It went without saying that the words demon king caused the girl and others to tremble even more.

On the other hand, around that time in the mother ship.....

□Those two!? Are those two chasing after us!?!□

□N, no! The targets aren't moving! They are letting us get away!□

□Be careful of what you are saying-. They aren't letting us get away! It's our strategic retreat that succeeded-. The next time you said something like that, I'll consider that as betrayal!□

□M, my deepest apology.□

The atmosphere was completely rough. Everyone was gulping their saliva as though their throat was parched while their face was tensing from the terror of wondering if they would be shot down anytime now.

The captain was also in the same state, he was saying thing like□strategic retreat success□from his mouth, but his face was twitching uncontrollably as though he caught a bad sickness.

□We have to, we have to inform our country quickly. If we challenge them using a fleet, then next time for sure..... Oi, how long until we enter the range where we can contact the country?□

□The range is about 1500. But, our propulsion is lowering, and in our current situation where we cannot resupply, it will perhaps take two days.□

□Chih. Those two, just how did they scoop out the whole supply room.....no, in the first place how did they know the location accurately?is there, a traitor?□

Excessive paranoia was gnawing at his mind in this extreme situation.

But, at that time, a communication entered the bridge.

□This is the launching and landing station! Higgs is trying to launch in his sky battlecraft! He is armed and caused many casualties among the mechanics who tried to stop him! Someone, please send reinforcement! That guy, he isn't sane!□

The bridge turned into uproar from the sudden notification. The ship captain snatched a mike and pressed the communication button toward the sky battlecraft's landing and launching station.

□What is happening!? What's Higgs's objective!? Why is he trying to launch in sky battlecraft in this situation!?!□

□We don't know-. He is talking incoherently.....we really don't get it! He is babbling 'that guy is coming, if I don't run away quickly, the "demon king" will come. That guy is here already!'. He won't even listen to our words!□

□How ridiculous. Shit-, we have no time to be concerned with a crazy idiot in this kind of time. I give permission to shoot. If he is not going to listen, then I don't care just kill——□

The captain was going to give instruction even while he was feeling some kind of intense bad premonition. It was at that timing.

He heard it.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm on the deck you know?

□!?!□

The captain suddenly sensed a presence and he turned around swiftly. However, he saw nothing there but the door that connected to the corridor, there was no one there. He returned his gaze to the front thinking if he was hallucinating, but right after that, he gulped his saliva unconsciously.

□Ca, captain. Ju, just now.....□

A helmsman was looking back with a pale expression. No, not just him. All his subordinates inside the bridge were looking back just like him.

□Wha, what are you looking at! Carry out your own duty! Right now we need to hurry even for——□

It was a hallucination. It was just a coincidence that all his subordinates were looking back. The captain was persuading himself like that while erasing the sensation of a bug crawling on his back by yelling angrily. He was trying, to erase it.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in the central passage you know?

□Wh, who-□

□Ca, captaiiiiin-□

He couldn't trick himself anymore. The resounding voice, the presence he felt behind him, they caused the captain to look behind him, but as expected, there wasn't anyone there. When he returned his gaze with a stiff motion, as expected he found the pale figures of his subordinates.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the elevator you know?

□He, he is, approaching here?□

□Captain-. The, the elevator number 1-. It's moving!□

□Who is using it!? The image!?□

□No one is inside it! There is nobody! Just why is it moving-□

The subordinate that was in charge of remote controlling the facilities nearby the bridge was staring at his monitor looking like he was going to cry. His monitor was projecting the image inside the elevator that connected toward this bridge. But, inside the elevator that was indeed moving and climbing up, there was no one there at all.

The elevator stopped and the door opened. The camera in the passage that continued toward this bridge didn't catch the figure of anyone. However, the elevator was moving by itself, then stopped in this floor, the door opened, and then at the timing when it seemed one person had gotten off the elevator, its door closed once more.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the first room you know?

The first room——Defense room number 1. In case the mother ship was boarded by enemy, at the area from the elevator and the stair until the bridge, there were three rooms prepared for the sake of holding back any attack toward the bridge. Those rooms were toughly made with a lot of cover so it would be easier to intercept the intruder.

□Defense room number 1-. An intruder in front of the door-. You are permitted to open fire!□

The captain used the radio to give instruction to the soldier standing by in the defense room number 1.

But, there wasn't any reply coming back.

—I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the second room you know?

A shudder of fear ran on their spine. The captain's gaze question his subordinate who was monitoring the place, but he didn't say anything and only shook his head with unfocused eyes as though he was losing sanity.

—I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the third room you know?

Even the defense room number 2 was easily penetrated. No, it was unclear whether it was fine to call it penetrating or anything. It was as though the door of those rooms didn't even exist, as though there weren't any guards inside those rooms from the start, "something" was smoothly infiltrating without any difficulty.

—I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the bridge you know?

Silence returned inside the bridge. Before they knew it, the damage reports and communications that asked for instruction toward the bridge that were coming like a storm from every posts in the mother ship had gone silent as though they were holding their breath. The only sound that they could hear, was the faint breathing sound, and the humming of the power reactor working earnestly to keep this gigantic ship floating.

The captain slowly pulled out his handgun from the holster on his waist. Inside the silence where even the sound of rustling clothes felt nerve-wracking, he gritted his teeth that felt like they were going to clatter, and slowly aimed his gun barrel toward the door.

“I, if you want to come then come. The moment you open the door, I’ll shoot you to de——”

“I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m right behind you, you know?”

It wasn’t a voice that came from far away. It was a raw voice of someone. That voice could be heard right beside his ear, as though it was said from a distance where the speaker was clinging on him.

Something like sanity couldn’t be retained anymore.
[aaAAAAAH] In the end, no one knew just whose scream that was. When *pan* that dry sound rang out, the one who collapsed first was the helmsman.

What shot through his chest was the captain’s handgun. The captain whose reasoning was blown away and fell into a panicked state shot the moment he turned around. After that, it was like a stone rolling down a slope. Everyone without exception heard the voice whispered right beside their ear. In a panicked state, they fired or hit each other unarmed. The bridge fell into a scene of carnage.

Such situation was also occurring in every section of the mother ship. Everyone had their mind’s equilibrium crumbled against the approaching something. Their heart was broken from terror, those who ran and hid survived. But, those people were constantly feeling it. No matter where they were, no matter what they were doing, they still felt the faint presence of someone behind them.

People who didn’t turn mad were less than twenty percent of the whole.

□That's the situation there right now.□

□For now, explanation pleeease□

After hearing the current situation of the mother ship that had escaped to far away from Hajime, Tio whose expression was skillfully convulsing even when she was still in black dragon form was asking for explanation with voice tone as cheerful as possible. If she didn't hear the explanation, then it felt like she would see nightmare from hearing just the end result.

□Look, there are the arachne bunches that infiltrated before this remember? Using them, I carried out one of me-style Harassment 108.□

——Demon King-style (Third Person) Harassment 108 “I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm right behind you, you know?”

This was demon king-sama's version of a certain urban legend “Ma○y-san's Phone Call” using super small living golem. While using telepathy to forcefully make the listener experienced of something “gradually approaching”, their sense of fear was also amplified using soul magic. Furthermore, while making a show that something was getting closer, but actually from the start the golem that was lurking on the target's collar was using “Presence Manipulation” to produce “a presence of someone that was constantly behind them”. And then the finishing touch was naturally the recording of Hajime's natural voice that said “I'm right behind you, you know?”.

It was one of the wonderful harassment skills that would beautifully made anyone insane with certainty. If “Peek-a-

Demon King!” was a sudden harassment, then this one was a harassment that was showing its effect gradually!

□.....The idea art just too terrifying. Or rather, I think that the horror or urban legend of Japan art foul play. Before this Myuu searched the internet out of curiosity and then she didn’t come out from her futon for one whole day.□

□About Japan’s horror, it’s persistent like this, or perhaps I should say it has damp atmosphere.....it has a characteristic atmosphere that doesn’t exist overseas after all. Well, for now, leaving that aside, let’s just use this to ‘kaclick’.□

Hajime who smiled wryly while shrugging suddenly took out something that looked like a switch, and then without hesitation he pushed that switch.

□.....Just in case, I’ll ask but, just now, what did thou do?□

□Hm? That’s, it’ll be troubling if my arachne got carried away, so I spread them to the important places inside the ship—and blew them up.□

By the way, the arachne-chan(living golem) just now that was the size of a pinky could become a force that was about as much as 10 kg of C4 explosive. And then their number aboard the ship was around two hundred.

Not to mention the power reactor, the arachne also aimed at other places focusing at the bridge and other important facilities. And then they went *BANG* not from the surface but by using transmutation to infiltrate inside the machineries first.

Surely the crews who were beautifully in great chaos from the “I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m right behind you, you know?” were unable to deal with this.

The power was lost, the bridge was lost, resupplying was also impossible, and most of the crews were in the middle of madness☆. There was no doubt that the ship was falling right now.

If after this they were still able to return to their country without crashing, then that would be worthy of praise.

Seeing Hajime who was saying "An explosion at the end—that is romance" while making a really refreshed expression, not just Tio, the girl and little dragon who were still trembling, the blonde hair attendant duo, and then the pilot-san whose expression was twitching as expected,

~~~~~You demon-~~~~~

"Piuh"

They gave a splendid straight-man retort with their voice as one.

If there were the classmates in this place, surely they would reply like this.

—He is the demon king you know?

Like that.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually, I just wanted to write simple dogfight.

If a dragon used air battle maneuver in a dogfight.....won't it be super romantic?

By the way, Shirakome isn't that knowledgeable regarding fighter aircraft.

Because all my reference source come from Blue Knight. No, it was really interesting that I got totally engrossed. I especially super like chapter 22.

Now then, a report for a moment.

Looks like the sale for the fifth volume will be at 25 December.

You can also see the cover illustration if you go to Overlap-sama's homepage you know!

Please go take a look if you can.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

# Arifureta After II Catalogue

AN:

□The data.....vanished?□

Just like that person whose spirit pressure really vanish, the data didn't revive.

I'm sorry, right now I'm in the middle of rewriting. I should be able to update tomorrow afternoon!

Although, the chapter this time is something like the exposition turn, so the story is not really interesting.

Anyway, as an apology that the update will be late, I uploaded the artifact catalogue.

Arifureta After Story II  
Artifact Catalogue

This is a catalogue of Hajime's artifact.

Please read it to kill time.

Shirakome himself doesn't grasp the whole thing, so perhaps there is still other.

For the artifact of other members, I'll eventually add them in the list.

(TN: I made up all the German word here because I'm too lazy. Leave a comment if you know the correct word and I'll edit it later.)

## Donner & Schlag

Total length 35 cm. Rotating style magazine with 6 shots. Made from composite ore of Tauru ore, Shutaru ore, and Athantium ore.

The origin of the naming was from German language "thunderbolt" or "lightning", something like that.

## Schlagen

Total length around three meter, single shot, electromagnetically accelerated anti-material rifle with zero caliber.

The naming origin was from German language "Zerschlagen(Pulverizing)".....I think.

## Schlagen AA

The successor of Schlagen. Its power and range were greatly improved. It surpassed the framework of sniper rifle and reached the level of sniper cannon.

AA was the abbreviation of "Acht Acht". I don't know the detail of the spec, but language nuance was wonderful. It seemed that the power was also amazing. Therefore I adopted it.

## Metzgerei

Gatling railgun. Six rotating gun barrels, 30 mm caliber, it could shot about 12000 shots per minute. The cooling of early day version couldn't follow along and it could only keep shooting for around five minutes.

## Metzgerei Disaster

A six barreled gatling gun where each barrel was formed from one Metzgeri. The power was simply increased six times.

## Orkan

Missile & rocket launcher.

## Agni Orkan

A winged cross with total length of 3 meter. It could simultaneously fired 300 pencil missiles.

Pile Bunker

Romance

Gatling Pile Bunker

Super Romance

Cross Bit

Flying cross. It could become shield, it could also fire exploding bullet. It could also form a barrier by connecting to each other with wire.

Cross Velt

The successor of Cross Bit. It had black color with red pattern. The culmination of chuuni.

Pencil Cross Velt

Alias “Don’t touch, you pervert!”

Hyperion

Sunlight convergence laser. It went \*chudon\* from the sky.

Burst Hyperion

The successor of \*chudon\* from the sky.

Mirror Bit

The machines on board the sky \*chudon\*. It could explode sunlight energy using Treasure Warehouse.

Chakram

Chakram. Its central part turned into gate.

Variable style chakram Orestes

Wire was installed inside the chakram. It could deploy an extra-large gate by splitting into three parts.

Grim Reaper

Mechanized monster. Fully loaded with ordnances inside.

Meteor Impact

A mere rock. The opponent die.

Magic power cannon Grenzen

It's non-lethal so it's fine!

Treasure Warehouse

Anything could enter

Magic power 4-Wheel Drive Brieze

A car that looked like Hummer. Fully loaded with gimmicks like blade, caltrop, hand grenade, sniper rifle, etc.

Magic power 2-Wheel Drive Schutaif

A bike that looked American. Currently it was demonically remodeled into Shia's wheels. It seemed it could also fly in the sky.

Bola



For binding. Recently it was used exclusively for Tio, or for Hajime mommy to dry clothes.

### Artificial Arm

Kuh, be calm my left hand-

### Ornis

Bird shaped reconnaissance plane. There were also various other shapes.

### Large Shield

Coffin shaped. It could let out a stake from below to fix it into the ground. Made from the composite of three kinds of ores.

### Variable style large shield   Aidion

It could turn into sphere shape that defended from all directions.

### Hour Crystal

Slowing down the flow of time of a certain range.

Skyboard

Eu○ka (TN: Refer to Eureka Seven I think)

Ferner

Manta shaped airship. It used gravity control so it could make abnormal maneuver.

Submarine

It could endure even magma.

Hand Grenade     \*chudon\*

Flashbang Grenade     \*kats\*

Burning Grenade     \*goo\*

Paralysis Grenade     \*abah\*

Tear-Gas Grenade     \*nngih\*

Frag Grenades     .....

Telepathy Stone Another world version mobile phone

Specific Stone Another world version GPS

Distant Viewing Stone Another world version telescope

Reaction Stone Another world version remote control device

Magic Eye Stone Chuuni

Sealing Stone It dispersed magic power. The block that sealed Yue

Crystal Key

The key that opened even the door that crossed worlds

Compass of Guidance Crossing

It could find anything

Magic crystal series

It could stock up magic power. There were various shapes like ring, earring, bracelet, etc.

Cheatmate

Basic ability increase. It could strengthen the body to endure Limit Break. Cheat is your friend!

Novum Idola

It can make illusion.

Delischanors

Something that bestowed a duplicate soul. It obstructed the soul interference from the opponent. By using it in conjunction with living golem, a pseudo clone could be created.

Lob Regenschirm

Three stages assault lance that rotated in high speed. With the sealing stone, unique unevenness, and high speed rotation, it would dig through and disperse the magic itself.

Special bullet Living Bullet A living bullet. It would listen to a simple order of the user and crushed the target.

Special bullet Burst Bullet A bullet that was accompanied by shockwave.

Special bullet   Excise Bullet   It could switch the coordinate along with the space between bullet and bullet, or bullet and the user

Special bullet   Vision Bullet   By using it in conjunction with Novum Idola, it could launch illusion.

☆Addition.

Living Golem   Arachne

Spider type golem. It could launch things like sleeping drug, paralysis drug, weakening drug, and so on. Even transmutation is OK. It's relatively all-purpose

Satellite type   Bel Agharta

It poured down light of regeneration magic.

Special bullet   Squirm Shell

A shell that could be packed with various things and fired. Large creature would unavoidably get teary eyed.

Torpedo

It could dye an oasis red. It could also kill an ancient monster quite a bit.

Tent and Kotatsu

The height of civilization that Hajime created

Camping Kit

Right now it was 3LDK with system kitchen attached by using space expansion

Dryer

It increase the glossiness

Impact Grenade

hidebuh

Mask series

Mask pink is retired uniform. Greatly increased battle ability

Gate Key & Gate Hall

Anywhe○ Door without door (Limited to a place with Gate Hall)

Gran Farenzen

It increased gravity by several times over.

Last Zell

Limit Break for everyone

Drucken

Shia's war hammer. It was changeable to become bombing mode.

Wirr Drucken

Drucken's successor. It could become 100 Ton Hammeeerr

Black Slavery Whip

Tio's whip. It could mass produce black dragon. There were also times where Hajime used it on Tio.

Demon Sword of Circle Calamity Anima Ernte

Kaori's twin large sword. Drain type demon sword.

Holy Sword of Gospel Bel Rexion

Kaori's twin large sword. Healing type holy sword.

Schutzengel

Installation type. It deployed Kaori's barrier magic in large scale.

Black katana

Shizuku's beloved katana. The first present from Hajime. At night, she give it maintenance while grinning broadly.  
Lightning Clad – Wind Claw – Gravity Cut, etc.

Will demonstrating katana swarm

Anyway, it's a swarm of black katana that moved by themselves. I'm lacking in chuuni power. Naming under review.



Twin Iron Fan

The user is Suzu. A tiny kid will look slightly elegant with this.

Air Force Boots

You can soar in the sky

Living golem Demon Rangeeerr

Myuu's golem squadron. They had ego before anyone knew it. Myuu christened them "Belfegoor" "Satan" "Asmodeusu" "Lusife~r" "Mamon" "Leviatan" "Baalsebuf"

Recently, the small golems that she received by begging at papa were christened with names like "Agaresu" "Sitrii" or "Marubas" and so on.....

Donneer - Schlaag

The small version of Donner & Schlag exclusive for Myuu. It could also perform electromagnetic acceleration using magic power battery

Kotetsuu - Muuramasa

Short swords exclusive for Myuu. Recently it felt like they were starting to have awareness.....

This is Weapon Desu

Myuu's exclusive black whip. It could exterminate terrorist's "son"

Don't Touch, You Pervert

Myuu's exclusive pencil Cross Velt

Pikko Piko Hammeer

Myuu's exclusive piko piko hammer. Its tip had rabbit character.

Yue-oneechan's Love

Myuu's exclusive jewel magecra○.

Artifacts enchanted with concept magic are excluded. Because it only used that one time.

'Other than that there is also something like this right?' If you remember something like that then I'll add it if I can bother you to write it at the review.

Pardon me if the artifact explanation is atrocious.....

# Arifureta After II The History of the Sky World

A sound like the creaking of metal resounded, the airship's altitude lowered with a jerk.

□Kyah□

□Piuh□

The silver haired girl and little dragon who were hugging each other while trembling raised a scream at Hajime who was showing a really nice smile in a savage manner. The blonde haired female made contact using something like a radio toward the place that seemed to be the bridge and asked what was happening.

□Roze-sama-. The damage to the ship is horrible, we cannot maintain our floating power-□

The magnified voice resounded to the whole ship. The silver haired girl who was called Roze quickly returned to her senses, and then she turned her gaze at the little dragon——Kuwaibel. Kuwaibel turned its gaze at Roze and nodded once.

□Piiii~~~~□

It raised a high-pitched cry. Silver light overflowed from its small body which gently enveloped the airship.

□Floating power increasing, 50 percent. Please just a bit more, Kuwaibel-sama.□

□Pii, pipih□

Kuwaibel puffed up his chest with a face that looked a bit triumphant, as though to say□Just leave it to me!□. It seemed that the declining ship was recovering its floating power with the help of that special silver power.

Roze let out a relieved sigh and she tightly hugged again her beloved friend and partner Kuwaibel. She then returned her gaze at Hajime and Tio who were looking at them with very interested gaze.

She stood up, put down Kuwaibel beside her, and then she showed an elegant bow that resembled a courtesy. Her hair was ruffled from the wind, her clothes was also a modest thing that looked like an overall, yet her appearance had a gracefulness that would make people who saw her to get taken aback.

□It's a great honor to be able to meet you for the first time, dragon knight-sama, true dragon-sama. I am Avenst Kingdom's queen Roze Phiris Avenst. As the representative of the dragon kingdom, my greatest thanks for your assistance in this chance. ....Unfortunately we are in this kind of condition, so we cannot even show you our gratitude satisfactorily, but please, you can rest your wings in our ship Rozeria by all means.□

The two comprehended, indeed this girl's attire looked shabby, but now they could understand the reason of the

refinement this girl was clad with. It seemed that Hajime's prediction that she wasn't just a mere pirate was correct.

Roze's words caused the gaze of the blonde haired male and female at both her sides to wander around. It was a fact that they were saved, but the two people in front of them were too much of an unknown. As people whose mission was to protect the queen's safety, Tio's existence added with Hajime's deed and great power were making them hesitate if it was okay to simply approach these two.

□Piih. Pipii!□

□Ah, hey-, Ku-chan! That's impolite!□

They couldn't possibly defy these two, but they also couldn't abandon their wariness.....the blonde haired duo were unconsciously putting themselves on guard, but Kuwaibel only gave a glance at the duo who were like that before he quickly flew out and began to fly around Hajime and Tio happily.

Roze was yelling□Come back hereee~e!□with an angry face, but Kuwaibel looked really curious about Tio in her dragon's form, so he was flying in front of Tio's nose tip while sending a deeply interested gaze.

□Tio.□

□Acknowledged.□

With Hajime's call, Tio enveloped her body with a cocoon of black magic power light. The cocoon was shrinking whizzingly. Right after that, the magic power scattered like a bursting bubble and from inside Tio appeared in her usual appearance.

□.....Holy cow. She really can turn into human. It's just like in legend.□

□Even when I see it with this eyes, I still cannot believe it.□

□Nee-san. Can you punch me a bit? I think I'm hallucinating.□

The pilot who was saved by Hajime——Bovid was putting his hand on his forehead while muttering, while the blonde hair duo were also opening their eyes wide in disbelief.

Hajime and Tio ignored their shock and landed on the deck. When they did that, Tio was floating with the dragon wings she let out, but Hajime was normally *stepping on the air* and walked down, so everyone including Roze stared with their eyes almost jumping out from the socket.

Under Hajime's feet that were walking normally as though he was going down a stair were crimson ripples spreading with each step. Everyone was staring at that wordlessly. Even after Hajime had stood on the deck, the gaze of everyone was still glued on Hajime's feet.

□Oi, come back to your senses. We also have various things that we want to ask. The time is limited y'know.□

Hajime tapped his foot while saying that. Hearing that, Roze and others returned to their senses with 'hah' and their gaze met Hajime. Though their gaze still kept glancing at Hajime's feet.

□Tha, that's rude of us. E, excuse me dragon knight-sama. For you to come down here, can I take that to mean that you are going to give us the honor by resting your wings on our ship?□

□I'm not a dragon knight, and depending on the situation I'll leave right away but.....well, it's true that for the time being I'm thinking of talking with you guys.□

The blonde hair duo frowned at Hajime's wording. They reflexively were about to say something, but then Bovid elbowed them saying□Don't get in her majesty's way□.

□Is that so.....I'm glad. Welcome, dragon knight-sama, true dragon-sama. If it won't displease you, can I please ask for your name?□

□That's why I told you I'm not a dragon knight. ....I am Hajime, and this is Tio.□

□Nice to meet thou, queen-sama with circumstance.□

□Yes, it's an honor to meet the two of you, Hajime-sama, Tio-sama.□

Roze smiled widely while adding 'sama' when calling the two of them. While she introduced herself as a queen of a country, it seemed she completely saw Hajime and Tio as above her. Surely the reason of her attitude like this was related with the unfamiliar terms she were using before this.

Anyway, they were able to create a friendly atmosphere unlike with the army faction, so Hajime turned his gaze to another direction. Lured by that, the gaze of Roze and others followed Hajime's and there they caught sight of the thing that Hajime was looking at. It was a giant mass of metal. The part of the mother ship that was forcefully purged.

□Excuse me, that's.....□

Roze raised a questioning voice. Hajime manipulated his Cross Velt in exchange for replying to her. The metal mass



that was surrounded by barrier was approaching following the Cross Velts' movement.

□Well, it's nothing. This guys are innocent after all, so as expected making them fall together is just too much.□

□E, err.....□

Giving only a glance at the bewildered Roze, Hajime used convergence transmutation to dissolve the metal mass in front of his eyes into particle state. The sight of the gigantic mass of metal surrounded by crimson sparks and rustlingly vanished into sand shape made everyone speechless.

Although, the true surprise came after that. The state inside was exposed when the outer wall was vanishing. Inside there was,

□Wha-. Dragons are, that many inside there.....□

□Chih, so it's something like this. So inside there is the fuel store of those guys' ship.□

Roze pressed her hands on her mouth and leaked out a whisper, and Bovid was clicking his tongue while saying the correct answer.

The room where nearly a hundred dragon species were locked in dissolved in the blink of eye. Several fist sized metal lumps were created above Hajime's hand and they were then stored into "Treasure Warehouse II".

Perhaps because the dragons hadn't flown for long, when the cage locking them in was gone, they were falling without even able to fly. They fell with a flop on the barrier floor that Hajime spread and then they looked around in astonishment while sitting.

□This is troubling. It would be great if they can just fly away quickly but.....they don't even have the strength to fly huh.□

□Uumu. It wouldst take some effort to care for this number. What to do, Goshujin-sama? There art also an option to use cheatmate and mine metamorphosis magic to forcefully remodel their body though?□

Tio suggested using the magic that once transformed the enemy monsters in the holy precincts into black dragons. Hajime carefully pondered that suggestion, but the problem was resolved before he could give the answer.

□Piuh, Piihlhpipih□

Kuwaibel flew up in front of the dragons that weren't trying to fly away and then his body shined silver. The overflowing light was scattering like rain while showering the dragons. After a while, the dragons were starting to move their wings in bewilderment.

At first it was slowly. As though to ascertain the feeling. As though to recall the past.

One dragon, and then one more dragon was floating, and the dragons began to dance in the sky.

□Monarch dragon.....was it? That was how those guys called this rug rat dragon.□

□Yes. A dragon that grant power to the dragon species. He is truly ought to be called as the king of dragon.□

Dragons in various size were flying around the small dragon clad in silver in adoration, as though they were offering their

respect. Hajime and Tio's expression turned admiring while watching that sight.

Before long, the dragons flapped their wings powerfully and became a single flock that flew away. Most likely there was also a floating island at that direction. Kuwaibel was clearly giving out instruction to them to fly over there. It was certain that they would be able to rest their wings there.

□Thank you very much Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. To think that the two of you were able to save those children in the middle of that battle.....how very admirable. As the representative of the dragon kingdom that love dragon and wish to be together with dragon, I offer the two of you my gratitude.□

Roze who stepped forward gracefully bowed her head deeply.

It appeared that Roze and her group were harboring feeling of affection to the dragon species, different from the army faction. Seeing that their side also had sky battlecraft and airship, Hajime thought that they were using the energy body that seemed to come from the dragon's heart, but based on what he saw from Roze's behavior then perhaps there was other method than that. No matter how he couldn't imagine this group killing dragon and took out their core.

While Hajime and Tio's interest was stimulated inside their heart thinking that there were more and more things he wanted to ask with this, they were guided by Roze to go to the reception room. That was how it went but.....

The terrible condition inside the ship that was littered with holes, the crews running around for repair, and then the strange noise that sometimes resounded and the condition

that made it seemed like the airship would fall anytime, those factors caused Hajime to ask.....Is this airship okay?. In respond to that, Roze's reply was'I, it's fine you know?'with question mark inside her sentence and her gaze swimming around everywhere. In the end, Hajime rushed around to repair the ship.

He wanted to be spared of the ship crashing while they were talking, so he made them guide him to the broken area and performed repair one after another using transmutation. If there was lack of material, Hajime used a part of the material that he snatched in great amount from the mother ship.

Right after crimson spark surged, the damaged place became just like new in the blink of eye. The absurd spectacle caused all the crews including Roze to goggle.

Even when they were in the middle of moving to the next place, their gaze was nailed at Hajime's hand. When the hand moved to right, their gaze would also go to right, when it moved to left their gaze would also go left. When Hajime tried rotating his arm in a cir~cle, their gaze would also rotate in a cir~cle.

.....To the right a bit faster-. The gazes went to the right swiftly-. Left-, but it was a feint, it was up! Refusing to get tricked the gaze went up! Left up down right left right up-! What the-left up right left right left-, ah, mistaken!?

Just what art thou doing, Goshujin-sama and also queen-sama too.

Ah, no, sorry. Because these guys are moving too obediently, that I unintentionally.....

□My, my apologize. It feels like it would be a defeat if our gaze get left behind, that I unintentionally.....□

The people around the blushing Roze were also making an expression like□Damn it, we unintentionally.....□in harmony. Perhaps they were unexpectedly a group that could easily get into a certain mood.

With various happenings like that, Hajime and Tio who were invited into the reception room finally sat down on a stiff sofa. A steamy beverage was put in front of them. Most likely it was something similar like tea. A slightly sweet fragrance tickled their nose.

In front of the two was Roze. The blonde hair duo were standing in attention behind her. Midway to this room Hajime and Tio learned that both of them were siblings, the older sister was Olga Crow, and the little brother was Jean Crow. They seemed to be Roze's imperial guards. The elder sister was the captain of the imperial guards, and the little brother was the vice captain. They could also pilot sky battlecraft, but they were an expert in close quarter combat. It seemed that usually they were also aiding Roze's daily life.

□Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. Forgive me for being too straight, but can I be allowed to ask what kind of objective the two of you have? We.....we have a goal, a mission. I think that if it's the legendary true dragon-sama then your understanding must have grasped it already but.....like this, for the two of you to rush to our side in our time of danger, is it allowed for me to hold a hope that the two of you can give us your cooperation?□

□Wait, wait a bit. Calm down for now.□

From the middle of her talk, Roze's body was leaning forward and she kept talking on and on. Hajime pushed forward both

his hands to stop her. Roze pulled back her body in panic and she corrected her posture in shame.

□I'll say this first, but I'm not the dragon knight you queen-san talked about, I also don't understand what you mean by true dragon. The reason is because we aren't a dweller of this world.□

□.....Not a dweller of this world? Forgive me, I don't really understand what do you mean by that.□

□I meant that literally, we are human from different world. A world where there isn't a black rain like here, where the civilization isn't collapsing. There are multiple countries in existence there and they more or less believe in order and law.□

Roze's expression was getting more and more bewildered.

Hajime smiled wryly understandingly and he talked the summary of their experience of coming to this world. Whether they would believe it or not in the end, Hajime would leave it to their own decision. For the time being, he conveyed to Roze that with the premise that they were from another world, he wished for her to teach him about this world, the situation, and about the unfamiliar terms that sometimes came out in their conversation.

□It's a story that I cannot believe so suddenly but.....for now, I understand that this talk itself won't progress without me explaining the situation. Having said that, I don't know from where do I have to start explaining.....□

□Right.....then, first, what is that black rain? Teach us starting from there. What happened that now the land is polluted by that rain?□

□So from there. So it's really true, that the two of you doesn't know about this world.....□

Roze took a gulp of the drink with her mind still shaken by bewilderment and for now she reset herself. She pondered for a bit thinking how should she explain, and then she began to talk.

□The black rain, it is said to be the proof of the fallen monarch dragon—Helmut's grief and rage.□

In the past, at the time where the black rain still didn't exist, in the center of dragon kingdom Avenst where Roze's ancestor was acting as the king, there was an era of peace where dragon and human coexisted.

□In that era, when dragon and human reached a certain age, it was the custom for them to choose a partner to exchange friendship of a lifetime. One of the monarch dragons who were the partner of the dragon kingdom royalty in such era, was the evil dragon Helmut.□

□Monarch dragon, what does that mean?□

□Monarch dragon, they are dragon that possess special power even among the dragon species. They possess silver scales, bestow strength to the dragon species and the land, and they are able to exchange words with human. They are the ruling kind among the dragons that will only exchange friendship with the royalty of the dragon kingdom.□

The oldest and strongest country—Dragon Kingdom Avenst. A part of the reason of that status was because in a world where dragon was human's greatest friend, the kingdom royalty was the only one that could exchange friendship with the dragon's ruling kind.

□I see. That country surely was a country with influence huh.□

□Yes. The center of the world was without a doubt located in the dragon kingdom. However, even that era was approached by the end. —It was the development of technology.□

Except the existence of dragons and ores and the like that possessed special energy, there wasn't any mysterious power like magic or anything in this world. It was inevitable for technology to develop here just like in earth. The difference was at the point that in place of electricity and gas, this world was using an energy that was called sky core.

□Sky core, is that the sky blue ore that is even smaller than grains of sand?□

□So you know about that..... Yes, exactly. It is a special ore with traits where it can be changed into various kinetic energy, stimulate the growth of crops, or even neutralize gravity. It's an ore that is really hard to be collected, but it can even allow an airship this big and sky battlecrafts to fly like this, and it can also produce light, heat, cold for our daily life.□

□.....This ship, it's not using that thing that is like the dragon's heart?□

□-. Obviously-. Please don't lump us together like those Qwailent bunches-□

□.....Calm down. I'm completely ignorant what is common sense and what is not in this world. I'll properly listen to queen-san's story, so please explain.□

□ah, my, my apologize.□



Roze whose boiling temper got cooled by Hajime's calm words cleared her throat. According to the explanation that she resumed, the thing that seemed like the dragon's heart—that was something that was called dragon core, it seemed that even just a cubic centimeter of it possessed the same amount of energy of a fist sized sky core.

Naturally, processing dragon core was very much better in labor and efficiency, but it seemed that Roze and others who were the descendant of dragon kingdom who didn't discard their country's ideal of coexisting with dragon even now when their country had perished, they were only using sky core. Because of that, their airship's spec was several level lower compared to the airship of their enemy—Sky Divine Country Qwailent. They also had difficulty in resupply, so they were always struggling with lacks of materials.

Somehow, it made it hard to drink the richly fragrant tea in front of them.....

□Nkuh. This is delicious. Second please.□

□Ah, yes.□

Hajime-san mercilessly asked for second. Right after Roze was explaining with a bitter smile about their destitute living situation. The expression of the Crow siblings shuddered. 'Is this man's nerve made from special alloy wire!?' They wondered.

□And? The continuation?□

□Ah, yes. Eerr.....that's right. While the technology development is continuing, a certain researcher discovered it. That the dragon core is far more efficient than sky core. The dragons who were the great companion of mankind had their remains buried courteously even after death. The

dragon core that should be called as that dragon's soul was buried along with the dragon's remain, returning back to the land. That was the norm in that time.

□So curiosity, stepped across that common sense?□

□I don't understand the feeling of that researcher. In the record, it was said that at the end of his research he created the fastest aircraft at that time using the dragon core of his partner who died from an unforeseen accident. And then, he didn't create anything other than that. ....It's possible, that man might only wished to fly together in the sky one more time using an aircraft that is inserted with the soul of his departed friend.□

The truth of the matter was unknown. However, the fact was that at the same time with that man's discovery, the countries all over the world also noticed it. The value of dragon core.

And then, it began. The cruel and terrifying act of dragon hunting.

Technology that made use of sky core required extremely much effort starting from the collection of the sky core. Sky core at the very least need to be fist sized to be useful, but the sky core that could be collected was only small things that were like sand. Just collecting it and compressing it into usable size consumed so much time and cost. Major effort was necessary just to research it.

Those necessities were removed by using dragon core. The research advanced rapidly and technology was developed with striking momentum.

□It was said that the countries all over the world unanimously gathered dragon core and the technology race

intensified. In the middle of that, it was only the dragon kingdom that was trying to stop the tide of the world that is making dragon hunting as right. The kingdom used all kind of method. Economic sanction, preferential treatment from the dragon kingdom, the export of sky core.....sometimes they even used military force along with the monarch dragons.□

□.....How long they could do that?□

Roze made a troubled smile at Hajime's words.

While the countries around them were continuing to develop technology, they rejected dragon hunting as wrong—that had the same meaning as being left behind by the world. Even if they were an influential country, but if their technology level was overwhelmingly left behind, it wasn't hard to imagine what kind of evaluation other countries would have against them.

Even so the dragon kingdom continued to reject dragon hunting was because the dragon species shouldered the role as balancer of the world. It wasn't something that was proven scientifically. It was something like a superstitious belief. But, it was believed that dragons had a role of taking in toxic substance of the world into their body, and then they purified it to return it back to the world.

That was the belief in the dragon kingdom.

In a world where technology development advanced, a fact without proof wasn't worthy to be believed in. Even when the dragon kingdom persuaded that if the dragon hunting continued at this rate a calamity would occur, no one bothered to listen.

Like that the authority of dragon kingdom wavered, their influence lowered, and shadow was looming on their power.

□The one who showed unease at such situation was the first prince of the dragon kingdom at that time. He became unable to endure the declining of his homeland. He casted away the belief as superstition and strongly appealed for technology development using dragon core.□

□Naturally, it didn't end well wasn't it?□

□Yes. In the record, harsh writings about him.....like he was the shame of dragon kingdom, or a traitor were written. However, even when he was showered with criticism from all the people of his homeland, he didn't stop. ....No, exactly because he loved his homeland from the bottom of his heart, that he couldn't stop anymore.□

□.....I can picture it somehow. So he did it?□

Hajime looked up to the ceiling with an air that seemed to say 'dear god'. Tio too seemed to be able to imagine what happened. She sighed as though to say that it was depressing just hearing it.

Even while smiling bitterly at the two, Roze talked with sadness at the forefront of her eyes.

How the prince, laid his hand on the monarch dragon who was his greatest friend.

A research of dragon core technology that was advanced behind closed door. As the last finishing touch, he murdered his partner, and with that dragon core—he constructed a gigantic flying warship that used the dragon core of monarch dragon for the first time in the world.

That ship's majesty was tremendous, to the degree that the military balance at that time was tilted slightly just by that one warship.

Surely that prince felt relieved with that. With that his homeland was saved. There would be peace. The other countries wouldn't make light of them anymore than this, they wouldn't be invaded so easily.

□Thus, the dragon kingdom recovered its authority, but in exchange they lost their pride and persuasiveness huh.□

□Must be. Even if they called for the cessation of dragon hunting, no one wouldst listen to them. After all, they hath murdered a king of dragon to create a warship. Even putting aside other countries, the kingdom's own people wouldst be the one that gave up on the country most of all.□

□Exactly as you said. A storm visited the dragon country and they even met a crisis of internal disunity. But then, an occurrence so terrifying as though to say something like the risk of civil war is just a trivial thing was starting to happen.□

Black rain was starting to fall.

□Coming this far, the world finally noticed that they were mistaken. The true identity of the black rain is the end of the road of the energy that is released from sky core and dragon core. This thing that is dispersed into the air and changed in nature possesses a property that doesn't grant vitality but instead steal it.□

□I see. Let's put aside the detail about the underlying theory, it's true then that the dragon race, and perhaps the sky core are really balancer of this world.□

□Fumu. The world art holding true above a balance. Noon and night, man and woman, positive and negative.....it's natural for a negative energy to also exist if a positive energy exist. The dragon species and sky core take in negative energy, they then turn that energy into positive energy that they release back, when the released energy accomplished their role they wouldst turn into negative energy, then that energy wouldst be taken in by dragon species and sky core once more.....the world art in circulation.□

The role of dragon species that was proved for the first time with the manifestation of calamity.

However, mankind who noticed that fact then charged headlong to the unforeseen direction.

□The dignity of the dragon species was trampled down. The choice that mankind took wasn't the abolishment of dragon hunting, or the safeguard of dragon race—it was cultivation.□

□Oou. I knew it already but.....even in different world, human's karma is really deep anywhere huh.□

Several countries publicized their breeding farms that were made in secret. Mankind had already soaked their hand with sin that couldn't be taken back since before the danger of the world. They made those breeding farms not because they thought that this would happen in advance, they surely didn't even imagine that it would turn out like this. Their conduct of selling over the know-how of the cultivation brazenly to the world, just how foolish was that.

Who would be angry at the deed of mankind?

That was obvious. The royalty of dragon.

They believed. The royalty and people of the dragon kingdom loved them the dragon species from the heart, even when the country was on the verge of danger the people didn't give up to coexist with the dragon species. Because of that they believed, that surely human and dragon could walk together once more.

They endured. Even when dragon species was losing life one after another from dragon hunting, even when their relative monarch dragon was killed by the prince, because if they rampaged following their emotion then the dragon kingdom they loved would be crushed by the countries all over the world.

□The king made a decision. He told the father of monarch dragons who is his partner——Sutherland, that human and dragon should part with each other for once. The king said to take away all the dragon species and escape to the end of the world. If there are people that survived from the black rain, at that time the king asked for the dragon to grant a chance for the two sides start over one more time. Sutherland accepted and decided to part from mankind. However, that decision was a bit too late.□

□.....So Sutherland's child, couldn't put up with it?□

Sutherland's child, the twin elder brother of the murdered monarch dragon——Helmut attacked a cultivation place and the country it resided in before his father's decision.

At the same time with that, it was an incident that was enough to erase the light of the coexistence faction that still hadn't vanished yet. Every country that obtained a just cause carried out the capture and subjugation of the dragon kingdom using their fleets.

□It was an alliance of many countries, yet regardless of that their pace was orderly, and their subjugation strategy was swift and precise. Even Sutherland who boasted of an unequalled strength, the best that he could do was to let some number of dragons to escape.□

□That was their aim huh. Perhaps the breeding farms were also provocation. It was to eliminate the remaining coexistence faction and completely taking down monarch dragons that were still a threat.□

□That, must be it. The dragon species that were massing to depart to the end of the world were pushed back by the quantity of the allied army and they were falling to the ground. Sutherland's children were killed one after another, or else their wings plucked and captured.....it was truly a hellish picture. At the very least, it was enough to transform Helmut into evil dragon.□

His siblings murdered, their dignity crushed underfoot, the black emotion that had been piling mountain high, when he saw his siblings trampled before his eyes once more—it snapped. Helmut's mind crumbled and something awoke inside him.

It was said that the moment Helmut raised a howl that planted fear inside everyone that listened, the sky that should be clear was covered with dark clouds in the blink of eye, and then black rain was starting to rain in impeccable timing.

□Fumu. Based from what I heard here.....the power of circulation that dragon race possessed, was it reversed in this case? However, if this monarch dragon possessed a power to the degree that couldst manipulate the weather, I



don't think that they wouldst lose against mankind in the first place though.....□

□How common. Wasn't it the rage and hatred that surpassed the limit that pushed up the rank of this Helmut? Aa, could it be, he evolved into this true dragon that queen-san mentioned before?□

Roze smiled wryly at the quick understanding of the two while giving affirmation.

True dragon was said to be the ancestor of the dragon kingdom's royalty and the monarch dragons. Its power was immense, and it was told that it could manipulate heaven and earth and could also transform into human, and so on. There was nothing left of its existence except in legend, a fairy-tale existence.

There wasn't any record of Helmut transforming into human, but it seemed that he was called as a historical true dragon that evolved from monarch dragon due to the aspect of manipulating weather. However, it was also an ability that was limited to covering the world with cloudy weather that made black rain fell.

□Tio-sama is able to transform into human, and that overwhelming ability.....you manipulated wind and flame before this. That, as expected you are a true dragon.....□

□No no, I'm not a true dragon. It's the reverse. I'm not a dragon that turn into human. The correct recognition art I am a human that turn into dragon.□

□Human, become dragon?□

□In our world.....no, more accurately in Tio's world, there is that kind of race. Her family is all able to transform into

dragon. If they are really true dragon, then that will be a bargain sale of fairy-tale existence.□

Hajime cackled saying□Well, even though she isn't a true dragon, but she is a god dragon though□while sending Tio a teasing gaze. Tio looked aside saying□I didn't say any lie□. (TN: True dragon's kanji is read as shinryuu, while accidentally god dragon's kanji is also read as shinryuu. Also the kanji for dragon of the god dragon here is for eastern dragon.)

Seeing the relaxed relationship of the two, Roze asked timidly.

□That, then, as expected about the two of you being dragon knight-sama and true dragon-sama.....□

□From what I can guess, this dragon knight is also an existence from a fairy-tale, and he was the true dragon's partner, isn't that right? But it's completely different. Tio can become dragon but she is a fully fledged human, and even if you say partner but she isn't my friend, but my wife.□

□Wi, wife.....□

□Mu, mumu-. Wi, wife.....that's the first time someone called me that. What's this, this itchy feeling in mine chest. Goshujin-sama, this child, she is really a good child!□

Tio got all bashful and fidgety from getting called as wife for the first time. The eyes she were looking Roze with were suddenly filled with color of affection. Really, what a simple dragon.

Ignoring the writhing Tio, Hajime prompted Roze to continue talking. The simple dragon□Nou nou, Goshujin-sama. I'm thy wife□leaning on him was annoying, so for the time being he

made her quiet with a slap. Seeing the hopeless dragon raising a coquettish voice "Ahanh" while collapsing on the sofa in ecstasy, the gaze of Roze and others became nailed on Tio.

Hajime's cough made them returned to reality.

"Ah, e, errrr.....that's right. Helmut who became true dragon and began covering the world with black rain was said to have lost his former heart. Without discriminating human or dragon, he raised a loud laugh as though enjoying the destruction while trampling over everything."

"So that guy degenerated completely. The birth of evil dragon, is it."

"Yes. It was said that Sutherland began a deathly battle in order to stop his fallen son. At the same time, his spouse Detmers led their surviving children back to the dragon kingdom."

There was one reason for that. In order to save their friend.

It was unknown whether Sutherland was able to stop Helmut. Even if for example he could, mankind would perish under the black rain that was rapidly covering the whole world. Their beloved dragon kingdom would die out.

Sutherland possessed an exceptional strength even among the monarch dragons. And if he fought seriously, then other would only become a hindrance to him. Understanding that, amidst the falling black rain, Detmers and others dashed in order to save the humans that had cornered them.

"The essence of monarch dragon's power is invigoration. And then, sky core has the property to neutralize gravity."

□So that's, the reason of the floating islands.□

□Yes. But, as expected although they are monarch dragon, they couldn't do something like making the whole land float. What they could do was only making land with particularly abundant sky core to float. Even so, there is no mistake that we can live like this is thanks to the act of Detmers-sama and others that they carried out by staking their life.□

Kuwaibel who was snuggling up beside Roze raised a sad cry. Surely he understood the content of their talk. Roze gently caressed such Kuwaibel.

□This child is a memento from Detmers-sama. At that time it still wasn't time to give birth, but Detmers-sama who was in the verge of death because of the black rain and using up enormous power cut up her own body and left behind an egg. She said, this child who will be born someday, will be the hope as the last monarch dragon.□

It seemed that Helmut didn't come chasing after the floating land. According to the record, it seemed he watched the floating island while laughing. It was as though he was looking forward to the crisis that mankind would taste from there on.

Roze who took a breath after finishing the long story moistened her parched throat. And then, she faced Hajime with a gaze that was filled with determination unlike before this.

□After twenty years passed since that day of tragedy, the dragon kingdom that continued to exist in the sky received an invasion from sky pirate. Our country was stolen. At that time I was still a baby, I was able to survive thanks to my parents' close aides taking me away along with Kuwaibel's egg.□

Even without her saying anything, it could be guessed that the king and queen had died from Roze's expression.

The dragon kingdom perished and Sky Divine Country Qwailent came into being. The king was the air pirate's leader. He monopolized the limited resource. Roze and others who were chased out were reduced to air pirate, the slipped through the divine country's eyes and stole resource, and protected the people of the dragon kingdom who escaped together with them until now.

Like that, when Roze became ten years old, Kuwaibel was finally born. The people of the former dragon kingdom were boiled up by the birth of hope, at the same time, they kept hiding Kuwaibel's existence who was still weak so that the divine country wouldn't realize it no matter what.

□Even that end with today. My stomach froze when Kuwaibel came out to the battlefield but.....from there, to think we were able to encounter Hajime-sama and Tio-sama.....□

□Fuuh? And?□

Although Roze faltered for a moment at Hajime's penetrating gaze, she immediately returned back a blazing gaze.

□I beg you. Please lend us your strength. The strength to take back the land of dragon kingdom Avenst.□

It seemed that in the deepest part of dragon kingdom Avenst, there was a spring that could grant power to monarch dragon. If they could go there, even Kuwaibel who was still only a few years old would become able to use a power that equaled a grown dragon even if just temporarily.

There if Hajime and Tio's strength was combined with Avenst's mother ship and other airships, then it would also be possible to defeat the evil dragon Helmut, explained Roze earnestly.

Hajime glanced at Tio beside him. Tio's expression was pondering something, but she noticed Hajime's gaze and shrugged, leaving him to make the decision.

Hajime scratched on his cheek and he lowered his eyebrows a bit while,

□For now, let's put it on hold.□

He answered. Roze went□Eeh, isn't this the scene where you gladly accept!?!□in fluster because her expectation was betrayed. Hajime said□Something like that is the domain of a hero somewhere or the abyss-san□and deflected easily.

Tio was staring at such Hajime with an expression that didn't expect it. As expected, if Hajime was told something that easily went outside the category of adventure like 'please go to a war with a country, and then please defeat the evil dragon and save the world', Tio thought that he would refuse promptly.

For Hajime whose basis was swift decision, it was a really half-baked answer.

□Well, what. Even us, after hearing the story just now we ain't just going to say "Oh is that so, yes, we will do anything". Various things happened today and we are tired. For now we are going to rest, think it carefully, and then we will give our decision tomorrow. You don't mind right?□

□Tha, that's right. Indeed I'm too impatient just now. Even though Hajime-sama and Tio-sama has just finished with a

battle of that degree, my deepest apologize for my inattentiveness. We have prepared a room. It is a modest thing, but later on we will bring you your dinner, so please rest at ease tonight.

“Ou. Much obliged, I won’t hold back then. Okay Tio, let’s go.”

“Ri, right.”

Hajime emptied his tea and stood up abruptly. He led Tio and got out of the room. A crew that would guide them immediately appeared and took them to their room. Roze was staring fixedly at the back of such Hajime and Tio with an expression that was a mix of hope and unease.

The airship Rozeria was gliding through the night sky where multitude of stars were shining.

At a corner of the ship’s rear deck, there were the figures of Hajime and Tio. Both of them were sitting at the edge of the deck. Their legs were thrown out to the empty air. The sea of clouds that were shining from the reflection of the stars let the eyes of the two of them to enjoy the sight to their heart’s content.

“And, why didst thou put the decision on hold, Goshujin-sama?”

Tio asked Hajime while watching him with a sidelong glance. Hajime was also similarly watching Tio with a sidelong glance while he opened his mouth.

□I'm thinking of deciding after hearing of what you want to do.□

□What I want to do?□

Tio tilted her head. Hajime nodded.

□Yeah. What do you want to do Tio? The restoration of the dragon kingdom doesn't matter, but you have a tii~ny bit on your mind about this evil dragon aren't you?□

□.....So thou noticed Goshujin-sama.□

Getting seen through like this even though she shouldn't have taken any conspicuous attitude caused Tio's cheeks to redden from feeling too embarrassed. She thought that he really looked at her closely.

Tio slowly opened her mouth as though she was choosing her words.

□I thought that it was similar, just a bit. Of their way of living, and their last days.□

□Is it about, the dragon race's country in the past?□

□Yes. I understand Helmut's feeling, just a little. At that time, when I saw Haha-ue and mine comrades crucified, a black flame was certainly born inside me. A flame of hatred that only wished to burn others, even myself.□(TN: Haha-ue=mother, used in samurai families)

Hajime returned a silence at Tio who was talking bit by bit. He kept quiet while looking forward, lending his ear at Tio's story.



□I was able to stop because of Chichi-ue's words. I was able to change the black flame into power to protect. Helmut art surely the me of that time that couldst not stop.□(TN: Chichi-ue=father)

That was why she couldn't just be indifferent to this. When she thought that the fallen king of dragon would continue to ravage this world with black rain even from here on forever, for some reason, the feeling that this was intolerable was welling up inside.

□This is just a retelling from Yue....."The track that Tio had walked through until now. That is Tio's everything" isn't that right? That's just a meaningless supposition. Helmut was unable to win against himself. Tio Claus won against herself. That's all there is to it right?□

□Fufu, thou art right.□

Tio smiled fondly and nodded at the words of Hajime that sounded a bit displeased, as though to say 'don't lump together the stupid idiot that ruin the world with my Tio'.

A quiet time was flowing for a while.

Hajime glanced once more at Tio before he scratched a bit roughly on his head.

□Aah, geez. Stop being indecisive and say your answer already. I'm asking you here, what do you want to do huh? You are too considerate to other people other than yourself at various things. I'm telling you, show some selfishness sometimes other than with your perverted attitude.□

□Goshujin-sama.....□

Tio blinked. And then, she reflexively closed her eyes and hid her expression toward Hajime who was staring at her fixedly. She then whispered.

□I want to end this. This art completely unrelated with us. The scale art too big to call it an adventure. The opponent's strength art unknown. This is just mine ego talking. I understand all that. However—I wish to end this.□

That was Tio's true feeling. It was Tio's selfishness that came from her sentimentality, based from her ego, for the sake to cheer up herself.

Hajime who heard that,

□Roger. Let's end this. We are going to end the evil dragon Helmut's everything, just for our own convenience.□

He easily consented to it.

When Tio turned her face, she found Hajime's face that looked somewhat happy there. An expression of happiness from listening to Tio's selfishness.

'Aah, no more-' Tio yelled out her indescribable feeling in her heart while leaping at her beloved master.

The light of stars shining in the night sky enveloped the two with faint gentle light.

Roze's group at that time.

□Awa, awawawah. The two of them, doing that in this kind of place-. Aa, amazing-□

□Ro, Roze-sama-. You mustn't look-. Co, come on, we understood already that they didn't disappear, let's go back inside quickly!□

□Pii, piii□

□Kuwaibel-sama..... It looks like you are hiding your face with your wings, but it's obvious you are completely looking from the gaps there.□

□Ou ou. As expected from the legendary dragon knight-sama yeah. Doing that on the deck so brazenly. How envious.□

□Bovid-. What are you doing looking so unashamedly like that! Quickly take Roze-sama inside the ship! Roze-sama too, please release your hands from the railing! Come on, quickly-. Hey, your strength increases-. Just how interested are you-□

Roze-sama was grasping the railing tightly and wouldn't let go with her nose breathing roughly. Olga was desperately trying to take her back inside the ship, but her hold was so tight it made her shudder wondering just where did she hide this much strength!

Kuwaibel in his own way was hiding his face with his wings while also thoroughly peeking from the gaps. Jean acted the straight-man, but Kuwaibel's gaze completely stuck!

Seeing such covert pervert duo of monarch dragon and queen, it was only Bovid who was cackling while nonchalantly making his swift retreat.

Because he noticed that Hajime's gaze was seizing their figure from across the shoulder of Tio who he embraced closely.

A few seconds after Bovid vanished, crimson spark surged in the night sky.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next chapter update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday.

# Arifureta After II Nation on Ship Avenst

AN: I'm sorry, it's late again. Furthermore the story doesn't advance.

This is bad, I'm genuinely becoming unable to make it in time at 6 P.M Saturday.....

I wonder if I should change it to Sunday.....

---

The early morning when the eastern sky was starting to be tinged white. Perhaps also because of the high altitude, the air was piercingly cold. The blowing wind made the receiver to feel slight pain.

It depended on the person whether to feel it as refreshing or torture. Although, even if it was someone who felt it refreshing, they still shouldn't wish to stay inside such coldness for long.

In such environment, there were two silhouettes leisurely staying there for thirty minutes already.

On the deck of the airship Rozeria, there were Tio and Hajime relaxing with a steamy cup beside them.

The minerals that Hajime obtained in this world were lined up in front of him. He took them into his hand and stared at them passionately, toyed with them.....it seemed that he was displaying his transmutation master nature without reservation. Beside him was Tio, she was exposing a gentle expression as though her usual perversion was just a lie while staring at Hajime's hand and face.

□E, excuse me~. Is it, a good time?□

A timid voice called at them. When Hajime and Tio turned their gaze, there they saw a beautiful girl with semi-long silver hair—Roze. Kuwaibel was firmly held inside her arms.

□Aa, what's the matter, queen-san. The queer queen-san who was loitering around there since around ten minutes ago.□

□Please at least greet if you actually noticed already!□

The truth was Roze-chan had arrived on the deck since around ten minutes ago. She witnessed a gentle atmosphere around the two that was hard to interrupt as a third person. And then, what crossed in the back of her mind was this and that from last night. As the result, she didn't know how should she call out at them and so she made an appeal□I'm nearby just by chance. Come on, notice me already! Greet out to me from your side!□.

□Roze-dono's blatant "notice me appeal" art cute, that we acted mean against our better judgment. Forgive us?□

□Uh. That, no, I was in the wrong because I didn't immediately call out.....□

Roze who felt like running away even more from getting apologized honestly like that had her face blushed slightly in shyness from hearing Tio's remark that she was "cute", her mouth moved in mumbles.

□And, what do you want? Queen-san whose act is painful to look at.□

□That thing last night was Hajime-sama's fault! Does Hajime-sama hate me!?□

Last night, the punishment from demon king-sama was waiting for Roze-chan's party who was peeking at the scene where Hajime and Tio were exchanging love.

——Demon King-style Harassment 108 "From Today You Too Are Hauria"

A harassment by using artifact that reproduced a pseudo "Divine Statement" by applying and enchanting soul magic. The result was "the target's act became chuuni for a period of time".

It went without saying that when they saw the act of Roze and Crow siblings that suddenly turned painful to look at, the eyes of the other crews turned into dot. They even called the ship doctor thinking that the everyday hardships might finally turn them strange. Even after the effect ran out, they didn't even have the willpower to complain to Hajime and the three harmoniously sat on the corner of the room while grasping their knees to endure their black history.

Bovid who sensed demon king-sama's anger a touch faster and escaped alone watched such trio and laughed loudly while rolling on the floor. Him acting like that made it felt like there was a retort 'is it fine to roll around laughing at

your lord's foolishness like that, captain of the air battle squad's first squad' that could be heard.

□Good grief, we cannot progress like this right? Stop making merry and say your business.□

□-. Ho, hold it down me. I am the queen of the proud dragon kingdom. It's fine. Take a deep breath. Suu, haa.....□

With blood vein pulsing on her forehead, including the wretchedness of the punishment last night, Roze renewed her determination 'I won't mistake someone like this as the legendary dragon knight-sama for the second time!' and then she told the two that the breakfast preparation had finished.

□Queen-san herself expressly come here just to tell us that? Even though you can just leave that to your subordinate.□

□No, that's because when I heard that the two of you were on the deck even since when the sun hadn't risen that I'm curious about what are you doing.□

It seemed that it was something like that. Hajime shrugged and his hand beckoned at Roze whose body shrunk from cold. Roze whose gaze wandered around feeling a bit perplexed approached Hajime's side excitedly.

□Ah. The wind is.....□

□Tio is covering the surrounding with wind barrier. A wind that contain heat. Feels really pleasant right?□

□Ye, yes. ....Whether it's Hajime-sama's tool, or Tio-sama's magic, they are really something that is outside our common sense. About the talk of another world, I think it finally feel real for me after a night passed.□



□Well, even if I told you of another world it's not something that can be accepted right away.□

Roze glanced at Hajime who kept making crimson sparks at the ore in his hand even while they were talking. It was a vibrant crimson light. The ore changed shape right away. It was completely a mysterious power that human of this world didn't have. The supernatural weapon created by that hand easily routed a gigantic battleship.

But, Roze knew that Hajime's power wasn't just making supernatural weapon. She didn't hear about the detailed story, she also didn't think of forcefully asking, but she saw that right after Hajime showed his appearance, he tore to pieces the hook of an approaching sky battlecraft unarmed. That was something different with the power to create thing that she was looking at right now.

Honestly, she couldn't see his bottom. She thought it was terrifying. And now when she knew that this person wasn't the noble dragon knight from fairy-tale who was the personification of justice, she felt it even more.

However, for them the descendant of dragon kingdom who were heading toward a slow ruin, the existence of Hajime and Tio was like a gift from heaven.

Also this timing when the last monarch dragon Kuwaibel had been born, she couldn't help but feel that there was destiny at work.

□Oh, finally.□

□We hath waited long. I hath great anticipation because of that.□

□? Excuse me, both of you what are.....□

Hajime threw his gaze to the eastern sky while one of his hands was carrying an ore. Tio also focused her gaze while leaning close to Hajime. Roze who didn't understand what the two of them were doing tilted her head with question mark floating above her head.

□What you ask, it's that. We are here because we want to see that.□

Hajime said that and pointed, at the thing that was showing out its face right now—the sun.

The sunlight swept away the blackness of night and dyed the world silver. The shadow of the sea of clouds darkened, and the illuminated place started to shine in sparkles like jewel.

The sunrise seen from the deck of an airship that was continuously flying above the sea of clouds.

That was exactly the reason why Hajime and Tio got out on the deck since early morning. For the sake of settling it firmly inside their memory, the superb view of another world they went astray into through a strange phenomenon.

□.....It's not bad. Yeah, it looks really great.□

□This art a harsh world, but the strength of the light that wipe out the black of night art the same no matter what the world. Yes, it's wonderful. It's a beautiful world.□

□.....□

Roze was dumbfounded.

The words “beautiful world” that came out from Tio's mouth echoed many times inside her head. When she thought

about it, when was the last time she watched the sunlight like this? She thought that this sight entered her sight every day.

However, she didn't think anything about that view. She was merely desperate to survive and to accomplish her duty, she didn't even look at the sky despite living in the sky. She noticed that although at this late hour.

The world was getting brighter moment by moment.

□.....Yes, it's beautiful. Really beautiful.□

Words of agreement. However, in contrast with those words, Roze's expression was vaguely dark.

□The food is delicious even with how simple it is. Ah, give me another of this.□

□You, you are really not holding back huh.□

On the breakfast table, there were Hajime and Tio, and then Roze, Kuwaibel, Crow siblings, Bovid, and then a male crew that seemed to shoulder the role as a waiter. Usually they didn't have anything like a waiter, even the queen Roze and also the imperial guards leaders Crow siblings would do everything by themselves.

This time it was a special situation where they were welcoming guest that were Hajime and Tio.

Hajime's remark of "another" despite saying that the food was simple while also understanding the reason why the

food was simple caused the waiter's cheeks to twitch a bit, even so he obediently obeyed. Bovid retorted with an amazed expression. His attitude to the two of them was the most casual among the crews of this ship.

□Yeah. I'll stop if I'm told to stop, but as long as no one say that, it's my principle to receive the hospitality I'm given with my all.□

□Hahah, I get that. I was also taught by my father to receive the good will I'm given without reservation. You had even saved our life, so eat as much as you want. Though even after I say that, the one who create and prepare the food is actually not me! Ahahahah□

‘Really, don't say anything you.....’ The gaze of the Crow siblings that was wordlessly appealing so was piercing Bovid. However, Bovid didn't pay that any attention. Right now, rather than the serious Crow siblings, it was more important to make Hajime and Tio felt welcome. He had finished saying thanks last night from getting his life saved, but as expected it was best to show the thanks with action. That was Bovid's cherished opinion.

It seemed that they was used to Bovid's unserious attitude, so Olga sighed while turning her gaze at her master. Olga couldn't stop frowning at Roze's state that was clad in a vaguely dark atmosphere since she went to call Hajime and Tio on the deck.

□.....Roze-sama. Did something happen?□

Leaving a glance at Bovid who was talking cheerfully with Hajime, Olga talked at Roze with a quiet whisper.

Roze who looked taken aback and returned to her senses then shook her head and showed a smile to avoid the

question.

□We still, haven't heard the decision of Hajime-sama and Tio-sama.....so it looks like my unease came out in my face.□

□Is that, so.□

Orga looked like she couldn't accept the explanation and she sent a glance of doubt, thinking that as expected the two of them had done something to her master.....her body twitched.

Because Tio's hand stopped moving at the meal and she was staring fixedly at Roze and Olga.

When Tio's eyes met Olga's, she showed a smile that looked trouble, but also looked somehow gentle. Olga twitched even more from that expression.

Hajime and Tio who finally finished their meal after asking another helping twice then enjoyed the after meal black tea made in another world. Choosing the timing, Roze then asked with determination.

□.....Hajime-sama. Regarding the answer for my wish last night, can I ask you to please tell us your answer?□

Defeat the divine country together and revive the dragon kingdom Avenst. And then, after putting in order a complete force, subjugate the evil dragon Helmut.

That was their cooperation request. Thinking from the aspect of their battle strength, they wished for Hajime and Tio to become the leading part in the battlefield. Especially in the part to defeat the divine country where Kuwaibel was

still powerless, almost all of that part would rely completely on Hajime like that.

Last night, when Hajime and Tio got out on the deck, they thought that perhaps the two of them would then disappear without telling anyone and so they spontaneously ran after them.

But, seeing the two of them were still staying here like this, then surely the two would grant their wish.....

Although they were thinking so, but they couldn't help but gulp their saliva from nervousness.

Inside the room where complete silent had descended, Hajime slowly put the cup of tea he drank on the table,

□We are going to slaughter Helmut, but we don't give a damn about that divine country something. You guys work hard yourself about that.□

□Wait, I don't understand what you are saying.□

They almost trembled in happiness when they heard that the two would kill the evil dragon, but they suddenly went cold hearing the sentence's latter half. Roze asked back with a half smile looking as though she was running from reality.

□I told you, I cannot be bothered about your country's revival, but as for Helmut, we are thinking perhaps we will go kill that guy a bit, purely for our own convenience.□

□.....Wait, I don't understand what you are sa——□

□Aa?□

□Understand. Evil dragon subjugation banzai. Sayonara the future of dragon kingdom's revival. That's what you are saying right. I understand.□

Roze who tried to do her best added with escaping reality, but she returned to reality due to Hajime's voice and expression that looked like yakuza. She couldn't stop her eyes from getting teary. Replacing Roze who fell silent, the Crow siblings stood up so fast their chair fell down while raising voice of protest and persuasion.

□Why!? If you two have that much power, then it shouldn't be that difficult to defeat the divine country! This is our dearest wish-. Please, I beg you two to rethink it-. Please-□

□Right now, even in this time the people of the dragon kingdom are suffering in hardship! The dragons are also in the same situation! Didn't the two of you repel the mother ship of the divine country yesterday and saved the dragons-? Here please show your righteousness one more time!□

Olga and Jean's words resounded loudly. However, the expression of Hajime who received those words showed not a single ripple.

□This is not really something you need to raise your voice that much right? If Helmut is defeated, the world will clear up. When that happen, then you can build your country anywhere on the vast land down there. Something like the land that might be polluted, or the battle against the divine country of that, those things are matters that are not related at all to us resident of another world. We don't happen to have any duty or responsibility to become your substitute in war.□

The sound argument that was returned to them caused the Crow siblings to be at loss for words. However, the power that Hajime and Tio showed wasn't something that worthless that they could give up that easily. The two weren't that farsighted that they could just say "Oh, is that so" in acceptance, even though there was the possibility to defeat the hateful divine country right in front of their eyes like this.

That was why, they raised their voices asking how the two of them could abandon the suffering humans and dragons even after they knew the situation and also getting begged on like this.

"Hajime-sama. Please we beg you to lend us your strength. At the very least, even if it's just a cooperation to make it so Kuwaibel can reach the underground of the palace, can you please help us with that?"

Roze's pleaded fervently. Hajime retorted back without any particular change in his expression.

"What kind of compensation you can give me?"

"Eh? Co, compensation?"

The Crow siblings were going to make a ruckus once more, 'even though this concern the future of the dragon kingdom's people' like that, but Roze stopped them with her gaze. And then, she thought of what she could present, and the result, with determination she——

"I, I'll offer myse——"

"No need."

"Hauh!?"



She was unable to say it until the end. Even though she was going to offer herself with a determination of the lifetime, yet it was cut down and discarded instantly. Roze whispered a line “E, even though, I am a queen” that might make a certain princess-sama somewhere to go “Comrade♪ Comrade♪” while jumping for joy.

“Or rather, you are really going to say that in front of Tio huh. The nerve you have there is really quite something.”

“Eh, ah. My, my apology, Tio-sama! I am not intending to insult Tio-sama by any means.....”

“It’s fine, it’s fine, I understand.”

If she knew that actually Hajime also had multiple wives other than her, just what would this queen-sama of another world think? Tio averted her gaze with a vague expression.

Roze sank into silence with a difficult expression and her gaze wandered around furiously while her head was working desperately.

Hajime opened his mouth with a sigh to finish the talk soon.

“Certainly, I have great power, and I can brag that just destroying a country won’t take much effort. But, it’s because of that that I won’t use my power because of other people’s will. My power is only mine, and it has to be wielded constantly by my will. Save me, help me, those wishes aren’t something exclusive that only you have. The world is overflowing with that kind of wishes, as many as the stars in the sky. I don’t have even the littlest bit of intention to spend my life and my important people’s life until it run dry from responding and rush about everywhere to that kind of wishes just “because I can”. ”

That was why, even if it was everything for the people in question, Roze's wish that was nothing but a common wish for Hajime wasn't something that he would undertake that simply as long as it didn't even have any merit for him that could make him overturned his decision.

□And, you guys who are wishing for me to slaughter several thousand people and overthrow a country in your place, what kind of compensation you can pay me that can make me overturn my will that is flatly refusing to do that kind of thing and make me decide to wield my power?□

□.....□

Roze couldn't say anything at all this time for sure. Olga, Jean, and Bovid were also the same.

Hajime stood up from his seat. Roze twitched and trembled.

□As expected, I'm not that shameless that I can keep remaining here after refusing your dearest wish like that. I and Tio will go to visit Helmut after this. I'll only promise that I will clear up the dark cloud from this world. I don't know how you queen-san and others will live in the new world where the black rain vanish and the sunlight shine on the land but.....at the very least, I'll pray for your success. It'll be great if your dearest wish can come true.□

□ah, wa, wait-. Please wait-□

Hajime said that and prompted Tio with his gaze to walk out from the door. Roze threw herself at such Hajime. Of course, she wasn't attacking him but stopping him from leaving. She clung on Hajime's arm and desperately formed her words.

□Sa, say, err, tha, that's right! Even though you say you will subjugate Helmut, but you don't know where his location is

right? We will show you the way! That's why, please don't leave-. Putting aside the matter of the divine country's subjugation, we still haven't be able to return our debt of you saving us!□

□If it's Helmut's location, we can do something about it ourselves. About the debt, the delicious meal and empty bed are enough for that.□

Hajime quickly shook off Roze's clinging arms, but Roze circled around him and took position in front of the door with both her hands spread out. Hajime's eyes narrowed quietly, but even while sweating coldly, Roze didn't show any sign of moving at all.

□Pl, please, come to Avenst by any means!□

□You are trying to take us away?□

□That's not it! I'm not thinking that such thing is possible! .....If it's in Avenst, then we will be able to show our gratitude a bit more properly. Even the cooking there is incomparable with the food in Rozeria, also in Avenst's airspace there are also island with lake and island that grow rare fruit! After that, after that there are also a lot of dragons living there-. It's only a few, but we are living in coexistence. Among us there are also people that can ride dragon, the sight of human and dragon flying together is really beautiful.....after that.....the people of Avenst are all good natured, ah, there is also craftsman that specialized in handling ore! Surely you will be interested. Besides, err, that.....□

She was already desperate. Even while getting incoherent, Roze was trying to make her invitation to mother ship Avenst into reality by speaking out things that might attract

Hajime's interest one after another. It was also just a bit painful seeing her like that.

Roze spread out her hands with all her might to not let anyone pass while narrating the charm of her country that didn't even have any territory with teary eyes. It seemed that she was thinking if she invited Hajime to Avenst, then there would still some possibility left they could move his emotion and receive his cooperation.

There, Crow siblings and Bovid also joined. They kept speaking on and on so that they wouldn't lose their connection with Hajime somehow. Kuwaibel was raising a small cry while approaching Tio's leg.

Staring at those brave figures of the queen and her group desperately clinging to their hope, Hajime's expression suddenly turned gentle. Roze and others got taken aback, then their eyes shined with hope thinking that perhaps Hajime would hear to what they were saying.

Hajime was making an expression that seemed to say 'can't be helped huuh', yet it also looked really gentle, while——his hand was reaching toward Donner.

(Wait wait wait wait-, wait a second, Goshujin-sama! As expected, there art no way thou wouldst shoot them to death here correct?)

(Tio. You, what do you think I am. Of course I won't open up any hole in them. I have properly changed the bullet with non lethal rubber bullet. I'm just going to give them a bit painful forehead poke.)

(.....I, is that so? No, even so I think that art still too much though.)

Roze and others were puzzled seeing Tio who suddenly held down Hajime's right hand and began to whisper from point blank range. Surely they didn't imagine even in their dream that if Tio was late just by a step, they would get \*dopan\*-ed.

Tio glanced at them who were actually in a pinch and whispered to Hajime with her body glued on him.

(Goshujin-sama, this art a rare chance, how about accepting the invitation?)

(What, you are interested?)

(Yes, I'm interested in the point where human and dragon art coexisting. Besides.....)

(Besides?)

Tio looked down shyly. Hajime's eyes blinked at the unexpected gesture.

(Helmut's subjugation wouldst not take that much time correct? As expected, after closing the books of one history of this world, we wouldst not be in the mood of continuing to adventure aimlessly again. Helmut's subjugation wouldst be the end of this adventure.)

(Well, I guess.)

(Yes. After subjugating Helmut, we wouldst *return to earth*. That's why.....)

(You are saying, you want to continue this adventure of just the two of us a bit more? Well, certainly an adventure of just two day and a night sound questionable.)

(Ye, yes. So just a bit more.....is it no good?)

This was Tio whose vocation was protector, so honestly Hajime didn't know if that was all of her true feelings. Perhaps she more or less had sympathy toward the dragon species of this world and Roze and others.

But, Tio's selfishness where he usually needed to ask her before she finally said it out, now she said it by her own initiative. Hajime's answer was decided already.

□Aa, then, perhaps I should take a look, just for a bit, at this country of queen-san and others.□

□Ah, that means.....□

□Yeah. I'll accept your invitation. However, that's all there is to it until the end. Understand that this doesn't mean I'll agree to cooperate with you.□

□I, I understand!□

They somehow held on to the hope. Of course, they also understood that at this rate it would be only an empty hope. Even so, they couldn't help but felt relieve and happiness.

Seeing Roze and others, the four of them rejoicing with each other, and Tio who was linking her arms with his in a good mood, Hajime smiled wryly.

Approximately a day after that.

Deep inside cloud mountain range area where giant cloud mountains were stretching out, the nation on board a ship

Avenst finally showed up.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I plan to end Tio arc in about two more chapters.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday if possible.

# **Arifureta After II The Determination of the Queen**



## Part 1

Inside the corridor of a magnificent palace before the dawn, hurried footsteps echoed.

The servants who were already starting to work turned their gaze in wonder about the loudly stamping footsteps, there their expression turned startled because they recognized the figure of the high official with a grim expression. That was because the high official of the divine country wasn't a commendable character with the habit of waking up before the dawn.

The male high official turned through several passages, and before long he arrived in front of a room that was guarded by soldiers armed with firearm. Even though the guards recognized the high official's face, but they instinctively put themselves on guard seeing his unusual state.

□You guys, announce my arrival to his majesty quickly! This is an emergency business-□

□Silas-sama. However, his majesty is still in the middle of his rest.....□

The male high official who raised an angry voice——Silas was answered by one of the guards, but Silas cut him off with angrier voice.

□I don't care-, wake him up! Quickly! I told you this is an emergency-□

“Ro, roger!”

One of the guards called out to inside the room. After a while, who came out was a woman wearing thin clothes with a displeased expression. When the guard explained the situation, the woman’s expression was becoming even more displeased even while she drew back into the room.

Silas was tapping his foot in irritation while waiting. The guards were stirring awkwardly seeing that.

After a while, the displeased woman just now showed out her face with her clothes in order this time. And then she prompted Silas to enter.

Silas entered the room by pushing aside the woman and he ignored the small curse of the woman that came from behind while heading toward the door inside the room. The room he was currently in was the room before the bedroom. It was a place for reception.

He knocked on the door a bit roughly, then he obeyed the voice “Enter” coming from inside that was said with a voice that sounded deliberately bad-tempered and he opened the door.

“Silas. Do you really have a reason to rouse me out from bed?”

It was a man who was past his middle age. He was gulping amber colored alcohol that was poured into a glass while asking that. Although his appearance was only wearing a gown, his eyes’ sharp glint and grim expression had the pressure that naturally overpowered anyone who saw.

This man was the king of Sky Divine Country Qwailent—the usurper Gregor Cluzet Qwailent.

This king who had lived until now by stealing from other people since the time he had awareness of his surrounding would easily turn his back on other even if it was his trusted confidant. Silas knew that. This man's overwhelming violence, and his craftiness that fully made use of that violence, and then his atrocity that was deeply dyed by his pillaging nature, his aura that came from all those wasn't just papier mache.

Such atmosphere would usually make Silas shrank into himself, however this time Silas only gulped his saliva and opened his mouth.

□The mother ship Ostinato, fell. —It was shot down.□

□.....What did you say?□

A mother ship getting shot down had never happened since the founding of the country. Gregor's eyes slightly opened wide from hearing that report. His pressure was increasing further than before while he urged Silas□What happened?□ to continue.

□Last night, a sky battlecraft that belonged to Ostinato returned back alone. The pilot was a man named Higgs from Glowser squad. His sanity was mostly lost, so it was difficult to question him about the circumstance, but according to him, they were attacked by two monsters in the middle of a battle against Avenst, and then Ostinato got shot down.□

□Monster? Is it about Bovid's squad? Indeed, their skill is like a monster but——□

□No, that's.....he said that they were done in by a man who fired a bombardment in the level of a mother ship's main cannon by his lone self, and a black dragon that flew in the speed of sound while manipulating flame and wind at will.□

□.....Redo the questioning. No matter how you think, he must be crazy. Don't tell me, you aren't waking me up because you swallowed that kind of nonsense right?□

Gregor whose displeasure was increasing drastically had his finger gliding toward the gun placed on the desk. He must be thinking that if Silas was that kind of incompetent, than he didn't need him anymore.

Silas continued his report even while he was trickling cold sweats.

□Of course, I'm reporting this after confirming that it's not nonsense. After the questioning, we sent a call at Ostinato using wide area communication. But, there was no result. And then when we sent an investigation unit at the place where Ostinato fell.....□

□It was true?□

□Yes.□

The investigation unit here referred to a unit that mainly investigated the land. They were mostly unarmed, in exchange their airship was fast and thickly armored, the unit members were also wearing special protective clothes that could defend against the black rain's encroachment for a little while.

The component of black rain that had been raining down for many years on the land was also included by a lot into the moisture in the air, so even if someone didn't get touched directly, their body would get eroded just by breathing the air. To investigate the land, what was needed wasn't respiratory device that purified the air, but a fully sealed protective clothes with oxygen tank.

Therefore, even if they were called as investigation unit, but their activity on the land was limited timewise.....

□It was an investigation unit that was sent urgently, so they didn't look around for much detail but——□

Silas was at loss for words. His lips distorted as though he was hesitating and choosing his words carefully. Gregor urged him□Doesn't matter, just report it as it is□in irritation.

□It seems that the exterior of Ostinato, its 3-gun turrets as well as the ship's rear bottom are gouged out wholly. The sky battlecrafts onboard are mostly gone, most of the important spots were blown off as though they were exploded from inside. And then.....about the crews.....□

□Hmph. They are annihilated anyway right?□

□Yes. But, it seems that the cause wasn't just the black rain.□

Saying that, Silas took out a data storage of recording video inside the mother ship that was brought back by the investigation team. Silas's expression was pale for some reason. Gregor received the data storage while looking suspicious and inserted it into his personal console.

What was projected in the display was.....

□That guy-, that guy is coming-. Run away quickly-□

□Stop-, it's me! Don't shoot-□

□Nooooo-, no moreeee-. The voice won't go away-. Someone-, hel——□

□Aa, aAAAAAAAAAAAAA-□

□Die-, DIEEEEEEEE-□

It was a scene of chaos and madness that would make one covered their eyes. The recording was only showing the crews of Ostinato. However, everyone was fighting, bawling, or desperately running away as though they were being chased by something unseen.

And then, the people who lost their sanity early attacked the people nearby, and then the stray bullet from the attempt to counter attack that would attack other people.....after that it was just like a stone that rolled down a slope. It was a crucible of madness that created unseen terror and excessive paranoia against the comrade before them.

□What, is this.....□

□.....□

Silas couldn't answer at the mutter that unconsciously came out from Gregor's mouth.

Before long, when the madness reached its peak, everywhere inside the ship exploded unnaturally, and Ostinato ultimately crashed to the ground. The lightning strike inside the sea of clouds further destroyed the inside of the ship, but someone must be displaying their last obstinacy, because the ship recovered its floating power for a moment just before it crashed on the ground and it somehow avoided complete destruction. Even so the ship still exposed a figure that looked atrocious even just from looking.

□Silas, what happened with Ostinato?□

□I don't know. We cannot confirm the existence of intruder from the ship's recording. Just what is "it" the crews were

frightened at.....or perhaps, it might be the “monster” that Higgs was talking about.□

Inside the room became deathly silent. It was an eerie silent that would make one wanted to express it by saying it was like even the insect was holding breath.

□.....What about the battle record against Avenst? You will know what was “it” Ostinato was fighting from there right?□

□That’s, because of the explosions from unknown cause, all the record inside the ship except this one was destroyed and couldn’t be recovered.□

Perhaps, that too was the work of the “monster”.....even without putting it into words, the two of them thought of the same thing.

Silence ruled the place for a while. Gregor was looking across the window at the sky that was nearing dawn while he suddenly gulped down his alcohol. He drank directly straight from the bottle. Its alcohol content was high and quite some amount was remaining in it, but he drained it dry without feeling bothered by that.

And then, he threw the bottle to the floor that it broke into pieces. He wiped his mouth roughly and looked at Silas with a fiercely blazing gaze.

Silas’s body jumped while he fell into hallucination as though he was being glared by a wild beast. Gregor made a grin that displayed his brutal nature and gave his order.

□Summon the ship captains. Everyone of them except the defense fleet.□

□Wha-, that's..... Your majesty, you will finally take care of those guys?□

□Yeah. The struggle of those Avenst bunches was a suitable amusement. I don't know what they are starting to raise, but this time they overdid it. I'll have them disappears now.□

By no mean Avenst had succeeded in applying guerilla tactics against the divine country. In the first place there was overwhelming difference in resource and technology between the two sides. If Gregor felt like it, it was a trivial matter to annihilate them.

They were surviving solely because battle that happened unpredictably became Gregor's amusement. That was all.

But, as expected the prided mother ship of the divine country getting shot down was a situation that he couldn't turn a blind eye on. Because they introduced themselves as country of god that ruled the sky, they couldn't have themselves got even a single scratch from the like of pirate. This concerned the dignity of the nation.

Therefore, he would overwhelm them with all his forces excepting the fleet that was left behind for the country's defense. He would exterminate them from this world, not leaving a single dust behind.

Silas lowered his head wordlessly and turned on his heel in order to accomplish his task.

□Come to think of it, that princess too should be in a suitable age about this time.....kukuh, maybe it's also not bad to take in the royal blood. Or perhaps, I should even show how the last royalty fall in front of the survivors.□

A delighted laugh echoed.



Gregor Cluzet Kwailent—he was without a doubt a usurper.

## Part 2

The gigantic mother ship Avenst was moored in the valley of a cloud mountain..

The mother ship of divine country Ostinato that Hajime sank was also gigantic, but Avenst was two sizes larger than it.

Although, if it was asked whether its majesty surpassed Ostinato because it was superior in size, then the answer could be no other than “No”.

After all,

□.....The gun turret, has a lot of laundry aired there.□

□.....The deck, hath plantation spreading through the whole thing there.□

Hajime and Tio who were observing the gradually nearing Avenst using binoculars muttered so spontaneously.

Yes, the mother ship Avenst was horribly peaceful from the outside. The gun barrels and turrets on the exterior were linked with each other by wire and laundries were hanged in a row there. A panty of some madam was hanging on the tip of the main cannon. Honestly the two of them couldn't help but felt their strength drained from them seeing that.

In addition, there was a splendid plantation on the deck. There were a lot of people taking care of it diligently even now. And then, on top of such deck children were running

around energetically. There was even a daredevil that slid down something that looked like a slide that stretched to the outside from the deck until the bottom of the ship in one go.

□I, it's more or less treated as the "royal capital", so it's attaching importance to the livelihood or something.....in the first place, Helmut had collected the dragon core of the monarch dragon that became its driving force, so even though it has weapons but they won't work satisfactorily. And so, if that's the case then it's better to use it for valid practical use.....□

Roze made that kind of justification with her cheeks reddening slightly in shame.

Actually this mother ship Avenst was the battleship that the prince once created using the dragon core of his partner. Although, its dragon core was taken out by Helmut, so right now it was moving using only sky core, and the most it could do was only flying just barely.

Knowing that, Hajime threw a questioning gaze of what they would do if they were discovered by enemy, to which Roze puffed up her chest and pointed with her finger.

□It's fine. Its weapons are mostly not functioning, but the thickness of its armor is top class even among the existing airships in the present time. Even if it got hit by the main cannon of a mother ship, it is able to endure several shots with room to spare. What's more, airships protecting Avenst are always at its side.□

Looking closer, there was an airship moored beside the mother ship Avenst.

Airship Averia—it was the sister ship of Roze's battleship Rozeria. If it had to be said then Rozeria put importance on

speed and maneuverability, in contrast Averia was a battleship that put importance on firepower.

These two ships had protected the descendants of dragon kingdom Avenst until now, said Roze proudly.

Hajime was glancing at such girl while cocking his head in puzzlement inside his heart.

(Just two ships, what's more their mother ship is not even in destroyer level.....they are really pulling through continuously until now while burdened with protecting baggage? Is there just how much the difference in skill between the two sides? No, even so.....)

Hajime turned his gaze to Tio. Coincidentally Tio also turned her gaze to Hajime at that time, so their gaze met and their expression was at loss for words. Roze herself said that they had protected all these continuously until now, but perhaps, that was.....like that the two of them reached the same conclusion.

While they were doing that, the mother ship Avenst was gradually getting closer and closer.

Naturally the existence of the airship Rozeria was also noticed by the other side, so the people who were tending to the plantation, and also the children were gathering toward a spot on the deck bustlingly. That spot must be the spot where Rozeria would come alongside.

Roze waved her hands energetically. A loud cheer was raised just from that. It seemed that her popularity was becoming of a queen.

The Crow siblings and Bovid and others of sky battlecraft squad also came out to the deck and started the preparation

to transfer to Avenst.

When the airship came alongside the mother ship Avenst, the deck of Avenst was jammed with people. Although Hajime had fixed it to a certain degree, but Rozeria was really in a terrible state. It seemed that it was enough to make the expression of the people welcoming the queen to turn pale.

□Everyone, there is no need to worry. We were attacked by Qwailent, but it's as you see! I and also Kuwaibel are safe!□

□Piuh!!□

When Roze lifted up Kuwaibel high with both her hands, joyful cheers occurred once more. Roze hugged Kuwaibel back on her chest and lifted one hand to calm down the cheers, and this time she raised her voice with a meek expression.

□But, a lot of pilots offered their precious life in order to let us survive. Please direct your feeling toward the brave warriors who are unable to go back home. And then, please give them praise. We are protected by them.□

The sky battlecraft pilots were lining up on the deck. Sobbing voice resounded from here and there from the people who didn't see the figure of their important people that they should have seen off at the departure. Bovid and others put their fist on their chest and looked up to the sky. That was the salute in dragon kingdom. They offered a silent prayer at their comrades who had gone ahead of them.

The people on the deck naturally also offered a silent prayer.

Silent prayer was spreading in the sky where gentle breeze was blowing.

After the silent prayer continued for a while, an aging man stepped forward in front of the crowd.

□Roze-sama, welcome home.□

The white haired man with splendid moustache bowed his head deeply with his back kept stretching straight.

□Gramps. I'm back. Was there any problem?□

□None, there wasn't any such thing. This Sabastian Orto is entrusted with looking after this place during Roze-sama's absence. No problem would occur that easily as long as I'm here.□

This man who answered calmly yet with a definite confidence seemed to be Roze's trusted retainer. His appearance, his way of speaking, and his atmosphere were absolutely that of a butler despite the normal work clothes he was wearing. Hajime and Tio had a thinking in regard to this man.

That thought was,

□□Almost□□

Hajime and Tio spontaneously retorted. 'If only his name wasn't "Sa" but "Se", they would be able to proof the existence of the implicit rule shared through parallel universe that speaking of butler meant "Sebastian", and yet!' was what they thought.

When the alternate world duo who didn't read the place's atmosphere made a complicated expression, Roze mistaken that expression thinking that the two of them were getting bored, and so she started to get down the ramp in panic.

She did that while calling Hajime and Tio's name by attaching '-sama'.

Naturally, there was no way the people didn't get suspicious when they heard their queen calling others using '-sama', and as their representative Sabastian raised a question.

□Roze-sama, can I ask who are these two people?□

□They are guests. This gentleman is Nagumo Hajime-sama, and this lady is Tio Claus-sama. They will be staying in Avenst for a while. ....They are important, really really important people, so please take care of them absolutely politely.□

□.....Roze-sama's, important, person?□

Gramps's gaze seized Hajime. Knowing the meaning of that gaze, Hajime averted his gaze. 'This is because you said important "people"', Hajime retorted inside his heart.

□I'm sorry to be rude, but Roze-sama, more specifically what kind of acquaintance they are for you? By any chance, are they from Qwailent?□

□No, Gramps. They aren't related with Qwailent. That, about their background, saying it here is a bit..... Anyway, I request this to Gramps no matter what! Please give them our greatest hospitality! ....No matter what, we have to please Hajime-sama.□

The last sentence was said in small volume that couldn't be heard by the people at the surrounding, but Sabas who possessed the ears of an excellent butler caught it perfectly. Sabas who had taken care of Roze since she was born loved Roze like she was his own daughter.

And that master of his that should even be called as his beloved daughter was now desperately trying to please a man that he didn't know.....

'Okay. I don't really get it. In other words, he is enemy isn't he?' He concluded.

Of course, Roze whispered that in the meaning that she wished for Hajime to be pleased with Avenst. She understood that if Hajime felt like it, then it didn't matter what Tio wanted, and so Roze made that utterance because of that, but the eyes of gramps Sabas who didn't know one bit about that instantly turned into the eye of a killer. While smiling friendlily and gently.

□So that's how it is. Well then, I will immediately prepare the room and meal. Nagumo-sama, Claus-sama, if any of you need something, then please order anything from this Sabas without any reservation.□

As expected from the steward that directly served the royalty. He showed a truly elegant manners. While smiling friendlily, and gently. With the eyes of a killer.

Thinking that for now he should clear up the misunderstanding before this gramps gave them trouble, Hajime opened his mouth.

□Aa, Sabas-san? I'll say this because it seems you are having a misunderstanding, what queen-san there is saying doesn't mean like that okay? Or rather, I'm a married man. See, this woman here is my wife.□

Saying that, Hajime grasped Tio's arm and jerked her to the front. For some reason, Tio bowed her head gracefully while saying□Nice to meet you, thank you for always taking care of my husband□, she was making a greeting as though she



was meeting the superior of the company where her husband was working for some reason.

It seemed that it was something she wanted to try saying at least once after seeing an afternoon drama. Tio was giving glances at Hajime saying "How's that? How is that? Didst I look like a wife just now?".

Hajime smiled wryly thinking that this wasn't that kind of situation, even so he brushed Tio's hair unreservedly. Tio's cheeks were dyed red from a sweet pleasure that was different from when she got slapped.

Even seen from the side, it was obvious in a glance that the relationship of the two wasn't something shallow.

When Hajime tried to look at Sabas thinking that the misunderstanding must be solved with this.....indeed, it seemed that the misunderstanding that he was a scoundrel aiming at their important master was solved, but in exchange a new misunderstanding seemed to be created.

The eyes of Sabas whose body was trembling all over were moistening with sadness and,

"Roze-sama.....gramps feels really sad"

"Eh? Eeh? Wha, what's wrong gramps!? Why are you suddenly looking like wanting to cry!?"

Roze-chan got flustered. Gramps's hands gently grasped Roze's shoulders and he opened his mouth in admonishment.

"Roze-sama—you must not commit adultery."

"Gramps, is your head okay?"

Roze tilted her head wondering, 'has he finally starting going senile?'. Behind her the Crow siblings were making an amazed expression, while Bovid was desperately enduring his laughter.

□Indeed, gramps was looking after Roze-sama strictly. I am keeping a watchful eye at Roze-sama even in regard of the matter of love. Even though currently there is hardly anyone with lineage that is a good match for Roze-sama, there is no way I can just leave Roze-sama to any man. Therefore, the love letter for Roze-sama from those people who doesn't know their standing, I tore up and discarded all of them after I inspected them but.....□

□Eh!? Please wait a second. That's the first time I heard that though? There is someone who gives me love letter? In this Avenst? Or rather, what do you mean by inspecting them and then tearing them up!?□

Roze's popularity in Avenst was high. And then, she was living with the people in the same ship, and she was always talking with them normally, on top of that she was treating everyone amiably. She was boasting a tremendous popularity among the young men.

Of course, Roze was idolized as a queen, and those men didn't believe that they would be able to build a really good relationship with Roze, the most that they did was only writing up their heart's feeling and sent them to her. And it was done by a considerable number of people.

However, Roze had never received something like a love letter even once. She had also never getting confessed at. She was at that age, so it wasn't like she didn't have interest for that, but she thought that no one was thinking of her like that because her social position was in the way.

But, she never thought, that it was like that because.....

Roze-chan morosely pressed her question to the gramps, but it didn't reach the ear of the brooding gramps.

□Roze-sama, please give up your idea! To aim at a man who is married.....even before thinking about the moral as a royalty, it's already mistaken as a human! Please, think again and stop from something like a looting love!□

□Really, what are you saying gramps!? I'm going to stuff you into Rozeria's main cannon and blast you off you know!□

The people of Avenst stirred.□Her majesty is, looting love..... holy cow□,or□She abducted a man she is pleased with, altogether with his wife.....as expected from our queen□, or □My, love letter.....□, or□Or rather, just who is that man who shot through Roze-sama's heart?□, or□That breast. That beautiful black haired woman is his wife.....how envious, I'm jealous□, or□You, you like that kind of woman more than me? Then, look forward to an encounter at the next world okay□, or□Wai-, that's a joke. I only have feeling for you-. Ah, wait, don't push! I'll fall, I'm going to fall-, sto-, aa~~~~-□, those voices could be heard.

Roze desperately raised her voice in denial. However, putting aside the male camp, the female camp's misunderstanding was also unexpectedly not really clearing up. It seemed that the female camp of Avenst knew quiet well that their queen who was at that age was a hidden pervert.

Roze who got lukewarm gazes directed at her no matter what she said yelled□This is misunderstanding~~~~~!!□ resoundingly through the blue skies.

Two whole days passed since Hajime and Tio arrived in mother ship Avenst.

During that time, Hajime and Tio received the greatest hospitality possible from Roze and others.

At the first day, Roze gathered the top brasses and shared the information regarding the circumstance and background of Hajime and Tio, so the top brasses with Sabas whose misunderstanding was solved at the forefront were giving their hospitality by their own initiative, to the degree that was desperate. Hajime and Tio tasted a treatment a bit like VIP.

They had their fill of various cooking that was using the mysterious ingredients of this world. The foods fundamentally were grain, fruit, and vegetable, but those products had extremely good flavor from the grace of the sky core's effect, coupled with the skill of the cook, it was enough to satisfy both of them.

They were also guided to a floating island that possessed a large lake. The water that was flowing out from the floating island dispersed midair and turned into white mist which was covering the whole island, that sight truly should even be called as a secret region that was covered by a mystical veil, to the degree that just by being able to look at that made the two thought that it was worth it to come to this world.

Also, the sky cores that were dotting the lake's surrounding seemed to possess the property to take in the humidity in the air and turned it into spring water. The fact that its nature was subtly changed due to that area and the

environment caused Hajime's blood as a transmutation master to boil up.

Hajime also exchanged a piece of god crystal with the craftsmen of Avenst who were handling the sky core and they had discussion. They got along greatly with each other. The expression of Hajime who comprehended the various natures of the sky core looked pleased with himself.

There was also the matter of the misunderstanding about Roze's illicit love with the married couple spreading, but the people of Avenst also came into contact with Hajime and Tio with immense curiosity. Someone would surely call out to them kindly when they walked inside the ship.

And the best thing in the two's opinion was that they were able to see this coexisting livelihood of dragon and human.

Human and dragon flew around to patrol and repair the ship's exterior, to harvest on the floating island and deliver luggage, and sometimes just to dry the laundry. The human and dragon that became partner numbered very few if seen from the whole, even so the good old way of living of this world could be found there. It was something that Tio admired very much.

In general, the country aboard the ship called Avenst really matched Hajime and Tio's preference whether in the people's trait, their senses of value, and also their way of coexistence. It was a comfortable country. At the very least, it was far better than the trait of the country that tried to kill them without question and spewed out outrageous remark to Tio the very first time they met.

And then, when Tio and Hajime welcomed the morning of the third days they were enjoying enough this country called Avenst and this world.

The two were waiting for the appearance of the sun for who knew how many times at the front deck of the mother ship Avenst.

There, a voice that was filled with faint nervousness and resolve called out at them.

□.....Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. What do you two think about our country?□

When the two looked back across their shoulder, over there was Roze who was holding Kuwaibel in her arms like usual. No, it wasn't just her, the Crow siblings and Bovid, Sabastian, and then the top brasses of Avenst starting with the captain of airship Azeria were arrayed there. Everyone was making a complicated expression like a traveler that was made to stand in the fork road.

□I think it's a good country. I can even think of it as normally comfortable even without the hospitality.□

□Is, that so. I'm, glad to hear that.□

Roze's expression who heard that showed a wry smile. She must have guessed it. That the thinking if they could moved the emotion of the two, then perhaps Hajime would change his mind and gave them their help, such thinking didn't work.

□As expected, something like a status of being our hero, it's not enough as compensation isn't it?□

□You already knew that right from the start right? A man who will change his mind easily after receiving that much hospitality, do you think that kind of man can be expected to become anything like a hero that saved a country?

Something like that just isn't in my nature, and it don't even suit me.□

□Fufu. Indeed, when I think back about your deed when cornering the mother ship of Avenst, the title of hero really don't suit you Hajime-sama at all.□

□Now you have said it queen-sama. ....Conversely, it feels like it's you who become a bit unbound from something instead.□

While the expression of the top brasses looked frustrated and pained, it was only Roze whose eyes were containing resignation along with a vague resolve.

Roze took a deep breath at Hajime's pointing out so.

□Perhaps. During these two days, I have been looking at the two of you all the time. Even when you two were having fun, I saw that your heart is unwavering. Why? Even though all these nice people might die, how can you still abandon them? What a terrible person. I also had that kind of thinking.□

□Hmph? You think differently now?□

□I will lie if I say that I'm thinking completely differently. Because no matter what, I am an absolute ally of Avenst. But, somehow, the two of you, aren't inhuman people who doesn't show interest to us.....let's see, if I have to say, I come to think of the two of you like a "large tree".□

Hajime tilted his head not understanding what Roze meant. In respond to that, Roze talked while choosing her words. The top brasses who were making complicated expression were also lending their ears to Roze's speech.

□An unshakeable existence, that is just existing there. Sometimes it protected us from cold rain, or softening the illuminating sunlight. But, it would never hold out its branches because it is asked, that kind of existence.□

□.....That's a strangely fitting phrase.□

Roze chuckled while saying□I'm honored with your praise□ seeing she was able to make Hajime blink.

The eastern sky was starting to grow light bit by bit. The dawn was near. Roze turned her gaze at the eastern sky that was starting to brighten while adding on her words. The top brasses were also lending her their ears silently.

□At that time, when the sun came out, the two of you said to me that “this world is beautiful”. I had forgotten that all this time, but certainly, even when it has ended up in this state, this world is beautiful. Even though it's this beautiful, even though it has been broken like this, but mankind is still not repenting. ....I thought, just for a little. Taking back our country, defeating Helmut, and then taking back the world before this—is there any meaning in those?□

The top brasses were suddenly starting to get noisy. That was only natural. After all, their king was blurting out something that sounded like she was denying mankind's continuation.

□A destructive thinking huh? But I think that you were persuading us really desperately considering all that though?□

□Of course. Because it was something that I only thought for a bit, I'm not throwing away our dearest wish or anything.□



Relieved sighs were leaked out. The top brasses were stroking down their chest.

Amidst them, Roze talked to Hajime who was tilting his head wondering just what was it she wanted to say.

□Surely, there is no meaning in it.□

□In your dearest wish?□

□No. In being saved.□

Kuwaibel cried out sounding vaguely troubled. It was Kuwaibel who sought help the first time at Hajime and Tio. However, he didn't seek help to break the deadlock in the dangerous situation of that time. He was seeking for the salvation of the dragon kingdom itself from Tio's overwhelming presence that his senses as a monarch dragon detected.

Guessing what Roze wished to say, the expression of the top brasses looked taken aback and turned into a vaguely troubled look.

□We surely have to save ourselves by our own effort. If not, in the world after it is saved, we will surely walk on the path that destroy the world once more.....that's what I think.□

□I think it will be fine if it's the people of dragon kingdom though?□

□No. As long as we don't even massacre all the people at the fight against Qwailent, the one living in this world won't just be the people of dragon kingdom. Even if we tell them let's live in repentance after having everything ended by a supernatural existence, just what kind of persuasiveness that can be found from that kind of words?□

After having their country destroyed by an incomprehensible existence that suddenly appeared, there was no way the people would then lend their ears toward the preaching of the people of a dead country who didn't even really fight.

The overwhelming power that Hajime and Tio displayed was a lethal poison in a sense. If such power could be wielded, then the wielder would undoubtedly be able to force their will to happen. Seen from the view point of people who were lamenting powerlessly, the people who were reaching out their hand toward their dearest wish, it wasn't an exaggeration even if such power was called as a magic with unequalled charm.

Therefore, Roze who was charmed and became captive of that power where she then asked for help, after she saw the figure of Hajime and Tio living a really normal daily life, showing admiration and wonder at everything in the trifling ordinary day, it seemed that her boiling mind recovered its calmness.

□Originally, we should also say “Don't get involved, this is our problem” about Helmut's subjugation too, but.....□

□You are awfully different from two days ago huh. Well, those are admirable words but.....my wife said, ‘I want to beat up Helmut-kun viciously until you cannot even recognize how he looks like!’, so just give up on that.□

□N, no, Goshujin-sama? I, didst not really speak that far.....□

Actually, Hajime-san also thought that he wanted to go and took a look at an “evil” dragon. This wasn't just a mere dragon they were talking about. It was an “evil” dragon. ‘Isn't that tickling the soul!’ Though currently it was a

serious scene, so he read the mood and kept such thinking only in his heart.

□I see. Then, we will fight in the world that stop raining. We will pray for your success in Helmut's subjugation. And then, if possible, it will make us happy if you will remember us, the dragon country Avenst, oh horrible dragon knight-sama from another world.□

□I told you already right, I'll pray, so that the dearest wish of you all queen-san and others can come true. Or rather, what's with that horrible dragon knight-sama huh. As I thought, you are holding a bit of grudge aren't you?□

□Who knows, what are you talking about?□

Roze said that while chuckling.

It seemed that she really wasn't planning to request the two of them to become their proxy in war anymore.

There were two kinds of victory. A meaningful victory, and a meaningless victory. Surely the path Roze and others was walking on was filled with hardships, but if they were looking for the former, then they had to fight by their own. Her smile was a bright one must be because she had clearly realized that and resolved herself.

The top brasses were making a troubled expression at their queen's decision, but when Roze looked back and asked□Is there any objection?□with her gaze, they bowed their head unanimously. And then, when they lifted their head back, the same resolve and determination like Roze were dwelling in those eyes.

□Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. I'm glad I can meet the two of you. Please, stay healthy.□

□Ou, you guys too. I won't forget about the people of the sky who are living together with the dragons.□

□Roze-dono. I'm praying for a limitless happiness for thee, and for thy important people.□

The morning sun showed its face. Warm light filled the world from beyond the sea of clouds.

Hajime and Tio shook hand with Roze, and like that, they were about to part——

□-, Cross Bit!!□

Suddenly Hajime yelled. Right after that, the huge flash that was launched from the sun assaulted the flank of mother ship Avenst.

Hajime defended against that attack using barrier that was formed by the Cross Bits he secretly deployed two days ago when they arrived at this ship.

Thunderous sound and impact shook the world. Roze screamed and she was about to tumble down, but Tio helped her to stand still.

Because the barrier didn't cover the whole ship, the extremely violent flash was making mother ship Avenst to tilt with its after wave. The top brasses on the deck were falling to their knees altogether.

Was it ten second, or one minute?

The flash fired from the sun was vanishing as though it was melting into the empty air.

□Hiding in the sunrise, they are acting witty.□

When Tio and Roze turned their gaze toward the sunlight at Hajime's mutter——

There were countless black dots there.

It wasn't just one or two. A great number of black dots could be seen inside the sunlight that was illuminating the world with blazing light.

No, those were, what appeared with the sun on their back using that light to hide their figure were——

□Qwailent's fleet.....no way, why are they here!?!□

Roze's words that sounded like a scream resounded.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just, one more chapter.....you know?

Next time the update plan is at 6 P.M Saturday too. That's the plan.

# Arifureta After II    Black God Dragon Manifestation

AN: I don't get it.

Whether it's about the harmony that the people of Narou sometimes showed, or about the trust toward Shirakome that is non-existent.

Even though I said that there is only one more chapter left, but no one trust me!

Right, fine then. Then Shirakome also has my own thinking.

Yes, I'll answer to that trust. I'll continue for two or three more chapters okay!

It's not ending at all! Even though I had written twelve thousand characters, but even the fight didn't start yet!

I'm sorry for lying!

.....It will really help if you all can laugh it off 'just like usual, what a hopeless Shirakome huuuh', like that.

Tio arc, please accompany it for a little bit more.

---

A fleet that was formed from easily more than a hundred ships appeared from inside the dawn. The number of the airships was countless, and there were 30 ships at the same level with the mother ship Ostinato that was sunk before this, and then there were ten mother ships of Avenst's level that surpassed Ostinato's level, the number of the sky battlecrafts was very much like the stars in the sky, and then there was one super gigantic battleship that seemed to be the flagship, advancing forward leisurely.

Their majestic appearance showed with certainty that it wasn't an overestimation to call them as the country that ruled the sky.

□.....Why, how, are they here?□

They thought that their location wasn't known. Because if that was the case, then they would have been annihilated already since a long time ago. The fact that they were fighting even if it was with guerilla method was the proof that the nation on ship Avenst wasn't discovered, that was what they thought.

That was why, Roze could only stand dumbfounded in front of the embodiment of death that suddenly showed their figure. She could only let out meaningless question of □Why□ □How□.

Crow siblings and the other top brasses were also in similar state. The combatant Bovid and then Sabas were showing a resolved face that said □Aah, so they finally come□. These two might be the only one who vaguely noticed this possibility. But, even though they noticed there was still nothing that they could do.

Silver color flashed.

□Chih. Oi, queen-san! How long you are going to stay dazed like that-. If you don't have any motivation, then I won't defend the next one anymore!□

□-□

Right after Hajime's yell shook the air, the second wave of attack from the fleet assaulted mother ship Avenst. It was an attack like previously, a silver bombardment that thrust toward the flank. Twelve came in one wave.

In respond, several variable chakrams "Orestes" were floating around before anyone knew it.

The Orestes instantly cut into the line of fire and they unfolded with \*kashun\* sound. They opened a gate that crossed space in their inner area.

Each of the silver bombardment that was approaching while making the air screamed got seized into the internal of Orestes, and instantly they were returned back toward the fleet by another Orestes that were floating above Avenst.

The fleet got the main cannon attack they launched themselves returned back as it was toward them, however, they didn't show unsightly appearance like getting sank from direct hit of that. Several airship class ships that were deployed at the front shined silver, at the same time a barrier was deployed at their front line.

The barrier that was also shining silver completely blocked the returned main cannon bombardment. And it didn't stop there, the bombardment's might was shaved off as though it was getting sucked and then the attack was erased in just a few seconds.



□Hee. As expected, they are also making countermeasure against their own weapon.□

□Something of this scale, it seems that the country itself art moving out. It's unknown whether this art only a part or their whole force though..... Goshujin-sama, it seemed that there was survivor wasn't it?□

Tio guessed that there was survivor from the mother ship Ostinato who reported back to their country and she hummed in admiration. To think that there was a survivor from that attack of Hajime that should even be called as a savage deed, and that survivor even managed to struggle until he reached back home.....surely that survivor was a possessor of a powerful fortune, she thought.

In reality, that possessor of powerful fortune was returning home in half crazy state, and after that, as the result of receiving an inquiry that was like a pseudo torture, his personality then became calm as though his nature was reversed or perhaps he had even reached enlightenment, and now he had become a character that was like a saint who loved dragon and nature and the sun above all else.....

□Whoops, so it's physical attack this time. For now it looks like they are evading us.□

Several hundred missiles flew out from the fleet. All of them looked as though they were avoiding the vicinity of the front deck at the warship's bow where Hajime and others were at. They were flying toward the rear half of mother ship Avenst and the two airships at the side.

It seemed that they had noticed the existence of Hajime and Tio. On top of that, they weren't aiming at direct hit course toward the two of them surely because they were thinking to capture the two of them if possible.

□Well, it's easier to deal with when they art bunched up.  
Goshujin-sama, please take care of the straggler.□

□Okay.□

Tio thrust both her hands forward. The stance looked like she was going to hold something from left and right. And then focused jet black magic power came into being instantly. It was sparking and compressed—and it was fired.

\*GOU\*, a bombardment in a scale that didn't lose to the enemy ship's main cannon before this surged.

Tio was launching the prided breath attack of dragon race. It easily erased a part of the approaching missile swarm. In addition, when Tio swung her arm, like a giant laser blade that was made from jet black light, the missile swarm was mowed down horizontally.

Several dozen missiles that got away were shot down by Hajime's sniping.

At the same time,

□Now then, to conform to manners, we have to return the favor properly.□

What Hajime took out while saying that was of course the sky \*chu.....the sunlight convergence laser "Burst Hyperion".

□First Compression Reactor—"Release"□

The sunlight energy that was already focused was launched directionally. The fiercely extreme light burned the retina as though it was further overwriting the sky's morning glow.

Naturally, the barrier fleet formed the silver barrier. The light of Burst Hyperion mercilessly pierced through that barrier. The impact sound that made the air screamed resounded, a part of the barrier fleet was pushed back by the might.

□Second Compression Reactor——“Release”□

The laser bombardment mercilessly increased its might. Different from the silver bombardment, the barrier was making unpleasant sound “bikiri-, paki paki-\* without even being able to absorb the attack. The battle line was disarrayed and the silver light that was enveloping the barrier ship that was nearby the place where the laser impacted was flickering weakly.

□Third Compression Reactor——“Release”□

Of course, Hajime-san further pushed hard. The maximized sunlight laser was finally going to pierce through the fleet’s barrier.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected from the fleet of a country. It didn’t look like it would go that easily.

The warship with the biggest size shined brilliantly. That ship which seemed to be the flagship was enveloped by similar silver light like the barrier ship and then it radiated the light toward the barrier ship.

□Hmph? It looks like monarch dragon granting power to other dragon huh.□

Hajime whispered while releasing the fourth compressed reactor. Just like how monarch dragon granted power to other dragons, it seemed the flagship was also able to grant power to other airship.

□.....That's, the ability of the exclusive ship of Qwailent's king——Durgrant. As long as that flagship exist, there won't be any way to defend against the fleet's bombardment and there won't be any hope to slip through the barrier.□

The one who answered Hajime's whisper was Roze's spiritless words. Shadow of despair peeked through her eyes. She must know it really well. The reason they couldn't win even if they fought from the front. Until now they must have been brought to grief many times by this enemy.

As though to make doubly sure, there were also another fleets separated from the fleet in front, floating from three directions with the mother ship Avenst at the center. It seemed they were advancing while hiding on the outer layer of the sea of clouds and finished the encirclement.

□I see. That's certainly a tough barrier. ....Though it seems it's taking considerable compensation for it.□

A scream suddenly resounded. It was the yell of death agony that came from a beast. A clear ill will could be felt from their action that was purposefully broadcasting that voice using speaker to the outside.

□.....The fleet is all linked up with equipment that magnified the dragon core energy. Naturally that means that their driving force is using dragon core. They are using the land of Avenst for breeding dragons, so they are literally consuming dragon core as disposable item.□

To shed more detail, dragon core would become bigger along with the dragon's growth. Dragon that was grown up through the years would possess fine quality dragon core inside their body. Because of that, with the objective of harvesting usable dragon core immediately after the birth, they were also using drugs to quicken the dragons' growth.

The scream of the dragons who were continuously killed having their source of life exploited one after another even right now in this moment caused Roze and others to make a pained expression as though it was themselves who were being cut apart.

Hajime saw them looking like that and he let out a sigh and he stopped the firing of Burst Hyperion.

Actually he was thinking to take out all his Burst Hyperion and launched his maximum bombardment that was concentrated in one spot + sublimation magic but.....he saw Tio beside him who were obviously boiling with emotion of rage and grief despite her expressionless face, so he refrained from doing that.

The attack of Burst Hyperion ended and the unharmed fleet was resuming its march leisurely. It seemed that the fleet was vaguely enveloped with the atmosphere that was convinced they had endured through Hajime's attack.

But, at that time, a man's voice resounded in the airspace that was rampant with despair and scream. It was a voice that was heavily coated with ridicule, ill will, and atrocity.

□So the bombardment just now is your doing, the black hair there.□

There wasn't any self-introduction. There wasn't even any preface. If he asked, then the one asked would surely answer. They could do nothing else but answering, they wouldn't even be allowed to stay silent. It was a question that couldn't even hide such haughtiness.

And so, for the time being Hajime shot Acht Acht.

A life-sized gun barrel. Zero time sniping without even focusing to aim.

Surely it looked like a peashooter after seeing the extremely big bombardment of Burst Hyperion.

But, that was a mistake. After all that sniper cannon was specialized in penetration. The speed that was beyond the pale of the knowledge of electromagnetic acceleration was equal with destructive force. Under the condition of one point penetration, it was far above Burst Hyperion that was a weapon of extermination.

□Well, the main unit is also considerably tough huh. It would be quick if the boss is blown away by just now.□

□That place looks like the bridge, but it didn't mean that place was really one. Look, somehow his anger was transmitted to here. I didn't know who was this person, but it looks like he is still alive.□

A dangerous atmosphere was conveyed through the speaker of flagship Durgrant. That was only natural. Because his question was replied by a shelling, what's more that shelling easily pierced through the barrier and then blew up a part of the place that seemed to be the bridge of the flagship Durgrant.

Seen from the whole, it was really just a damage to a minor part but.....

It was really easy to see how shaken the fleet was. And it was even easier to understand the anger of the man who asked the question just now.

And then, that feeling of shaken also came from Roze and others behind. Lines like □Lies, Durgrant that had never even

been scratched until now is.....□, or□The legend, is easily broken like this.....□, or□That mercilessness that is just like usual.....I'm going numb here y'know, Hajime-san□could be heard from them.

The radiance that was enveloping Durgrant increased. At the same time the screams of the dragons were also reverberating once more.

□You black hair, can you hear this? I'm not taking out fuel from them or anything you know? I'm only simply torturing them. They are crying with a nice voice right? This crying voice of these animals you bastards are treasuring. —If you want me to let you all die painlessly, then don't you dare making light of me aga——□

□What the hell you are talking about since some time ago? Speaking sluggishly like this after I've been waiting patiently like this. What a slow guy. Stop wasting time and speak your business. I'll listen so talk quickly.□

Against the haughtiness, even more haughtiness attacked back. Hajime answered using telepathy while still acting arrogantly with his arms folded. That attitude looked like he felt all of these were troublesome, it was unthinkable that he was doing bombardment contest like a space battle that would come out in an SF just now. He didn't even ask the identity of the one talking to him.

Hajime had no interest about the identity of the one talking to him from the bottom of his heart. This was an opponent of little importance.

That implicit thinking was conveyed vividly to all the people in that airspace.

□.....You doesn't even know who I am? Looks like the collaborator of Avenst is a dumb guy huh.□

□There is no way I'll know that when you don't even introduce yourselves. Well, from your way of talking there is not even a fragment of refinement in it, are you an upstart punk or something? It's better to not trying too hard to make yourself look threatening y'know. You might feel like a big shot after bringing a lot of your friends along like this but.....the smell of a barking dog is intense even from here.□

Bursting out sound from Roze and others who knew about the true identity of the voice's owner could be heard from behind.□Bufuh□It seemed that they reflexively leaked out a laugh.

Or rather, there was now Hajime didn't understand just who was it riding the flagship in this situation. In other words, everything except when he said he didn't know the speaker's identity was merely his true feelings.

□What a cheap provocation. You said that, but you are desperately thinking about a plan to breakthrough this even now aren't you? That's a laugh. In deference of your comical figure I'll introduce myself. —Gregor Cluzet Kwailent. The king of sky divine country Qwailent. Now you understand? The one in front of you is the god king of this world.□

In a sense that claim wasn't a mistake. He possessed the greatest military force and also monopolized most of the limited resource in this world. Whether to give or steal, to let live or kill, it all depended on him. There wasn't anyone who could object even if he introduced himself as a god.



But, Hajime who heard that claim was,

□I see. Well, say, that. Do your best okay, God-sama. I think you must have it hard in various things though.□

For some reason, Hajime gave him words of encouragement with a very gentle expression.

What crossed at the back of Hajime's mind was a god of a certain another world. The existence who when he was insisting□Because I'm a god. I don't have friend, my country was also ruined, and I'm an attention seeker who liked to create doll, but I'm seriously a god! That's why, everyone, listen to what I'm saying okay!□instead got a wind hole opened on his body and went \*pop\*.

Thinking back, that guy was someone really pitiful. Good grief, just who it was, who was the guy that beat up that kind of unfortunate and pitifully hopeless god to death leaving not even a dust behind. What a terrible guy.

□Goshujin-sama. Art you waiting for a retort for that? I wouldst say this, just in case, it was Goshujin-sama who obliterated that self-proclaimed god in rage. Also, I wouldst say this because it seems thou hath forgotten but, it was also Goshujin-sama who shaved the retainer god to death. That deed of chopping off his four limbs to instigate his pain and fear, and then shaving him to death slowly from the edge of his body, it was something that was really hard to forget.□

It seemed from the middle the event of Ehito going \*pop\* was leaked through the telepathy. An exasperated straight-man retort came in from Tio.

Roze and others were taking a step back with a creeped out expression. It was really not a method of killing that human

could do! They were taking distance with their shudders laid bare. The top brasses could be heard whispering things like "I vaguely thought it but.....as expected he is a demon", or "A brute, there is a brute hereee", or "What lack of mercy.....I admire that yeah"and so on.

Naturally, it was a telepathy that was broadcasted externally, so the words of *self-proclaimed* god and the words of unfortunate and pitifully hopeless god were also overheard by all the people in the area. And the king of the divine country who was talked to be at the same rank with that kind of god and in the end even got a gentle expression directed to him was,

"Roze. Choose. Will you all fall into ruin altogether, or will you come under me along with the monarch dragon and abandon your country?"

He changed his target. It wasn't like he was feeling awkward or anything. His emotionless voice was displaying really clearly the rage that was boiling like magma inside him.

Those were the words of the sworn enemy who usurped the throne and took over the country, however Roze was unable to answer immediately. Gregor's objective was clear. He was aiming for the power of monarch dragon from Kuwaible, the blood of royalty from Roze, and the enjoyment of seeing Avenst struggle after it lost these two.

In such case, then the people of Avenst would surely going through annihilation exactly as though they were shaved to death. And then, Kuwaibel would be forced to go through experiment and mating to mass produce monarch dragon, while Roze would also become a plaything.

But, if they didn't obey, then Avenst would perish immediately. The only difference between the two choices

was whether it would be a slow or fast death.

Originally even if they were going to challenge Qwailent in the cleared up world, but they wanted to leave behind those who couldn't fight in a safe place. But it seemed even that choice was already gone.

After closing her eyes for a bit, Roze made her decision.

□Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. Please head toward Helmut's subjugation without reserve. Surely it will be easy for you two to breakthrough the encirclement with your strength.□

Hajime turned only his gaze toward her across his shoulder.

□You are going to have a decisive battle here?□

□No. Only I and Kuwaibel will go under Gregor.□

Screams were suddenly raised. The Crow siblings, Sabas, Bovid and the others combatant, and all the other top brasses unanimously called at her to stop. They didn't wish to have a long life so much that they would sacrifice the queen and the monarch dragon. They insisted that such way of living that knew no shame wouldn't save anyone!

□I'm not giving up. Even if it's only a faint hope, even if it's a thorny path, as long as we are still alive then there is still hope. Furthermore, if Hajime-sama and Tio-sama are going to kindly subjugate Helmut for us, there might be a chance for us to make a comeback by making use of the resulting chaos. Right now, right now we have to live!□

Roze dignifiedly ordered to the top brasses, and also toward the people of Avenst who were starting to show up on the deck because they were awoken by the first cannon attack. Seeing the piercing light in those eyes even in this edge of

despair made them comprehended, that indeed, there was definitely no color of resignation there. What was there was merely an earnestly firm resolve and nothing else.

This time everyone but Roze was at loss for words. They instinctively knew that the decision of the queen couldn't be overturned just by their words. Her command to them to live for now pierced their chest.

The lips of Hajime who was watching at them like that across his shoulder, it warped slightly. That was the form of a small smile.

When he looked beside him, Tio was making a really gentle expression that was filled with affection. That figure who wouldn't give up until the last moment even when she understood that it was a hellish path——was really beautiful.

Hajime shrugged his shoulders. And then, he asked about something that he had already understood since the time the fleet appeared from inside the dawn.

□Oi, Grugor. To say the truth, I'm actually unrelated with this woman and Avenst. Do you feel like overlooking us two?□

□.....□

It seemed that he didn't have any intention to answer. He must have washed his hands already from Hajime. He didn't care what would happen to Hajime after this even if Hajime ended up all but dead, as long as he was still alive in the end and he could be experimented on through something like torture to search for the secret of his strength. His intention against Tio should also be the same.

.....Surely, he wasn't sulking or anything because his name was mistaken so naturally just now, yes, there was no way it

was so.

Hajime who took the silence to meant no felt Tio making an expression that looked itchy as though she was holding down the emotion welling up inside her while he took a deep breath——

□Cough-. Aa~, informing the criminals who are abducting and confining the innocent dragon hostage~. Release all of them right no~~~~w! Your mother in the countryside is crying you knowww!□

At once Hajime felt gazes piercing him from behind that were asking□This guy, just what is he saying?□. At the same time, that kind of atmosphere was also transmitted toward him from the fleet somehow.

But, Hajime-san didn't pay any attention to everyone's bewilderment and began to dash leaving everyone behind. Because, that was Hajime Quality after all!

□All of you, don't have the right to request a lawyer! You also don't have any ground to plead for any extenuating circumstance! But, I'll allow your right to keep silent! If you let go of the dragon hostage, and then stay sil~lent and return home, I'll be merciful and won't shoot from behind! Now, this is a chance of a lifetime for you to avoid death penalty you know! Who cares about Beroder! Kidnapper gentlemen! Just scurry back home with all your strength without fea~~r!□

What he was saying was already absurd. Also, even the name of the king-sama that he said was absurdly mangled.

□Are you listening, this is a warning! If you don't release the dragons right now, I'm telling you it will be re~~ally terrible for you all okay! Just ignore what Hageter is telling you to

do! I'm not lying y'know? It will be a cold day in hell before I'm lyi——□

A bombardment from the flagship Durgrant! Surely it was the payback for the name calling that was totally wrong already except the letter□r□.

Roze called in panic at Hajime who blocked that with his barrier.

□Hajime-sama!? Just what in the world are you planning!? Why are you provoking them like that-□

□Either way, it was already too late by the time we hadn't departed from here when that fleet arrived. Surely they won't overlook us anymore now. Of course, it's possible for us to escape right away but.....□

It was impossible for Hajime to show his back toward people who were attacking him hostilely. Of course it didn't change even now that should be Roze and others should be the one fighting. That was why, at present Hajime had no intention to make a move directly.

Then, why.....Roze who was asking that was replied by Hajime with a grin.

□In this world, there are fellows who should also fight other than queen-san and co right? The fellows who ought to burn their soul betting their survival and dignity on the line.□

□Eh?□

Hajime averted his gaze from the bewildered Roze and gazed at Tio.

□Tio. Won't you show to your junior this rug rat dragon, the real king of dragon?□

□Kufufuh. Actually the screams of the dragons hath been clinging into mine ear and it wouldst not go away since some time ago. Even if Goshujin-sama decide to leave this place, I'm planning to do it. But, I believe with mine all that Goshujin-sama wouldst surely meet mine expectation in this kind of time.□

Tio's lips warped happily yet ferociously. Her pupils split vertically and they had already turned into dragon eyes. It seemed the meaningless torture to the dragons made her stomach boiled up much.

Hajime showed a similarly ferocious smile and then he sent telepathy to Gregor with a tone that sounded a bit serious.

□Mensor. You know that we possess unknown power, you know that we already sink a mother ship of your country without it being able to do anything, and yet even knowing all that, you don't feel like stopping huh?□

□.....Indeed, the power of you bastard is of unknown quantity. But, exactly because of that there is worth in stealing it. I'm someone who steal. There is a first rate treasure before my eyes while I'm able to wield my maximum strength, no way I'm gonna stop don't you think? As long as there is even a percent chance of victory, I'll always go to steal what I want. This time is the same.□

□I see. So you also have something unshakeable inside you in your own way. ....But, hey self-proclaimed god, you are mistaking one thing yeah.□

□What?□

The bombardment from the flagship Durgrant ceased. Right after that, Hajime and Tio leaped up from the deck.

Hajime and Tio who jumped to the sky nestled close to each other midair and hovered still.

And then, both of them stared at each other from really close range it looked like they would kiss anytime, and like that.....

\*bachikon-\*

□Ahahn□

Hajime's spanking burst on Tio's butt. Seeing how there was a crimson ripple spreading from that, it seemed that the spanking was accompanied with "Magic Shockwave". Even though there was almost no damage from that, but the masterful slap that sent numbing pleasure(pain) running through the whole body until the deepest core caused hopeless dragon-san to reflexively got on all fours. Even though she was midair but it was done skillfully.

□Come on, do your best, hopeless dragon. Even though you are the princess of the dragon race, but you pervert is gasping in front of this large army.□

□I, I'm gasping, because of Goshujin-sama's fault.....□

\*bachikon-\*

□Ahih. Just now, it reached amazing place-□

□Even though you are the pervert, what are you doing blaming other huh?□



After saying that it was one more spanking. Tio's large butt undulated from the impact. It was accompanied with a bewitching voice that resounded once more, through the whole airspace.

Of course, everyone of Avenst, and everyone of the divine country's large fleet, and also that Gregor-san, everyone of them without exception was shocked—just what the hell these people are starting so suddenlyyy!?!—so much their eyes almost popped out from their socket.

Hajime was building a world of only the two of them that was different from the one with Yue while he mercilessly kept spanking Tio's butt. And then he took out a test tube vial from his pocket and took off the cap using his mouth. Next, he plunged it into Tio's mouth that was opened gaspingly.

—Nnguu!?!—

Tio who suddenly got something plunged into her mouth, and furthermore liquid was flowing in from that, coupled with the butt spanking it caused her expression to change into a terribly joyous one! What a pervert! As expected from the hopeless dragon!

Gregor who finally returned to reality around that point gave out his order. He didn't understand what was going on, but for the time being he was going to shower them with bombardment. The main cannon of several mother ships were aimed toward Hajime and Tio.

—Nnmuu!? It came-! It came, Goshujin-samaaaa-! As expected, the conversion rate from personal reward of Goshujin-sama art in different level! Just like Yue's blood pledge contract, this art truly the master and servant contract that art build on love!—

□No way. If this thing is going to get a skill name, then it will absolutely be something like pervert contract, or SM contract, something like that.□

Tio who were breathing ‘haa haa’ roughly on all fours with expression of ecstasy yelled with a voice that was oozing with excitement. And then, she was standing up unsteadily while fidgeting before she received a necklace with red jewel attached from Hajime.

□Is it okay without transforming into dragon?□

□Fufun, haa haa, don’t look down on me. Haa haa, nnnh. This art different from the battle in Holy Precincts where I hath to do it without any rehearsal. Afuuu.....I hath trained diligently and mine skill was further polished then before. *Haa haa*.....to say nothing, of how I hath received reward personally from Goshujin-sama now. For the current me, nothing art impossible!□

□Hm, is that so.□

Hajime’s indifferent reply cause Tio to tremble from feeling shivers.

And then, now, just when the main cannons were in the verge of firing, she bent greatly backward while taking a deep breath.....

GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-

She let out a dragon howl with human body. Still with an extremely disgusting smile as though she was going to throw out all the pleasure in one go.

The howl radiated, however, it wasn’t a mere yell. The howl turned into black colored ripples with Tio as the center and it

rushed through the airspace. The black ripples that undulated repeatedly, over and over again, they ignored the barrier and passed through the fleet.

Was it an unknown attack..... But look there, that woman's smile. It wasn't normal!

The fleet's main cannons cautiously stopped in the stage of firing preparation completed.

Right after that, pulsation resounded in the world.

\*Thump-\*

\*Thump-\*

\*Thump-\*

It wasn't just one or two. There were innumerable pulses that couldn't be counted. It was as though the world itself was going to wake up, and then there was bizarre yet overwhelming presence, presence, presence-!!

—Now, awaken. O mine brethrens. O proud, powerful existences.

A voice that resembled telepathy, and yet was vaguely different somehow was coming down.

—The eyes of dragon, art not something for the sake of expressing grief. They art there for the flame of conviction to dwell inside

□Your majesty-. The full, no, the dragons-□

□This is, the second mother ship Ambition! Strangeness is occurring in the fuel bunker! Those guys, just what in the world is going on!?!□

A solemn and dignified voice resounded in Gregor's ears, at the same time there were also screamed reports coming one after another. Every one of those reports were conveying about the strangeness of the fuel in each ship.

—The claws of dragon, art not something for hugging tight the trembling self. They art there in order to tear apart malice, and protect what ought to be protected.

□Eighth mother ship Granada! The dragons, they are getting dyed! Something is happening!?

□This is the tenth mother ship Fudelta-. The dragons are enlarging here! At this rate the cages will be broken! Your majesty, your order please-

□Reporting-. The dragons that are dyed black are spewing out heat energy from their mouth! Shit-, the fuel bunker is destroyed-

The report didn't come only from the fleet. A screaming report and panicked yell asking for instruction were also coming from the fuel bunker of flagship Durgrant. Furthermore, there was a thunderous sound booming and the tremor from that was transmitted until the flagship where Gregor was at.

□What is happening!?

□-. The restrain of the dragon that is let out from the cage for torture is destroyed! It's rampaging and killing the crews!

□Impossible. That restriction is for anti-dragon use that is equipped with Synthesizer! Why didn't it activate!?

□It's activating! Other than the one in the restriction tool, the crews are also activating theirs! But it's not working

against the black dragon!□

□What the hell happened-. Aargh, broadcast this to all ships too! Kill all the dragons that are turning strange. Kill them right away!□

The moment the order was given, killing weapon was aimed toward the dragons who were continuously pulsating inside the fuel bunkers. The dragons who were still bewildered at the change that was happening to them saw those gun muzzles and the menacing crews. They were shrinking back in fear.

—The fangs of dragon, art not something to be gritted in front of death. They art there in order to crunch thy own weakness into pieces, and display the soul of struggle tempered with reasoning.

The dragons who were going to huddle into themselves suddenly stopped still. That change caused the crews who were readying their weapon to stop moving for a moment in suspicion. They stopped completely.

□Gururururuh□

Countless low growls were echoing. The dragons who were dyed jet black and grew up to adulthood regardless of their former size slowly raised their head that was lowered as though begging for forgiveness before this.

□Hih□

□U, a□

Several crews raised a short scream. Those were undoubtedly voices of terror. Their eyes met. With the dragons who raised their face. They were pierced by those

dragon eyes that were filled with fighting spirit and soul of conviction.

——Raise the howl! The dragon's howl! Demonstrate to the world, of thy existence! Lift up highly, thy proud soul! All of thee——art the dragons!

Instantly, countless howls shook the world and spread through the sky.

It caused a hallucination that perhaps the whole fleet might rupture from the inside, from these furiously grand dragon howls!

Just from that, the eardrums of the nearby crews were damaged, and among them there were even people who lost consciousness with the white of their eyes exposed.

——Soul - Metamorphosis - Sublimation Composite magic  
□Black God Dragon's Authority□

Once in the Holy Precincts Tio used□Dragon King's Authority□. It was an age of god magic that transformed other creature into black dragon. Before, she could only change the target one by one by using black slavery whip in conjunction.

But right now, although there was the requirements that she needed to be in a state that had stocked up power from using Pain Conversion, and also the targets needed to be creature that was close to dragon, but she was able to transform all the dragons within range into black dragons that possessed tough black scale with one roar. Furthermore, by using an arrangement of□Divine Statement□——□God Dragon's Word Soul□, it could also awaken the dragon instinct.

Yes, by Tio's power, all the dragons who were confined by the fleet in great amount as fuel——were transformed into gallant black dragons!

As the result,

\*DOGOOOOOOOOOO\*

Countless explosive sounds reverberated. The cause was one. The “breath attack” that became usable after the black dragon transformation exploded inside all the airships.

□It's no good-. We cannot hold them ba-gyaah□

□Shit-. What's with that scale!? The bullet cannot go through-□

The reports were gradually turning into mere screams. And then, the fired breaths smashed the internal walls, the black dragons that were surging out from the cage were trampling down the ship's inside, and they finally flew outside.

Like ashes that were whirling up from the stirring winds, the dragons went home to the sky one after another from the external walls that were melted by the flashes of the breath attack.

Even just a single mother ship would confine dragons in number that easily surpassed a hundred. The number of the black dragons that were flying out was uncommon.

□Fire-! It's convenient if they are going out by themselves! They are coming out so shoot them down!□

Gregor's instruction was transmitted. The heavy weapons on board the ships immediately spewed fire.

The bullets were approaching like falling stars toward the crowd of black dragons that flew out to the sky. But, another dragon that flew out first cut into that firing line. It spread out its wings and used its body as shield to cover its comrades!

The black scales it inherited from its parent weren't something that could easily get pierced by the heavy weapon. But, even so if it was asked whether it could come out unscathed, then the answer was no. Its black scales were smashed and scattered each time bullets hit it, and finally the bullets gouged its body and blood and flesh were scattered.

But, the black dragon who turned its body into shield for its comrades' sake didn't waver even with death before its eyes. Its merely, with the will of fighting till the end, the will to protect its comrades, it even fired its last breath attack just from those wills.

It was a small breath that was already powerless, however it splendidly destroyed one of the ship's weapons. At the same time, the hole-riddled black dragon vomited blood while losing strength.

But, thanks to that sacrifice, several dozen black dragons were able to fly out to the sky from the hole without getting sniped.

—Flap thy wings, o noble child. Blessing to that soul

A grand howl reverberated. The ripples that were spreading once more in the sky enveloped the black dragons that were falling powerlessly.

At the next moment, the black dragons that were definitely wounded all over their body flapped their dragon wings



strongly. They rearranged their posture midair and then looked down at their own body with puzzled feeling. There they witnessed the sight of their wound gone already with their black scales regenerating swiftly.

The cause of that? That was obvious. It was their mother that awakened them as “dragon”.

The gaze of the black dragons caught sight of the great existence that was standing in air with human form. That figure was going ‘haa haa’ somehow though.

□KUWAAAAAAAAAH□

□GAAAAAAAAAAAH□

□GURYAAAAAAAAAH□

There was only one meaning of the howls echoing through the sky.

——Gather. Toward the great dragon who was going ‘haa haa’.

The black dragons simultaneously started flying toward the center of the battlefield. Naturally, bullets and missiles were coming at them from behind, but several black dragons were constantly covering their comrades at the rear, in that chance they would roll and fired their breath to intercept. And then, the wounded black dragons would have their body healed when a soul-stirring howl echoed and they would return to battle.

□What.....sight.....□

That was Roze’s whisper. Kuwaibel who was within her embrace was unmoving with his gaze fixed forward

unblinking as though to burn everything into his eyes. And then, the people of Avenst were also looking still at the sky in a daze without moving. But, just from looking at their expression it could be understood that their emotions were completely the same like Roze.

—A tornado made from great number of black dragons.

With Tio at the center, the black dragons circling around her were creating a sight that had never been seen before in this world.

The light of the sun that was showing out its face completely was reflected glitteringly on the scales of the black dragons. It was as though black diamonds that were perfectly cut by artisan's hand were dancing while reflecting the light at random.

What a truly grandeur, sublime, and beautiful sight.

Amidst the rising up emotions that jolted the soul of the humans of the fleet, Tio's words were directed toward the king of pillage.

□Thou the so called god king that rule the sky. No more tedious talk art necessary. —Open wide thy eyes. Witness, what kind of existence dragon art. The true meaning of ruling the sky!□

□-. Who cares-. Fire-. Don't get absent-minded! I permit lethal attack! Aim all weapons at them! Flagship, turn around-. Whole fleet, cover for Durgrant's retreat! I'll kill the whole family of anyone who disobey!□

A command to kill resounded. There was also a resolute retreat command at the same time. However, it was only for himself who was the king. The long rule of terror didn't allow

anyone to disobey his words even when they understood that they were obviously in an ugly situation.

The flagship Durgrant turned around, at the same time the whole fleet launched simultaneous attack. There were silver bombardments and also missiles attack. All those that were fired from all direction were like a cage that was made from firing lines.

□Thinking again, this is the first time I'm going to see it live huh. I'm looking forward to it.□

□Fufu, I'll answer that expectation. ——"Limit Break"□

The necklace that was handed to her before this——"Last Zell".

With the combined effects of the artifact that brought about Limit Break, and the Cheatmate II (Uma○bo walleye pollack roe flavor, drink version) she drank just now, the finishing move of Tio Claus that originally couldn't be activated without getting damages all over her body was now activated!

\*GOU-\* The wind roared. Storm of magic power where crimson and jet black mixed. It spiraled up and pierced the sky, with size so big that it enveloped the tornado of the black dragons from further outside. The sea of clouds twisted and whirled like a typhoon.

The flooding silver bombardments and also the swarm of missiles got rolled up and jumbled together where not even a single one went through the storm. The overwhelming torrent of power turned anything and everything powerless!

The light of sun was vanishing.

The sky above the sea of clouds was getting covered further.

□Aa, as I thought, your great self is.....□

A true dragon manipulated even the heaven and earth. It was the legend that was taught to her. And now, it was occurring right before her eyes. Roze was trickling tears naturally. Was she deeply moved? Was she scared? Roze, and also the people of Avenst who were similarly shedding tears didn't really understand. However, there was something pressing on their chest.

Thunderbolts and bursting sounds overran the world.

What was generated at the sky further above the sea of clouds, was a sea of lightning and flame. Lightning was flickering like prominence in the flame sea of sky that was spreading as though to burn the world to ash.

The tornado of crimson and jet black dispersed. The black dragons that were left behind were merely looking up to the sky. It was as though they were worshipping the existence there.

\*slither\* Something was protruding out from the sea of lightning and flame. It was a part of a long torso. Jet black scales that seemed to suck in the light could be seen. It was undulating, emerging out from the sea of lightning flame with top and bottom reversed, it vanished, and then emerged out once more.

On the whole, it wasn't a body of dragon, whether in size or shape. But, all existences in this airspace understood.

—That thing which was beyond human understanding was.....a dragon

\*zuzuzu-\*, It made a sound that was like a rumble in the ground and the existence that was swimming in the sea of lightning flame showed its appearance.

It appeared with skin of flame while clad in tremendous sparks. The golden dragon eyes that were split vertically in the middle were glaring at everything in the lower world.

The giant body that easily surpassed three hundred meter long was coiling and the surrounding was colored by flashes of lightning and prominences.

A beat.

——GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

For a moment, everyone hallucinated whether the world was burst open. Because of the howl that was like an explosive sound.....wasn't the cause.

□The god.....that control.....the sky.....□

Yes, it was truly the heaven's might. Just a single howl caused everyone to feel the will of judgment that seemed to break the world.

Without any distinction of ally or enemy, this was an existence that would make all existence to feel awe.

——Black god dragon Tio Claus

Manifested here.

Something like the chance of victory for the fleet, there was no way they even had a percent of it.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※Dragon + Hostage = Dragon hostage (coined words) (TN: In Japan, hostage is read 'hitojichi'. Hito=person, jichi=collateral. In this chapter the author used made up words of 'ryuujichi' or dragon hostage.)

A lot of people pointed that out, so I wrote it just in case. I'm sorry that it was hard to understand.

I was late this time too. Really forgive me.

And so, the plan for the next chapter, if possible it will be at 6 P.M. Saturday, or perhaps at 0 A.M Sunday, if I cannot make it even then, then it will be at 6 P.M Sunday. Please treat me well.

# Arifureta After II King's Understanding First Part

AN: Sorry it's late.

---

Sea of lightning flame in the sky. Sea of clouds of death whirling below.

It could be seen as the sight of the end of the world, or perhaps as the sight of the creation of the world. Surely the impression would differ depending on the person.

But, in any case, there wasn't anyone who doubted that this was a scene of legend that would be engraved into the history of this world.

—Where art thou going?

The solemn soul of language came from the sky. All the people who heard it would be made to hold awe whether they wanted it or not by that voice.

That voice was directed toward the flagship that was trying to escape first by making the whole fleet into sacrificial pawn. No, more accurately, it was toward the master of flagship Durgrant that gave the order—the god king of pillage Gregor.

Even that person himself must understand that the question was directed to him. Inside the bridge of flagship Durgrant that was already turning around and moved to escape, Gregor who was watching dumbfounded at the absurd sight behind the ship through the display twitched and trembled.

□Don't listen-. Full speed——□

Gregor yelled in panic toward the helmsman with shaken eyes. However, he was unable to speak his order until the end.

——O false king, know shame

□Yo, your majesty-□

□-, dodge!□

A scream came from the helmsman. Because suddenly a giant tornado descended from the sea of lightning flame. The tornado of scorching heat that burn the air with hell fire and heat wave spiraled and dyed the inside of the bridge with brilliant light.

The helmsman reflexively tilted the ship faster than Gregor's command to dodge. The flagship Durgrant veered right away to the right with a motion that didn't suit that giant frame.

——Thou couldst not escape

Along with those words, the second blazing tornado descended. It didn't stop there, as though to invite despair toward the flagship Durgrant that was trying to slip through somehow, the third, fourth, fifth tornado descended.

□-, impossible to dodge! It's coming!□



□Barrier full strength! Breakthrough-□

The loud yells of the helmsman and Gregor echoed.

Flagship Durgrant tried to slip through the countless flame pillars that were connecting heaven and earth, but it finally couldn't evade and came into contact.

Instantly, the giant body of flagship Durgrant was attacked by fierce vibration. The posture control system didn't work and the ship's bow was lifted up as though it got hoisted, the ship was rotating uncontrollably. In addition, there were even consecutive impacts that followed. The thunderbolts that were generated inside the tornado were assaulting the ship.

The crew who was in charge of the silver barrier control saw how the ship's energy was consumed with frightening speed and he raised his voice with pale expression.

□The barrier output-, it decreased by fifty percent! Your majesty-, at this rate-□

□Chih, start replenish.....shit-□

Gregor unconsciously cursed when he was about to give instruction. In order to maintain the barrier's output, they needed to exchange the pod of dragon core fuel, but he remembered that there were no more dragon for that.

□Turn around.....turn the ship around! At the same time, fire at full power toward that black dragon!□

They couldn't retreat.

Gregor who made that judgment then ordered to turn the ship around while feeling indescribable rage and unease.

At the same time, the weapons loaded on board the flagship Durgrant fired simultaneously. Missiles in the amount that was absurd to be counted, storm of bullets that should be called as a wall already, and naturally the silver bombardment too.

Of course—all those were shot down. Anything and everything, without a single exception. By several hundred, several thousand lightning showering from the sky.

While flagship Durgrant was retreating, the other fleets were naturally joining in offense using their full power to push back Tio. Yet regardless of that, Gregor was unable to even retreat.

The reason of that was this.

From all directions. In the range diameter of several dozen kilometer. Sniping of roaring lightning was shooting out every target under the heaven simultaneously and swiftly.

The world that was covered with the sea of lightning flame was literally the absolute territory of the black god dragon.

□Charge the Henkhaborg-. All fleets, buy us time!□

The fact that their attack didn't reach caused Gregor's voice to turn increasingly disarrayed. Even so, all the fleets reflexively obeyed the words of the king who symbolized terror and violence.

The barrier fleet form multi-layered formation to protect the flagship Durgrant, the other fleets aimed their maximum firepower without pause from all directions, sky battlecraft squads were unleashing attacks suicidally.

At the same time, flagship Durgrant's multi-column 3-turret cannon was focusing silver light with terrific momentum. However, that light was something mixed with black color like what mother ship Ostinato showed in the end, so it was obviously different in aspect with the normal bombardment.

——Main cannon    Henkhaborg

It was a silver bombardment that took in the property of the black rain to become an abominable energy wave. The bombardment that focused and mixed the impure energy that filled this world, when it hit the target, even if the ship's frame itself was protected by the barrier, the energy that caused necrosis to the cells would encroach inside the ship and annihilated the crews.

Of course, after it was fired, highly polluted energy would get scattered at the surrounding area, so one's own army also would not escape the effect. It was a forbidden weapon that was hard to use, it bared its fang not just to enemy and ally, but even to the world.

And now, it was fired.

A flash shined and filled up the burning world completely.

It didn't matter even if it was against existence that had veered really far from the beaten track, as long as it was still a living thing, it should be possible for it to experience cell necrosis. And then, as long as they could just succeed in eroding its body, they would be able to kill it for sure!

A twitching smile emerged on Gregor's lips.

——Fool

It was fired in no time.

The black god dragon's——breath!

The flash that was fired from the jaw that was opened wide was pure black. It was an absolute color that wasn't polluted by anyone, painting over everything.

The bombardment of silver and black that exemplified taboo was certainly mighty, it could pulverize even a mother ship in a single shot. But, the breath that was fired from the black god dragon far surpassed it. The difference in power was overwhelming, like a needle that was thrust to intercept a log.

\*GOU-\* When the atmosphere growled, this world's strongest bombardment was easily swallowed by the black breath after a moment of resistance.

□Impossible-□

Gregor's yell echoed.

But, the scene before his eyes was a definite fact. The strongest attack of flagship Durgrant was swallowed right from the front, and it didn't stop there, it was getting annihilated along with the negative energy by the aberrantly scorching heat.

The first layer of the multi-layered barrier that was deployed by the barrier fleet was smashed open like a paper waste. The second layer was also breached like scattering glass after a moment of resistance. The third layer, the fourth layer.....

□Dodge-□

□Ro, roger!□

At the same time with the barrier's pulverization, several ships of the barrier fleet were hit by the breath and they exploded everywhere. Gregor recovered his sanity seeing the figure of the defensive ships going up in flame and he gave his command, and then the helmsman who similarly managed to go back to reality steered the ship with miraculous reflex.

When flagship Durgrant rotated, the last barrier was broken through at the same time.

□All hands-, brace for impa——□

The yell that was raised by someone couldn't be finished until the end.

Right after that, a terrific impact attacked flagship Durgrant. Thunderous sound and fierce alert sound rang.

The breath Tio released didn't stop and opened up a large hole in the whirling sea of clouds and vanished toward the ground. No one had the leisure to observe where it landed, but if they could actually do that, surely they would experience the feeling of a block of ice thrown on their spine without doubt.

After all, the place that was impacted by the breath that descended from the sky—a mountain with elevation around two kilometer was hit directly and it got blasted away spotlessly.

It was the breath of a god dragon that changed the geography.

Flagship Durgrant got hit by that, however, it still wasn't sinking. Its mobility that didn't suit its large built and the

great reaction of the helmsman saved them, that they got away with only its main cannon part wholly gouged out.

Although, the figure of the flagship tilting diagonally while on fire and smoking was giving a shock to the whole fleets as though it had been sunken down.

The captains of the fleet were staring dumbfounded without giving any order at the symbol of despair the flagship getting cornered, as though time had stopped. The attack of the fleet also stopped and naturally the sky battlecraft squadrons were also staring at the flagship with their eyes opened wide.

There was no way Tio would overlook that opening.

——O proud warriors. Flap thy wings. Raise thy howl. Drive into the heart of these invaders who acted as though they owned the sky, just whose territory this place art

Those who answered was naturally the black dragons who were protected from the all-directions fleet attack. The dragon howls that shook the soul resounded through the blazing sky.

It was too late even when the enemy returned to their senses in shock.

The pilots of sky battlecrafts that were staring at the flagship Durgrant while circling saw the opened large mouth and fangs of dragon through their cockpit at the next moment——right after that, they were swallowed by scorching heat breath and vanished.

The other sky battlecraft squadrons also got their back taken instantly and they exploded due to the black dragons'

breath, others got hit by the tackle of the falling black dragon and they got crushed along with their cockpit.

The airships and mother ships resumed their attack.

However, the current black dragons didn't let go of the opening of the paused barrage.

The last sight that a male captain who was sitting on the command seat inside the bridge saw, was the scene of a black dragon swooping down while flapping its wings in a big way, its large mouth opened across the windbreak. Right after that, his consciousness was expelled into the perpetual darkness along with the black flash that blanketed his field of vision.

Black dragons were clinging on a mother ship. They were outside the firing range because they were too close. The sky battlecrafts who originally should be playing active role so this kind of situation didn't occur were unable to protect their ship due to another dragons attacking them with clever cooperation and suicidal resolve.

Like that, with deadly attack toward the bridge, the black dragons were sinking the fleets one after another.

Even in that battlefield that presented a chaotic situation, there were also tough ships that were defeating the black dragons using skilled maneuver, but the black dragons that should be shot down already were revived as though nothing happened at the next moment and attacked again.

Of course, there were black dragons who got hit by main cannon class attack and they were exterminated without reviving back. There were also those that were falling in tailspin and vanish into the sea of clouds without the revival making it in time.

But, however.....

□These guys.....don't they have any fear?□

A captain of a certain mother ship whispered.

Immediately after that, a black dragon on the verge of death whose wings were turned into tatters and its dragons scales smashed, even so its fighting spirit wasn't dulled even by a fragment, it was howling as though to burn its life into ash and charged toward the bridge. And then, it destroyed the bridge with its breath!

They didn't have anything like fear. If they had fear, then it would be fear toward death without even fighting, living with their soul rotting.

□Shit-. Why, are they not stopping-□

The captain of a certain airship screamed.

A black dragon received all attacks with its body while protecting a comrade behind it, even so it advanced forward without stopping. Even when half its body was blown away from a missile's direct hit, the strength dwelling inside those dragon eyes didn't waver in the slightest.

It definitely, delivered its comrade toward the enemy's location! Of course, the breath of the protected black dragon blew away the bridge.

They wouldn't stand still anymore for the second time. Because this was the sky. This was their territory.

Therefore, they were outdoing their opposition.



They were outdoing their greatest enemy. And above all else—their past self!

□Aa.....really, what a sight this is.....□

The voice that was blurred with the overflowing feeling came from the descendant of the country that loved dragon, and swore to live together with dragon—Roze Phiris Avenst's.

Their greatest friends who were oppressed, their dignity trampled down, even their right to live stolen, now they were reborn once more. She had no words. Roze didn't understand any way to express this emotion inside her.

However, the one thing that she understood was—

□Piuh, piiiuh□

And the last monarch dragon—Kuwaibel also felt the same like that. The heroic and grand battle of his brethrens, with their existence staked on the line caused a roar to leak out naturally. He dreamed it, longed for it. They floundered, to make it reality. And then, the sight of the future that they ought to struggle to arrive at, was right here right now.

He didn't know his father and also his mother. He also had no sibling. When he was born, there was only the human girl who was his partner before his eyes. He didn't think that he was lonely. However, actually he was wishing from his heart from brethrens that would fight together with him.

That was why, their awakened figures made Kuwaibel's young soul trembled. He wondered what should he do to express that overflowing feeling.....

But, there was only one thing that he understood.....

□Do you want to fight?□

□-□

□Pih!?□

A question suddenly resounded.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned their face together at that voice's owner.

The silhouette standing above the coiling black god dragon. There was no need to ask, it was Hajime. There was a lot of distance between them, but they understood that Hajime was turning his face toward Roze and Kuwaibel.

The reply of the two was concise.

□Yes.□

□Pii.□

Yes, they wanted to fight.

With dignity, betting their right to live. In order to proof, that the flag they hoisted up was indeed right.

They wanted to stand shoulder to shoulder with their brethrens that were demonstrating a fierce battle. So that they could call themselves their “friend”, their “king” with their head held high.

Roze and Kuwaibel looked behind. Over there, they saw the figure of Avenst's people clenching their fist staring hard at the battlefield. Everyone saw the figure of their fighting friend, their will to fight ‘We cannot just remain a spectator in this kind of place!’ seething inside.

Hajime who made a small smile toward such them was,

□Queen-san. I'll ask one thing, for fleets that big to depart for here, doesn't that mean that the battle strength in their country right now is relatively few?□

□Eh? That's, certainly.....most likely, there is only a defense fleet that excelled in defensive battle remaining there I think.□

Even though the sudden question caused Roze to be taken aback, she answered like that after pondering for a bit. Hajime's expression distorted fearlessly.

□This battlefield is the battlefield of this world's dragons. Perhaps it's also fine for you to join the battle as friend, and as king but.....in this battlefield there is Tio, the black god dragon. And then, there are the "awakened" dragons who obtained the divine protection of the god dragon. Then, defeat is impossible even in one in a million chance.□

□But-, while that may be true, to remain a spectator in this battle that be our existence——□

□That's why, I'm saying to use this chance to overthrow the divine country.□

□I don't really understand what are you saying.□

Roze reflexively returned a reply that sounded joking to those words that sounded like a joke. Kuwaibel and other people were also making a bemused expression thinking □Just what is this person saying?□toward the content of the telepathy that they hear.

Hajime's expression suddenly turned serious toward them all.

□Roze Phiris Avenst. Right here is surely the turning point. Even after they lost their king and their battle strength plummet rock bottom, if the divine country hardened their defense when they grasped that information, will you be able to defeat them then? Just with those two airships and few sky battlecraft pilots?□

□That's.....□

□In a battlefield, to be separated from those important to you, to leave them to face formidable enemy.....such things will be accompanied by terrible pain. But, did such brittle relationship that couldn't do that exist between the human and dragon of the dragon kingdom of the past?□

Even if their body was separated, but their heart was always beside each other. Sometimes they were separated by heaven and earth and advanced for the sake of their purpose. That was the bond between human and dragon in the dragon kingdom of the past.

□Right now they have Tio's divine protection, they are able to display the greatest strength as black dragon. But, later after we leave, the infinite regeneration and also the enormous magic power will be gone. Even if the black dragons cooperate with you all to retake the kingdom, the obstacle you have to overcome will be great.□

□.....□

Hajime asked the wordless Roze.

□Don't you all, have your own battlefield?□

Once in the battle in Holy Precincts, Hajime left behind his comrades in the battlefield and advanced forward. It was

done under a definite bond. That was why his words now was conveyed to Roze with a definite weight.

□.....But, the distance from here until Qwailent——□

□If you wish, then I'll open the door. It's a little bit of present from the instigator. ——Now, what will you do, queen of a ruined country?□

In a sense, this battlefield was ideal. There were the awakened dragons, there was the supreme ruler of the sky, and there was the divine protection from such being. If they fought together, Roze and others would be able to clear up the pent-up resentment of the many years almost unharmed.

But, indeed it was just like Hajime said, even with only the black dragons there wouldn't be any problem here. What's more, there wasn't any reason for Roze and others that they had to join the fight no matter what. It was nothing but the problem of emotion.

They didn't understand how Hajime would send them until the divine country, but if he said that he could then surely he was really able to do it. Roze was convinced of that.

And then, a surprise attack toward the divine country was certainly also their biggest effective chance to retake the kingdom.

However, there was no doubt that the danger would be far above this battlefield. Most likely, many of the soldiers gathered in this place right now would lose their life.

Roze shut her eyes.

The enemy's battle strength. This move to recover from their hopeless situation. The degree of damage. The chance of victory. The merit and demerit after they took a step forth. In case they didn't depart for battle here, the state of things in a world with cleared sky. The action prediction of the divine country that lost its main fleets.....

□Your majesty.□

□Roze-sama.□

Roze came back to herself suddenly and she looked back. There, she saw the figures of Bovid and Sabas staring at her with a strong gaze. No, it wasn't just the two. The Crow siblings, the other top brasses, and then, all the people regardless of gender and age, they all were staring at Roze with a gaze that contained a flame that was even hotter than the sea of flame spreading in the sky.

(Aa, that's right. If it's resolve, then we already have it.)

Didn't they decide to fight already? Didn't they wish, that they want to fight?

Wasn't the will of dragon kingdom Avenst, displayed already?

Roze made a bitter smile at herself who was flinching back now when the time came for that. And then, right after that she declared loudly with definite dignity and resolve as the king of a country.

□People of dragon country Avenst. My beloved people. It looks like the time has come.□

The explosive sound of battlefield struck the eardrums. However, no matter how much noise resounded, their ears

didn't fail to hear their queen's words.

□If we leave all the fight to our awakened friend and run away because we treasure our own life——our heart will die. Even if we plunge into this battlefield following our emotion——there won't be any significant meaning. To consider escape as battle, that escape is fighting just like what we have done until now in the cleared up world——that's something that our pride won't allow anymore. I'll say it one more time. ——The time has come.□

Breaths were held. Everyone corrected their posture and they stared straight at Roze.

□Resolve yourself. From here on, we will challenge a next to impossible battle.□

Let's rescue the friends of the dragon kingdom that are born merely to be exploited and killed. Let's liberate the people of the dragon kingdom that are captured and treated like slave. And then.....

□We will make over the world. As the first step of that——let's take back our kingdom!□

The answer was naturally a soul-stirring war cry that wasn't outdone by the dragon howls.

At the same time with that war cry that sounded like it would blow away the thunderbolts and explosions, the top brasses were giving instructions one after another. Everyone was starting to move swiftly. In the middle of that, Roze turned her gaze toward Hajime.

□Hajime-sama. Please guide us. To the land of our longstanding desire.□

□Welcome to the battlefield. Queen-sama.□

Hajime who made a wide and villainous grin made his fingertip shined and took out an artifact. It was a sparkling key colored with mystical blue. A key that opened even a door that crossed over worlds—the Crystal Key.

Hajime threw it with just a movement of his finger tip. The crystal key flew while leaving behind trail of azure light and it pierced the space between Hajime and mother ship Avenst.

The crystal key that had been given improvement with gravity stone inserted in it rotated at the same time when Hajime twisted his wrist, as though it was unlocking something.

——\*gakon-\*

The sound of opened lock rang in the world.

Of course, it was an optional extra. The sound was meaningless, but Hajime was struck with the idea so it couldn't be helped. This too was also Hajime Quality!

Incidentally, previously the opened gate looked like shining membrane, but right now the gate looked like an impressive two-leaf door that appeared from thin air that was opening while making solemnly heavy sound \*gogogo-\*

Of course, that was an optional extra! It was meaningless, but Hajime got carried up from excitement so it couldn't be helped! This too was also Hajime Quality!

By the way, the door was merely three-dimensional projection, so the size and also the design could be changed based on Hajime's current mood! It was his prided item that



he made from a month of hard work combining the film technology of earth and magic of Tortus!

□.....Hajime-sama. By any chance, are you someone that is affiliated with god?□

No, he was just an obsessive inventor desu. To the level that he would even forget eating and sleeping once he got absorbed into something, and he wouldn't stop until he got drained dry by the legal wife, or eating the suplex of the rabbit-eared wife.

□Go. May the luck of war be with you.□

□-. Thank you very much. ——I'll pray that someday, we will be able to meet once again in a world where the world, the people's heart, and also the dragons' soul are all cleared up.□

Roze bowed, and then she turned on her heel toward airship Rozeria in order to take command over the whole force.

□I feel a bit uneasy with only those children. ....Oho? Fumu, is that so. Very well, leave thy brethrens to me.□

Tio who was staying still above the sky to watch over the battle of the black dragons sent a sidelong glance at Roze and others. And then, several black dragons came back from the battlefield and soared toward airship Rozeria while sending their gaze at Tio.

It seemed they were conveying to Tio that they would follow them, so they asked her to take care of their brethrens.

□What an overprotective god dragon-sama.□

□What art thou saying? If Goshujin-sama say that, even thou were lending thy hand that thou open the gate.□

□Something like that doesn't count as lending hand. I was only sending those guys to hell.□

□The act just now art something necessary for them to be able to live proudly holding their head high in the future ahead. The act of instigating also count as lending hand. Fufu.□

While they were talking telepathically just between the two of them, airships Rozeria and Averia vanished inside the gate followed by the nation on ship Avenst.

.....They passed through the impressive shining door that was created by the throwing tantrum Hajime□Just a bit more-. Just a bit more until it's finished-. That's why, I'll eat properly when it's finished okay!□even while having his cheeks stretched \*munii\* widely by Yue and his body locked by Shia's Cobra Twist.

□You bastard-, where are they going-? Just what the hell are you two!?!□

An angry yell rose from the battlefield that had reached the one-way intensification. Gregor's voice that was filled with unease and confusion didn't have even a speck of its former dignity anymore.

□This kind of incomprehensible power-, suddenly appearing out of nowhere-. Don't screw with me-. How can something like this is allowed! Damn it-, damn ittt-. I am, the king of the divine country you know!?!□

Gregor's yell complained to Hajime and Tio—or rather, it was closer to a soliloquy. The number of the ships was

already decreased until half. They were unable to even replenish their dragon core energy. The energy output of the fleets that was declining didn't even have the spare energy to fire their main cannon anymore.

There was already no trace left from their majesty when they first appeared from the dawn.

That must be cornering Gregor's mind even further. He was continuously yelling things like "This kind of reality, this kind of absurdity, how can this be allowed-".

Toward such him, Hajime said.....

"You are weaker. That's all there is to it right?"

Gregor's clamor that was like a child throwing tantrum stopped still.

—Gregor Cluzet Qwailent was weaker.

Certainly, that was all there was to it.

The foundation of the king of pillage, was a conviction toward strength.

Whether it was violence or ingenuity, anything was fine. Anyone that could surpass their opponent would be able to make the other submit, trampled on them, or destroyed them. A person who could that was right, the words of the weak was nothing but nonsense.

The strong was right, the weak was wrong.

That was the thing that Gregor exactly believed in.

".....Is that so. So I'm the weaker one even after becoming the supreme ruler huh. Hahah, that's really a harsh joke

yeah.□

Gregor raised a dry laugh that sounded somewhat comprehending.

There was no more defensive ship nearby, flagship Durgrant was also raising white smoke everywhere while tilting. There was no energy replenishment and the ship was in a state where maintaining its floating power was the best it could do. The great number of weapons the ship was equipped with were laying out barrage using physical attack like bullet and missile, because of that it still wasn't sunk down yet but.....

□Yoo, tell me. Just what the hell you two are?□

That was likely Gregor's last question of his life.

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit before he answered with a grin.

□Just a passing by monster.□

A black dragon finally slipped through the barrage even with wounds all over its body and arrived in front of the bridge's windbreak. It opened its jaw widely. Light of death converged inside there. The crews screamed and ran away.

Amidst that, Gregor threw his body on the commander seat and sat down heavily. He then rested his chin on one hand while, with a small voice,

□So I pull the utter failure at the very end huh. Good grief, what a joke.□

He whispered such thing.

The bridge of flagship Durgrant was destroyed. The sight of it falling down powerlessly was enough to dishearten the surviving ships.

The black dragons raised their howl toward they who couldn't even took satisfactory battle maneuver and got reduced into a disordered mob.

And then, the dragons threw their body into the last decisive battle.

It didn't take that much time until the whole of this world's greatest battle strength became a squall of wreckage showering down on the ground below.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It was late but I posted it somehow.

Next month I should have more leeway and can post more.....

Now then, it was raised up in the impression column, so I'll explain it for a bit.

For Shirakome, 蛇 = the lizard like one. 龍 = the snake like one.

When in god dragon mode Tio is snake-like, so the description letter is also 龍. But, there is no concept of 龍 in this world, so I wrote 蛇 in the conversation of this world's human. I'm sorry that it's puzzling.

By the way, Tio become□□□shape when in god dragon mode is because——preference. Hajime's.

PS

I also wrote it in the activity report, but the comic version's latest chapter is in the middle of display at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Finally it's Yue-sama you know! Only at the end though! Please go there to take a look by all means.

Also, I'll report this just in case.

This month, light novel volume 5 and comic volume 1 will be released.

The special content information is also displayed in Overlap-sama's homepage, so if it it's fine please go take a look there.

My best regard.

# Arifureta After II King's Understanding Middle Part

AN: Butler = The strongest warrior class. When I was writing this common sense, it became long again.....

---

The sight that unfolded ahead after passing through the solemn door was a calm blue sky.

□This place.....□

It was Roze who whispered that. Roze who returned on board the airship Rozeria passed through the sky door Hajime created along with airship Averia and mother ship Avenst. They had made their resolve for their battlefield that was waiting ahead.

Even so, when she thought back of the battlefield in between the sea of lighting flame and the whirling sea of clouds that should be called as a scene of myth, she fell into a doubt whether they were dreaming now that she saw this calm sky.

□Roze-sama-. Be, below, it's Qwailent! The distance is 1000!□

□Eh?□

The report from the person in charge of observation caused Roze to let out a dumbfounded voice. The sky that could be seen from the bridge was very transparent blue, the morning sun was rising slightly higher than the sea of clouds. Thinking what was this person saying in the middle of this peaceful sight, Roze turned her gaze toward the monitor that projected the image below the ship.....

□I don't really understand what are you saying.□

She unconsciously muttered such thing. While making twitching face & dripping with cold sweats that looked like waterfall.

Of course she would be like that. Because below where airships Rozeria and Averia, and mother ship Avenst were floating, was the land of their birthplace that they couldn't even approach until now—sky divine country Qwailent, no, dragon kingdom Avenst's floating land was right there.

□Your majesty! Look sharp! Avenst is also coming here remember!□

□-□

A scolding came from Bovid who was boarding his sky battlecraft in the dock while standing by.

Roze who got taken aback and recovered herself from that gritted her teeth hard. At the same time inside her heart □Hajime-sama you idioo~~~~t. I'm the one who asked for guidance but-, to suddenly toss us out right above the target like this-, idiottt! Stupid-. You bruteeee!□she was hurling abuse at Hajime grandly.



□Avenst, can you hear!? Evacuate right awa——□

Roze was about to command the commanding captain to evacuate mother ship Avenst that not only was unable to fire its main cannon, it couldn't even lay out barrier or perform battle maneuver. But, before she finished,

A loud alarm sound rang in the early morning sky. The alarm that could even make people indulging in laziness to jump awake in one go caused Roze's body to jump and trembled.

Inside her head, 'what to do, what to do, Hajime-sama you idiottt, what to do!' the same words and insult were repeating. Roze was about to fall into panic, but there, a scolding□Get a hold of yourself!□reached her from her partner.

Kuwaibel that was hugged tightly by Roze from an instinctive habit slapped his tail on Roze's cheek \*pechi-\*. When Roze dropped her gaze toward the partner that she was hugging, there Kuwaibel who if it had to be said had a pampered child trait was staring fixedly at her.

The unshakeable dragon eyes that were surprisingly deep were staring straight at Roze.

——Aa, that's right. If it's resolve, then I finished it already together with everyone.

Roze let out a long exhale 'fuu~~', then at the next moment she opened her eyes in a flash. And then, she firmly surveyed her comrades inside the bridge whose face was turning pale, and her comrades in Averia and Avenst through the monitors.

□Let's fight.□

Those words were calm, yet they possessed definite dignity and strength.

□In order to stand equal with our old friends who are fighting even now at that sky.□

Those were the words of the queen of the dragon kingdom.

□In order to save our imprisoned friends and brethrens.□

Those were the words of a person who even while her status fell into being air pirate and she lost her important comrades on countless occasions, by no meant she had abandoned the feeling of the halcyon days.

□In order to change the world.□

There weren't just combatants here. There were also civilians. Rather, the civilians were a lot more than the combatants. Normally this wasn't a place they should be taken to. But, surely the old and young, the men and women in mother ship Avenst wouldn't listen to that.

If Roze and others were lost, then they would have no future. Here was the turning point. A future where they would be welcoming a slow ruin while simply running away and getting toyed with, not a single descendant of the dragon kingdom wished that.

If not, then they wouldn't pass through that sky door.

That was why,

□Let's fight.□

There was one reply to that call of the queen. Only words of answer□By your will-□and resolute gazes.

A smile emerged on Roze's lips. That smile was the same fearless smile like that man who she thoroughly hurled abuse at until just now.

□We will take back everything! The battle of revolution is right here! Let's bet our body and soul! Sky battlecraft force, all planes take off-. Deal damage as much as you can to the defense fleet before they can move completely! Averia, concentrated fire at the defense fleet's flagship! Avenst, support fire using physical weapon from above!□

Orders came like a storm.

Like a butterfly that came out of its cocoon flying out all at once, sky battlecrafts were flying out from all ships. Their main force received severe damage from the previous attack and their number was decreased, but their number was a force that reached two hundred.

It was genuinely the greatest battle strength that the nation on ship Avenst possessed. There were also youngsters who hadn't finished their training among them, there were also old men who retired already. The planes used also didn't consist from just plane of good condition. There were also many planes with old armament.

But, the height of their fighting spirit was the real thing.

□All force, aim at the flagship of the defense fleet! Don't get left behind and fly into their bosom before they could lay out the defensive barrier! The barrier of the defense fleet is a tough one-. Consider yourself useless if you are outside the barrier once it's formed!□

The leader of first squad of air battle force and the overall commander Bovid gave his instruction. It was an extremely dangerous tactic where if the pilot was inexperienced they

would die right away from crashing. But, the barrier of the defense fleet here was even more powerful than the defense fleet before this. The barrier would be deployed about fifty meter from the ship. It wasn't something that could be destroyed by sky battlecraft's armament at all, they wouldn't even be able to approach then.

But conversely speaking, if they could approach within that fifty meter before the barrier was deployed, their attack would go through.

It was that kind of reckless tactic, however, there wasn't a single plane that was faltering. Rather, they were approaching with a momentum that would make anyone thinking they would even launch kamikaze attack without stopping toward the twenty ships of the defense fleet that were finally starting to from their anchored state.

□Roze-sama. Our preparation is finished.□

A voice came from Sabas who was standing by behind Roze. Roze nodded briskly. She showed a resolved fearless smile toward Sabas who could read her feeling. Sabas too also nodded with a gentle smile that was hiding beastly ferocity inside.

Roze surveyed inside the bridge.

□Everyone, I'll leave Rozeria in your hand. Please endure somehow until Kuwaibel come back.□

□Piuh.□

The man who took charge of Rozeria in Roze's place——Carter Gilton nodded deeply accompanied with the strong nod of the other crews.

Behind Roze who turned on her heel, Sabas and the Crow siblings, and then ten of the most elite imperial guard members followed.

Their strategy was simple. The spring at the deepest part of the palace that could grant power to monarch dragon——  
□Spring of True Dragon's Tear□, they would take Kuwaibel there. And then with the strength of Kuwaibel who would temporarily awaken as a grown dragon they would crush the defense fleet.

If they could just destroy the fleet, then there wouldn't be any existence in the divine country that could defeat Kuwaibel that could wield the power as monarch dragon. This was a country that was built from the rule of fear and violence of the king named Gregor. They shouldn't be able to maintain their fighting spirit by the time the defense fleet fell.

The problem was how much time Avenst could buy with the defense fleet as the opponent. There wasn't any guarantee that Avenst wouldn't be annihilated during the time they infiltrated the palace with few elites until Kuwaibel returned to the battlefield.

Explosive sounds roared outside. Bovid and others, the air battle force was starting a super close range battle that should even be called as the dance of death. How much damage they could inflict on the defense fleet with this surprise attack would become the key of this battle.

Because Bovid understood that, surely he would be reckless. Just like how Bovid made himself into shield to accept the enemy bullet in order to save Roze and others, there was no doubt he would put his life at stake here.

□Please, everyone.....be safe.□

Roze whispered that while equipping herself with firearms in Rozeria's bottom. Even though she was determined, even though she had resolve, but there was no way her heart wouldn't be pained thinking that the people she loved might die. Roze's lips that were strongly biting showed that pressure on her heart more eloquently than anything.

□Pii□

□Ku-chan.....□

Kuwaibel's strong eyes.

□Roze-sama.□

□Gramps.□

Sabas's unshakable smile.

□Your majesty.□

□Roze-sama.□

Crow siblings' fearless smile.

The accompanying imperial guards also smiled similarly.

Seeing that, surely everyone in Averia, and also everyone in Rozeria, and then also the people she loved in Avenst, they were undoubtedly making the same powerful and fearless smile. Roze was convinced of that.

There wasn't even a single complain toward Roze who decided to head to this hell.

The hatch below the ship opened. Rozeria was evading the surface-to-air attacks that were starting sporadically while flying toward the palace. The scenery below that was flowing

through was the townscape of the birthplace that she was seeing for the first time.

‘Aa’, inside her heart Roze leaked out an admiring sigh. Roze who were taken away when she was a baby didn’t have any memory of the dragon kingdom, the feeling of “coming home’ overflowed inside.

And then, surely such feeling was much stronger for the senior people who knew about this country compared to herself who didn’t know of her birthplace.

Those people riding the sky battlecraft, those people who were looking down from the airships and mother ship, what kind of feeling they were having?

Were they holding flood of emotions? Surely the scenery wasn’t exactly the same compared with in the past, so were they enraged seeing their changed motherland? Perhaps they would die in the next moment while still holding such feeling. In this battlefield where the chance of survival was remarkably low, their feeling would rain down along with the flame blast.

But, surely, not even a single one would stop flying until their last moment without a doubt.

For what sake? That was decided already.

——Aa

Like that, Roze let out her deep feeling one more time.

With an automatic rifle in one hand, she touched the barrel on her forehead and she closed her eyes as though praying.

Right now, she understood. Just what a king was, what she was. What her existence ought to accomplish.

□Thinking of the future, in order to seize the day—I make my decision. I place my important things at the two sides of the scale.□

Gregor was a king of pillage that embodied the truth of power. Control to those who obey, death to those who defy. Surely that was also one way of living.

Even Roze might be similar.

She couldn't choose everything. She had to make her choice. With her body that wasn't a god, she couldn't grasp at the ideal. Even if as the result of her choice someone would be cast away, in order to not lose everything, Roze had to make her choice.

Just like how she made herself and the soldiers who had went through joys and sorrows together with her to leap into hell, for the sake of the future, and for the sake of the people who were living for the moment.

But, she didn't think that it was mistaken. The reason was because that would be an insult toward the soldiers who answered at her will.

That was why, she would change.

□I'll change. Become a warring queen. The queen of the soldiers.□

'Someone else after me could become the kind king. In order to connect our future toward that someone, I'll become a warring king.' The powerful words of Roze that contained such feeling made Sabas's expression turned a bit lonely,



the Crow siblings shut their eyes, and the imperial guards displayed a tensed expression.

Roze turned toward them and,

□Let's go. To our battlefield.□

Saying that, she leaped down without hesitation.

Sabas and others nodded at each other and they similarly leaped down following the beloved person they decided as their master by themselves.

Roze and others who jumped outside to the air naturally obeyed the planet's truth and began freefalling. The roaring sound of wind entered their ears while they spread both their arms to balance themselves.

Their distance until the ground was gone instantly and the palace was below them.

□Ku-chan-. To that terrace-□

□Pihi□

When Roze spoke with a volume that didn't lose to the wind, Kuwaibel responded immediately. When Kuwaibel who was clad in silver light raised his cry, the same light immediately enveloped Roze and others too.

Lightly the body of Roze and others were liberated from the wedge of gravity. They rotated midair and took the landing stance. Kuwaibel adjusted their falling position and guided them toward the terrace nearby the highest floor of the palace.

But, at that time, dry bursting sounds resounded at the same time with the sharp sound that cut through wind. Fortunately the bullets didn't hit them, they rushed between the group toward the sky.

When they looked, there were several soldiers at the palace's garden. They were pointing at Roze and co while aiming their rifle.

□Leave this to me.□

Right after that, silver glints rained down on those soldiers. Those things that were launched cutting through the air pierced the face of the soldiers peremptorily, and then they went limp like a marionette with its strings severed.

When Roze turned her eyes at the perpetrator, he——Sabas was running his gaze vigilantly at the garden while between his fingers there were three——knife for eating held in between.

It seemed, this pseudo butler was dealing with multiple targets on the ground a hundred meter away using tableware.

But even while that was going on, soldiers who heard the gunshot showed up from the terrace and the garden ahead——but,

□Shi-□

Tableware was flying. Polished silver knives that were usually stored in the kitchen of mother ship Avenst!

\*suta-\* Roze and co got down safely on the terrace. And then, with an unknown principle, \*shakon-\* Sabas stowed away the tableware knives into the cuff while making such

small sound. Roze asked him as the representative of the imperial guards who were making an expression that was loss for words.

□Why, tableware?□

□Because I'm a butler.□

The history of Sabas who was the former captain of the imperial guard, who then became Roze's butler after picking out Crow siblings and turned his position to them was known by everyone there. They also knew his true strength. But, not one of them knew that he owned the inhuman skill that allowed him to snipe enemy on the ground from a hundred meter above using tableware.

They more or less knew that in his active duty period he specialized in quick draw using revolver that should be reduced to a relic of the old era, but they never imagined that after he retired he would acquire a new ability—an outrageous ability of quick snipe using knife for eating of all thing.

□What are you all doing getting absent-minded like that. Now, quickly mov——shi-□

Even while he was talking, the meal knife that manifested like a sleight of hand pierced the eyeball of a soldier that rushed out from the neighboring terrace.

Furthermore, Sabas unhesitatingly threw a meal knife at a completely wrong direction toward another soldier who drew back his face in panic. The meal knife rebounded from the ornament nearby the terrace's ceiling before it flew into the entrance while rotating fast——

□Gueh□

A single groan could be heard. Next \*thud\* the sound of something heavy collapsing also resounded.

□□□□.....□□□□

□What's wrong Roze-sama? Quickly go inside.□

□A, yes.□

Roze-chan who decided to become the queen of soldier. Seeing the superhuman skill of a true (?) soldier (butler), her heart very quickly cracked.

Roze and others stepped inside the room while taking grip of their mind.

□Gramps, you are the vanguard. We should be able to go straight to the underground from the hidden passage of the royalty right?□

□Yes. That's if the passage isn't blocked though. It's unthinkable that Gregor would seal his own escape route. I dare say there won't be any problem.□

Sabas slightly opened the room's door and he quickly took stock of the corridor. And then, he nodded once and moved at the front as the person who thoroughly knew the inside of the royal palace.

After him was six imperial guards following with ordered movement without the slightest bit of disorder, behind them was Roze with the Crow siblings at both her sides, their back were secured by four imperial guards.

□Muh□

Suddenly Sabas let out an aler voice. Right at the next moment, he suddenly accelerated!

The soldier that leaped out from the corridor's corner ahead was hit with a body blow that gave out \*zudon-\* impact voice as though he was hit with a large cannon. Without any voice or free time to writhe, the soldier collapsed with his eyeballs rolling and the white of his eyes got exposed——

Yet he wasn't allowed to fall, his collar was grasped and he was made to stand.

And then, several gunshots rang at that time. The soldier who got hoisted up by Sabas danced like a badly made marionette. At the same time, Sabas's palm heel struck at the abdomen of the soldier he turned as shield as though he was beating up the dead.

Even though he and the corpse was in posture where they were mostly glued to each other, the pitiful soldier A was sent flying like a cannon ball.

□Uoh□

□Wha, what-□

The soldiers behind who were firing lost their cool seeing their comrade's corpse suddenly flying horizontally at them and they dodged. Their firing stopped.

□Fuhn□

□Gahah□

The pseudo-cannon body blow once more burst at the soldier B. He was holding down his stomach while his body was leaning forward and he fell on his knees. His mouth

vomited out froth mixed with blood and he convulsed in twitches.

□You bastard——□

□Hah□

□Goeh□

Soldier C aimed his rifle, but what was reflected in his sight was only the flapping end of the butler uniform. The elbow strike of Sabas who slipped into his bosom struck the center of his sternum, \*bogyu\* a wretched sound that had never been heard before rang.

Without even paying attention to soldier C who was limply collapsing behind, Sabas pulled out a handgun from the holster on the waist of soldier C who was falling.

.....Surely, soldier D and E who were behind soldier C were witnessing an unrealistic scene of an old man in butler uniform appearing from the shadow of their slowly falling comrade, pointing a gun at their way.

\*tan-, tan-.\*

Two gunshots. The headshot was also two.

\*thud-\* Soldier D and E collapsed.

□Ah, over there-□

□Shit-, Fritz and others got done in! That butler uniformed man there-□

More soldiers who heard the gunshots appeared from the corridor's corner bustlingly. The corridor was a straight line.

There was around ten meter until the corner where the soldiers were appearing.

□Gramps-, come ba——□

Roze was about to yell□come back□. But, before she could, Sabas had moved.

Forward.

With a low stance as though crawling on the ground, he sprinted like a fired bullet.

The flapping fringe of the butler uniform was beautiful.

Gun muzzles flashed grandly. Bullet storm was fired.

However, that didn't even graze the old butler.

□How the hell!?!□

One soldier reflexively acted the straight-man. The old butler who was moving with small sways to left and right without even slowing down for a bit and couldn't be touched even by rifle bullet was already in horror territory.

The truth was he only calculated the firing line from the direction of the muzzle and before he was shot he evaded to a place where bullets wouldn't hit, but seen from the side it was a really incomprehensible situation.

□Dammit all-□

Soldier F was unable to put up with it any longer and he jumped out from the corridor's corner, he held his rifle to shoot from the hip and unleashed it in full-auto.

So that it couldn't be dodged, he must be intending to scatter bullets from left to right uniformly.

□Laughable!□

Butler-san said something.

Right after that, the rifle bullets that were mowing down in fan shape were passing down right below Sabas in vain. Yes, Sabas kicked on the corridor's wall and with a triangle jump he took refuge midair.

At the same time, he was firing bullets at the soldiers hiding at the corner to stop them from moving while his fingers caught the ornamental part of the ceiling's light, and like a pendulum he increased his leaping range while accelerating further.

While showing a midair twist that would make even the famous move Shi○i of a certain gymnastic athlete who twisted too much to go pale, Sabas's posture became upside down just right above soldier F. Like that, he threw the handgun that ran out of bullet to another soldier, grasped the chin of soldier F, and using the momentum of the twist the neck snapped. (TN: I don't know which athlete and move it referred to here)

Sabas performed a beautiful landing at the shadow of soldier F that was spinning and spinning as though in a dance while his body was collapsing down, when a bullet approached him.

\*kan-\*

Such light sound rang out.

□How is that possible!?!□



□How can that be possible!?!□

The straight-man act of soldier G and queen-sama overlapped. If it was said that it couldn't be helped then it couldn't be helped. After all, Sabas-san had just deflected a rifle bullet.

——Using a polished shiny silver tray that he took out from somewhere.

□A butler has to be able to deflect something like a bullet using a tray at the very least-□

□No, that's stran——gueh□

To be specific, the silver tray that Sabas took out was specially made to be tough enough to deflect bullet, furthermore rather than calling it deflecting he was putting angle on the tray when the bullet impacted so it was more correct to call it “averting” though.....

In any case, normally nine out of ten the tray would get sent flying and the target would still get hit, so it didn't change how uncommon what happened was.

Anyway, soldier G who acted the straight-man had his throat crushed by the silver tray that flew at him like a Frisbee and he fell while raising a groaning voice that sounded like a frog's croak.

The other soldiers returned to their senses and they re-aimed their rifle. Soldier H's rifle muzzle locked-on at the forehead of Sabas who had approached until right in front of him.

But, when he was on the verge of pulling the trigger,

□He, he vani——□

□Too slow.□

Unable to follow the figure of Sabas that sank down deeply, it looked like he vanished and the soldier was shaken. And then, without even any time to shudder from hearing the voice from below, the butler kick that sprang up pulverized the jaw & snapped the neck and soldier H ascended.

□You-, monster-□

□Die, old maann-□

□You bastarddd, I'll kill——□

Soldier I, J, K surrounded Sabas. Three rifle muzzles were aimed from three directions at him in a really close range. Instantly the three of them each raised a short scream. It happened at the same time when Sabas made a rotation from riding the centrifugal force of the kick that drew an artistic circular orbit.

Looking closer, there was a sewing needle in soldier I's eye, a knife stabbed on J's arm, and blood spurting out from soldier K's wrist.

The three who were flinching back from the pain exposed a fatal opening. Naturally, there was no way the old butler who was letting out sharp eye glint that could even be mistaken as dragon eyes would overlook that opening.

□Shi-□

Butler-sama performed a beautiful break dance in a world with up and down reversed.

Let's say it, one more time. The flapping butler uniform was beautiful.

Sabas's long legs were swung circularly. A sharp knife sprang out from the tip of the glossy butler shoes. It caressed the throat of the soldiers as though they were sucked into its orbit.

\*pisha-\* Matching Sabas's legs orbit, a line of blood was drawn on the wall.

Sabas was on one knee when he recovered from the extremely dangerous break dance. He stood up and dusted off his hem before taking out a folding umbrella from out of nowhere as expected.

At the same time when he opened it with a smooth motion, \*pusha——\* rain of blood showered down. Of course, it didn't touch Sabas who was under an umbrella.

\*Thud\* The soldiers whose carotid artery was tore open crumbled down.

□Fumu. I tried to create it to kill time, but unexpectedly it was a bit useful.□

Sabas-san muttered such thing while he twisted the folding umbrella. Its frame came off and only its center pole remained, at the same time \*shakin-\* a sharp double-edged blade sprang out from its tip.

And then, he readied it, and like an athlete of javelin throw, he threw it deeper inside the corridor.

□U, UOOOOOOOH□

In a superb timing, the last soldier who seemed to be in hiding leaped out. And then, in the right timing his throat received the umbrella attack and he blankly collapsed backward.

□Now, Roze-sama. For the time being I have removed the danger ahead. It will be unfavorable if they approach in force. Let's hurry on ahead.□

□Ah, yes.□

Heaps of corpses all around. The faces of Roze, the Crow siblings, and the imperial guards were twitching at such disastrous scene of the corridor while rushing toward Sabas's position.

□He, hey, gramps. Just now, when you were surrounded by the soldiers, what did you do?□

Roze must be referring to the time when soldier I, J, K suddenly received damage. She knew that Sabas had done something, but it was too fast that she didn't know what he actually did.

It seemed that it wasn't just Roze who had that question, the Crow siblings and the imperial guards were also the same, rather it was them who looked more curious, so Roze unconsciously questioned while understanding that this wasn't the time.

Sabas who was rushing through the corridor with sure footsteps even while putting his guard up sent a sharp gaze at the Crow siblings and the imperial guards□Even all of you couldn't see it?□. Seeing them twitched, Sabas shook his head as though lamenting their inadequacy very much while answering.

□It's nothing significant. I was shooting the sewing needle inside my mouth while hurling knife from the launcher inside my sleeve, at the same time I swung a bit sturdy thread that can also be used for sewing to cut the wrist. That's all.□

□Is, is that so? But, gramps. Why sewing tool?□

□Because I'm a butler.□

Hearing the words of their teacher Sabas, his personal pupils the Crow siblings thought,□This person, he become stronger since retiring and becoming a butler□. Sabas sent an even sharper gaze at such Crow siblings.

□Of course, even Olga and Jean can also do just this much. ....Isn't that right, you two?□

□Ye, Yes-Sir——□

□I, it will be easy victoryy-□

Of course, they couldn't. The two could also crush enemy of the same number in the same situation like just now if they used gun. But, something like facing multiple fully armed soldiers in only close-quarter combat almost without using gun and taking care of all of them in less than a minute was.....

The imperial guards were sending sympathizing gaze at their captain and vice captain.

By any chance, the vocation butler was endowed with strongest as the default might be the same in any world.

□Perhaps, it will be fine with just gramps alone.....□

Roze unconsciously muttered in small volume. The imperial guards got faraway look hearing that.

Roze and others who were traveling for some time while the engagement against the enemy was dealt with Sabas who was fighting like a fierce god, they finally reached a private room of the royalty that was in the center of the palace.

□Roze-sama. This room, is the private room of Roze-sama's mother——Averia-sama. Averia-sama was cuddling Roze-sama who was just born in this room.□

□This room, is Okaa-sama's.....□

Inside the room was simple. There was almost no furniture or implements, in exchange there was a lot miscellaneous luggage put in there. It seemed it was used not as someone's private room, but as a storage room.

Even so, Roze could somehow imagine it. Her mother that she had only even seen in photo was here, yes, surely she was near that window there, comforting her baby self inside her embrace.

□Roze-sama. Soldiers are coming.□

One imperial guard who stood watch at the corridor called with a small voice.

Roze put a lid on her overflowing feeling and she looked at Sabas. Sabas nodded and he stepped strongly on a spot at the floor. And then, he moved to left and right as though to

confirm his step while stepping with the same strength at another five places.

The result, a part of the wall made a small mechanical sound \*kiin\*, and a lid the size of a palm slid. There, they saw a letter board of this world.

□——Roze-sama, it's "the one who walk together proudly(Roze Phi Erute)".□

□.....Yes.□

That was the password to open the hidden passage. The nuance of those words resembled her first and second name. Holding the feeling that was inserted into her name inside her heart, Roze typed in the letters.

Mechanical operation sound was coming from inside the wall.

Instantly,

□Roze-sama-□

□-□

What resounded was Sabas's voice, and consecutive gunshots.

□Kuh-. A trap-□

Olga bit her lips while firing bullets at the automatic interception mechanical gun that looked like a sentry gun which sprang out from behind an implement.

□Gramps-!?!□

□-, I let my guard down. So they put a trap that operated together with the authentication device.....□

Perhaps Gregor had assumed that the driven out royalty would come back here. The people who knew about the procedure to open the hidden passage in this room even before the kingdom got usurped were only the royalty and Sabas who was the imperial guard captain.

And then, the royalty, Roze's family would never leak out that information to the enemy, therefore, Sabas thought that the enemy couldn't open the hidden passage here but.....

If there were a few decades since that day of tragedy, then certainly it was possible to at least installed a trick at the authentication device. Perhaps this was revenge for being able to reach until the authentication device, yet they weren't able to advance further ahead than that.

Sabas spat out□I'm growing dull□at himself who didn't notice that this place was noticed already and he stood up. The instant he did that, bloods were dripping down. The flank of the butler uniform could be seen changing color despite the black color that made it not standing out.

□Gramps-, your wound!? Me, medical treatment quickly-□

Roze reached out her hand at Sabas's flank, but that hand was stopped by Sabas himself. At the same time, gunshots rang out from the corridor. Their position became known from the gunshot just now and the soldiers were rushing here.

The imperial guards guarding the entrance raised an angry voice□Their number is more than twenty! We won't hold out for long! Hurry-□while returning fire.



Sabas nodded and he turned a sharp gaze at Crow siblings.

□Olga, Jean. Fulfill the duty of the imperial guard. Roze-sama and Kuwaibel-sama, take them to the Spring of True Dragon's Tear even at the cost of your life.□

□.....Yes-. Without fail.□

□Yes, teacher-□

Seeing Sabas gave such order while emitting a dominating aura that was really unthinkable to come from an injured person, his personal pupils the Crow siblings held their breath. They felt Sabas's resolve.

□Gramps, what are you saying——□

□Please go, Roze-sama. Gramps, will hold back the enemy here.□

□Why!? We only need to all enter the passage and then close the door!□

Sabas shook his head. And then, he fired toward the painting that decorated the room.

□I was careless. That's a hidden camera. Most likely they know the password already. Through there is a small passage that continue until underground. We will be helpless if we are attacked from above. This is my failure. It's my wish to be given the chance to redeem myself.□

□Such thing-. It's fine already, everyone quickly enter the passage!□

Roze grasped Sabas's arm and she walked toward the passage. Right after that,□-, grenade! Get down-□A warning

resounded. Sabas covered for Roze, at the same time a flame blast enveloped the area near the door, the four imperial guards who were returning fire were blown away.

It seemed he avoided fainting with his trained body, but seeing the blood flowing from everywhere and also the bloody cough, there was no doubt that the internal organs were harmed. It was obviously a heavy injury.

Countless footsteps resounded. The rushing soldiers showed up their face from the door.

\*suton-\*

Like that, knife pierced their eyeball or throat. Furthermore, the thrown black object—a hand grenade rolled into the corridor and exploded.

After the explosive sound that resounded once more, groaning voices leaked out from the corridor.

□Olga, Jean-. Take Roze-sama away from here!□

Sabas's voice resounded.

Sabas rushed toward the corridor and he stole the rifles of two soldiers who were killed by knife. He spread both his hands and fired to the left and right of the corridor. Anguished voices□Gyah□□Gaah□rose once more.

□Gramps, come back! This is an ord——□

□Haven't you resolved yourself-□

Roze who was about to order him to come back was pierced by Sabas's angry voice that she had never heard until now. Roze turned speechless against Sabas who was hiding with

the door's cover while continuously pulling his rifles' trigger at the corridor. For Roze, Sabas was a good natured old man. He had never raised his voice like this at her.

□Gra, gramps.....□

□You decided to fight aren't you! You swore to weigh your important things aren't you! For the sake of the future, you will seize the day, you determined to do that aren't you!□

Then,

□Show that you are going to choose! Or else, are you going to abandon the future for the sake of this old bone!?!□

That's right. The path that she determined was this kind of path. A king, had to make a choice.

She had made her resolve. Even so, for Roze who didn't know her parents, Sabas was, her real.....

□.....-. Olga-, Jean-. Choose the members who will stop the enemy along with Sabas! The rest is with me!□

□Ye, yes-□

□By your will-□

Roze who roughly rubbed her eyes that were almost spilling over adroitly turned her body toward the hidden passage.

The four imperial guards who were blown away were injured all over their body, yet they took up rifle by themselves and stood up to return fire along with Sabas. And then, Roze looked back across her soldier toward Sabas.

Sabas also turned her gaze at Roze while reloading.

□Sabas, defend this place, to the last.□

□Fuh. By your will. Roze-sama.□

She thought of him as her real grandfather. Or perhaps, even as a father. The unexpressed feeling was put into the order that was said brokenly.

That feeling, it certainly reached Sabas who had been at her side all this time since she was born.

Roze vanished deep inside the hidden passage. Olga and Jean, and other imperial guards, they nodded deeply at Sabas and their comrades before following behind. The door closed.

Sabas shot out the letter board after they passed through. With the technology of the divine country, even with the letter board destroyed there was still a high possibility of opening the path with the password known, but it could buy more time.

□Advance forward, my beloved child. I also thought of you like my real granddaughter.□

The remaining imperial guards showed a wry smile hearing Sabas's monologue, thinking that he should just say it directly. Sabas who noticed them cleared his throat looking a bit embarrassed.

□What's with those eyes, you guys. From here onward will be hell. Put your back into it.□

□Kukuh, you're right. We will accompany you until the end you know, Sabas-sama.□

□The demonic imperial guard captain is revived huh.□

□It has been an honor.□

□Let's show them the reserve strength of us, Avenst's imperial guard.□

While fully wounded all over the body, the imperial guards replied fearlessly. Sabas smiled□fuh□and nodded.

Something like a rocket warhead like before peeked out from ahead at the corridor. Sabas's rifle muzzle pierced the warhead with pinpoint accuracy and it exploded. The imperial guards sent in storm of bullets toward the corridor that was enveloped in flame.

□You guys, hold down the left corridor. I'll return in three minutes.□

Saying that, Sabas leaped out to the corridor. Bullets were flying from the right corridor, but they were avoided by kicking on the wall and ceiling using unrestricted movement and he pounced at the corner where the enemies were hiding.

The soldiers didn't think that someone would break through amidst those rifle bullets even in their wildest imagination and they were taken aback,

□Now then, I received the command from her majesty the queen to defend to the last—to “defend by slaughtering all the enemy”. Can I have every single one of you depart to the next world?□

\*shakin-\* Three meal knives each sprang out from both sleeves. Each knife was held between fingers, as though they were shining silver claws.

□Fi, Fireee-□

An angry yell resounded from a person who seemed to be the captain.

The next moment, there were also agonizing cries that resounded.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday, tentatively, regards.



# Arifureta After II King's Understanding Last Part

AN: The story doesn't advance.....

Recently I say this every time but, sorry it's late okay.

---

Their steps were relying only on the emergency light shining faintly to descend the spiraling staircase that looked like it would continue until the bottom of earth.

Other than the short exhalation and footsteps, there were only the faint vibrating sound and explosion sound that could be heard. The place was quiet. The atmosphere was heavy with no one speaking any word, further fostering that silence.

□Pii□

□I'm fine, Ku-chan.□

Kuwaibel who was flying beside Roze turned a slightly worried gaze toward her. When Roze answered inside the broken silence, Olga and Jean, followed by the imperial guards were also sending her expression of consideration.

□Right now, let's concentrate in accomplishing our pbjective.□



Surely no matter what Roze said, the expression of the Crow siblings and the imperial guards wouldn't clear. That was just how terrible the expression of Roze who was giving the order to defend to the death at her parent replacement. Because Roze was aware of how her face looked, her words toward them naturally became like that.

□It will be fine Roze-sama. This is Sabas-sama——teacher who we are talking about. After all even among the imperial guards there is argument whether it's really fine to classify that person as human.□

□Roze-sama, it's just as Nee-san said. It might be even the case that he is only able to perceive the command of defending to the death to mean□defend by slaughtering all the enemy□. Even just worrying about teacher is only a waste of time.□

Olga and Jean's consoling words were followed by the imperial guards too. Their mouth were saying□That isn't human, but something else□, or□Actually he is a weapon of massacre that was created by the ancient civilization□, or□Rather, he won't get hit even when in the middle of crossing fire using machine gun□□I mean, if it's slow bullet like rocket or missile, he can normally catch it and then throw it back, seriously□, or□Every time he gave us hellish training while yelling 'what are you doing unable to do something this easy!', but we are just normal human here□, or□I want to hit the me ten years ago who thought that I absolutely will get payback when he turned senile□and so on.....

Midway the complaints of the imperial guards were overflowing. The complaints were already coming out like flood. The eyes of all of them were gradually losing vitality even though they were in the middle of mission. The

imperial guards were getting killed by their memory with gramps!

□Kufuh, fufufuh. The, then, surely, he will be fine.□

A small giggle resounded. The imperial guards were taken aback and returned to reality. There they saw the figure of Roze with trembling shoulders. It seemed that her heart was cleared slightly from the lovely reminiscence of the imperial guards.

While they were doing that, Roze and others came to the bottom of the spiral stair. There was a slightly spacious landing there with double-leaf door that opened by sliding. There was a console emitting bluish white light. Seeing the display, it seemed it would perform confirmation by putting a hand palm on it. Most likely it would analyze the royalty's bloodline.

Olga held back Roze who was standing in front of the console while she manipulated something like a tablet in her hand.

□Roze-sama. In the interior map that I received from Sabas-sama, the other side of this door is the floor that was a level above the lowest floor. If we go straight through the right and corridor, there will be a stair to the lowest floor.□

Roze nodded briskly and then she continued while turning her gaze to Kuwaibel.

□If I remember correctly, the lowest floor is partly like a labyrinth isn't it?□

At the lowest floor, so that even in the case of intruder the deepest part couldn't be reached easily, there were several traps installed through the way from the surface. Even the

level where Roze and others were currently at were originally set up with traps that might make anyone without qualification to lose their life and also several locks that had to be unlocked.

If they had reached this far, then what was left was only to break through the labyrinth of the underground's lowest floor that was created for the sake of buying time against intruder, at this point, there wouldn't be any problem if there was a monarch dragon. Perhaps it was related with the [Spring of True Dragon's Tear], because it was only a monarch dragon that could advance without getting lost.

Kuwaibel was confidently crying [Piuh], perhaps because he had already grasped some kind of intuition.

[Yes. Just a bit more. ....But even though I said that, it has been a few decades since the palace was snatched away. There is enough possibility that the underground's state isn't the same with the past. No matter what, don't get separated from us.]

[We will leave it to the two of you. However, we have to hurry as much as possible. Because right now, even while we are doing this, everyone in the sky is in the brink of death.]

When Roze said that, Crow siblings and also the imperial guards nodded strongly. And then, they faced the door with their rifle at ready. Olga and Jean took position at both sides of the door. And then, when Olga nodded quietly, Roze determinedly put her hand on the console.

\*pi-\* A small confirmation sound rang for a beat. After that came a small activation sound and the door slowly opened along with it.

Outside the door they found a passage that continued straight and a passage that stretched to the left and right. There wasn't any sign of people.

□Let's go.□

The Crow siblings and the imperial guards nodded at Roze's words. They stepped out to the right passage with a smooth column movement.

After a while, they came to see a stair in front of them. Roze and others carefully and yet speedily rushed to the lowest floor.

They went down the long stair and jumped down on the last stair step—at that time,

\*kiin\*

Flash and sound exploded along with such small sound.

□-!?!□

□Roze-sama!□

□Kuwaibel-sama!□

Olga immediately leaped at Roze and like that they retreated to the stair's wall as though falling on it, Jean called at Kuwaibel while returning back to the stair. The surrounding was overran by terrific light and high-pitched sound that paralyzed the eardrum.

(Kuh, sight and hearing got done in! Is it a trap, or else-)

Olga cursed inside her heart and uneasy expression emerged on her face from being unable to grasp the

situation around her at all. Really sadly, Olga's fear was proved to be right.

A beat later, Olga's senses that got two of the five senses crushed by the light and sound that surpassed the permissible range recovered rapidly. What entered her sight that was painted white was a silver light enveloping her body and Roze who she was covering. It seemed, that her senses that were temporarily paralyzed by something like a flashbang got recovered by Kuwaibel.

But, naturally they didn't have any leeway to feel relieved. It was clear that the situation was urgent from the pained familiar voice of her family that reached her ear.

□Jean-□

□-, Nee-san, an ambush-. This place is bad-□

Jean was kneeling in front of Roze and Olga while showing his back. Blood was flowing from his shoulder that was desperately supporting the collapsible small shield which looked like it was going to be blown away by impact.

Originally this small shield was something to be carried into a close-quarter combat in order to endure a few bullets. If it was unfolded to the maximum then it would have the size that could cover the whole upper body, but its impact mitigation's efficiency and endurance wouldn't be that high.

Even so, the shield could defend against the fired bullets this long was because Kuwaibel responded to Jean's call and he enveloped that small shield with silver light. And then it was also because of Jean's vigor that wouldn't let the existence behind him to get even a single scratch no matter the cost.

□Pike-, what about Serio!?□

□-, it's no good.□

□Shit-□

The imperial guard called Pike answered at Jean's call while enduring bullets using similar small shield. There was a blood soaked figure of an imperial guard beside him lying on the floor. From Pike's expression, it was obvious that the body wasn't breathing anymore. Jean reflexively cursed.

Olga and the imperial guards covered behind Pike read the lines of shots and they returned fire. Right after that, multiple short voices of death agony rose from deeper into the passage.

The shooting stopped for a moment. Using that opening, the imperial guards gathered around Roze and then constructed a barrier using their small shield.

Olga fired even more bullets. However, this time she didn't fix her aim, she adjusted her bullets so they ricocheted into the visible passage and the passage at the blind spot. At the same time, she closed her eyes while focusing her ear.

□.....Five people at the front passage. And then three people each at the left and right passage. Kuwaibel-sama, which is the right path?□

□Pii. Pipih□

She calculated the enemy number relying on the echoing sound of the bullet and the enemy presence that reacted to the bullet. The number of the ambush soldiers was confirmed by Olga's signature skill. The questioned Kuwaibel

cried looking a bit stumped before his tail pointed at the front passage.

□Olga?□

Olga answered Roze's call along with a strong gaze.

□Roze-sama, there is no time. We are forcing our way through.□

□-□

Shaking off the gaze of Roze who was holding her breath, Olga ordered her important little brother as the captain of the imperial guard.

□Jean. Cut open the path.□

□Roger Nee-san, no, captain. Pike, Weber, suppress the enemy at the left and right. Raymond and Olson, you two charge forward with me. We are routing them!□

There was no hesitation. Jean and the imperial guards responded immediately. And then, when they were about to step forward,

□Fortunes of war with you-□

The corner of everyone's lips rose at that encouragement from the queen that they respected.

Jean and others rushed out all at once. Pike and Weber fired in full-auto into the left and right corridor without even fearing getting shot or running out of bullet. Although they were only raining bullets in order to hold back the enemy, but their skill was certainly in the level that was worthy to be called the most elite of Avenst.

They splendidly shut out the shooting from the left and right temporarily.

Not letting go of that moment, Raymond and Olson held their small shield to the front while sprinting. Behind him was Jean, and further behind him was Olga and Roze following.

Bullets were flying from the front like a rainy storm. The small shields that were clad in silver were already cracked and in the verge of getting pulverized.

□Guh□

Raymond raised a pained voice. A bullet grazed his leg. Although he had lowered his body as much as possible to enlarge the coverable range, it was impossible to defend everything using the small shield's range.

But, Raymond didn't stop. He put strength into the leg that although it wasn't hit directly yet it was still spurting out blood, and took a step forward.

Right after that, his small shield broke.

□Gah, guh, oaAAAAAAAH□

A shout surged. While his body was getting hit with bullets, Raymond——didn't stop even then. He covered his head with his arms while further stepping forward in the lead using his own body as shield replacement. It could be seen that for a moment, the enemies flinched at that intense drive and demonic visage.

The distance shrank even further.



The restarted shooting finally robbed the last strength from Raymond's body.

□Go-□

□Ou-□

Olson who replaced Raymond to stand in the lead exchanged gaze with his war buddy for an instant. And then, he took over the baton along with loud yell of fighting spirit and broke further through the bullets barrage!

At the front passage, the figure of the enemies peeking out their face from the turn midway could be seen. Astonished expression from seeing something that was hard to understand was pasted on their face.

□Don't look down-, on Avenst's-, imperial guard's-, on my resolve-□

Olson's shield broke. His body shook from impact, but the momentum of Olson that was advancing as though he was burning his life to ash wasn't stopping. While getting drilled by bullets, he threw away the remain of his small shield and rapid fired his handgun. One shot splendidly bored into an enemy's forehead.

And then, he reached it.

□I'll-, leave the rest-. Vice captain!□

□Yeah. You did well-□

Rushing passed the falling Olson, the favorite pupil of the inhuman butler leaped out.

The bullets of the enemies lying in wait broke the lower half of Jean's small shield and pierced his stomach. But, as though such thing was just a fly's bite, Jean shot without even a moment of pause. His aim was terrifyingly accurate, the fired bullet destroyed the enemy's head and threw out his brain matter.

The other enemies were going to pull their trigger even now. Normally this would be the time to launch evade & counter attack. But, there was no way he could do that now. He couldn't let even a single bullet of the enemies lurking in this corner to pass behind him.

He bet his pride as the vice captain of the imperial guard. He bet the resolve of her majesty the queen. He bet the trust of his important sister-.

□OoOOOOOOOOH□

□Wha, what the hell, with these guys-□

He tackled toward the three enemies huddling together while his body was receiving bullets. It was a shield bash using the half-broken small shield that was carried on by betting the everything of the imperial guard's vice captain of dragon kingdom Avenst.

It possessed enough might to altogether cut a swath through the three enemies who turned timid from that bloody drive.

In the middle of collapsing on the floor as though tripping over, Jean yelled.

□Take care of Roze-sama! Nee-san-□

□Yes-. Leave it to me!□

Olga and Roze, and then Kuwaibel were rushing through from behind. For a moment, Jean and Roze's gaze tangled.

The thing dwelling inside Roze's eyes. There wasn't any feeling of pity or apology for having others become sacrifice. What was there was merely the color of praise and gratitude.

Beyond doubt, that was a reward for those who accomplished the duty given to them by betting their life.

(That's truly what is worthy, for a warring queen. ....You have become strong.)

Jean's lips unconsciously loosened at that color of heart showed by the queen that he respected.

That was a sight that was like a nightmare for the enemy side that was rallying over their posture. After all there was a man there who kept smiling even while getting blood soaked from receiving many bullets. It was only natural for them to feel so.

Toward them who couldn't help but trickling cold sweats despite being the side in advantage, Jean stood up while saying.

□You guys, feel free to learn the dreadfulness of the person who you turned into enemy. —Avenst's imperial guard, is a bit stubborn you know?□

A beat later, yells and gunshots echoed from the passage Roze and Olga left behind.

Roze and Olga listened to the gunshots behind them while rushing through the passage following Kuwaibel's guidance.

There wasn't any word, the two of them were merely staring straight ahead.

A few minutes later after rushing through several turns.

□Roze-sama.□

□Yes, it seems we arrived.□

There was a large hall ahead of their gaze. Deeper inside the room there was a large double-leaf door around three meter tall, splendid stone statues of dragon were standing at the left and right. When they tried approaching the door, on the wall there was a largish depression modeled like a hand. Roze wondered if it was a kind of authentication device, but there wasn't anything like machine anywhere. It really looked like nothing more but a depression that was dug out on the wall.

□It cannot be passed by only a monarch dragon. It's meaningless with just a royalty. With a pair as partner together, for the first time the□Spring of True Dragon's Tear□ will have meaning—I wonder, will the ancient selection recognize me as a king?□

She was a survivor of an usurped country. Sure enough, would she be recognized at a queen of the dragon kingdom.....this wasn't any machine, but a door and spring of unknown principle that was said to be created by a true dragon and dragon knight from far in the past.

While feeling a slight anxiety, Roze put her hand on the wall's depression.

Right after that, a silver light ran through the door. It was as though water was flowing into a ditch, silver light traced the door surface and made a large dragon kingdom's crest to surface.

And then, the door——didn't open.

No, more accurately there was a path opened. The double-leaf door didn't open, in exchange something like a shining mirror, or perhaps a membrane was created.

□This is, the door toward the spring?□

Roze muttered to herself. Kuwaibel too, this was his first time seeing it, but he nodded□Pii□as though he understood that inside there was the place that was their objective..

Olga tried to touch the shining membrane. Her finger sunk smoothly. There wasn't any particular sensation. As expected, it seemed they could go inside.

□Roze-sama, let's hurry. Quickly, to save everyo——□

\*tan-\*

A sound of light plosive sound rang.□Eh?□It was unclear whether that voice leaked out from Olga, or perhaps Roze.

At the very least, the one who vomited out blood was Olga.

□Olga-□

Roze yelled at the same time with Olga jumping at Roze and carried her to retreat in the cover of a dragon statue. Instantly, bullet storm rained down on Roze and co. The dragon statue was solid so although its surface got shaved

but it was satisfactorily accomplished a role as defensive wall.

□Olga-, please get a hold of yourself!□

□Gohoh, kafuh□

She must be trying to reply back, but perhaps her trachea was filled with blood, because she only coughed out blood without words. In exchange, she leaned on the dragon statue while pulling out her gun and returned fire toward the soldiers who were firing from the passage before the hall.

There were quite a lot of soldiers. A lot more than the number that Jean and the others were holding back. It was obvious that enemy reinforcement was following behind them using some kind of method.

Olga conveyed using her gaze to Roze so she would advance along with Kuwaibel. The shadow of death was looming on that face. Even from the bleeding amount it was undoubtedly a lethal wound. She must be planning to buy time in this nearly certain death.

Roze looked at that gaze, at the soldiers who looked like they would rush to here anytime now, and then at Kuwaibel who was crying out worriedly.

□Ku-chan-. No, Kuwaibel! Go ahead! I and Olga will hold them back here!□

□Pi!?!□

Taking a rifle in hand, Roze leaned out half her body from the dragon statue's cover and returned fire. The moment her face peeked out, in a stroke of bad luck a bullet grazed her cheek. Fresh blood dyed red that smooth face. However,

Roze didn't showed any sign of faltering, she continued to pull the trigger in order to buy time for Olga to reload.

□Even if we aren't beside each other, but our hearts are connected. Just like how human and dragon were once like that by the heaven and earth. Now, Kuwaibel. From here on, go by yourself!□

□.....Piuh□

Kuwaibel softly crawled his tail on Roze's cheek. And then, the moment Roze yelled□Now-□, he flew out from the dragon statue and flew into the light membrane by himself.

The light membrane didn't vanish. Roze whispered□As I thought□with a glance at that. Thinking of the possibility that the spring would stay opened until the monarch dragon was given power, there was no way they could enter together. The light membrane let Olga's finger passed when it was opened.

In other words, the enemy soldiers could also enter into the spring.

If the soldiers rushed into the hall, they would become target for Olga and Roze. This place was optimum for holding back the enemy.

That was why,

□Please show me your figure that become splendid okay, partner.□

Seeing Roze saying that while making a faint smile, Olga who was still continuing to fire with fortitude will even while leaking out wheezing breath also made a small smile.

Their ammo wasn't that many. Thinking of the amount of shooting necessary to maintain the equilibrium, perhaps they could only continue for five minutes. But even before that Olga wouldn't last. If Olga's precise shooting was gone, it would be even quicker for the equilibrium to crumble.

But, even so, Roze and Olga's smile didn't vanish.

□Uguh□

Roze's shoulder was drilled by a bullet. Blood spurted out, painting the girl even more ghastly.

However, her smile didn't vanish.

A lot of sacrifices were created, but they flawlessly let them reached this point.

The last monarch dragon magnificently laid hands on the trump card.

□This is, our victory!□

Roze's words assaulted the soldiers like a bullet.

During the time Roze and others were in a deathly battle deep under the palace, at the surface a similar, no, even fiercer battle was in progress.

□Sanchez squad was done in-. Someone-, can anyone reinforce!?!□

□This is Cranks 1(Bovid). Los squad-. We will manage somehow here! Head there for reinforcement!□



□This is Odet 2-. There is only me left! Sink or swim, I'll launch kamikaze attack at the bridge!□

□Crank 1-, this is Shunt 1! Simon squad is annihilated-. We cannot protect Averia with just us!□

□Siegel 1 here! This is bad-. Rozeria is receiving concentrated fire-. Stan squad and Ester squad follow——□

□Shit-, Siegel 1 fell! Siegel 2 will take over the command! Protect Rozeria!□

Communications of mixed angry yell and scream flitted about in the airspace. The number of the dragon kingdom's sky battlecrafts had been reduced until two third since Roze and others infiltrated the place until now.

To be able to sink seven ships of the defense fleet right after the start of battle could be said as amazing military gains even though it came from an impossible surprise attack. Even after that, further four more ships were felled from the main cannon of airship Rozeria and Averia, the enemy's battle strength was cut in half.

Perhaps, they would be able to even annihilate the enemy at this rate.....

There were also people who were thinking such thing, but as expected from the last fortress of the divine country, they weren't that generous. When the defense fleet finally formed their barrier, the attack from Avenst side couldn't pass through to a despairing degree.

Even when airship Rozeria and Averia fired their main cannon from the maximum short distance, it only pierced the barrier slightly and damaged a part of the ship's frame, far from sinking the enemy. The story would be different if

they could hit the bridge, but there was no way the defense fleet that was fully operating would give them such opening.

Even the sky battlecrafts that penetrated inside the barrier had their hands full against the enemy sky battlecrafts that could freely enter inside the barrier, they didn't have any leeway to attack the bridge at all, if they recklessly aimed there then that would be a good chance for the ship's weapon or the sky battlecrafts to shoot them down.

And then, the more time passed, the more the enemy put in order their counter attack readiness and they cornered the airship Rozeria and Averia instead.

Furthermore,

□This is, Cline! Damage at Avenst's power mechanism! We won't be able to endure more attack than this!□

Mother ship Avenst that was attacking with manual armaments operated by civilians of all age and gender from above had smokes erupting from its rear hull while starting to tilt in a big way.

The one who was calling for reinforcement with uneasy voice was the captain of mother ship Avenst, Cline Sanders. He who was also the supreme commander was already at the limit and gave an order.

□All sky battlecraft squads focus on protecting Avenst! Rozeria cover for the sky battlecraft squads! Averia, hold position at Avenst's left wing!□

In the first place their role was to buy time. If their attacks couldn't go through properly, then what was left was to focus on defense resolutely and bought time. Mother ship

Avenst falling was something that had to be avoided no matter what.

Rozeria and Averia rushed through the airspace in reckless orbit with the resolve to get shot. Both airships were already damaged all over too, but it seemed they still barely possess fighting capability.

Bovid and others distanced themselves from the defense fleet. Barrages were sent like a tsunami from the defense fleet to not let them get away.

The veterans like Bovid and others evaded that with maneuver as though they were possessed while returning to the mother ship Avenst, but the pilots who still hadn't left the immature stage were shot down one after another.

□All squads, report! How many of you are left!?!□

The supreme commander of sky battlecraft squads Bovid was shooting down a pursuing enemy sky battlecraft with abnormal maneuver of midair spin while he raised his angry voice.

The returned report was a callous information that further three platoons were annihilated.

Bovid reflexively wanted to curse, but a death god approached from right beside him. A missile was fired from an enemy sky battlecraft that had circled around unnoticed.

The timing was impossible to evade, even so Bovid was going to make a vain struggle and he put strength into his hand that was holding the stick——

□GURYAAAA-□

Right after that, a black flash blew up the missile.

□Ha, hahah. That's a narrow escape from death. Thanks, black dragon-chan.□

□Guruu□

The black dragon that made a small purr as though to say □Don't mind it□while flying in parallel then swiveled in order to support the other sky battlecrafts. Bovid cracked jokes □That frail kid has grown big huh□, but his expression was grim.

Several black dragons were playing very active roles in many fields. Avenst that was unable to maneuver satisfactorily was still not falling was solely because of their efforts.

But, even that was near the limit.

□Your majesty.....□

He unconsciously whispered the queen that he respected. 'How much time they have to buy? Is she safe? Will Kuwaibel-sama really able to awaken in the□Spring of True Dragon's Tear□? And will that be enough to overturn this war situation?'

He believed. He believed in it, but Bovid who was a veteran soldier couldn't avoid the black mist of unease to be created in his heart.

□You guys-, just a bit more! Go all out! If Avenst is gone when her majesty come back, then it will be our shame for eternity!□

Even so as a captain, he addressed all the squads that everything was absolutely fine. He maintained his subordinates' morale with jokes and encouragement.

But, reality was heartless, and on top of that it was always moving to unwanted direction every time.

□-. Impossible-. Those guys, they are planning to fire their main cannon!? Averia-, Rozeria! Stop them no matter how-□

Cline's scream surged. When Bovid who was taken aback looked below, there was the figure of a ship aiming its main cannon at Avenst above.

It was only natural that Cline was flustered. Right now if Avenst was shot down in this kind of place, it would fall around the palace. The people living around the palace were unmistakably those with considerable post or pedigree even in the divine country.

Therefore, they estimated that the enemy wouldn't use their main cannon in fear of sinking the ship with one shot but.....

□Damn it-. So those guys are also absolutely at their limit huh!□

It seemed, there was some fellow there who was unable to suppress their fear, or perhaps their rage from seeing a lot of the defense fleet ships getting shot down.

Airship Rozeria and Averia were charging their main cannon and they were going to fire, but they wouldn't make it in time at all. It went without saying that the sky battlecrafts wouldn't be able to do anything.

Bovid, and then everyone of Avenst imagined the scene of their other home town the nation on ship getting annihilated.

——Charging complete.

It vaguely looked like the other defense fleet ships were also panicking. In the middle of that, the main cannon was finally going to fire at the mother ship Avenst——right before that

——\*GOU-\*

A silver flash pierced the sky.

□Hah, you're late, your majesty, monarch dragon-sama.□

Saying that Bovid turned his gaze. Surely, it was undoubtedly a sight that was gazed in astonishment by everyone in this battlefield. In fact, even the defense fleet ship that was in the verge of firing also stopped moving.

What pierced the palace vertically, rising from far underground toward the sky was without mistake a pillar of light.

The pillar of light that was thinning down as though melting into air and then vanished stopped still the time of the battlefield.

Before long, a silver flew out into the sky of the world that was filled with silence.

It flew up to the sky like a cannonball, rolled midair and spread its wings wide. The sunlight caused the dragon scales to sparkle, just how beautiful that figure was.

Dragon scales shining silver. Majestic huge body. Dragon eyes that made anyone filled with awe. That figure with its back toward the sun even made anyone felt its divine majesty.

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

That was unmistakably a dragon's howl. No, it was the howl of the dragon king filled with a dominating aura that was worthy for a king.

Silver aura spread out like a ripple. It remained in all the people of the dragon kingdom.

Right after that, the words of the person who everyone surely longed for reverberated.

□Everyone-. Well done in enduring this long! Your queen, your monarch dragon-, are right here!□

A silver monarch dragon. The one standing on that back was their queen whose beauty wasn't lost even soaked in blood——Roze.

This was the moment, the strongest of dragon kingdom Avenst was revived.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next chapter, perhaps.....I think I'll be able to submit it at 6 P.M Sunday.

# Arifureta After II Hope And Despair And

AN: Merry~ Christmas~

I'll end Tio's arc next week. This is not a lie. It's true. It's true you know?

---

Surely the cause was the silver light that enveloped all the people of Avenst. The words of the queen that shouldn't reach resounded toward all the people in this airspace.

□-, Kuwaibel! That warship!□

□Gua!□

Seeing the smoking and tilting mother ship Avenst, and the warship that was in the verge of firing its main cannon toward that Avenst, Roze yelled while showing unease in her face.

The silver monarch dragon——Kuwaibel who was temporarily awakened as a grown up dragon replied shorty to that yell and he threw back his head.

And then,

——GAAAAAAH!!



He released a breath attack along with a howl. The terrific torrent of light shook the air. The silver breath should be called as a pillar of light already. Naturally, the heat amount it possessed was out of common sense.

The pillar of light cut through the sky in a straight line, and then it impacted the ship. The barrier that repulsed all the attacks of Avenst side was flickering fiercely while warping greatly. While the pillar of light was illuminating the world, the pivot of the divine country's protection——after a slight resistance, it vanished as though getting blown away.

The defense battleship that lost its shield was helplessly hit by the light pillar and a big tunnel was opened in its frame. And then the stocked energy of the main cannon exploded, illuminating the world with even more light of destruction.

The defense battleship that exploded everywhere along with explosive blast rained down to a part of the city. Naturally, there was no way the king of dragon would allow that, he raised a loud cry that was different from before. Thereupon, a membrane of extreme light that looked like an aura that covered a part of the city was manifested.

The light perfectly halted all the wreckages and explosion blast, it didn't stop there, it annihilated what it touched from the edge. It seemed it was an offensive barrier that possessed the power of the light pillar.

Silver aurora shined in the sky. Seeing the sight of the raining down presence of death getting stopped, just what did the people of the city who were moving about in confusion at the sudden war situation would feel?

The monarch dragon's howl resounded in the battlefield once more.

□.....They return back.□

One man whispered that. It was a man with shabby appearance wearing work clothes that looked like old rag. In the eyes of he who was the people of the former dragon kingdom who was working in a harsh place like a slave since before the dawn, tears were faintly surfacing.

□Okaa-san.....what's that?□

□.....Don't call them that. They are our king. Our, queen and monarch dragon-sama.....they came back for us.□

A skinny girl was looking up at the existence that she was told as a fairy-tale before she slept while pointing with her eyes opened wide. The mother who was embracing her daughter from the side was wiping the warm tears flowing down her dirty face many times while leaking out a sobbing voice.

The people of the former dragon kingdom were mostly lower class people whose human right wasn't guaranteed. They were kept alive only for supporting the extravagant livelihood of the divine country's high class people or the privileged class people, they were that kind of existence.

Just how much they were dreaming for the day their king returned inside their long pained life?

The people who were hiding inside building so that they wouldn't get dragged into the war pushed out their face outside one after another as though led by the calling howl of the monarch dragon.

Like that they witnessed it.

The figure of the monarch dragon flying majestically in the sky. And then, the spectacle of countless light sphere floating brilliantly at the monarch dragon's surrounding. Those were stars of aurora.

The enemy was also similarly just staring at the fantastical sight. While the defense fleet and the sky battlecrafts stopped moving, the monarch dragon Kuwaibel's howl surged up. Falling stars phenomenon occurred.

Great number of extreme light bullets rained down toward the other side of the palace like a meteor shower—at the huge breeding farm located at the opposite side of the city. Yes, it was the breeding farm of the dragons that had supported the matchless sky fleet until now.

Countless explosive sounds resounded, the air was teemed with flash that made it as though the palace was tinged with a halo.

——GAAAAAAAAAAH

The howl of monarch dragon Kuwaibel. That was a call. It informed of the return of the king, it called to wake up, rouse up, it was such calling voice.

——Kuwaaaaaa-

——Kyuiiiiiiii-

——oooooOON-

Even feebly, the howls of dragons that responded was definitely emitting delight.

Countless shadow flew up to the sky from behind the palace. The figures of the dragons were small, and fleeting, yet their

wings were flapped powerfully to return to the sky. The people who knew of the former dragon kingdom, and even those who didn't, they tightly grasped at their chest similarly, because of the overflowing emotion that couldn't be described.

□.....-. Don't get absent-minded! Change target-, shot down that dragon-□

One ship of defense fleet returned to their senses. The ship began to charge its main cannon in hurry while its normal cannon and large caliber anti-air weapon spouted fire.

The warship weapons rapidly approached with a force that looked as though it could blow up the atmosphere to buy time, however, in front of Kuwaibel all those were stopped by barrier of light and they couldn't reach his main body. The barrier rippled, and a beat later the cannonballs and bullets were annihilated. The expression of the attacking battleship's captain paled seeing the figure of Kuwaibel that was staying unmoving calmly.

And then, following his self-defense instinct, he was about to give out instruction for further fuel supply to reinforce the barrier to maximum strength in the same time with the main cannon's charging.....

——KUWAAAAAAN-

□-, captain! Dragon core energy's output is declining-. The barrier's strength is lowering!□

□Main cannon's charging rate is reduced-. It will take two minutes until full charge-□

□This is fuel bunker! The dragons are enveloped with strange light! Blade or bullet doesn't work-. Just what in the

world is happening!?!□

The loud howl of the monarch dragon and reports that made one wanted to run from reality struck the ears.

Monarch dragon Kuwaibel didn't have transforming power like Tio. Therefore, he couldn't make the feeble dragons to rebirth into gallant dragons.

But, he too was a king of dragon beyond doubt. That power similarly existed to protect. The silver light was the proof of divine protection bestowed by the monarch dragon. Under Kuwaibel's sky, laying hand toward the people he decided to protect became a herculean task.

Also, a monarch dragon was able to grant power to other dragons was because they were able to interfere with dragon core. That was to say, a monarch dragon was also able to interfere to a certain degree at things that were using the energy of dragon core.

Because all the battleship of the divine country was using dragon core energy, they were unable to escape from the power of monarch dragon. Of course, a monarch dragon couldn't completely nullify processed energy, even so, it was possible to damp the output in considerable ratio. At the very least, now the conventional weapon of Avenst side could go through.

□Everyone of the dragon kingdom. My name is Roze Phiris Avenst. The queen of dragon kingdom Avenst. He is monarch dragon Kuwaibel. ....You have done well enduring the harsh time for long. Right now, we will take back everything!□

The proclamation resounded loudly in the battlefield.

The liberated dragons flew around in the sky, the light enveloping the defense fleet who boasted of being an impregnable fortress was obviously weakened in a glance.

And then, the howl of monarch dragon thundered.

A beat.

——WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-

Tremendous joyful cheers rose from everywhere in the city.

Roze made a little smile hearing the great cheer enveloping the city. She patted Kuwaibel's back with a gentle hand, and then she changed completely. She made a war proclamation with expression that possessed both dignity and dominating aura. (TN: A bit of trivia, this dominating aura I sometimes used, in the raw it was written as 'haki', yeah like that one in One Piece)

□Informing the people of Qwailent. Your king's life already scattered in the sky. The fleets, including flagship Durgrant won't return back.□

Roze was convinced. That there was no way for the king of usurpation to survive that battlefield where their friend, a legendary existence was fighting.

Therefore, the words that were announced clearly without mumble possessed the weight of truth, giving a severe blow to the defense fleet and the divine people on the surface whether they wanted it or not. 'What kind of joke is that, saying that their unrivaled king and his strongest battle strength fell in the sky?' Everyone turned into denial for the moment in their mind.

But, if their king was safe.....then why, these Avenst's pirate bunches were here? Why, even though they had slipped until this deep, there wasn't even a single ship from the main fleets that returned.....

The reality before their eyes coldly struck their disbelieving heart.

□Surrender under the law of dragon kingdom Avenst. If you put down your weapon now then I'll be merciful and spare your life. What we really ought to fight is in the future. The strength of even just one person more is needed for the greatest battle of fixing this broken world. If there is even just a little bit of heart that is thinking of the future inside your heart then surrender.□

Roze's proclamation was surely something that would be called naïve from here on. But, if they stole back because they were stolen from, clashing against hatred with hatred, and they wouldn't stop until the enemy was ruined, then it would be no different with the king of pillage.

She had decided to become the king of soldier. She was determined to build a future.

That was why.....

□.....Don't believe her-. His majesty is dead is just nonsense! It's impossible for the supreme ruler of the sky to fall! Activate Synthesizer maximum power! All ships, take the head of that pirate!□

A terrible sound wave assaulted Kuwaibel. The evil sound that disturbed dragon core energy and remarkably inhibited the strength of this world's dragon species—that was the reply of the defense fleet toward Roze's words.

□Kuwaaa-□

□-, Kuwaibel!□

For a moment, Kuwaibel looked like he lost his floating power and his altitude jerked down. Although he was a monarch dragon, it didn't change that he was a dragon of this world, he was unable to avoid the fang of Synthesizer. This was the biggest reason why once the monarch dragons and dragons couldn't win against human fleet.

The faces of the dragon kingdom people turned pale seeing that. The captains of the defense fleet made a mocking smile.

□.....It's fine, it's fine Ku-chan. You are strong. More than anyone in this world. Far more than even the monarch dragons in the past. I, everyone, believe so. —□

Roze who was riding on the back of Kuwaibel who was desperately creating floating power even while writhing in pain brought her body close as though to embrace him, she then took a deep breath.

And then, she played an old song that anyone of the dragon kingdom would know. It was the song of Kuwaibel's bond with his partner that had been sung at his all the time since he was born as a lullaby.

Kuwaibel's silver light that was weakening due to Synthesizer recovered its radiance a bit. Floating power was produced properly and he hovered without wavering.

□.....Thanks, partner.□

Kuwaibel's words. Normally it was a power of mutual understanding that he seldom used.



There wasn't any unique power in Roze's song. The song was a normal song. Surely even the girl herself had no such intention. She was only thinking if she could support her partner's heart even just for a little with the familiar song. But, something came into effect. That gentle song was certainly protecting Kuwaibel from the attack of atrocious sound wave.

Roze smiled. She couldn't return any words because she was singing, but words were already unnecessary between the two of them.

Kuwaibel's dragon eyes seized the defense battleship aiming its gun turrets at him and they glinted sharply.

□Everyone. Let's fight, together.□

Kuwaibel's words spread like a ripple once more. Those words were certainly conveyed to all the soldiers of Avenst.

Kuwaibel flew out. He evaded the coming missiles to left and right or intercepted using countless light bullets. As long as Synthesizer was in effect, he couldn't launch a breath that could sink down enemy ship in one shot. But, it was a different story if it was from point-blank range.

Other defense battleships circled to both sides and aimed at Kuwaibel.

□I won't let you-□

□This is the stage of Roze-sama and Kuwaibel-sama-. Begone nuisance!□

The captain of airship Rozeria, Cutter, and the captain of airship Averia, Oaks yelled altogether. They attached

themselves at Kuwaibel's both flanks and exchanged shots in respond to the defense battleships.

The enemy's sky battlecraft squad attacked from above. Even if they couldn't shot down Kuwaibel himself, the queen riding on his back was another story. If she was killed then it could be imagined how Avenst side would crumble.

□I though you guys will do that yeah. From Cranks 1 to all squads. Cranks squad will provide backup for Kuwaibel-sama! Shunt, Los, the two squads protect Avenst-. All the others hold back the remaining defense fleet!□

Bovid shot down two planes when he passed through them from above with only a few seconds of machine gun strafing, and then he further somersaulted with a maneuver that could only be called as abnormal and pointed his plane's nose downward and really easily shot down two more planes.

As might be expected from the wingmen of the supreme commander, Cranks squad's skill was at inhuman level. Every single one of them was reliably bringing down enemy sky battlecraft with reckless maneuver that was nothing short but abnormal. In addition the black dragons were intercepting missiles and so on that were approaching Kuwaibel.

□Isn't the Synthesizer working!? Shit-, main cannon status!?□

□Charging rate 70%!□

□Chih, so it won't make it in time-. Then.....change target-. To mother ship Avenst above!□

The captain of a defense battleship shuddered at the approaching Kuwaibel even through all the barrages. And then, the moment he knew that the main cannon's charging wouldn't make it, he changed the target at Avenst and fired the main cannon.

□Kuwa-□

'I won't let you-', As though to say that, Kuwaibel leaped at the line of fire.

At the same time, he fired a breath of light pillar.

The breath and the main cannon struggled against each other equally. The shockwave of the impact stirred the atmosphere and radiated intense heat wave. In that timing the Synthesizer was cut off for a moment, and immediately after, it was fired in maximum strength. The sound wave attack with rapid change of tempo caused Kuwaibel's light pillar to spontaneously weaken.

□-!?!□

The light pillar was overcome. The main cannon approached Kuwaibel. Normally he would dodge, but behind him there was the mother ship Avenst. Therefore, Kuwaibel used his body as shield. Fierce impact caused Kuwaibel to rise a soundless anguished voice from his mouth.

But, enduring that, he fired a breath once more.

The light pillar that ran on the sky was like a counter, it pierced the foundation of the main cannon and caused a great explosion.

□-, retreat in full speed while launch concentrated fire with all weapon!□

The angry voice of the defense fleet ship captain resounded, but faster than the order could be executed,

□Dam——□

□GURYAAAAAAA-□

Kuwaibel's blaze pierced the barrier and blew away the whole bridge.

——Defense fleet seven ships remained

Broken dragon scales were falling off from Kuwaibel's chest. Blood was dripping down and while only slightly his flesh was carbonized.

But, without even paying attention to that, and also because time was too precious even for recovering, Kuwaibel decided his next target. He flapped his wings and accelerated drastically while confirming with a glance that the main cannon of airship Rozeria flying in parallel beside him was going to fire, he then fired a light bullet at Rozeria.

The light bullet accurately hit Rozeria, but different of what would happen to enemy, the bullet didn't inflict damage, rather the radiance of the main cannon was strengthened by a level.

□That's a present from Kuwaibel-sama-. If it miss then there will be no forgiveness-□

Rozeria's main cannon that was fired at the same time with Cutter's scolding splendidly hit one defense battleship. Naturally, the defense barrier rippled and blocked the attack, but in the first place the main cannon with amplified might directly hit the place with weakening output.

Without any way to completely defend, the barrier was smashed apart and a large hole was opened in its flank while the ship tilted. There, light bullets attacked like gatling gun strafing to bring about destruction for sure this time. There was no way the defense battleship that was losing control had any way to endure, its bridge was pierced plenty and the ship sank.

——Defense fleet six ships remained

The enemy was also desperate. Main cannon light from the defense fleet that turned into buckshot shape rushed Kuwaibel. The power dropped considerably, but it was suitable for wide range attack and holding back the target.

□KUWAaa-□

In order to protect the surrounding and the city behind, Kuwaibel created a huge barrier of aurora. It was in the middle of Synthesizer's effect activation, so deploying a barrier of super large scale mercilessly shaved off Kuwaibel's mental strength. Even the immense dragon core energy he stocked from the□Spring of True Dragon's Tear□was decreasing with phenomenal rate, like water gushing out from a leaky bucket.

There, a defense battleship that circled to the flank ignored the bombardment from Azeria and directed its main cannon at Kuwaibel. It looked like it was planning to shoot him down even if it had to go down together with him.

A slight unease emerged in Kuwaibel's dragon eyes.

——♪

At that time, he heard a song.

It wasn't the voice of Roze who was continuously singing in order to reduce the power of Synthesizer. It was a voice of a child who he had never heard before.

——♪

——♪

——♪

Singing voices were overlapping. There was the voice of an old age man, and there was also the voice of a young woman. Through the silver light, the singing voice of one person, and then one more person was rising——

□.....Thank you.□

The words of thanks that Kuwaibel gave reached clearly. To the people of the dragon kingdom singing on the ground.

The song of the people that was dedicated to the king. Assemble, assemble, be added into the song of protection. Not only being protected. When it was necessary their will to fight could be offered up, that was the pride that the people of dragon kingdom Avenst held.

The main cannon of the defense battleship fired.

The light of death pushed on toward Kuwaibel who couldn't move from maintaining the barrier.

But, Kuwaibel's dragon eyes weren't colored by unease anymore.

□It's all right, partner.□

□I know, partner.□

Roze's words, and Kuwaibel's reply.

The flash of main cannon directly hit Kuwaibel——right before that happened, it was swallowed inside the breath Kuwaibel released. Like a river with the tide reversed, the light pillar swallowed the silver flash and went straight ahead, without stopping it pulverized the defense battleship.

——Defense fleet   five ships remained

The buckshot main cannon ceased. When the barrier of light vanished as though melting into the air, there was the figure of Kuwaibel clad in meteor of extreme light.

□-, barrier full pow——□

The meteor drowned out the command of some captain. In the middle of the overflowing singing voice that resounded through the whole city, the extreme light of Kuwaibel who was displaying thorough strength smashed the barrier of defense fleet with just bullet strafing.

□We are joining! Averia, target at two o'clock! Rozeria, target at nine o'clock! All sky battlecrafts, ram all the missiles you have at five o'clock target!□

A directive came from Avenst's captain Cline.

At the same time when Kuwaibel's breath of pillar light shot at the defense battleship in front, airship Averia and Rozeria fired their main cannon at their respective target. In addition, the air battle squads of Bovid and co also fired all their last missiles from all planes.

□.....Impossible. We are, the chosen people——□

Some captain of the defense fleet whispered. That was his last whisper in this world.

The light of the sun displayed a complete dawn. In the world that was filled with light, a gigantic flower bloomed. Decorated by flame blasts and thunderous roars, the flower of the blue sky displayed the curtain closing of a history.

On the ground, the people of dragon kingdom were staring dumbfounded at the flame blasts of five ships of defense fleet blossoming in full glory, a beat later a terrific cheer that sounded like it would shake the earth and split the sky was raised. And then, it was the people of the divine country who were watching dumbfounded at those people cheering and the defense fleet falling.

With one soldier dropping his weapon \*clang\* as the beginning, weapons were thrown down one after another. Even the people who weren't soldier realized the crumbling of their glory had strength leaving their waist and the flopped down on the ground.

That was what displayed it clearly.

Yes, the sky divine country Qwailent that was created by the king of usurpation, right now, in this time, its history was put to an end.

At the sky above the city that was erupting with cheers, the airships and sky battlecrafts with mother ship Avenst in the lead were approaching Kuwaibel who was hovering calmly with Roze riding on his back.



□Your majesty, Kuwaibel-sama. That was a splendid fight. I can say that it was truly a victory that will remain in history.□

Bovid in a tattered sky battlecraft was using the plane's vertical takeoff function to somehow hover beside the two was giving them his honest praise.

Kuwaibel and Roze instantly opened their eyes and they looked at each other's face.....

□Puh. Bovid using honorific language.....□

□It, it doesn't suit you.....□

□Youu braats□

The two burst into laughter at the speech and gesture that didn't suit the sky battlecraft squads supreme commander who was normally accustomed with pirate manner. Sharp words like□You reap what you sow□, or□Indeed that really doesn't suit you□, or□Was the battle too extreme it finally got into your head?□came from the radio. Bovid had no ally.

Bovid's expression turned completely sulky, but there was a smile that couldn't be hidden on his lips. It seemed that sentiment was also shared by other people who were talking to Roze and Kuwaibel through the radio, even while talking frivolously there was joy that was impossible to hide seeping into their voices.

□Everyone, really, you all really had fought well. Our dearest wish has come true. The path to the future is cut open. Thank you, really thank you. You all followed someone like me along until here. Really.....□

Roze who was sitting still in a girl posture on Kuwaibel's back with a distorted face looked like she was going to burst crying anytime. There were even people who were already crying in sympathy.

That was just how long they had continued to fight the long painful fight until now. Therefore, this moment today was more than enough to make an emotion that was beyond description to well up inside them.

Inside the world that shook from the joyful cheers, the people of Avenst closed their eyes as though to immerse in the overflowing emotion. That was to digest their happiness, and at the same time it was also to remember their war buddies who had gone ahead of them.

□.....Now, everyone. There is a mountain of things to do. You can slowly immerse in your sentiment later, let's do what we ought to do right now. Also someone, please take out Olga from the hold in the palace that Kuwaibel opened. There is no danger to her life with Kuwaibel's power, but she is wounded really seriously.□

□.....Roger. Your majesty, what about the others outside Olga?□

□..... Jean and others.....their life or death is unknown. Please make the squad send to suppress the palace to carry out search and rescue at the same time.□

□Acknowledged.□

Everyone in that place guessed it from Roze's instruction and expression. There weren't many words exchanged, with Cline's instruction the ground suppression squad headed toward the palace using small boat from mother ship Avenst.

After seeing that off, Roze and others looked down to the ground. There were the figure of the people waving their hand there while shedding tears.

□Your majesty. Your proclamation.□

Roze nodded strongly at Bovid's words.

She urged Kuwaibel, and they calmly exposed their appearance while flying above the city. It was for the purpose of notifying the return of the king and declared the revival of dragon kingdom Avenst above the palace.

Behind them, the mother ship Avenst, airship Rozeria, Averia, and then the sky battlecraft squads followed in a march.

The people's cheers were increasingly heightening at the miraculous sight and the liberated dragons danced above the sky as though in blessing.

People were gathering in front of the palace without end. It seemed that the soldiers also didn't have any will to fight already, so they were under the watch of the ground suppression squad with both their hands raised up.

Above there, Kuwaibel who was shining silver reflecting the light of the sun even with wounds all over his body was hovering still, on his back Roze was standing.

Even while soaked in blood and wound that displayed the fierce battle, her figure that held her head high was beautiful. For the people who knew about the old fairy-tale, her figure was truly that of the□legendary dragon knight□ itself.

Comfortably, while pouring gaze of affection at the people who were directing bright eyes at her, Roze took a deep breath. So that her voice would reach clearly, the silver light from her partner the monarch dragon showered down.

□Everyone. The beloved people of dragon kingdom Avenst. Once more, I'll introdu——□

Roze was going to introduce her name once again to make clear who she was——

At that time,

□The bloodline of king.....so it still survive.....□

A voice encroached the world.

Right after that, the beautiful world that was illuminated brilliantly by the light of sun was being covered by muddy black cloud that was suddenly generated. Like a drop of ink splattered on a white paper, the dark clouds overwrote the world. Sandwiched between the sea of clouds that rained down black rain below and the dark clouds generated further above, Roze and others fell into a hallucination as though they were imprisoned at the interstice of world.

□Wha, what?□

□Just now.....□

Bovid and others yelled□Your majesty-□in vigilance while rushing toward her. During that time Roze looked up at the sky dumbfounded, and Kuwaibel looked at the surrounding with shaken eyes in disbelief.

Flash of lightning began to ran in the sky. The thundering sounds gave the people fright whether they wanted it or not.

In the gloomy world, horrifying words that sounded like boiled down essence of negative emotion resounded.

□Suffer——□

□Gasp, writhe——□

□Scream□

□Lament——□

□Lose everything——□

□Run screaming——□

□Fear□

Those were words of curse. Those words cursed the world, human, the brethrens, all living things in this world. It echoed, overlapping in many layers, as though several hundred or thousand existences were reciting in resounding voice.

□Die□

It was black and encroached slimily. The people's hearts that were filled with hope were being dyed with terror and despair.

That fallen person only wished for one thing.

□——In the end of suffering□

The world shook.

□Be destroyed□

Squall mixed with thundering lightning and black mist blew violently. A huge tornado was generated from the dark clouds that locked the sky, from inside it, “that” showed its figure.

□.....Evil dragon.....Helmut□

□.....□

Roze murmured with a trembling voice.

While everyone was ruled by despair and terror, there was only one dragon who was staring straight at that person.  
(TN: While I use person here, but it still refer to Helmut)

Those eyes conceived inside them sadness, the happiness of finally being able to meet, and then an unshakeable resolve.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Today, or from a few days ago the published version of Arifureta volume 5 is in the middle of sale.

At the same time, the comic version volume 1 is also on sale.

I uploaded the detail in my activity report, so if it please you please try to take a look.

For everyone the villager of a certain loner village, and also for everyone of a certain Casanova village, it will make me happy if this can be a good thing for killing time for the end-of-year.

Today, if possible I'll upload the Christmas special after story at 6 P.M if possible.

Perhaps, surely.....

Also about the update next week.....

Please rest assured. I won't suffer the brats! I'll upload a hour before the starting time!

After all I need to prepare things like the meal or the drink or the snack, I got to prepare them all flawlessly.

Well then all of you Narou people, have a good year!

# **Christmas Special After Story The Small Santa- san of Nagumo Family**

AN: This is not what you think.

I only planned for around 5000 characters.

But when I noticed it already passed 9 o'clock, when I noticed it already went 10000 characters.

This is holy night after all, it's not strange that a mysterious thing will happen.

.....

Also warning.

I updated Tio arc today before this chapter.

For those who haven't read it, please read it too without fail.

---

At the time of year that was already beyond the middle of December where snow was sparsely falling from the cloudy sky. In order to resist the severe cold, while the kotatsu and heater were raising humming sound, the people of Nagumo family were eating with relish a warm specially made stew



(the ingredient was an UMA lurking at an unexplored region of earth).

□It will be Christmas soon huh..... Myuu, what kind of Christmas present you want this year?□

□Myu?□

The lovely beloved daughter asked Hajime with her cheeks stuffed with the meat that came from UMA but was terribly delicious, looking like a squirrel.

Myuu hurriedly swallowed the meat of something \*mokyu mokyu\* and then she showed a thinking gesture for a bit before answering with a wide smile.

□Pile bunker!□

□.....□

Papa stiffened spontaneously still with a smiling face. Indeed, he gave her present of numerous artifact weapons at the amusement park last year, but as expected Hajime was troubled of how to answer when he was getting coaxed for a demolition weapon with this kind of pure smiling face without any cloudiness.

Myuu who seemed to treat Hajime's speechlessness as refusal got dejected. And then, with an upturned gaze and reserved tone, she coaxed for another thing as though to observe at Hajime's reaction.

□It's fine, even if it's just Hyperion.□

The destructive power was raised. Just what in the world was reserved from this kid.....

Sumire and Shuu were desperately enduring their laugh with trembling shoulders at the dialogue between Hajime and Myuu. Yue and Shia looked exasperated, and Tio looked admiring. Amidst that, Remia who was unable to just watch spoke justification in the place of her daughter.

□I'm sorry dear. Good grief this child, she is pleading for something outrageous again..... Regrettably, it looks like that she is influenced by the game she is recently playing.□

□Game? A game that make you want pile bunker or sunlight convergence laser, just what kind of game that is?□

□It looks like a war game with the stage at the near future.□

Hajime turned his gaze at Myuu with a question□Is that so?□ in his eyes. Myuu made a gun shape with her fingers and then spoke words that seemed to be a signature phrase with a posed look.

□I'm gonna dye everything crimson yeah! Nano□

□I'm confiscating it right now. Tou-san, we are putting restricting in Myuu's PC! A strong one! Help me later!□

Surely the geography of somewhere would change the next day after a Hyperion was gifted. Hajime who was shuddering asked for cooperation in a hurry at Shuu.

But, Shuu in question was instigating□Hyuu-, Myuu-chan is so cool!□together with Sumire. And then, Myuu was also saying terrifying thing like□That's cruel papa! Myuu had finally obtained a nuclear nano! Even though I'm looking forward to use it in the next war!□.

Hajime in his own way was responding□It's no good picking up something like that! Toss it away, far away!□for some

reason. Myuu puffed up her cheeks like balloon. It seemed she was dissatisfied.

Hajime felt that it appeared he was at disadvantage talking about Christmas present and for the time being he beat a tactical retreat. ....The demon king-sama who came to kill even a god right from the front was running away from an argument about present with his daughter.

‘Cough’ Hajime papa cleared his throat and diverted the topic.

□Aa~, come to think of it Myuu. What about the condition of Belfegoor and others? Are their transformation mechanism working normally?□

□Yep! It’s amazing nano! They went gashon-gashon, it’s totally cool nano! Also the other artifacts are just like Myuu want it nano! As expected from papa! Thank you nano!□

□I see. That’s great. But.....there is nothing dangerous in there so I created them normally without particular care, in the end, what are you going to use them for?□

Hajime who breathed out in relieve at the successful topic change asked Myuu casually. It was about around a week ago, Myuu suddenly strongly begged him, she said she wanted the living golems to be installed with transformation mechanism and also several artifacts that felt like they could become necessary tool for a spy somewhere.

Recalling that, Hajime asked curiously after this late, but ahead of his gaze, his beloved daughter who he believed would surely answer him with a smile was.....

□.....My, Myuu will put them to use for a peaceful activity, nano.□

□.....□

For some reason her gaze was swimming around and she returned a vague answer. The mouth of the little girl who was saying the desire to dye the world crimson just now, was speaking peaceful activity suspiciously. Hajime papa's eyes naturally turned staring fixedly.

□.....□

□.....□

Hajime papa's fixed eyes were staring fi~xedly. The gaze of the suspicious Myuu was swimming around even more.

Stare~. Fidget fidget. Stare~~. Twitch-, fidget fidget.

□.....Well, I'm not going to forcefully ask though.□

□Nmyu□

After everything, Hajime had faith that Myuu wouldn't use it for something stupid and he made a small wry smile before removing his pressing gaze. Myuu let out a relieved sigh while her cheeks loosened up limply at Hajime papa who gave her his trust. Hajime also smiled gently.

□.....Really, what a similar parent and child.□

□Isn't that right. Like their way to dodge the topic or the way they escape. Every year they are turning more similar.□

□Rather, doesn't Goshujin-sama noticed? Before thinking about game, Myuu's dangerous speech and action art mostly coming second hand from Goshujin-sama.□

□Ufufu. For Myuu, Hajime-san is also her idol after all.□

□Even so an elementary school student asking for pile bunker or laser cannon is still not normal though. As expected from my granddaughter!□

□That! My granddaughter is in different level compared to those other elementary school students.□

The whispering conversation of the wives and Nagumo spouses caused Hajime and Myuu to feel like running away and they concentrated at the stew pretending to not hear anything. That harmonious behavior of the parent and daughter made the dining table to be enveloped in laughter.

□.....Putting aside the present, where is Myuu want to go at the Christmas day?□

Myuu began to be troubled□Uu~n□at Yue's question. Was it fine if they went to the same amusement park like last year? Or else, should they called her friends and papa's underlings(classmates) to party?

Myuu hummed 'un un' while wracking her head about what kind of Christmas should they have. Seeing her like that, Hajime suggested with a smile.

□Then, how about staying over somewhere at the Christmas Eve day? Like overseas, or another world.□

If Myuu wished it, then he would take her anywhere for sure. Hajime papa declared that full of vigor, but it seemed that today was a day where he would eat the counter of his daughter to the utmost.

□Ah, that's impossible nano.□

□? Impossible? It's not that you don't want it?□

□Nano. Myuu have a plan for the whole day in Christmas Eve.□

□You are going to go play with your friends ?□

Hajime asked while putting UMA meat into his mouth,

□It's not playing nano.□

He stiffened. In the day of Christmas Eve, she wasn't going to play with her friends, or spent time with family. However, she had a plan that wasn't playing. What's more it would take the whole day. \*drip\* A cold sweat trickled from Hajime papa's forehead.

□Myuu. What's your plan?□

Without even any leeway to feel doubt at Yue who was holding her laughter beside him for some reason, papa asked with a feeling of□Don't tell me□, but

□.....It, it's a secret from papa nano.□

□What.....the.....□

\*clang\* Hajime dropped his spoon. His expression was in shock. Hajime papa couldn't hide his shaken feeling at "the secret of his beloved daughter" that he had never met even once until now.

□Spe, speak honestly, Myuu. Surely in that plan of yours you are going to meet someone, and that someone is a girl right?□

□.....Myuu will meet various people, so of course there is also man nano.□

It was a critical hit at Hajime's mind. His beloved daughter said that she would meet a man at the Christmas Eve! What's more, it wasn't "boy" but "man". Okay, finally it's your turn after so long pile bunker. For the pervert lolicon bastard who dare to aim at the family's daughter, a present of lovely scrap time!

Perhaps feeling the turbulent sign from Hajime who stood up wordlessly, Myuu gulped down her remaining stew and said "Thanks for the food!" before she left the living room with fast pace \*sutetete-\*. The overly fast movement caused Hajime papa who was in the middle of feeling shaken unable to even call out at her.

But, just when he thought so, Myuu's face popped out from the living room's entrance. And then, she stared fixedly at Hajime and,

"Papa. If papa try to follow or investigate Myuu's matter at the Christmas Eve.....Myuu, won't speak to papa anymore nano."

"Gofuh!?"

Hajime's knees collapsed. Without being able to even stop Myuu who rushed \*sutetete-\* once more to her room, he was crawling on all fours without even the slightest twitch. The damage was grave!

"A godslayer crushed with a sentence.....fumu. Perhaps it's only Myuu who art able to do something like this whether before or after."

"Ahaha~. Hajime-san is weak against Myuu-chan even more than against Yue-san in a sense after all."

Tio and Shia were giggling leisurely. Yue and others also nodded at them in agreement.

But, the next moment, Hajime stood up in a flash. And then, with an expression that gave uneasy and emaciated impression,

□Nagumo family meeting! The, the.....the whatever many times of Nagumo family emergency family meeting will be hold! The topic is about the trashy scum bastard following about our daughter!□

Naturally, everyone was continuing their meal normally.

The day of Christmas Eve.

In the palace of another world Tortus, work was being done routinely without anything particular happening. The busy officials were running about or else they were dealing with paperwork bit by bit on their desk.

In a room of such palace—in the office of Hairihi kingdom's king, a boyish king who still hadn't really fit the atmosphere or the desk size yet was moving his pen with a fed up expression.

□Your majesty, will you take a rest soon?□

□Mu. No, I'll do it a bit more. Elder sister is not here. If work is piling up during such time then it will be too shameful. Or rather, just how did elder sister finished this amount of work always in that kind of short time huh?□



□She was doing them normally you know? Only, it was done with astonishingly fast motion though.□

□.....Since I was enthroned and also did my duty, now that I've recently get used with the work, I often think this but.....elder sister is human right?□

□.....Your majesty. You will be scolded by Liliana-sama you know?□

The warning voice from the troubled private secretary made Liliana's little brother, his majesty the current generation king of Hairihi kingdom——Randell to sigh deeply□Haa□, while thinking□Elder sister, won't he come back quickly I wonder□.

□If I remember correctly, she was invited for earth event called “Kurushimasu” right? She looked really merry when she was picked up directly by that guy.□(TN: Christmas in Japan is read Kurisumasu. Kurushimasu meant suffering.)

□Your majesty, it's “Christmas”. Your pronunciation makes the supposedly joyful event to sound like a hell torture.□

Recalling his sister who was in high spirits since the morning thinking of that hateful son of a bitch, Randell let out a deep sigh. His first love was taken away by that person, but he didn't stop there, that man even bared his poisonous fang toward the sister that he respected. Randell swore□I'll punch you flying someday□. Inside his heart. He wouldn't say it out loud no matter what.

Randell's feeling became as though he had bitten something bitter, but suddenly, he recalled a certain character and he muttered to himself.

□.....Is it no good, if I also go there?□

□It's no good.□

He was cut down easily by the private secretary. Randell went□But you see□□However, still□acting fidgety and restless for some reason with an indecisive attitude. The private secretary who knew what was inside the heart of such boyish king held back from sighing while opening his mouth to say something in persuasion——

At that time,

□MERRY-!! CHRISTMAA————SS!! NANO!!!□

□Hihi!? What's going on!?!□

Suddenly the office's window was threw open loudly, from there a red shadow flew in like a bullet. Randell hugged himself with both hands like a girl while jumping to his feet. The private secretary also twitched from the sudden happening, yet he rushed forward to protect his majesty from the intruder.

□Wait, Myuu-sama!?!□

□Whaaat!? Myuu you say!?!□

Shocked voices were raised when they saw the true identity of the intruder. Randell who was shaking in his boots behind the desk also threw his gaze at Myuu who was quickly smoothing over her appearance.

□No, I'm not Myuu. I'm Santa Claus!□

Myuu who was wearing red and white clothes was indeed wearing the appearance of Santa. Her lower body was clad in mini skirt and short boots, it was a cute clothes that were arranged with frills and fluffy pompon all over. Her head was

wearing a droopy Santa hat and she was carrying a large bag on her shoulder. All those factors certainly made her a Santa-san.

Myuu twirled with a beautiful rotation as though to show off her exclusive Santa cosplay created by her family for her. She stood sideways and winked with peace sign over her eye. It was the signature pose like a certain idol somewhere! \*Sparkle-☆\* Such sound effect could be hallucinated from that!

□Cu, cute.....□

The male Randell. It seemed he got one hit KO-ed from the \*Sparkle-☆\*. He was staring at Myuu in intoxication.

The private secretary who sensed somehow that the king seemed to be of no use was wondering 'Just what is the security of the palace doing..... No, this is the daughter of his majesty the demon king, anything is possible isn't it, haha.' He whispered so inside his heart while asking with a voice that was oozing out tiredness.

□Myuu-sama, just what are you doing? What about the plan of enjoying "Christmas" with Liliana-sama?□

□I'm not Myuu nano. I'm santa nano. Santa will distribute present in Christmas nano.□

□Present, is it?□

The secretary tilted his head. With a glance at Randell who was still in a daze, Myuu fished around inside her white bag. Like that what she took out was two beautifully wrapped bundles.

□Merry~ Christmas! These are presents from Santa to the two good children nano!□

□My, Myuu is giving me present? Uu, Myuu, someone like you is really.....□

□Oh, for me too? Fufu, this is truly a happy surprise.□

The eyes of the secretary who received the present turned round while also accepting it happily. He guessed that it seemed Myuu was going around distributing present in accordance with this event called Christmas. It felt like his everyday tiredness was blown away, and he was making a really warm expression.

On the other hand, Randell was whispering things like□Myuu is giving me present. To purposefully go as far as crossing world for my sake..... Hah, don't tell me, Myuu is actually having feeling for me!?!□.

□Well then you two, work hard nano! Santa will give present to other people too nano!□

□Yes, Myuu-sama. Thank you very much for the present.□

While the private secretary and Myuu were exchanging harmonious words of parting, Randell whose expression was feverishly delirious returned to his senses suddenly.

□Wa, wait a second, Myuu!□

□?□

□Tha, that's. It's. ....If you like, won't you spend today with me? I'll personally prepare a return gift for you!□

The secretary gave a straight-man retort through his gaze  
□You, read the atmosphere. Rather, she just said that she is giving present to other people too□. The young king didn't even pay attention to his private secretary's expression and was desperate to stop Myuu from leaving.

Randell kept prattling on and on while glancing repeatedly at Santa Myuu with blushing cheeks.

Just from this, it could be guessed that Randell whose first love was scattered that much was now falling into a difficult love once more. During the few times of his contact with Myuu when she came to play in the palace when brought along by that guy, Myuu who interacted with him friendly different from other people of the same age around him, and also seeing how their age was relatively close caused him to fall for her so easily.

Myuu who was tilting her head at such Randell didn't know about what was inside his heart, but she could guess that Randell was trying to make her stay and with a cheerful smile she——

She declared to Randell whose expression turned bright seeing her smile.

□Randell's eyes are always indecent so no way.□

□!?!□

Randell turned into stone. Myuu dealt additional blow at him still with a smile!

□Papa told me nano. Myuu must not get near that kind of man. That's why Randell, don't get too close to me nano!□

□Kahah□

The male Randell. Even after becoming a king he fell on his knees. Seeing his majesty who was on all fours while holding his chest, the private secretary sent him a look of sympathy. Myuu said "Bye bye nano~" while jumping out from the window.

Later on at the palace, the voices of the servants and soldiers who were happy with the surprise present from the cute Santa could be heard mixed with the crying voice of the young king who screamed "That bastard(demon king), I'll murder him somedayyyyyy-" in an outburst of anger.

\*whoosh-\* The sound of a sharp slash resounded, and a fiendish monster was crumbling in two.

"Fuu. Is this the last of them?"

The one who whispered was a young man wiping the sweat on his forehead with his hand——Amanogawa Kouki. After many twists and turns, he who had saved several other worlds was even now working hard like this to remove the threat to people as an adventurer.

"Kouki-san, great work."

"We are finished too over here, Kouki."

From inside the deep forest, the two who appeared pushing through the grasses were Kouki's party members, the former goddess-sama and former queen-sama of another world. These two were also female hunter who were currently competing for Kouki also after many twists and turns.

□Aa, thanks for your hard work you two. You two aren't injured right?□

□Everything's fine. The strength of a goddess is not so small that monsters of this level can possibly do anything.□

□Former goddess you mean? Also, certainly what is small isn't your strength but your breast there.□

□Aa? I'll turn you into cinders you know? Queen (lol).□

□Oh? Just try it if you actually can, no good goddess.□

Just like usual, Kouki was starting to take distance bit by bit while staring with eyes that looked like dead fish toward the former goddess and former queen at both his sides who were glaring from really close as though seeing each other's parent's killer.

But, at that time Kouki's presence detection detected an unknown existence approaching them with terrific speed.

(-, fast!?)

Kouki opened his mouth to warn the two at the same time when that fell from the sky.

What landed with an impact that shook the ground was,

□Re, reindeer?□

Kouki was spontaneously dumbfounded.

Yes, it was a reindeer. With bright red nose. However, it was super big with length that was almost three meter long.

The red nosed reindeer-san stared slightly at the dumbfounded three people, and then its mouth suddenly

fell open. Inside it there was a fiendish object that looked really familiar for Kouki.....

□Why is it hereee!?!□

Kouki yelled such thing while he wasted no time to hold the other two and evaded from the line of fire. It was at that moment, \*dopan-\* a bursting sound and flash that were also familiar surged out, blasting away an enemy approaching from behind Kouki and others that Kouki had also detected.

Kouki put down beside him the former queen-sama and former goddess-sama who were still dumbfounded and he stared at the mechanical death god reindeer-san while his cheeks were twitching. Thereupon,

□MERRY~~, CHRISTMASSS!□

□Myuu-chan..... So it's you.□

Kouki hung his head down crestfallenly. Santa Myuu's face peeked out all of sudden from the reindeer's back, and with a hop she flew and twisted midair with a triple turn before landing beautifully.

□Why are you in this kind of place? That outfit.....aah, today is Christmas huh.□

□Correct nano. For hero-san who has been a good child through this one year, there is a present from Santa nano!□

□Hahah, I see. ....A Santa who make an entrance by riding a grim reaper.....as expected from Nagumo's daughter.□

Toward Kouki who was muttering with a subdued air, Myuu returned a package while saying□Yes! Merry Christmas!□.



Myuu also handed over present to the former goddess and former queen-sama who were still dumbfounded.

□Thank you Myuu-chan. Can I look inside?□

□It's fine, but Myuu is really busy getting around the world nano. That's why, I'm leaving already nano.□

Myuu jumped on the slaughter reindeer-san——actually the inside was Belfegoor——and then she said□Bye hero-san! I wish you a good another world summoning next year too!□ while flying away.

□Don't give me that kind of ominous prayer!□

Kouki's shout ended in vain, the figure of the demonic reindeer-san that reached the speed of sound instantly was already gone.

Kouki let out a long sigh while he tried opening the wrapping of the small present carefully. Even after everything he said, he opened the wrapping while his cheeks were loosening that he was also given a Christmas present.

□Hm? This is.....ring?□

What came out from the box were pair rings. On the small paper that was included inside,□They are engagement rings! Please give it to someone that you love!□was written with round characters.

Kouki got drenched with sweats from a bad feeling.

□Kouki-san, thank you very much. For you to prepare this ring of eternal oath, I'm really happy.□

□Kouki? Naturally, you will give it to me right? Right?□

Over both his shoulders, the former queen-sama and former goddess-sama were peering in smilingly wrapped in muddy black aura. Kouki was about to activate Ground Shrinker reflexively to take distance, but the two tightly grasped his shoulders simultaneously.

□Kouki-san-□

□Kouki!□

\*creak\* Unpleasant sound rang from Kouki's both shoulders.

Kouki's eyes turned into dead fish eyes once more while at the bottom of his heart he yelled at the small Santa who presented him with pair rings despite preparing presents for three people.

□YOU-, DEMON KING'S DAUGHTERRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRR-□

After that, it went without saying that the thunderous sounds of the struggle for the pair rings resounded deep inside the forest. And then, it also went without saying how later Kouki went around bowing his head at every related place for the reckless destruction of nature.

At Britain in the bureau chief office of the national security bureau,

□Haa~~~□

Such dee~~p sigh was let out. The one whose eyebrows twitched in reaction to that was the person who was wholly

famed as a walking and clothed cool-headedness, Chief Sharon Magdanese.

□Haa~~~~~□

□.....□

A sigh even deeper than before caused an irritating air inside the chief office. Vein was starting to emerge on Chief Magdanese's forehead. There, even more sigh assaulted.

□Depressing.□

□Hih!?□

Chief Magdanese who snapped threw a paper knife. The owner of sigh who immediately shook his head while raising a pathetic scream unconsciously—Allen saw the paper knife passed through right beside his forehead, without stopping the knife stabbed \*pasun\* on the wall behind him.

□Wai-, what are you doing, chief!□

□I said it already, it's depressing. Just what's with you since some time ago?□

Chief Magdanese sent a gaze that was even colder than the open air of winter at Allen who was the cause of the irritating atmosphere in the chief office with his deep sigh.

Allen twitched from such gaze, even so he spoke his reason.

□No, because, this situation makes me want to sigh. Chief, today is Christmas you know! Through the world now lovers are having a date, they are preparing and flirting in preparation for tomorrow, they are having their fill for that kind of embarrassingly happy event, yet when it come to

me, I'm doing work work work in this kind of place from morning until night. Tomorrow will be work too! Just what is the meaning of this!□

□Even if you say that, there are a lot of other staffs other than you who are also doing work.□

□That's true! But, Paradis-san, she is normally having holiday giggling and making merry! Aby-san and others too, they are having embarrassingly happy event! You know, yesterday she already wore Santa hat while working! Just seeing that atmosphere of her that said□I'm really looking forward for tomorrow!□, my heart is already at the limit.....□

□Be relieved. I put Paradis's Santa hat into cutting machine right in front of her eyes yesterday.□

□Cruel-. No, not that, even if there is something like that but the emptiness inside me isn't mitigated at all.□

□You don't have a lover anyway so it's pointless whatever you say. Just keep with your wild dream.□

□Cruel-. Uu, isn't there a woman somewhere who will be kind to me.....□

Allen grieved. There a voice resounded.

□Thinking that is the case, I came! Merry Christmas!□

□OoOOU!?!□

□-□

Allen reflexively pulled out a gun and rushed toward Magdanese, and Magdanese who held her breath. When

both of them turned toward the ceiling from where the voice came——

□Merry Christmas! Granny Sharon! Also Allen!□

□Myuu.....□

□Myuu-chan!?!□

The pane of the ceiling was taken off and there was the upside-down face of Myuu suddenly peeking out from there. Let's say this in advance, the ceiling of the chief office wasn't constructed with detachable pane. It was protected with steel plate twenty millimeter thick.

Actually, Magdanese and others accomplished having a meeting with demon king family with Lord Abyssgate's introduction. Naturally, they also became acquaintance with Myuu. However, for some reason Myuu seemed to be pleased with Magdanese and since then she called her "Granny Sharon" intimately.

Although it was a wide world, the one who called the national security bureau chief who even terrorist would beg at for their life while crying as "granny" was surely only Myuu. It went without saying that not just Allen, all the bureau staffs accompanying them including Vanessa opened their eyes wide hearing that. The shock was so great that Myuu was talked as a legendary super little girl within the bureau even now.

\*thud\* Myuu landed after somersaulting midair like a cat which caused Magdanese and Allen to make a really speechless expression.

After□Berserk Case□which was the first case they solved with Lord Abyssgate, they went through many more cases

where there was quite a lot of chance for them to meet Myuu. Therefore, they only knew too well that Myuu wasn't just a mere little girl.

But, for the specially strictly guarded chief office of the security bureau that should be impossible to even be infiltrated by the average agent to be so easily penetrated.....

□Granny Sharon! Merry Christmas! For granny who is working really hard this year too, there is a present from Santa nano!□

□This naughty angel.□

□Chief!?□

Magdanese turned into a mere Granny Sharon. Chief office's security? Security bureau's honor? In front of the angel's smile those were trivial matters.

Allen's eyes opened wide seeing the warmly smiling Magdanese. Even now he felt like fainting.

When Magdanese tried opening the present, there was a simple necklace inside.

□See, about that, just by wearing it will make blood circulation better, and it will take off fatigue. It's so Granny Sharon can be healthy all the time!□

□The words just now already make me able to fight for a hundred years more. Thank you, Myuu.□

□No, chief. That's already just a monster——□

\*sukon-\* A fountain pen stabbed Allen's forehead. Allen screamed "Noo-OOOOH" while flopping around with his hands pressing on his bleeding forehead. The pen was pretty much stopped by Allen between his bare hands before it could go through, so only the tip pierced in, but something painful was painful.

Myuu approached such teary eyed Allen with trotting steps and her small hand caressed Allen's head.

"Are you an angel?"

"I'm Santa."

Toward Allen who became even more teary eyed from being treated kindly, Myuu offered a present "Here, Allen. Merry Chris!".

By the point of time he was called without any honorific by an elementary school student, it could be seen just in what level Allen's position inside Myuu, but the Christmas present from a girl although a young one caused Allen's tear duct to finally burst.

"Uu, even though I'll absolutely make you happy if only you were born ten years faster"

"Sleep-talking when you are asleep, nano."

The ears of Allen who was in the middle of feeling moved beautifully ignored the stinging words.

Floods of tears were flowing from Allen while he opened the thin sealed envelope. It felt complicated to call the item a present when it was something that only looked like a letter, but for the current Allen it was something irrelevant.

And then, while he was reading the letter inside the envelope, tears were starting to flow out even more like a waterfall from Allen.

□Thi, this is, real? It's not a prank, or a fake for surprise?□

□Yep. Myuu was only entrusted with the letter. What's left depend on Allen nano.□

□Hi, hi, hi——□

□Hi?□

Magdanese directed a disgusted gaze at Allen who was suddenly starting to repeat□hi□as though he was convulsing, but the moment she quietly evacuated Myuu away, Allen yelled□Hyaho—————ii!!□while jumping up.

Without pausing he then got so high spirited it made anyone wonder if he was going to ascend to heaven soon while hopping around inside the office.

□Myuu. What is that letter?□

□It's from an onee-chan that is papa's former classmate. Before when they were together just for a bit at the case before this, she felt interested at Allen she said.□

□.....That's, really.....what an owner of rare taste that girl must be.□

A present for Allen. That was a letter that had the writing of a contact number of a girl of a certain group that was summoned to another world. The girl who previously got a bit involved with a case that dragged in Lord Abyssgate had the opportunity to act together with Allen for a short while.



The middle aged agent who lamented his inability to get a lover despite actually being a brilliant agent was greatly joyful that the spring finally came for him too.

□Ah, right. There is one more present for Granny Sharon nano.□

□My, what is it I wonder?□

Magdanese tilted her head. Myuu smiled cheerfully at her and handed over a piece of memo paper. Magdanese accepted it and saw that there was only an address written there and his head tilted further.

□Myuu, this is?□

□You see, that's the address of the building where a group of half dead terrorist-san is locked in nano!□

□Eh?□

□Yes?□

Magdanese's eyes spontaneously turned into dot. And then, Allen also stopped his joyful dance.

Myuu shouldered his white bag and crossed over the room until right below the opened hole.

□See, these terrorists-san, looks like they planned to make a concert venue where famous people gathered for Christmas go boom nano. That's why, Myuu destroyed them a bit nano. It will be terrible if granny cannot return home in Christmas day nano!□

□Ah, yes. Right, thank you?□

□.....Myuu, chan□

Myuu said "Then, have a nice Christmas!" at Magdanese and Allen whose face was greatly convulsing, and then she leaped up to the ceiling. And then, at the next moment the opened hole in the ceiling became like before as though nothing had happened.

Inside the chief office where death silent had returned, Allen spoke something that was too late already.

".....Chief. I more or less read the mood and pretended to not notice but....."

"What?"

"Myuu-chan's Santa clothes. Weren't there strange spots on them? As though, there was red liquid that got splattered on them."

".....Send personnel to this address. Quickly. Send ambulance too."

"Yes ma'am. ....Since when the red of Santa became the color of blood spurt I wonder."

".....Surely since the daughter of the demon king was born."

There was slight smell of blood remaining. The Santa of Christmas was hungering for blood.....perhaps.

"Fuu. Somehow I delivered all the presents nano. Santa-san has it hard nano."

Myuu who returned home using gate whispered so while stretching her body. The sun was already sinking, delicious smell was drifting from Nagumo house.

She had literally went around the world to deliver present for the people related to Nagumo family. Although it was possible to teleport using gate, it was a really hard work for Myuu who was still little.

But, this too was something necessary for her to do to not let the connection that her beloved papa and his underlings(friends) had formed to be severed. Because she didn't have great power like her family, because she was powerless that she had to be helped by someone else, what she could do was only to convey that she treasured, loved everyone.

And then, for the last, Myuu would do the greatest that she could do for her most important people.

Wanting to make it a surprise, she deceived her papa in various things but..... Yue-oneechan and others who knew about the circumstance surely had explained it to papa skillfully. Myuu believed in that and pulled herself together.

She opened the entrance's door. Right away, the sound of a demon king somewhere rushing near with loud footsteps as though in a rush entered her ear. 'Nyufu' A strange laugh leaked out. Myuu sucked in a deep breath following her overflowing emotion,

□I'm home & Merry Christmas! I'm bringing a lovely present yeah! Nano!□

It went without saying, a lovely present for Nagumo family was the large love of the small Santa.

---

AN: Wait a second, that person now is!? It turn into a feeling like that isn't it.

I'm thinking that before long, I want to give more spotlight at that person.

Anyway, Merry~ Christmas.

It already passed nine o'clock, but I will be happy if I can make you readers enjoy it.

Also, thank you very much for those who reported 'I bought the novel and comic you know'.

I'm really happy.

It became a good present for Christmas.

But, my drying machine was making a strange sound.....

\*patapatapatapatapata, chuin-\* It sounded like that.

Super scary.....

The next update will be in New Year's Eve!

I'll rest at 30<sup>th</sup> so surely it will be fine!

# Arifureta After II Oh No, I Made a Child.....

AN: I have no excuse.

You see, Shirakome prioritized Ame Talk. (TN: A variety show in Japan)

And then see, today I prioritized babying the brats.

Conclusion-> I couldn't write.

And so, it will continue for just one more chapter.

---

Evil dragon Helmut showed his appearance from the cloudy sky.

The length of his body easily surpassed a hundred meter, he had black scales that looked as though they absorbed the light and crimson vertical slit pupils with black corneas that looked like ink drop. He was surrounded by several tornados and despite the violently raging wind, black mist was welling up and coiling around him, making his silhouette unclear.

Just from him being there, anyone hallucinated as though the air had died. It was suffocating, the limbs were trembling and wouldn't listen to what their owner was telling them,

and the consciousness was painted over as though a black in was flowing onto the canvas that was themselves.

(Aa, this is, hopeless.....)

The clacking sound was ringing from her own teeth. Roze muttered inside her heart while being conscious of that in the corner of her mind.

Fallen——now she understood the meaning of that word.

That was certainly a “fallen existence”. Just from being there he harmed the living people, a person that chased away everything into destruction. This was an existence that had no other options except “annihilation”, beyond the concept of persuasion or fighting. It didn’t matter what kind of circumstance there was in the past.

That was truly “a foe that one couldn’t accept to live under the same sky”.

It wouldn’t be a battle where both sides put their own belief on the line. This foe merely had to be taken down no matter the cost, if one wished to stay alive in the future ahead of here.

But even with that understanding.....

(There is no way.....to win. Human’s karma.....it created such thing.....an existence.....this huge.....aa)

——They had no future

Roze’s heart was breaking. Even when she understood that this enemy had to be defeated, she couldn’t see the future. The existence before her eyes, the endlessly deep hatred,

despair, and then the powerful might she felt swallowed her.....

□GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!!!□

□-□

A howl thundered. A gallant war cry overflowing with dominating aura, as though to blow away the dark clouds. It was enough to blow away the terror eroding the people. At the same time, silver light was covering the city like an aurora.

There was hope right here. Nobody would forsake it.

The world that was almost dyed black recovered its light as though there was a torch illuminating it. People were liberated from the wedge of terror and they looked up to the sky. Even without words, the king's roar conveyed that will.

□Kuwai, bel.....□

□Partner, stand tall. We are, a king.□

The□Spring of True Dragon's Tear□had no power to quicken mental growth. Even with his body grown up, his heart was still immature. But, Kuwaibel was a king. Even though he was young, but he was indeed a king that protected and guided the people.

Surely he was feeling the immense power of the enemy. Roze could feel his faint trembling. But, his gaze wasn't averted even for an instant from the enemy that threatened the people.

Her partner's words and that gallant figure made Roze recovered her senses in surprise.

□Kuwaibel. Can you defeat him?□

□I will. Without fail. Roze, you gather everyone. I cannot protect them in wide range.□

□.....Got it. I'll evacuate even just one person more to the palace. If it's the palace then it will be able to form a powerful barrier too. You don't need to hold back.□

□I got it.□

With a gentle flap, the wind that was caused from the dragon wings caressed Roze's cheek. Roze too also gently caressed Kuwaibel's back. They had no need of more words than that.

Without hesitation Roze jumped down from Kuwaibel's back. Without delay a silver light wrapped Roze and lowered her down in front of the palace's front gate.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned their back at each other on the ground and in the sky. They quietly turned their gaze, the queen toward the people, and the monarch dragon toward the enemy.

□I will protect them-, partner!□

□I'll protect them-, partner!□

A beat of wings. A single roar. Monarch dragon Kuwaibel——moved out!

With his whole body clad in extreme light, he soared in a straight line into the black storm, toward the world's despair!



□Listen, the people of the kingdom! The people of Qwailent! Gather in the palace without any distinction of enemy or ally! Take each other's hand of the people beside you, gather under our protection!□

The people's consciousness was aroused by Roze's words. The aurora of extreme light covering the whole city was shaving much of Kuwaibel's strength. Roze could only protect the people while narrowing the range of the protection as much as possible so Kuwaibel could pour even just a bit more of his strength into fighting.

In the palace, naturally there was a barrier device that was installed. Even without Kuwaibel's power, it could protect the people from the black rain.

The people of the former dragon kingdom scolded their heart that flinched from terror and obeyed their queen's words. But, midway, they unintentionally stopped moving that there were words telling them to save their enemy the people of Qwailent inside Roze's words.

The apprehended people of Qwailent were also the same. They were looking at Roze with expression of disbelief.

Roze raised her voice once more to them who were like that.

□You understand right? For that existence, it doesn't care whether you are Avenst or Qwailent. Just by us being human, no, just by us being alive is enough to make that person bring destruction to us. This isn't the time for us fellow human to fight each other! We have to survive even by a single person more!□

A howl roared. Aurora flashed inside the world that was rampant with dark clouds. Striking light that painted out the sky like lightning.

Amidst the sound of fierce fighting resounding in the world, in the plaza in front of the place that felt like death silence had returned despite the sound, the words of Roze's, dragon kingdom Avenst's queen reverberated resolutely.

□For the future!□

\*zaa-\* Black rain poured on the aurora of extreme light. Under the light of protection protecting them.....

□Your Majesty. The people working in the breeding farm—the people of Avenst, I don't catch sight of them in the plaza. There is a large trailer in the eastern barrack. I'll go pick them up if you permit me!□

The one who raised his voice saying that was a soldier of Qwailent. Because the dragons of the breeding farm received Kuwaibel's protection, they could endure even being under the black rain. The weak and small people had also finished evacuating inside the aurora of extreme light.

Therefore, there was only a minimum barrier laid out at the breeding farm. The path toward the breeding farm was exposed to rain. Although the trailer was solidly made and could endure for a while even inside the black rain, naturally the mortal danger wasn't small.

The expression of the Qwailent soldier was exactly the face of someone who was resolved for death. Agreeing with his words, one after another a part of Qwailent's soldiers and people advised of the danger zone that was allocated to Avenst people and they asked for permission to rescue them.

Roze stared back at them and a beat later she strongly nodded.

□I'll leave the detail to you. Take all life to here!□

□-, Yes-□

Receiving Roze's gaze, the soldiers of Avenst released the binding of Qwailent soldiers even while making a slightly troubled smile. The soldiers who were staring dumbfounded at their hands that were released from binding gritted their teeth at the next moment and rushed away.

□Cline, you are listening right? Please send out all the small ships you can possibly field and evacuate the people at the outer part vicinity without distinction of enemy or ally!□

□Understood. I have already throwing in the confiscated vehicles too for the rescue activity. What's left is if we can activate the palace's barrier.....we can only wait for the report of the ground force we sent there.....□

□.....If only gramps is here□

If Sabas was here, then surely he would be able to activate the palace's barrier. The force entering inside the palace too might be seeking Qwailent soldiers' cooperation right now. But.....

People were gathering continuously toward the palace. People with weak limbs, injured and sick people too, they were supported by other people and desperately escaped here. But, as for the people who were in distanced place from the palace, in the end could they reached the place before the barrier Kuwaibel made vanished?

But, at that time, the aurora fiercely shook.

□Kuwaibel-□

There wasn't any reply from Kuwaibel. Surely he didn't even have the leeway for that anymore. The aurora was trembling

further and flickered.

Roze was feeling uneasy. And then, as though detecting that,

□-, the barrier is!?!□

It wasn't a yell because the barrier crumbled. It was the opposite. A silver barrier was deployed with the palace as the center as though to overlap the aurora. A report from Cline□This isn't the suppression squad's doing!□came to Roze. There was definitely someone in the palace who activated it, but it seemed it wasn't the suppression squad.

Furthermore, several sky battlecrafts were flying up from the fleet's mooring dock. Those planes were lining up from the outer part and they hovered in place. And then they circulated all their energy into barrier and formed an improvised rooftop. As expected they couldn't cover the whole area, but they succeeded in creating a path until the palace.

That controlled action was obviously something that came from someone in Qwailent's side giving out instruction.

□Just who in the world.....□

□Fumu, it looks like the evacuation route at least made it in time.□

A voice reached the muttering Roze through the radio. It was a calm voice that possessed depth. The voice of an important person she was thoroughly familiar with. It was,

□Gramps!?!□

□Yes, Roze-sama. This is gramps here.□

Yes, the one at the other side of the radio was Sabastian who should be left behind in a scene of nearly certain death!

□You are safe!?□

□Yes, somehow. The imperial guards who remained with me are also safe.□

The unbelievable story caused Roze to think ‘As expected, Gramps might be something other than human.....’ and felt shudder more than happiness. As though guessing the emotional state of such Roze, Sabas replied back with voice that had wry smile mixed in.

□I’ll speak the detail later on slowly. Rather than that we have to hurry the evacuation now.□

□Tha, that’s right. Is the palace barrier and sky battlecrafts barrier gramps doing?□

□Yes. More accurately I captured a close aide of Qwailent’s king, so after talking a bit with him, he become a pawn——cough-, a cooperator that help us.□

□Lies-. This old man is a demon-. Doing such thing at me——za-~~~□

Right now, it felt like there was some kind of screaming voice from the other side..... Before Roze could ask back, the words of Sabas□Silas-kun, don’t make me do something that pained me so much□came and at the same time a short scream could be heard.....

□Roze-sama. It was a splendid speech just now. It seems that Silas-kun is also inspired by your majesty’s words that he give us his full cooperation happily. Other than the barrier

control, I also obtained the weapon control just now. I'll support Kuwaibel-sama right after this.

“Ah, yes.”

Sabastian—he was just too excellent. Roze's talk unconsciously became halting language.

But, at that time,

“GAAH!!!”

Terrible impact sound surged at the same time with a cry that was oozing with pain. Looking there, a tower that was a slight distance away from the palace was tilting greatly and cloud of dust was rising up from its foundation. The tilting of that tower became even more drastic and then it collapsed right away.

“Kuwaibel-”

Roze understood even without looking directly. That scream came from Kuwaibel. And then, it was also Kuwaibel who was blown away by an impact so great it could destroy a tower. There was also no voice that responded to Roze's call.

“Something like hope, doesn't exist.”

The answer that came instead was a voice that had no intonation as usual, yet it was boiling with negative emotion to the limit. When she turned her gaze there, behind the palace—right above the breeding farm was the figure of Helmut clad in black miasma.

Black miasma was spreading each time he beat his wings, coiling around like a vortex. The black dragon scales that

looked viscous didn't reflect the slightest bit of light and swallowed all light without leaving any behind.

Helmut's jaw was opened largely. The abnormal energy that was instantly focused in that mouth made Roze and others felt goosebumps on their back.

□There is no way I'll let you!□

Cutting through the rising cloud of dust, a streak of extreme light stretched to the sky and pierced Helmut's flank. The impact tilted Helmut's body, and the next moment the fired Helmut's breath attack grazed above the city's upper part and passed through.

Right after that, it pierced the land at the city's outer part that severely quaked along with a thunderous sound that sounded like scream. The vibration that rivaled a great earthquake caused the people who couldn't keep standing to scream and tumbled down one after another. During that time Helmut's breath wholly collapsed a part of the outer part that was directly hit.

Without even any time to shudder at that, Helmut turned his cloudy dragon eyes to below. Just with that, the miasma he was clad with crystallized as though it had substance——no, he was taking in the surrounding rain and crystallized it. It turned into twisted and warped spears and they became an excessively vicious squall that showered the ground.

In respond, Kuwaibel climbed to the sky and created a meteor shower. The swarm of light bullets met the spear of black rain that could be mistaken as black crystal and they neutralized each other, but the shooting that could even be thought as infinite was gradually making the interception not making it in time.

□Anti-air firearms control all free! Intercept them!□

Sabas's command caused the pillars and outer walls everywhere in the palace, and the garden and rooftop to let out anti-air weapons and they fired. The flare bombs that were included with the ration of one every dozens of shots colored the stormy sky. Those high caliber weapons splendidly destroyed the black rain spear that Kuwaibel didn't manage to deal with.

□All retainers-. Save our friends!□

Kuwaibel called out using the slight leeway that was created. The dragons who received the king's divine protection simultaneously scattered to the city. They were going to save their friends—the people who were late in evacuating.

□The resupply is finally finished. Sky battlecraft force, we are returning to the front line now!□

□Averia also can move!□

□Rozeria is all ok too-. We're reinforcing Kuwaibel-sama!□

Avenst's main force that had used up most of their ammo in the battle against the defense fleet now returned to the battlefield. The most elites among elites that Bovid personally picked up danced to the sky, Averia and Rozeria also had finished the minimum resupply and headed toward Helmut.

□This is Higgs squad. We are composed of planes loaded with Sythesizer. We are joining under the command of Avenst sky battlecraft force. Cooperation will be difficult, but give us instruction as you please!□



□This is battlecraft launching control room. The firearm control of the harbor is under control. Now reinforcing!□

The sky battlecraft force of Qwailent was flying toward the direction of Bovid and others. With the exception of the sky battlecraft squad that was deploying barrier, planes that could attack using sound wave were gathered up to form this improvised force. The person who seemed to be the leader was like a completely different person than a certain someone just a bit of time ago.

At the same time, the anti-air weapons that were installed at the military port area aimed their turret toward Helmut all at once.

—Without any distinction of enemy or ally, all people took each other's hand in order to live for tomorrow.

□.....Insects.□

Helmut's voice rang for the first time. It was faint, but the voice was definitely filled with something like "displeasure".

□Perish.□

Helmut's breath was fired once more.

Kuwaibel flew up and cut in on the line of fire. He similarly fired his breath. Jet black and extreme light clashed above the palace, the barrier of the palace was fiercely rippling just from the after shock.

□Guh, uuguh□

Kuwaibel leaked out a pained voice. The extreme light was gradually getting pushed back. His strength was genuinely

that of a grown up dragon, but he wasn't a match against Helmut.

□Synthesizer, activate!!□

□Averia, Rozeria, fire the main cannon at the same time!□

Qwailent's sky battlecraft force evaded the black rain spear while emitting weakening sound wave at Helmut. At the same time, Averia and Rozeria fired their main cannon. Two streak of flashes joined Kuwaibel's breath and assaulted Helmut like a trident.

But,

\*GOU-\*

Black miasma exploded. The whirling miasma bloated up so much it caused such vision, the sound wave and also the airship's main cannon were blown away altogether. In addition, Helmut's breath that drastically swelled up swallowed the extreme light.

□No way-, he is still holding back!?!□

What Kuwaibel could do was immediately forming barrier with maximum power. The barrier of light formed in front of his body blocked the breath's direct hit and it raised a scream. Kuwaibel couldn't even hover and he was getting pushed toward the ground.

□Your back is wide open yeah-□

□Concentrated fire!□

Bovid and Sabas carried out attack like surging waves. Numerous missiles rushed Helmut.

But,

□Wha-. Goddamn it!□

□Controlling weather.....it's just like the legend.□

Countless tornados fell down from the sky. They spiraled and rolled up the flying missiles which were pulverized inside. Before the missiles could reach their target, all of them exploded inside the tornado and bloomed flowers of flame blast.

□Kuh. Ro, Roze-. Everyone-, get them away.....from the palace-□

□Kuwaibel!?!□

□The spring's power-, is already-□

The monarch dragon power that he stocked up from the □Spring of True Dragon's Tear□ran out. The halting words of Kuwaibel conveyed his strength's limit. The power he poured into the barrier surpassed the limit to defend Helmut's breath. Kuwaibel's strength was decreasing just like water flowing into a bucket that had a hole opened.

The aurora covering the city was already gone. He was genuinely just barely on his limit.....

□Kuwaibel-sama! Please take this!□

The barrier would be smashed. Just when everyone thought that, the next moment a missile ran toward Kuwaibel. It was an unexpected attack from ally, however, Kuwaibel didn't move. Rather, his eyes shined in happiness.

Roze was also feeling the same.

The reason was, because that voice,

□Jean-. You are safe!?□

□Yes, your majesty. The others are also safe. As expected, I thought I was dead but, that crimson light——no, let's put that aside for now. Rather than that, it's improvised, but we prepared missile warhead filled with the spring water. I estimated that the water will have effect just by splashing it on Kuwaibel-sama's body, am I mistaken!?□

Just what in the world happened.....the wounds of Jean and others were obviously in the level that was beyond help, but they seemed to be alive. And not just that, they seemed to reach the spring that was still opened and created improvised missiles to transport the spring water.

It seemed the explosive of the missiles that were impacting one after another had been reduced, they broke before Kuwaibel's dragon scales and splashed him with the water inside. Kuwaibel gave his thanks□I'm fine, thank you!□.

As though to show that the water was definitely the real thing, the strength of the weakening Kuwaibel was restored. The barrier recovered its radiance and his body that was pushed back returned to a hovering state. And then, he fired a breath of extreme light with his restored strength. The breath blasted away several tornados and without stopping it hit Helmut.

Furthermore, Cranks squad led by Bovid slipped through the route where the tornados vanished using miraculous maneuver and they fired their missiles. All those hit the area around Helmut's face and scattered grand flame blast and shockwave.

□I don't know anything about your despair. For me who was born after everything was over, I cannot even imagine it sufficiently. But, however-, because you are my sibling-. I only understand that I have to end you no matter what!□

Kuwaibel charged with his body clad in light.

The only monarch dragon in the world. He had a lot of people who were like family to him, but a sibling who was related to him by blood was only this fallen existence before his eyes. A howl that was like a scream surged that he was going to kill with his hand the older brother who he met for the first time since he was born.

Helmut's muddy dragon eyes that looked like it wasn't seeing anywhere caught Kuwaibel. There was no reply. Was his intelligence already unable to do that much? Or else had he abandoned it already as unnecessary?

Without caring of those questions, Kuwaibel performed a tackle of all his might toward his elder brother's body using his body that was clad in extreme light.

The sound of impact between fellow dragons was played, the friction was fierce and sparks scattered.

Helmut's body was distanced away from the palace. Without pause Kuwaibel tried to bite at Helmut's neck.

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

A violent shockwave attacked Kuwaibel. It was just a howl. Yet despite so, the extreme light covering Kuwaibel's body was blown away, Kuwaibel himself was also tasting an impact that paralyzed his whole body and he was blown away.

Kuwaibel formed countless light bullets and fired them while this time his claws lunged the moment their body passed each other.

□Gua!?!□

The dragon claws didn't even graze. The moment Kuwaibel swam in the air, Helmut's tail scythed down on his face like a counter.

Even while rotating once midair, Kuwaibel fired light bullets randomly, but they were erased by black rain spears that Helmut fired in twice the number, several spears smashed up Kuwaibel's dragon scales. The piercing black rain spears inflicted simple wound, and more than that they began to display the effect of causing necrosis to flesh.

Kuwaibel almost screamed spontaneously feeling the excessive pain, but he swallowed it and fired his breath. The radiance of extreme light was erased just with a shockwave from Helmut's howl.

□Kuwaibel-sama-□

□Fire the main——□

The sky battlecraft force, airship Rozeria and Averia, the people handling the anti-air weapon on the ground, everyone of them tried to help Kuwaibel somehow but,

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

The evil dragon howl surged once more. But, this time it had slightly different disposition. At the same time with the howl, the miasma Helmut was clad in became ripple that spread through the battlefield. The effect was dramatic.

□aa.....□

□-□

What could be heard was such soundless screams. The sky battlecrafts were falling as though they were losing control. The movement of the airships was also turning simple and they showed no sign of firing their main cannon. The anti-air weapons on the ground also felt silent.

□Kuwa, ibel. The miasma is.....enveloping, everyone-.....□

Words from Roze barely reached Kuwaibel to inform him of what was happening.

Monarch dragon was an existence that bestowed divine protection to the people. Then, what would a fallen monarch dragon bestowed?

Despair. Terror. Nihilism that robbed the will.

Silver light vanished, in exchange black miasma coiled around the people. Everyone fell on their knees powerlessly. As though they were begging forgiveness at evil dragon Helmut.

□Everyone-□

□Everything perish.□

Kuwaibel tried to grant them divine protection in hurry, but Helmut didn't allow that. Countless black rain spears showered Kuwaibel's body, his dragon scales were smashed and his flesh gouged.

What he could do was only somehow making the falling sky battlecraft force to have emergency landing. Naturally, his

divided concentration thinned down the defense of his own body and several spears jut out from his body.

Kuwaibel endured the scream that almost leaked out and he emitted extreme light from his whole body, erasing the spears.

Kuwaibel roared while charging forward. He swung his claws, but they were instantly dodged and he was struck down from overhead.

In that case, he pretended to tackle and just before they clashed he rolled, he then similarly unleashed a tail attack, but as expected it was easily dodged and his chest was tore apart with a diagonal claw slash.

He fired light bullets. The black rain spears doubled in number and attacked him.

He fired breath attack. It was returned back with double the might.

The attack from his claws and fangs, and also his tail, everything was overturned with counterattack.

His tackle with his body that was clad in extreme light wasn't even dodged anymore as though to show the difference of their level.

□-.....a.....guru-.....i□

His body was truly wounded all over.

Even though he had obtained the strength of grown up dragon, even if Helmut had lost his sanity, the full-fledged difference in experience was cornering Kuwaibel. There was no way a young dragon who was born a few years ago could



possibly match a veteran monarch dragon that had lived for a few hundred years.

It looked as though an adult was handling a child who was stubbornly charging ahead.

Helmut's gaze was averted from Kuwaibel as though he lost interest. Ahead of his gaze was the palace. The people who were gathered there.

□Don't-□

□Despair for the world. Serenity for the world without light.□

Helmut fired his breath.

Kuwaibel cut in on the line of fire with his torn up body.

□GAH, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

A shriek that couldn't be heard as scream or howl surged. The barrier was scattered away. Kuwaibel became the people's shield using his body. He desperately resisted and somehow damped down the attack's power, although he was unable to defend to the end and got blown away.

His back struck a corner of the palace and a part of the building collapsed. Buried under rubbles, the figure of Kuwaibel who was letting out repeated small breaths was atrocious even only seen from outside. There wasn't anywhere unharmed on his chest, the spot was hideously burned so much that anyone would spontaneously want to avert their eyes. It was hard to search for a spot on his body that still had unharmed dragon scales.

□Kuwaibel-. Ku-chan!!□

Roze who rushed toward him even while enveloped in black miasma leaped toward Kuwaibel who was half-buried under the debris. She was desperately pulling down the debris.

Presence of death descended from the sky.

□Evil dragon, Helmut-□

Helmut opened his jaw as though something like Roze's yell wasn't even registered in his eyes. Light that would destroy everything was converging in the blink of eye.

\*gara-\* The sound of debris collapsing rang. At the same time extreme light surged out and formed many layers of barrier.

□Ku-chan!□

□I'm, fine, here. I'll, absolutely.....protect□

The horrifying black that looked like compressed from miasma became a streak of light and surged. The barriers of extreme light that Kuwaibel deployed splendidly blocked that personification of death.

Blood spray burst so grandly it felt like \*psheew\* sound could be heard. Kuwaibel firmly stepped on the ground on all four and he desperately maintained his barrier. But the more he held on, the more the wounds all over his body were spurting out blood.

Roze was at a loss for words. She felt frustrated, she hated herself who was unable to do anything, she merely stayed close beside her partner.

□Pointless.□

Helmut's cold voice could be heard.

□I, don't think so-□

Several layers of barrier were blown away. Kuwaibel emitted extreme light from his whole body while roaring as though he was burning his soul.

□Despair.□

□A king, absolutely won't despair-□

One more layer of barrier was smashed.

□Give up.□

□I won't, break my promise-. I won't, discard my mission-□

He had made a promise with his partner. He swore that he would become a king.

□Perish.□

□I'll live. With my life on the line. We will——□

Finally the last barrier creaked. Cracks entered it with ominous sounds.

But, there was no color of resignation in Kuwaibel's dragon eyes. He understood that at this rate he would die. There was also no other way left. However, his soul that he had already proclaimed out, that was the only thing that he couldn't betray!

That was why, at the very least he would roar. Toward the world, toward the evil dragon that was created by human's karma.

□I'll surpass you, and advance to the future ahead of this-!!!!□

The barrier bro——

□That's a wonderful howl. Blessing for that noble soul.□

He could hear a voice. A gentle voice that was warmth, that gave the impression of motherhood.

□Boy. Thou couldst not oppose an enemy of higher rank using strength. Look, avert it like this.□

□Eh? Aa.....□

Kuwaibel was enveloped by jet black light. It wasn't the black like Helmut's muddiness. If it had to be said, it was a magnificent black that reminded one of the night sky. It didn't hinder or paint over Kuwaibel's silver light. In harmony it displayed a blessing with radiance of black silver.

Perhaps what happened next was its effect. Inside Kuwaibel's brain, "the way to use strength" flowed in as image. Kuwaibel controlled his last barrier following the image, as though he was being guided.

Immediately, the barrier of light whirled fiercely, at the same time the barrier was angled. The whirling light scattered Helmut's breath from the tip of the direct hit, and then it was further vigorously averted toward empty sky.

The breath paused. Helmut's gaze ran toward unrelated direction as though he sensed the existence of an intruder.

□Come on, don't be in a daze boy. This place art a battlefield. Breath attack!□

□Fua!? Yes-□

The figure couldn't be seen, however that person's words floated inside his brain. Kuwaibel who didn't understand what was going on immediately obeyed. He released a breath of extreme light toward Helmut who was looking another way.

□Now, fly up. Higher and higher, take Helmut's above! Know that in an air battle, the one below art the one in disadvantage.□

Kuwaibel flew up, ignoring the pain all over his body. He only maintained his breath attack while flying up to far above.

Helmut dispelled the attack with a howl as though it was only an annoyance. And then, he fired a breath at Kuwaibel.

□Be conscious of gravity. Grasp the wind caressing thy wings. If thou art a race that rule the sky, don't fly with only thy power. The nature there art exactly our greatest ally.□

□Be conscious of gravity. Grasp the wind. The nature is exactly our ally.□

Images were flowing in. He descended in a straight line toward the approaching breath while his wings moved slightly to grasp the wind and changed the flow. Just with that Kuwaibel's body spiraled unbelievably and he dodged the breath as though it was skimming his back.

Kuwaibel descended beside the breath with fierce momentum as though his own body became a counter.

□Read the future. How wouldst he react against thy speed, physique, and eye motion? Go toward that future.□

□Read the future. My attack, where will it head to?□

What emerged on his brain was the replay of the happening from just now. An imagination of smooth evading motion overlapped with Helmut in the real world like an illusion. Kuwaibel matched his movement with the illusion Helmut that was starting to move, and he swung his claws ahead of that.

□-.....□

The claws of Kuwaibel that passed through Helmut without decelerating were smeared with Helmut's broken scale and blood. When he changed his wings' angle just like his imagination, his direction changed drastically at the same time with an intense centrifugal force.

There, Helmut launched countless spears of black rain.

□Read the line of fire. It's also important to conduct oneself so there wouldst be no one to cover behind thy back. Accurately move with necessary amount, to the necessary place, at the necessary time. Charging forward, or taking role as shield in self-sacrifice, they art not something to be used recklessly.□

Kuwaibel took a sharp turn because he understood that Helmut would attack when he exposed an opening after dealing an attack. There was nothing behind Kuwaibel's back after he turned. If there wasn't any need to protect anything, he could easily endure things like the black rain spears with just several shots of light bullet.

The "way of fighting" was conveyed to him one after another. Completely different from his shoddy fighting before this when he would defend right from the front when he was attacked, or how he would go in a straight line when

attacking, his maneuver right now that was accompanied with “tactic” was increasing Helmut’s wound by one, and then one more.

In proportion with the number of wound, glimpses of irritation were starting to be faintly visible from Helmut.

Tornados were falling down as though to block Kuwaibel’s route, but he used even those whirling winds and nimbly danced in the sky. His flying skill that was gradually getting polished was finally turning into something that could even evade the black rain spears without him needing to use light bullet.

Helmut’s gaze went away from Kuwaibel and turned into the palace once more. That was because he knew that if he attacked there, then Kuwaibel would be forced to defend them.

□Boy, thou understand correct? Teach him what art the cost of taking off his eyes from the enemy in the battlefield.□

□Yes, yes-, Haha-ue!□

□o, Ou.....oh no, this art the first time I’m called as mother.....□

It seemed the voice was agitated, but Kuwaibel who reflexively called like that from his subconscious was already in concentrating state. He was focusing his light in his mouth, however, it was slightly different from before.

The breath of extreme light was fired \*DOU-\*. It shook the air. Helmut ignored the attack as though to say that it had been demonstrated that he wouldn’t be seriously damaged from that, he was about to release his breath toward the palace——

□——, ii!? Gaa!?!□

The extreme light pierced Helmut's chest. The breath was thin, it was compressed until the extreme limit, furthermore the breath was added with spiraling motion in order to increase its penetrating power. Without pause Kuwaibel moved his breath in a mowing motion.

Helmut avoided getting his body bisected because he immediately twisted his body, but the spot from his chest until his shoulder blade was wholly cut apart. One of his arms was dangling down limply, it was in a state where it was connected only by a bit of flesh and skin.

Helmut turned his gaze toward Kuwaibel with naked hatred,

□GURYAH!!□

□-□

He opened his eyes wide toward the jaw of Kuwaibel who had already approached until before his eyes. Kuwaibel was firing his piercing breath while approaching. Helmut whose stance was broken didn't have the leisure to evade that, Kuwaibel's jaw snapped at one of his wings.

Without pause Kuwaibel rolled midair and bit off the wing with a twist.

A shriek rang out from Helmut for sure this time. Kuwaibel used his rotating motion and launched a tail attack that was fully filled with centrifugal force. He struck down the shrieking Helmut to the ground.

□That attack art not bad. Now, boy. Hone thy mind keenly. The might of thy breath doesn't rely only on energy. Possess



a strong heart. Unshakeable will, resolve, they art what make a dragon's howl(breath) powerful!□

□Yes, Haha-ue. ....I'm finishing this, brother.□

Extreme light illuminated the world. He could imagine the way to knead power. Because he received the guidance from the warm existence.

The chest of Kuwaibel who was bending his body greatly backward was getting bigger, Helmut looked up to the sky from the ground. The dragon eyes that contained iron will crossed the dragon eyes of despair and hatred.

Right after that, a streak of extreme light pierced toward the ground, like the judgment of heaven. It fiercely shook the floating island and enveloped Helmut.

The world was illuminated by light of aurora.

The extreme light that pierced the floating island also opened a big hole in the sea of clouds and pierced toward the lower world.

And then.....

The extreme light vanished into empty air. After that there was nothing remaining.

The body of Kuwaibel who was unsteadily flying powerlessly was gradually getting smaller while he returned toward Roze's position.

□Ku-chan!□

□Rozeeee□

By the time he returned at Roze's position, Kuwaibel had completely returned to his former size. Roze hugged such Kuwaibel to her chest.

□You are amazing-. You are cool-. You are without a doubt, the greatest king! You are the pride of dragon kingdom.□

Roze rubbed her cheek on Kuwaibel while trickling tears. Kuwaibel also pressed his cheek fawningly. And then, they stared at each other while listening to the people who were rushing toward them while noisily raising joyful cheers. The grinned widely at each other.

□You did it, partner-□

□I did it, partner!□

Both of them were so wounded to the degree it was unthinkable that they were royalty. But, for the people who were rushing toward them, they were unmistakably king. The people of the dragon kingdom couldn't help but shedding tears toward the one human and one dragon cuddling close at each other.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned toward the people together.

And then,

Flash surged.

It rushed toward the two, like the judgment from heaven.

□aa□

□Roze-□

Roze was dumbfounded. Kuwaibel could do nothing but calling her name. Death illuminated the two, the scythe of

the death god was swung down.

□To lose focus even though the dark cloud art not even clearing up.....that's a great reduction on thy point, boy.□

With extremely thick black flash overhead, when anyone realized, a beautiful woman wearing an outfit that was a blending of eastern and western——Tio Claus was there with one hand raised up.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

When I gave up making scene of quick peerlessness, for some reason Ku-chan came out to the front.

Shirakome's plot generally isn't breathing.....

Now then, it has become the last day of this year.

Various thing happened through this year, but I think that it was mainly a fun year.

I believe that uploading in Narou, and then getting healed by the harmony that everyone of Narou people showed me are surely a big reason of that.

Really, thank you very much for this year.

Regarding the extra compilation of Arifureta, there are still characters that I want to write.

And so I'm thinking that next year too I want to continue and post Arifureta.

I'm thinking that next year too I'll be able to have fun again with everyone of Narou people, so please take care of me.

My objective for next year is decidedly "to keep my words".

Also, I'm thinking if only I can write some kind of new story...

I still don't have any plot, but what I can say with certainty is, it will be a full throttle of Shirakome's hobby similar like Arifureta, and above all it will surely be an opportunism story that Shirakome can enjoy.

If it please you, I'll be happy if we can enjoy ourselves together again.

Well then all of you Narou people, have a good year.

I look forward to working with you again next year!

Tomorrow I will upload the last chapter of Tio arc. The subtitle will be "To the Morning of Falling Star". I'm thinking that perhaps subtitle "The Day the Demon God was Born" will be fine too, but it felt like it will overlap with a certain Geass person so I altered it.

I won't specify the time. Because I get the feeling it will be overlap of objective with early New Year.

But, even saying that, I'll give advance notice of just this.

I'll also upload the special New Year chapter. I haven't think of anything yet though!

# Arifureta After II In the Morning of Falling Star

AN: Happy new year.

---

There was a beautiful barrier of whirling jet black color on the hand that Tio lifted up. That barrier blocked the extremely thick flash falling from the sky.

Although the flash's power was scattered, but the attack that possessed the power that rivaled even Kuwaibel's breath just now was making cracks on the barrier right away, but the barrier shined instantly and it was restored as though nothing had happened to it. The barrier recovered using regeneration magic. In front of the foul play that was an age of god magic, the divine punishment attack couldn't pass.

□Tio-sama!□

□Haha-ue!□

□U, uumu. Boy, thou art calling me Haha-ue extremely naturally like that. A~u~, somehow it's really embarrassing~□

Tio-san fidgeted. For Kuwaibel who didn't know his mother, Tio's great existence and her gentle guidance was truly like

the mother inside his imagination. Therefore, he called her that from subconscious level, but Tio's attitude caused him to realize how he was calling her after this late and he also began to fidget around similarly.

So far as it went, the flash of death that could easily scatter away the average existence was still pouring down even now but.....it seemed that Serious-san was currently resting.

'Oh Serious, come back!' Even if such thing was said surely nothing would happen, but a change appeared at the same time when the flash vanished.

Miasma was gathering in the air where there was nothing.

The miasma that was gathering from every direction was gradually increasing in thickness and forming shape. Yes, it was forming dragon shape. The shape of Helmut!

□No way.....□

□Does this mean.....that Helmut is immortal?□

Roze and Kuwaibel were staring dumbfounded at Helmut who finished his revival inside the miasma.

□Uumu, as expected I don't think that he is immortal. Most likely, that too art one of his technique created from his power's true nature.□

Hearing Tio who was calmly analyzing the situation despite the despairing content of her talk caused the two to somehow recovered from their stupor.

And then, Kuwaibel tried to fly toward the □Spring of True Dragon's Tear□ impatiently. But, the cost of him forcing himself caused intense pain that attacked his whole body

and he almost fell from Roze's arms. His wings convulsed and they were unable to move properly.

Tio smiled slightly seeing such Kuwaibel. Her hand reached out gently and she softly caressed Kuwaibel's head.

□Thou hath do thy best with that young body. Just as Roze-done said, thou were indisputably cool. That's why, rest already.□

□But.....□

Kuwaibel's gaze caught Helmut who was further taking in miasma from the surrounding. As a king, it was his duty to eradicate that, his gaze was appealing so.

□It's not that I don't understand thy feeling. But, at the very least this art too heavy of a burden for the current thou. Didst thou forget? In the first place it's my wish to get rid of that.□

Indeed, there was such talk. To say the truth, after annihilating the main fleets, Tio and Hajime were watching the fight against Helmut. From really far away with their figure and presence hidden.

As fellow dragon, as someone who was placed in the same circumstances, Tio wished to perform the last rites for him who had fallen and was now called an evil dragon. But, that wasn't something that Tio had to do by herself no matter what.

Just like how defeating the fleet was something that the black dragons ought to do, defeating Helmut as a king, or perhaps as a brother was originally something that Kuwaibel ought to do.

That was why, even after Hajime and Tio confirmed Helmut's existence, the two of them only watched Kuwaibel who began to fight without interfering. The two of them didn't even have grudge or hard feelings toward Helmut, they didn't even feel hostile toward him. Originally they had no reason to fight.

But, that Kuwaibel had already passed his limit. It was too impossible for him to face Helmut who was already stepping one foot into the domain of concept. Because it was like challenging a natural disaster.

□We will, be given salvation?□

Roze asked.

□No. It's not salvation. It's just, that this world art make to go along with Goshujin-sama's convenience.□

Tio answered like that.

Roze and Kuwaibel tilted their head. Behind the two of them, there were the figures of the people who although before this they were rushing while cheering, yet they witnessed the evil dragon's revival and stiffened in fear.

The words of curses were resounding once more into their ears.

——Perish.

——Suffer, gasp, despair

——There is no worth in living

——To be born is evil

——Everything be destroyed



—Nothingness is the very best choice

—Renew the world

—Die for the sake of creation

□Die□The curse echoed directly inside the brain. It was repeated over and over, reverberating inside as though to imprint into the mind. People who fell on their knees while holding their head appeared one after another. The miasma that was spreading around Helmut who had completely recovered his form was enveloping the people.

Perhaps—could it be that Helmut was the incarnation of the judgment that this world itself handed down? The will of the world responded to the hatred and despair of Helmut to bring punishment to the humans who broke the harmony of the world.

□A lot of your species were killed.□

Roze and others were gasping in agony in front of Helmut that was like the very will of the world itself, amidst such situation, such words suddenly could be heard.

□Even though you believed that the past should be able to be regained, yet your species was reduced into livestock instead.□

It wasn't Helmut's voice. It was a human, a man's voice. Even though the voice's volume was like a whisper, somehow it entered into the ears smoothly without getting drowned out by other sounds.

□Your important siblings were murdered, your trust was trampled underfoot.□

The curse of death was resounding even now inside the head. The people's agony didn't lessen. But, the people's gaze wandered around restlessly searching for that man's voice. Even though those were only words, for some reason they had a sense of presence that couldn't be ignored.

□Leave behind everything and depart to the end of the world. Even though you decided that, what you witnessed was the sight of your violated species and family.....□

'Ah', someone whispered. When they looked to the sky, there was a man standing in the air while spreading crimson ripples.

That figure clad in crimson aura, standing with composure while his hands were staying still inside his pockets, the people's gaze was peeled off from Helmut and focused there. Helmut also turned his blank and muddy dragon eyes toward him——Hajime.

□There ain't any salvation huh. It was just too much huh. If you saw that kind of sight, of course you won't be able to stay sane. If it was me, I'm gonna curse the world for sure then.□

Hajime talked toward Helmut with a voice that conveyed emotion like sympathy and compassion, even gentleness could vaguely be felt from him.

Kuwaibel's gaze was directed toward his fallen brother. Roze directed a pained and guilty expression toward Helmut. The people too, their expression distorted at the karma of mankind that was thrust before them.

The meaning of the words that Roze said, that they would fight the world for the sake of future, there was no doubt that in this time they strongly felt its meaning for real.

Even now Helmut was continuously taking in miasma, it was unclear whether he was listening or not at Hajime's words. It was like a wordless accusation toward the whole world, that he absolutely wouldn't forgive them.

Toward such Helmut, Hajime showed a gentle smile that even gave impression of kindness——

□Anyway, die.□

And fired the shell of Schlagen AA that he had secretly charged up!

The crimson flash blown up Helmut-san's head with one shot!

Helmut-san, he worked hard regenerating his head!

There Agni Orkan dealt additional blow!

Total number of 1200 shots, heat of 3000 degree Celsius, pencil missiles where every single one possessed destructive power that equaled with anti-warship missile were rushing!

Helmut-san was in fully beaten up state with his regeneration only starting!

Flowers of crimson shockwaves and flame blasts were blooming profusely in the sky. All the people including Roze who were staring dumbfounded at that with their eyes half opened wide yelled with splendid synchronization.

□□□□□Anyway, how did that turn into this-!?□□□□□

The context of the beginning and end was fatally not meshing up. Or rather, what's with the gentle expression? What did 'anyway, die' mean!?

All people acted the straight-man without distinction of ally or enemy.

Hajime beautifully ignored the retort of those people in the ground as though nothing happened, with narrowed eyes he thoroughly observed Helmut who was repeatedly regenerating and destroyed. He operated Agni Orkan with one hand, and while showering the will of the world with blows, his other hand was supporting his chin while whispering things like "Hmm hmm, I see. As I thought the energy's circulation is like that....." and so on.

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

A fierce roar was released from Helmut. The roar became shockwave that blew away the missiles and attacked toward Hajime and others like a tsunami. The shockwave was far more powerful than what he showed when fighting Kuwaibel before this.

Anyway, Hajime defended using space isolation barrier of Cross Velts.

Helmut further attacked with his breath. The scale was truly immense. The power surpassed the attack that Kuwaibel did with all his might.

Anyway, it was defended by multiple layer of Cross Velts' space isolation barrier.

".....I, defended against that with my life on the line though"

"Ku, Ku-chan....."

Even though he was a dragon, but Ku-chan's eyes turned into dead fish eyes. Even though he was a dragon.....

While everyone was leaking out strange voice "UBOoa" from their mouth seeing the barrier that easily blocked the attack that could easily destroy a country, the mouth of Hajime who was focused in observing Helmut was gradually distorting into a widee~~ grin.

It was as though a fun fun time would start soon. Like a kid that was given a toy right before his eyes.

"I can see it, the mechanism of this world's cycle. I grasp it already now, the true nature of dragon core energy. Now, I'll clear one of mankind's grand problem."

The interest of Hajime who was whispering with small voice was already veered away from Helmut and moved toward another different something. Although, the one who sensed that was only Tio, so the other people who saw Hajime smiling like a demon in front of Helmut's breath were drawing back from him.

"Tio. Is it really okay that it's not you who do it?"

"Yes. I only wish that this pitiful existence art ended already. It's a bit hard for me because of the transformation into dragon god mode. I wouldst leave it to Goshujin-sama."

Hajime who confirmed for the last time took out his gatling pile bunker. The electromagnetically accelerated super heavy giant stake couldn't hope to have its trajectory averted with just the like of a mere roar's shockwave.

Furthermore, the amount of stakes was like a barrage. Sure enough, just how much Helmut could dodge.....

"As I thought, it's that kind of method huh. Evil dragon Helmut, I got it already you know? You aren't here right?"

In opposite with Hajime's calm whisper, a commotion occurred on the ground. That was something that couldn't be helped. After all, Helmut dispersed before he got hit by the attack.

That was exactly the true nature of Helmut's power. It wasn't a power to manipulate weather or to make black rain rained down.

It was the power to manipulate the negative energy itself with dragon core as the basis. That was exactly the true nature of power Helmut was awakened at the end of his despair and hatred. The negative energy running rampant in the broken world granted Helmut power that was almost nearly infinite. He could even condense negative energy and formed shape with it remotely from distant position.

□Just how that kind of existence can be defeated.....□

Roze whispered in despair.

It was truly immortality. No matter what kind of attack it faced, it could easily recover by disintegrating the negative energy. No matter how much damage it received, the body here was just a temporary flesh.

It felt like Helmut was laughing.

Hajime-san laughed mo~~re.

□Yoo, do you have any time for smirking like that huh?□

Hajime raised one of his hands casually. He held out one finger and pointed to the sky.

Lured by that gesture, the people, and also Helmut looked up to the sky. What was there was naturally only the black

clouds created from condensed negative energy——

□.....□

□Tha, that's?□

Helmut stared intently at the dark clouds. Roze whispered in astonishment. The people were speechless with their eyes turned into dot.

A spot in the sky looked burning red. At first it was only faintly. But it was gradually getting bigger, dazzling.....

\*GOU-\*

The dark cloud was blown away. The reason was one.

□You better remember this. If you are going to put on air giving a divine punishment, then do it like this.□

From the sky behind Hajime, that was falling diagonally with brilliant radiance. The thing that was freefalling from outside the stratosphere had only its trajectory corrected using gravity control.....

——Meteor Impact

The evil dragon had the same definition like a natural disaster? Very well. Then, this side too would oppose using cataclysm.

The gigantic stone with a diameter that could reach fifty meter was blazing bright red and descended from the sky. It caused Helmut to stiffen for a moment.

Naturally, that moment was fatal. The meteor blasted away the whole energy body of Helmut and descended to the ground. It was fortunate that its flying trajectory that was

pulled by gravity was diagonal. It was totally unthinkable that the floating island would be safe if it got hit by that.

Without pause the meteorite's shockwave blew away the sea of clouds in radial shape, and it dropped on the land at faraway.

The world quaked severely. Although the falling speed was adjusted to a certain degree which damped its strength, this was a fifty meter giant stone that fell from outside the stratosphere. That impact was impossible to measure, a giant cloud mushroom materialized. Because of that, the sea of clouds was getting further blown away in circle shape.

If there was anyone observing, surely they would witness the land turned inside up and undulated with many protrusions.

Helmut gathered miasma and revived.

No matter how out of mind the destructive power the attack possessed, as long as this world was filled with negative energy, he would be able to create energy body as many as he wanted. Yes, Helmut glared fiercely at Hajime as though declaring that but,

□I didn't say that's the end of it you know?□

The cloudy sky was lighting up with lights one after another. The brightly burning red specks were appearing everywhere in the cloudy sky!

Roze and others went pale. They were in a stupor at the phenomenon that was out of common sense, but in front of the calamity that would happen after this, blood left their face right away and they drew back.

——Demon King-style Harassment 108 “Wish Upon a Star”



Now everyone, let's make a wish! Wish so that you can survive!

What was being done was simple. A random pounding of meteor impact. Meteors of various sizes at outside the stratosphere were thrown out, their trajectory and speed were adjusted using gravity control and they were turned into a suitable meteor shower. If a mistake was made then the planet would be totally broken with this lovely harassment!

The meteor shower that broke through the dark clouds blew away the dark clouds in the sky one after another with the shockwave they scattered in their wake.

The land below was plowed by incessant earthquakes and impacts, gigantic tsunamis were generated on the seas.

Surely if this planet was seen from the space, sea of clouds that became riddled with holes and mushroom clouds rising up in succession could be seen at half the surface of the planet.

Helmut's energy body was blown away and resurrected, then it was blown away again and resurrected again. There was no way it had any time to attack back or anything, even when it tried to call tornado from the dark clouds, those dark clouds were blown away and dispersed.

The negative energy was also blown away by the heat wave and shockwave, the miasma's convergence was gradually turning unsteady.

□Is it soon?□

As though in response to Hajime's whisper, a faint howl was thundering. From very far distance, something that was

emitting a presence that would overshadow even Helmut's energy body before this was approaching with absurd speed.

It was the appearance of the main body. The energy body couldn't be formed, the sea of clouds and the dark clouds too were also blown away, and currently the planet itself was in the progress of being destroyed. Those facts caused the main body to finally come out. The pressure that could be felt even with the distance was so much it felt like it could possibly rival Tio's black god dragon mode.

And so, Hajime responded with concentrated fire of meteor impact.

A part of the meteor shower that was diversely scattering toward all over the world tilted their route and flew toward the same direction.

——GURYAAAAAAAAAA-!!

A roar thundered

——GAAAAAAAAAA-!!

A howl resounded once more.

——GU, GURYAAAA-!!

A howl was radiating.....

——aAAAAAAAAA-!!

Was that, a howl?

Just how much distance he had advanced through with how much speed? Helmut's real body that finally showed up clad in miasma——somehow it was really beaten up.

□Kill-, Kill-, Kill-□

□Ooh, aren't you really emotional there□

Killing intent and hatred surged accompanied with physical pressure. A breath was fired from Helmut.

It was returned back by the variable chakram's gate. A roar (?) 'GYAAAAAAAAAAAH' reverberated.

Perhaps the real body's gathering rate was different with the energy body, because Helmut gathered negative energy directly from super wide range and healed his wounds. And then, attempting close range if his long range attack got returned, he tried to bite at Hajime with super acceleration from his hovering state.

And so, Hajime was,

□Oi oi, you sure? Isn't there something important over there?□

After saying such thing, a part of the meteor shower changed direction again. Helmut didn't care and approached to kill Hajime, but he instantly noticed that the flying giant rocks passed through overhead and they were flying toward the direction faraway behind him. He got taken aback suddenly and he changed his route rapidly.

Like that, when he fired his breath toward the giant rock, that giant rock was splendidly blasted into pieces midair. A killing intent incomparable with before was released.

Helmut who turned around focused on Hajime once more—and his eyes opened wide at the meteor shower that was changing route one after another.

□GAAAAAAAAAAAAAH□

An extra loud howl surged, Helmut concentrated on shooting down the meteor shower using his breath. Even so there was times when he didn't make it in time. At that time he would perform tackle with his body to divert the meteor's trajectory at any rate.

Seeing Helmut who seemed somewhat desperate,

□What's the matter? Why aren't you dodging? It's like you are protecting something there. Right, for example, the place where your sibling's dragon core is enshrined perhaps?□

Those words resounded extremely clearly. They smoothly entered into the people's ears through the scream of the severely quaking world.

Like that, the people guessed. Why didn't Helmut dodge the meteor shower? In the first place, even though the meteor shower was flying from far beyond, why did he get hit during the way until here until he got that beaten up?

There was one reason for that. Because behind Helmut—in the place where he was hiding, the dragon core of his sibling who was sacrificed to become the energy source of the mother ship Avenst before was enshrined there. Helmut wouldn't allow the memento of his sibling to be lost because of the meteor impact.

In other words,

□.....He is taking hostage, no, memento hostage?□

Yes, exactly. Hajime-san took hostage the important treasure of Helmut. 'It's fine even if you dodge the meteor impact you

know? But, the important thing behind you will return back into dust though?' Like that.

Hearing Roze's words, the people slo~~wly returned their gaze at Hajime.

Over there, fighting against the evil dragon who wished for mankind's destruction, was a devil who was making a truly wicked smile while firing meteor shower one after another.

Evil dragon? No no, compared to him who was shooting down meteor shower while desperately trying to protect his important thing, that guy who was carrying out world scale destruction while viciously beating his opponent in a situation that couldn't be escaped from was far more evil.

For this world, Helmut was an existence that should even be called as the representative of this world's will. That was to say he was an existence that was equal with god. Then, that person who was trampling underfoot that god was.....

Devil? Noo, he wasn't in a level that still had lovable nature like that.

Demon king? He was similarly a king like the queen-sama and monarch dragon-sama who was risking their life to protect the people? Seriously stop that comparison.

The heart of the people was magnificently synchronized at that time.

That thing, clad in crimson, destroying the world, that thing which was trampling down evil with even more evil and irrationality was.....

□□□□□.....A demon god.□□□□□

That day, the legend of demon god was born in the world of sky.

□UNFORGIVABLE-. UNFORGIVABLE-!!□

Evil dragon Helmut-san who was already wounded all over struck at Hajime with intense killing intent and hatred but,

□I don't need any forgiveness. Die.□

Something cast a shadow. What appeared from the sky was a super giant rock with diameter around 500 meters.

Helmut immediately became hidden in the shadow of the giant meteor and disappeared from view. What's left then was only a scream of death agony, and a severe earthquake that reverberated through the world, and then.....

□Something like this, is just too muchhh□

Only such words filled with grief from Ku~chan.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The first day of the year. Shirakome who is immediately guilty.

Sorry.

Just a bit more, I'm reflecting back on the pace.

# **New Year Special After Story The Scene of a Mundane New Year (Limited to Nagumo Family)**

AN: I barely made it, to post the New Year chapter.

It's short, but please enjoy it if you will.

---

□Flatten! Flatten! Become tas~ty! Flat! Desuu!□

□Flatten! Flatten! Become tas~ty! Flat! Nano!□

It was the early afternoon of the New Year's Day where there was clear air and transparent sunlight showering down the world.

Such enthusiastic shouts were resounding in a corner of Nagumo family's garden. The voices' owners were Shia who was sporting a wide smile with her rabbit ears hopping up and down, and Myuu who was sporting the same wide smile while wearing rabbit ear hair band that was made to hop up and down.

Both of them were currently in the middle of pounding mochi.

By the way, Myuu's rabbit ear hair band was a high level item that wasn't inferior in texture or appearance compared to the real thing.

The raw materials were supplied by Yue. It was an item where Yue's skill shined from her putting all her heart into producing animal ear hair band because once Shia's rabbit ears stolen Hajime's attention. Myuu was looking enviously at Shia's rabbit ears, so Yue created it once more and gave it to Myuu.

That rabbit ears that was endlessly close to the real thing, just from where in the world Yue procured it from.....

Yue who borrowed the compass and crystal key from Hajime and then returned after thirty minutes later were holding rabbit ears that weren't even bundled in her hand. Surely she had just gone to a place like a specialist shop for animal ear.

Even if for example right after the gate was opened and the scenery that could be seen at the other side resembled the abyss of "Orcus Great Labyrinth", even if she grasped rabbit ears were sometimes twitching, even if there was a drop of red of something on Yue's cheek, there was no doubt that the item was purchased from a specialist shop.

Even if for example-, for a while Shia folded her rabbit ears flat on her head as though protecting it while she was directing a terrified gaze at Yue, or even if Inaba who they finally met after a long time was shocked when he saw the rabbit ear hair band equipped on Myuu's head, but if it was said that it was a purchased item then that was a purchased item, the end!



□He, hey, both of thee. It's fine that thou art singing rhythmically, but couldst not thou relax the pace and strength? From a while ago, mine hands art sometimes flattened here.□

Tio were giving a warning toward Shia and Myuu who were pounding mochi harmoniously like a real sisters, while her voice sounded pained, but strangely excitement could also be felt from it.

Tio received the role to turn over the mochi inside the millstone, but it was just as she said, since before this her hands were flattened several times. Even now Shia and Myuu weren't holding back in their mochi pounding. They were swinging down the weight of war hammer as it was.

□What are you doing, Tio-san. Please turn over the mochi quickly!□

□Nano! Mochi pounding is a fight against time nano! Tio-oneechan, do it properly!□

□E, a, yes.□

Tio put in her hands in hurry to turn over the mochi.

□Flatten-desuu!□

□Ah!? Shia! Thou, just now, thou purposefully——□

□Flatten-nano!□

□Higii!? Myuu!? Why didst thou swing down just now!?□

Flatten-flatten! *Ah!? Flatten-flatten-! Ahiih!?*

The mochi and hands were changing shape properly along with the rhythmically cute words. Tio's interlude that

sometimes got in between produced a nice flavor.

□Oh man~, pounding mochi suited Shia-chan really well. As expected from a rabbit. Myuu-chan's appearance of mochi pounding rabbit-chan is also really cute.□

□Totally. If only there isn't a pervert who is putting both hands on ground while making expression of ecstasy between them, I'll want to preserve this scene in recording.□

In respond to the words of Shuu who was sipping tea on veranda, Hajime was also sipping tea while agreeing (?). Both of them couldn't put in boorish retort, whether toward the pervert who finally entered and took out both her hands, or about how what was used to pound mochi was a war hammer that had soaked in the blood of innumerable enemies, all those points were ignored in this New Year mood.

The two who averted their gaze from the rabbit ear duo and the pervert turned their eyes toward another corner of the spacious garden.

Over there was also a scenery that was really like New Year event.

□Aa!? Yue! Just now, you absolutely used gravity magic there! That's foul!□

□.....A cruel false accusation. If you are talking about foul play, then it's Kaori's foul play by the time you use two racket style in this battledore.□(TN: Battledore=early form of badminton racket)

The two who faced each other with moderate distance in between were Kaori and Yue. The hand of the two was holding battledore racket. What they were doing since just

now while noisily quarreling with each other was Japanese badminton.

□This isn't foul play! There is no rule forbidding using two rackets. But, using magic is obviously a foul play right?□

□.....What is called a rule, is something decided by one's own strength!□

□It's useless even if you said it with that posed look!□

Kaori-san serve! \*whoosh-\* The shuttlecock that made an uncommon sound cut through the sky. An average human would be unable to react against that speed without doubt! Its angle was also the same!

But, the shuttlecock was rapidly decelerating in front of Yue, it was slowly advancing as though in slow motion.

□.....This is my zone. Eat this, Heavy Shottt□

□That's why, that's just gravity magic! Uu, in that case I too.....here I go, try stopping this! God Speed Shottt!□

When Yue fired a heavy smash using gravity magic, Kaori hit back while at the same time firing a smash of god speed that shortened the arrival time.

Kaori-san grinned complacently seeing the shuttlecock passing through beside Yue. However, Yue-sama wasn't that naïve.

□.....There is no such thing as blind spot for me!□

□Ah, using Divine Existence is seriously unfair!□

Using instantaneous space teleportation, Yue appeared in front of the shuttlecock that had passed through. She

ignored Kaori's protest forthrightly and hit back the shuttlecock. The shuttlecock ascended high to the sky. Yue lifted the corner of her lips. It was obvious what she was thinking.

(You are planning to drop it from above with super gravity aren't you!? I won't let that!)

Kaori leaped up. Like a wild eagle! A down smash attacked Yue from above!

Yue's racket sparked.

□.....Lightning Dragon Shottt□

The shuttlecock howled! The shuttlecock was clad in lightning at the same time with the impact, it then flew while simultaneously turning into lightning dragon with the jaws opened wide!

□Naïve, how naïve, Yue!□

Kaori's racket was tinged with silver light. With superb moderation of power, disintegration ability erased only the lightning dragon just before it could hit Kaori and hit back the shuttlecock!

Magic(shuttlecock) was flying wildly about, the players were moving around with god speed, or instant teleportation, secretly magic was simply fired! Between times, disparagement like□.....Idiot Kaorii□or□Bird-brain Yueee□ also gushed out.

□The two of them are really getting along huh.□

□Well, I won't deny that. Perhaps because of the automatic regeneration or miraculous recovery magic, year by year

their quarrel is turning more extreme, but the two of them also go shopping together normally though.□

\*Chudon-! Dokan-!\* While listening to the harmonious Japanese badminton game that gave out such impact sounds, the father and son sipped their tea. Hajime nonchalantly released artifact for countermeasure against the neighborhood.

When Shuu and Hajime closed their eyes partly at the air of New Year and the comfortable shockwave, joyful voices 'kyaa kyaa' resounded from inside the room behind them.

□Ahahah, look look! My mercenary group succeeded in their surprise attack again! My funds get tripled as the success reward!□

□Wh, why is it only Sumire-okaasama who get into good square.....as for me, I lost even my home already. Even though I'm a princess, even though, I'm a princess.....□

□Li, Lily.....how pitiful. To receive this treatment even in the world of board game. Compared to that, Remia-san who is steadily succeeding in starting business is terrifying. My position got overtaken before I realized it.□

□My my, what to do. I get a child again. This time it's a twin. Everyone, please give me two million each for the celebratory gift. Ufufu□

Sumire, Liliana, Shizuku, and then Remia were amusing themselves with Game of Life Tortus version. It was a revised edition where Japanese language was used in every aspect of it, starting from the money's denomination.

The manufactured was a mysterious character called South Cloud. It was a moderate sized board, but it was an artifact

class game that made use of status plate function, so the squares' content would be changed along with the players matching with the established vocation. Just like status plate, above the white board there were the squares and pawns floating up. (TN: Nagumo was formed from the kanji of 'south' and 'cloud')

Due to the fact that people could have simulated experience of a life possessing a vocation they dreamed of, this was an extremely popular game that was selling like crazy in Tortus through Yunker Company. (TN: Yunker is the name of an energy product in Japan. Also I tried looking back at the early chapters and found out about Motto Yunker, I totally forget about this character until now. I wonder if any of you still remember him? He is a leader of a merchant group Hajime met in Tortus. Aside from his name Yunker that is like energy drink, the name Motto also meant 'more' in Japanese. So this guy's name means 'more Yunker'. Remember this kids, this will come out in test)

An artifact class game was selling in great amount.....

That fact caused the top brasses of every country and every organization to hold their head altogether in great perplexity.

Back to the topic.

Currebtly, Sumire became a leader of a mercenary group and devoted herself to the extreme of wickedness.....she was managing her work favorably. Liliana became the princess of a ruined country and she wandered aimlessly to every place, Shizuku was achieving success as an adventurer within limitation, while Remia became a wealthy merchant that contended for the top spot even in Fuhren.

By the way, Remia already had eight children. And then, right now it seemed she made her ninth and tenth children. She was demanding celebratory gift with bright smiling face.

Sumire was saying "Congratulations! I'll wish you well for in reality too okay!" while handing over the celebratory money, Shizuku was handing over her due while smiling wryly from looking beside her, and Liliana was whispering ".....I cannot pay, the celebratory money. Large money like two million, how would I..... Ahaha, getting loan isn't it. Even though I'm a princess, even though, I'm a princess.....".

It seemed Liliana finally became a princess in debt.

"How peaceful."

"Really."

When Shuu whispered in earnestness, Hajime then agreed in earnestness. They sipped their tea.

But, at that time, Sumire while being a leader of a mercenary group happily yelled "Oh my, dear me, I finally get married!". Shuu's ears twitched in reaction.

It seemed that spring also came even for the strongest mercenary group leader.

Suddenly, or possibly with the feeling of escapism, the princess in debt asked Sumire.

"Come to think of it, how did Sumire-okaasama met with Shuu-otousama? As expected, was it developed through hobby?"

"My, how sudden. What's the matter Lily-chan?"

“Err, just a curiosity. Because of my status, I never have a common meeting, my meeting with Hajime-san was also unique, so I’m wondering what kind of meeting Okaa-sama and Otou-sama had.”

“I see. Indeed, the way of meeting of everyone other than Kaori-chan and Shizuku-chan wasn’t normal isn’t it.”

Sumire opened her mouth with the BGM of shockwaves and explosions, and then the shout of “Flatten!” and the coquettish voice “Ahh!?”. She squinted her eyes in nostalgia and talked while looking at faraway.

“Yes, it was at an intensely cold shrine in New Year. I and Shuu who at that time didn’t know each other—infiltrated the shrine while cosplaying as priest and shrine maiden.”

“A not normal meeting suddenly appeared!?”

Liliana’s first retort of the year exploded. Even the smiling goddess Remia, or Shizuku whose selling point was her cool and collected attitude were similarly making twitching face.

“That was really a surprise. I who was a high schooler at that time wanted to work as a shrine maiden even for just once at the shrine that was an anime’s holy ground. While the shrine was bustling with the New Year event, I nonchalantly cosplayed as a shrine maiden and worked diligently as a guide for the visitor. And then you see, I discovered a priest-san who was obviously a student leaning on a pillar with a posed look. He was then immediately got found out by the real priest-san where next he desperately made excuse.”

“I already don’t understand from where I should retort here.”



Lily-chan's polite language was crumbling. She looked at Shizuku and Remia looking for help, but the two of them averted their gaze quickly.

Shuu's ears were twitching.

□The shrine's authorized people who noticed the uproar gathered, and then I who nonchalantly pretended to be shrine maiden also got exposed. Both of us prostrated ourselves right away. We thought of getting through this by making a prostration that would make the other side creeped out.□

□Trying to getting through uproar by prostrating.....that's a story that I had heard somewhere. Is that Nagumo family's traditional skill I wonder?□

Hajime's ears were twitching. Was it Hajime's misunderstanding that he was feeling Shizuku's gaze on the back of his head?

□However, there was one problem. It's fine already so just go home——our cosplay's level was too high to draw out those words!□

□What did you say~□

□Remia-chan! Nice interjection there!□

Remia-san had perfectly grasped how the mother-in-law's rhythm was working.

From the story of the chipper Sumire, it seemed their costume was extremely close to the real thing and the people in authority mistaken them as the real thing. They were interrogating the two just from where they obtained the costume.

Like that, Shuu who at that time was gradually getting irritated finally said something like this.

——It ain't priest clothing! It's my plain clothes! It only looks similar accidentally, I'm wearing it as everyday clothes! You got a problem with my fashion sense!?

It seemed he forgot the fact that he was prostrating and he even tried to make the fact that he was infiltrating into nothing.

□The moment I heard that, I was laughing and rolling around with my hands holding my stomach while thinking this. Yosh-, I'll marry this person! Like that!□

□□□Why did it become like that!?□□□

While the straight-man act of Liliana and others was exploding, at the veranda Shuu was covering his face with both hands and rolling around on the floor. It seemed he was overheating with shame that his black history was exposed to his daughters-in-law.

□Like that, we dated with my confession and then we married after that. How is it? Compared to Liliana-chan and others, it was a meeting without anything particular about it right?□

□□□□□□□There is no such thing.□□□□□□□

Including Yue and others too who seemed to listen to the story from some point unnoticed, the wife~s of Nagumo family and Myuu acted the straight man.

Hajime was clapping the shoulder of Shuu who was still writhing□Nuoooh, that's embarrassinggg□to console him.

□Now then, Shia-chan and Myuu-chan has also returned, should we eat the freshly made mochi with the ozouni soup?□(TN: Ozouni is a New Year's dish that is a soup containing mochi and vegetables)

Sumire clapped her hand \*pan-\* and ended the story. The wive~s replied□Ye~s□and Myuu brought the mochi happily.

After that, they ate Sumire's specially made ozouni soup with relish and the New Year of Nagumo family passed on peacefully.

The craters created at the garden, also the destroyed millstone, also the awkward Shuu who was receiving lukewarm gaze from his daughters and granddaughter in law, also Kaori's papa who was storming in with a yell□So my angel is hereeee□, also Shizuku's papa and grandpa who appeared in a flash in the living room while greeting□Thank you for always taking care of our Shizuku□, those scenes were a really mundane (limited to Nagumo family) New Year scene.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wish that this year of everyone in Narou will also be a fun and peaceful year like Nagumo family!

# Arifureta After II      See Ya, Pops!

(TN: It's the line Lupin said when he escaped from Zenigata)

AN: Tio arc last chapter.

---

The sea of clouds and dark clouds scattered away. The light of sun was shining in everywhere, creating many sun rays.

Although, even those lights would surely vanish soon. That was just how deep the ravages of calamity that was caused by the random pounding of meteor impact. No need to mention the turned up land, the rolled up dusts would cover the whole sky soon.

The people looked up to that man, no, the demon god who accomplished that with feeling of awe. That figure surrounded by spreading crimson spark and standing calmly while releasing sparks was indeed emitting a dignity that was worthy to be titled as "demon god" from the unconscious whisper of the people.

□Whoops, I forget this.□

The people jumped at the first voice of the demon god-sama. They were unusually trembling with fears in comparison with the words that was said really lightly.

But, what happened right after that was an extraordinary strangeness that didn't match such light words.

□Crimson light is.....□

Roze opened her eyes wide toward the sky above. Crimson light was showering down far above the sky like how sunlight was interweaving sun rays. It showered down everywhere on the capital of the dragon kingdom.

'Is this the whim of the demon god!? What he said just now, does it mean he was forgetting to destroy the city!?' Shudders were rushing through the people.□Hihi□Screams were raised, and people who held their head and squatted down appeared continuously.

□There art no need to worry. Goshujin-sama in his good mood decide to perform a bit of service.□

□Eh? Tio-sama. Just what does that mean.....□

Roze tilted her head and spoke her question at Tio who was smiling wryly. However, a report arrived faster than Tio was able to reply at that question.

□Roze-sama, this is Cline. This crimson light, it doesn't seem to be a threat. ....The wounds of the injured people who received the exposure of the light is healing in the blink of eye.□

□This is Bovid. Reports from the crashing down guys about their survival are coming one after another. Even the guys who fell to the land below are reporting back. Geez, anything is really possible for that person.□

□Roze-sama. This is gramps. We were also saved by this crimson light. Although, in my case, I received the exposure

from a metallic spider that clung on me unnoticed.□

□From Jean, to Roze-sama. We too went through the same like Sabas-sama. A small spider had its back opened up, and then the ring that came out from there shot out this light. The moment we got hit, our wounds were gone. It seemed that we were receiving that person's protection.□

It appeared the reason Sabas and Jean, and then the imperial guards were surviving was because of this.

——Regeneration magic exposure satellite Bel Agharta

Using the satellite type artifact that was deployed outside the atmosphere, the range where the crimson light could reach became place that would promise abnormal recovery using regeneration magic. Even in the case where the target was underground or indoor, by using spider type golem——Arachne's in-built gate to send in the light through it, the regeneration light could still reach with pinpoint accuracy.

Hajime secretly scattered Arachne swarm inside mother ship Avenst. At present, it's unknown where they are lurking, from transmutation, suicide bombing, disabling drug injection, until sending light of regeneration, all the little spider-san can do anything. Ia! Ia! Masteeer! (TN: The 'ia ia' part seem to be a reference to Cthulhu, not really clear about what though)

□Demon god-sa.....cough-. Hajime-sama.....so in the end, he was watching over us.□

□.....Pe, perhaps that art so.□

Roze's eyes turned moist from feeling greatly moved. Kuwaibel also raised a small cry□Pii□from deep emotion. The

people who could hear the conversation of Tio and Roze relayed it to the people behind them, spreading the circle of the emotionally moved.

For some reason, it was only Tio who was making a strangely twitching expression.

In order to speak the words of thanks as the representation of the people, Roze was about to open her mouth toward Hajime who was continuously emitting crimson spark while hovering still in midair. She wished that he would turn toward them, got down, and then received their words of gratitude.

But, right before Roze spoke the words to call out at him,

□True core activation.....complete. Outer wall endurance level.....clear. Crystal agglutination rate.....stable. Yosh-, come here-!! What's left is only the absorption and circulation! Let's goo!! Connect to Ornis! Gate Open-!!□

She was interrupted by words that were filled with tension that was rising high for some unknown reason. Even though until now he was only showing a relatively cool and wicked side, but the current Hajime was really like a child who was given a new toy. His eyes were sparkling bright, and his mouth was loosened up slovenly.

The sudden high tension caused Roze and others turned speechless with their mouth gaping open, while Hajime's hand was lifting to the sky a crystal about the size of a palm with a color that was a mix of dark blue and faint bluish white.

At the same time, countless black birds——crows were flying out from his Treasure Warehouse II, there were also some that had already been released unnoticed beforehand, flying

from below the floating island and they all began to fly around as though forming spiral.

Looking closer, inside the world that was approached by dusts, black dots in a number that wouldn't be an exaggeration to be said as many as the stars in the sky could be seen. The true identity of those black dots were all similarly the same jet black bird type artifact——Ornis.

Originally, Ornis was modeled after crow to be used for reconnaissance, but now they were flying around in the amount that should be expressed using the word innumerable.

□Wha, wha, wha, what is thissss!? Tio-sama!?!□

□Aa~, well, that's. Anyway, this wouldst not be something bad for Roze-dono and others, so calm down. Rather, I believe that nothing wouldst make thou happier than this.□

□E, eee? No matter how I look, this scene looks like the demise of the world part II though.....□

Swarms of crows were flying around as though giving notification of ominous news while dust was covering the world densely. Indeed, it was a sight that was fitting for the demise of the world. Furthermore, the eyes of those crows emitted sharp crimson light as though in respond with Hajime's call, in addition their whole body was starting to be enveloped with crimson spark and aura. No matter from where one looked, the crows only looked like the subordinates of an evil existence.

There was no factor anywhere that could make them calm down.

□Linkage - converge-, transmute!!□



Something like the commotion of the lower world didn't worth any concern. The demon god-sama who was in his perfect form invoked the ultimate skill of a transmutation master with his tension still rising high.

Instantly, Hajime's surrounding whirled and sparkling particles were getting absorbed into the jewel in his hand.

It wasn't just that.

□Ah, the sea of clouds is.....-, even the dust!?!□

Someone yelled. Just as the voice said, even though the sea of clouds and dark clouds that were a gathering of negative energy were scattering away, but that didn't mean that they were vanishing, and then even the dusts that were rolled up due to the meteor impact were also converging into Hajime's hand like a joke.

Hajime's converging transmutation was certainly a power of transmutation that gathered the mineral at the surrounding without directly touching them. His original range for the convergence was around a few hundred meter, but it was another story if there were age of god magic, artifact, and Hajime's Limit Break here.

Ornis that was affixed with absorbing effect using gravity magic so to speak was a relay point for the convergence. Meteor impact was fired to scatter the prepared metal particles that had the function for conglutinating negative energy all over the world. At the same time, the polluted land was smashed so that they would be rolled up as much as possible as dust to be collected.

□What a beautiful.....□

□Pii.....□

The world was filled with jet black rivers of heaven.

The negative energy all over the world was flowing in toward Hajime accompanied by faint glimmers. There was no need to mention the sea of clouds and dark clouds. The dust of the land that was polluted by negative energy that was rolled up to the sky also became rivers that were flowing in the sky and gathered toward Hajime's position.

What was flowing there was negative energy that was fatal for living thing. But, even so the people thought. That this sight was beautiful. Surely if there was an astronaut in this world looking down to the planet, there was no doubt that he would similarly get deeply moved at the sight of the sea of clouds and dust covering the world flowing into a point.

At the same time it was noticed.

The meaning of the jewel that was emitting crimson spark while swallowing the black sea of clouds and dusts without leaving any behind. The intention of Hajime that was lifting it up.

Yes, he was trying to purify the world!

Great number of people went down on their knees. They put their hands together in front of their chest while tears were flowing on their face.

It was as though they were worshipping a god!

One person, then one more person. The people who were dedicating prayer and gratitude toward the demon god who was purifying the world were increasing!

The pain in Tio-san's chest was increasing in proportion of the number of the people! Somehow, she looked like she

was really unable to endure being there even for a second longer!

□Tsk, the limit value huh. Well, I guess this is the initial value of the dragon core and sky core that can be picked up. What's left will need time.□

The radiance of the jewel that was swallowing the negative energy along with the sea of clouds and dusts was settling down. The sky of the world was cleared up, everywhere the sea of clouds and dusts were dissipating.

Hajime who was taking a breather finally turned his gaze at the people below at that time. And then, □oOO!?□he raised a shocked voice. After all, while he was getting a bit absorbed at another matter, for some reason the number of people staring at him with tears on their face while offering prayer was rapidly increasing. It made demon god-sama to be a bit shocked.

Hajime somehow guessed the circumstance and for a moment he showed a gesture as though he was thinking of something. The next moment shock and perplexity vanished from his face and a smile settled on his expression. His face changed into an expression that was already vibrantly smooth.

While crimson ripples were spreading in the air, like a god that was descending to the lower world, Hajime came down by calmly stepping step by step on the air. In order to return into Treasure Warehouse II, all Ornis gathered toward Hajime with a spiral trajectory which further gave him positive correction with his sublimity.

Beside Tio who for some reason was showing an exasperated face, the queen-sama was giving her welcome with moist eyes.

□.....Hajime-sama. I, don't know, just what I should say..... I don't have any word to express this feeling of gratitude welling up inside me.□

Hajime shrugged toward Roze who was talking with a bit of feeling vexed.

□I don't need any thanks. I'm only doing what I want to do by my own convenience.□

□You are really.....□

Roze smiled looking troubled at those extremely light words regarding the salvation of the world. Behind her, Sabas and Crow siblings, Bovid and Cline and the other top brasses, and so many other people were gathering.

Words of gratitude were expressed from them one by one. Their voices were gradually turning into a chorus that began to shake the cleared up sky.

While the number of people in surrounding was increasing moment by moment, Roze said that she wished for the two of them to rest inside the palace by any means. The post war processing after this would be really difficult, but it seemed that she wanted to thank them no matter what as much as she could.

Hajime slowly shook his head toward such Roze.

□From here on it will be difficult for you all. If you have time to look after someone like me, you should prepare instead for the next battle to rebuild the world.□

□However, our feeling won't be eased like that. Please——□

□Well, put aside that talk for now. Queen-san, can you come with me for a bit?□

□He?□

For a moment Roze's cheeks reddened thinking if□Is it for that kind of meaning!?□. Within an instant inside her brain the image of the approaching Hajime and herself saying denial.....such wild delusion was rushing around. As expected from the hidden pervert queen.

However, the aforementioned Hajime turned away his gaze from her toward the mother ship Avenst that was landed behind the palace. Seeing that, her cheeks reddened because it was her misunderstanding this time. Beside her Sabas's forehead was forming a Mariana trench.

□I have something important to talk. It's fine for the top brasses to come along, so clear away all passenger from Avenst.□

□U, understood.□

Roze-chan's cheeks reddened once more at the part of something important to talk, but she tilted her head by the time Sabas and others also okayed the request.

Sabas and others were also tilting their head in wonder what this was about, even so this was a request from the hero that saved their country. They didn't even have the intention to refuse, and so the made people exited the mother ship Avenst and invited Hajime in.

\*kon kon\* Hajime and others were walking through a passage of mother ship Avenst that was silent from using up almost all the power of sky core it had. Hajime had finished grasping the ship's internal construction after staying there for two days, so Hajime was walking forward rapidly in the lead.

□Err, Hajime-sama? Where are you going toward?□

The capital was in excitement from the victory, but the people should immediately feel insecure with the absence of the leading actors. Just in case the people who remained should be giving some kind of explanation to the people, but from the standpoint of Roze and others they wanted to quickly talk to the people.

Roze was nervous with Kuwaibel held on her chest. Accompanying them were Sabas, Crow siblings, and Bovid. And then the ship captains starting from Cline were also somewhat restless.

Hajime quietly opened his mouth toward them.

□I removed a considerable amount of the negative energy running rampant in this world. But, as expected it doesn't mean that the balance of the world is completely restored. The balance of this world is still collapsed.□

□.....That's□

Indeed, the jewel in Hajime's hand absorbed negative energy. The sea of clouds became scattered all over and the rolled up dust also thinned so it didn't cut off the sunlight completely.

However, the amount of the positive energy was still few, the balance of the world couldn't be recovered right away

with just the sky core of the natural world and the declined dragon species.

□Even so, now we are able to see the path to the future far clearer than before. Something like rebuilding the world from the start is something that cannot be done without being resolved for a long time of piling up effort for who know how many generations. Hajime-sama, you don't know how much help it is already just from us being able to step on the land with our own feet.□

It seemed the destination ahead of the passage they were going through steadily was the power room. Hajime nodded □I see□at Roze's words and he continued his speech.

□But, the prospect for the future become better and having leeway.....those facts are also enough for anyone to think about needless things. Even in a circumstance where there is no leeway and people has to be desperate to stay alive, people still cannot band together and they fought each other like that. The appearance of Helmut as a common enemy could be said as fortunate in a sense.□

□.....□

□Surely the people living in this world aren't just queen-san and others and the Qwailent bunches. There must be other people surviving, holding their breath in the scattered floating islands, Perhaps there are even people who discovered a way to survive somewhere in the surface. Like deep underground for example.□

□.....What is it, that you wish to say Hajime-sama?□

Roze looked dubious. No, she actually understood. There was no more enemy of the world that could become the cause for banding together. Sure enough, in the situation

where resource was limited, how would people who now had leeway in their survival would move.....

Hajime opened the door to the power room. In the center of the large room, an out of norm power reactor was sitting there. There was a spot in the center of the reactor where a fuel tank could be inserted.

The jewel that Hajime took out once more was settled silently in his hand. It looked like a yin yang sphere with its color mix of deep blue and faint bluish white. Hajime fiddled it around as though it was a marble ball while his gaze turned toward Roze.

□Do you want power? An even greater power that can overwhelm the world?□

□-□

It was a surprisingly deep and silent gaze. It was as though she was looking at a whirlpool that was created inside an ocean. She felt like if she lost focus, then her consciousness would be swallowed.

With a glance at Roze who unconsciously held her breath, Hajime carelessly threw the jewel into the reactor. The spot for inserting the fuel tank didn't have a shape for precise insertion, there was a small box to put in the thing that would become the fuel, and after inserting the item into there the box only needed to be fixed in place using the fixing clasps.

Because of that, even without processing the jewel into the shape of a fuel tank, there was no problem if the jewel was inserted as it was. Yes, that was if that jewel had a function as fuel.



\*kiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii-\*

A sound like vapor whistle resounded, and then \*goon goon\* a sound that felt like it resounded until the bottom of stomach hit the earlobe. It gave an impression as though a heart to pour vitality into blood vessel and internal organ was now resuming to beat.

□Lies.....Avenst is, completely.....starting up?□

□-, .....Roze-sama. The energy replenishment rate, is 60 percent. It's in the middle of rising even now. The weapon control system, is in the state of possible activation.□

The mother ship Avenst that should be unable to be activated completely except by the energy output of monarch dragon core was resuming breathing. When Sabas who ran to the console in respond to Roze's whisper informed her about the ship's state, the top brasses unanimously turned speechless.

Just floating was the best it could do with the power of sky core. Even if it used dragon core, using only average number of average dragon core would only make this ship able to use combat maneuver but using weapon would still be out of reach.

But now, this ship was activating.

□You see, this jewel, well, if I have to say it's a pseudo monarch dragon core. The raw materials are sky cores, stockpiled dragon cores processed by the Qwailent bunches that I withdrawn from the fuel tank, and a bit of rare crystal from another world. It's an imitation, but its output cannot be matched even by a monarch dragon core. After all, right now it had just absorbed energy that can purify the world to a certain degree.□

□Su, such thing is.....□

It was possible. After all, this person here was a matchless transmutation master. Furthermore, although it was necessary for him to use artifact as intermediary, he was an existence who had even taken possession of technique that interfered with the truth of the world.

□If you have this, the strongest battleship that once shook the world will be revived. Perhaps you will be able to stave off the chaos that might happen from here on using this one ship.□

□Ha, Hajime-sama□

Roze was bewildered and took a step back, perhaps from feeling confusion at the unforeseen situation.

Toward such girl, Hajime mercilessly asked one more time as though thrusting the reality before her.

□Do you want power? If it's you.....If it's the "rebirth" dragon kingdom Avenst's queen Roze Phiris Avenst who rise to shoulder this world, then I will also be fine with lending this jewel.□

——What to do?

The question was calmly asked once more. If they had a deterrence ability this great, then indeed perhaps they would be able to prevent a needless spilling of blood from repressing the disturbance that would happen in the future.

It might possibly become the symbol of the queen of the rebirth dragon kingdom Avenst who decided to fight.

Roze was unable to sort out her confused mind, however, the moment her eyes met the eyes of Hajime who was staring straight at her, the conclusion came out with an easiness that surprised even herself. She found the conclusion the moment she saw that gaze that was vaguely holding expectation, as though testing her.

□No, I don't need it.□

She was able to answer that clearly and strongly.

□.....Hee. There really is no hesitation in that answer. Without this jewel, Avenst is a ship that is only big. Now that you have taken back your country's territory, this kind of stupidly big ship will be reduced into a mere baggage you know?□

□Yes, perhaps that is so. But, didn't Hajime-sama say it yourself? What is starting from here on is the "rebirth" dragon kingdom Avenst. Even if that isn't a monarch dragon core, even if it's a dragon core energy that is already processed, we will never make use of dragon core as weapon until the end of the world.□

Roze calmly replied to Hajime with a strong piercing glare. Looking carefully, the top brasses standing behind Roze were all staring with wordless declaration□Don't make light of us!□inside their eyes.

□.....You really, won't use it until the end the world?□

□Yes. We won't.□

□.....This is a power that can rule the world. The strongest battleship. You really don't need it?□

□Yes, we don't need it.□

Seeing Hajime's insistent questioning, Roze felt strangely mystified "Is he worried about us that much?" and a chuckle leaked out from her mouth. Her heart was tickled from the gap of this Hajime with the demon god's mercilessness of before.

Roze spoke of her determination once more toward Hajime who was silently gazing at her searching her true feeling.

"Rebuilding the world is a battle against people's heart. A weapon is just boorish for something like that. We have friends. We can walk toward the future just from the fact that we have taken back our friends. We have to walk forward. That's why....."

"That's why, you don't need this thing anymore, is it?"

Hajime turned his gaze behind him with a wry smile. Ahead of his gaze there was the sparkling jewel and the heart of Avenst that was fully activated from receiving its power.

Hajime who returned his gaze at Roze was scratching his cheek looking a bit troubled.

"Aa~. Looks like, I'm only creating the spark of war for all of you."

"I won't speak that far....."

"But, just with this thing remaining here, it will only wither queen-san's determination and also your persuasiveness to the external side. ....Can't be helped. I'll take responsibility as the creator and take this thing away to deal with it."

"Fufu, thank you very much. At the very end.....Hajime-sama is a really kind demon god-sama."

□.....Demon god? Since when I ranked up like that huh?□

Seeing Hajime who was scratching his cheek looking even more troubled, this time for sure Roze couldn't hold it anymore and she let out a laugh. It was a lively smiling face that was full with the liberation from the heavy pressure of many years and charm that looked radiant with the hope and determination for the future.

Enticed by that laugh, the top brasses starting from Crow siblings also started to laugh.

For some reason, it was only Tio and Sabas whose expression looked horribly complicated though.....

Hajime who faced away with an expression that really looked like□It's really embarrassing to get laughed at□then said □Aaah, how long you guys are going to laugh!□while he made the "Treasure Warehouse II" in his hand to shine.

Right away, the whole Avenst was enveloped in crimson radiance, and the next moment it vanished completely. Although the reactor was located near the bottom of the ship, there was quiet some distance until the ground, so Roze and others who were suddenly thrown on the air reflexively screamed□Hyaaaah!?!□in that situation.

Although, they were wrapped in weightless feeling and the next moment Tio's wind gently enveloped Roze and others and they were lowered slowly to the ground.

Roze looked around while feeling a bit of indignation of what suddenly happened, however, she noticed that the figure of Hajime and Tio was already gone and she felt slightly flustered.

□Now then, we are going now. This short time was really fun.□

□Ri, right. Well then Roze-dono. Kuwaibel. And then everyone of the kingdom. Stay in good health all of thee.□

When they looked up to the sky from where the words came, there was the figure of Tio who had transformed to dragon before anyone knew it and Hajime riding on her back.

The figure of the gallant and magnificent black dragon that could be seen to be different from Helmut in a glance caused the people to make commotion and raised joyful cheer of astonishment. In the middle of that uproar, Roze who guessed what was happening raised her voice in panic.

□Do, don't tell me, you two are planning to leave right now!? We still haven't expressed our thanks at all! Please, stay for a bit more here!□

□If it's thanks we have received enough. Your words queen-san are the greatest gift more than anything.□

□Ha, Hajime-sama. Such thing-, that isn't a token of appreciation at all-□

□That's right, both of you! Besides, I want to be together with Haha-ue more!□

Roze who desperately tried to make the two stay with moist eyes, and Kuwaibel who pleaded at Tio like a spoilt child. The people who noticed from that appearance that their heroes would leave also yelled words asking the two to stay one after another.

□It's the same like a weapon. It's not fitting for an existence like me to stay beside the people who will work hard walking

forward with their own legs from here on. Later!□

□.....Boy. A king who guide the world wouldst not cry seeking his mother. Always gallantly let out the dragon's roar. Remember that okay?□

Saying that, the two turned around. They didn't even loko back at the words asking them to stay and their figure turned small faraway just like fickle wind that drifted away.

□Geez.....to not even let us express our thanks sufficiently.....they are really selfish, whimsy, hics-.....and kind demon god-sama and true dragon-sama.□

□Haha-ue.....I will, do my best. I'll become a true dragon Haha-ue can be proud of.□

Inside the world where the cheers of gratitude of the people were echoing, the whispers of the queen and monarch dragon resounded solemnly, yet by no means they carried any unpleasant emotion inside.

The strongest butler who had been at her side since her childhood offered a handkerchief silently. And then, he asked with reservation as though giving consideration.

□.....Roze-sama. Is this okay?□

'Is it fine to not stop them from leaving?' Roze who *thought* that she was asked that wiped her eyes that turned red from tears while she nodded with a bright smile even then.

□No matter what reason we have, surely no one will be able to stop those people to stay here. Then, let us wait instead. We will do what we ought to do, make this world even more beautiful, so that when they come here once again riding on the wind we will be able to give them satisfaction.□

‘A splendid determination. You have grown,’ Sabas wanted to say that.

However, he couldn’t say it. Because the meaning of his question was different.

□That, err, it’s not that.....they are, taking away Avenst, is that okay?□

□Eh?□

Roze-chan stiffened with a snap, a smile still on her face. After her, Kuwaibel who was in her embrace and Bovid and others who were cheering behind them also stiffened in a snap.

Roze averted her gaze still with a smiling face thinking ‘Just what is gramps talking about I wonder?’. Her gaze moved toward the place where Avenst was parked.

Not there.

No matter how many times she looked, the nation on ship that had been together with them in joys and sorrows until now wasn’t there. Or rather, the goods and tools for living, the personal effects that should be placed in the resident district and production district, all of them were left into a huge mound at slight distance away before anyone noticed.

A wind blew pass the empty space. Ah, the adult underwear of a lady that was previously hanged on the tip of the main cannon to dry it was blown by the wind! It was lightly dancing in the sky!

Roze blinked.



As she thought, the figure of mother ship Avenst wasn't there. If this was in anime, then surely there would be the ship's silhouette blinking in the empty spot with sound effect \*pikon pikon-\*

Sabas spoke with a really complicated expression toward Roze who was in the state of petrification still with a smiling face.

□If I may be so presumptuous to speak.....□

□Wha, what is it, gramps?□

□.....Perhaps, that person had taken our commitment?□

□Commitment?□

The conversation that showed Roze's determination and resolve to Hajime was flowing inside Roze's brain. The memory was filtered by the truth that was Sabas's words.

Now, let's try remembering it clearly!

□Yes, perhaps that is so. But, didn't Hajime-sama say it yourself? What is starting from here on is the "rebirth" dragon kingdom Avenst. Even if that isn't a monarch dragon core, even if it's a dragon core energy that is already processed, we will never make use of dragon core as weapon until the end of the world.□

□Roze-chan's true feeling

——We won't use Avenst as weapon, so we don't need the jewel for activating it.

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——We don't need this kind of *battleship* anymore okay!

□.....You really, won't use it until the end the world?□

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Eh, seriously? Seriously, not just the jewel, but you also don't need Avenst?

□Yes. We won't.□

□Roze-chan's true feeling

——Yes, we don't need the *jewel*

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Totally seriously. I say that we seriously don't need something like Avenst. Rather it's just a baggage.

□.....This is a power that can rule the world. The strongest battleship. You really don't need it?□

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Really? Even if later you say 'as I thought we need it' that won't be my problem y'know? You rea~lly don't need it then?

□Yes, we don't need it.□

□Roze-chan's true feeling

——For you to be that worried for us..... But, we really don't need that jewel.

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——How persistent. We really don't need this kind of battleship I told you. Rather, we are troubled of how to deal

with it!

□But, just with this thing remaining here, it will only wither queen-san's determination and also your persuasiveness to the external side. ....Can't be helped. I'll take responsibility as the creator and deal with this thing.□

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Got it then, if it's that much a bother for you, I'll take responsibility and accept Avenst.

□Fufu, thank you very much. At the very end.....Hajime-sama is a really kind demon god-sama.□

□Roze-chan's true feeling

——Defeating Helmut, purifying the world, and on top of that you even worry about our war strength in the future, really how kind. But, even if for example it has no meaning as a battleship, it's fine for Avenst to be like that. Whether for the sake of the world, and also for our sake.

□Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Myy! Even though this is something troubling that ought to be recycled or collected as an oversized garbage, but you actually take it away for us! What kindness!

The above was the content of the chain of conversation.

What Hajime said in the end, □Your words queen-san are the greatest gift more than anything□it also wasn't a lie. It was a gratitude that came from heart, something like thank you for letting me take your commitment.

Roze who carefully recalled her conversation's content with Hajime and guessed Hajime's true intention then began to tremble all over still with smiling face.

She certainly said that they didn't need the jewel that could return the nation on ship Avenst back into a battleship.

However, she didn't say a single word that they also didn't need Avenst with it. No, it looked like she said it, but it should be understood right!? Like from the flow of conversation, or from the particulars until now!

□Thi, thi, thi.....□

□□□□Thi?□□□□

While Bovid and others who seemed to similarly guess the situation were making twitching expression, Roze was shaking all over while muttering.....

□Thi, THIE—————F!!!□

Queen-sama, that guy had stolen something enormous.

Yes, it's your nation on ship!

Roze's scream that felt like it could reach until the end of the world reverberated.

□Nou, Goshujin-sama. Art this really fine?□

□It's fine, after all the queen herself said it's fine.□

That absolutely wasn't her true intention. Or rather, it was this person who was leading on so it turned like that. Tio-san who saw the expression of Hajime who looked in terribly good mood couldn't say that. She was flying in the sky casually while her neck twisted to send her gaze at Hajime on her back.

□Even though I said that I'm taking it, but actually it's only borrowing for a bit long. I won't break it so it will be fine.□

Tio's completely wordless gaze as expected caused Hajime to be unable to endure and he spoke his rationalization. Tio shook her head as though to say 'can't be helped'.

□Nevertheless, thou looked really pleased Goshujin-sama. Was it that great to have that jewel created? In my opinion, I couldst not think that this artifact is that amazing for Goshujin-sama who art able to create god crystal.□

For now, let's put aside the matter about taking——borrowing a battleship from the pure queen-sama, Tio threw a question at Hajime who since some time ago was toying around with the jewel in his hand while grinning widely.

Indeed, if it was Hajime who could create god crystal, something like a crystal that was filled with immense energy wasn't something that rare. The point where it could stimulate the surrounding energy to supply heat made it seemed like it was more all-purpose than the god water that was created from god crystal, but Tio tilted her head feeling puzzled if it was something to feel that happy about.

Hajime's eyes gazed in amazement at such Tio.

□Eh? Huh? I more or less explained it right, about the thing I was trying to create?□

□Hm? Certainly that art so, but in the middle it was mostly Goshujin-sama talking to thyself and thou immediately started to be immersed in thy own thought, honestly speaking, I didst not really understand but I thought it was something like Goshujin-sama art wishing to make something similar with god crystal.□

Hajime comprehended about Tio's thin reaction at the thing he created after hearing what she said. And then Hajime showed an self-triumphant look that he rarely showed as though saying 'then I'll let you hear it'.

□Tio, the energy that is unique to this world, the sky core energy and dragon core energy—it's troublesome so I'll call it sky dragon energy, I talked a bit about its property to you right?□

□Right, the positive energy give invigoration, and the negative energy possess the nature of pacification to obstruction. All those circulate with the core as the center which maintain the world's balance.□

□That's right. But see, that's not the essence of sky dragon core. No, if you say that's its essence then it's true that's the essence, but what ought to be really paid attention to, the property that is worthy to feel astonishment toward is not that.□

□Hou? And that is?□

Hajime who was unusually putting on airs spoke about the core's property that he became convinced about from his two days interaction with the craftsmen of Avensts and from his analysis toward the flow of dragon core energy of Helmut and Kuwaibel.

□The terrific property of sky dragon core——is in the aspect of its circulation efficiency that is a hundred percent.□

□Hmm.....hmm?□

Seeing Tio who didn't really get it, Hajime began to talk gleefully.

□Tio, this is something amazing. Even in earth or Tortus, you can find any amount of circulation system, whether nature or artificial. However, you can say that a system with one hundred percent circulation rate doesn't exist. Fundamentally there must be loss that occurred without exception.□

□Hm~m, I vaguely hath heard about that. Art this a talk about thermodynamics?□

□Yeah, that's right. It's a talk about a law of thermodynamics. ....Don't you get it Tio? One of mankind's grand problems that denied thermodynamics and is said to be impossible to be realized.□

□I'm not that detailed about it though.....nn? Wait a second, Goshujin-sama. Loss wouldst occur without exception, because of that it's impossible to realize? By any chance that is.....□

Hajime smiled complacently at Tio who was amazingly good in making conjecture. Seeing his expression, Tio opened her eyes in shock for sure this time.

□That's right. This is still a prototype, and it can only deal with sky dragon power but.....I finally laid my hands on it. One of mankind's grand problem——□

——The creation of perpetual motion.

The sky dragon power of this world, although the circulation rate was different based from the time difference and core's amount, but the energy itself would be converted from negative to positive with a hundred percent circulation rate once it got taken in into the core.

In other words, if this energy was made to circulate within a certain range, it would continue to circulate perpetually. Yes, just like how the sky dragon power was continuing to circulate within this planet.

The jewel Hajime created had sky core and processed dragon core stored inside Qwailent fleet's fuel bunker compressed until the very limit using transmutation, and the result was inserted at the center of the jewel. God crystal was then fused with it so that the problem of the small energy retention amount of the sky dragon core was cleared. And then the circulation performance was explosively increased by using sublimation magic and creation magic.

That center core—the true core had gravitational field generated by gravity magic so that the energy wouldn't escape to outside, furthermore the outer shell that was using god crystal used space magic to permit only the property of invigoration effect from the positive energy to exert influence to outside.

The positive energy that lost the invigoration power would be altered into negative energy, the true core would absorb it and converted it back into positive energy once more. The loss was zero percent so it would circulate for perpetuity.

□Currently it can only be operated with sky dragon power that can be used only by this world's machine. But, I discovered the method to convert magic power into electricity, and electricity into magic power. If I can similarly



find the method to convert sky dragon power into magic power or something else.....□

□Wa, wait a second Goshujin-sama.□

‘I’ll be able to freely control infinite magic power, or perhaps infinite heat—the dream is spreading wide yeah’, Tio put a stop at Hajime who was talking passionately. As expected even Tio couldn’t suppress her shudder seeing her master who was smoothly talking about something really terrifying with an expression that looked like a boy.

To speak further, that jewel that possessed a core at the center and continuously circulate for perpetuity inside the sphere could be said to be something that imitate this very planet itself. That was to say.....

□Goshujin-sama, thou spoke it so easily but.....art not that thing, couldst be called as a planet already?□

□Hm? .....Well, this is a really simplified one so it’s doubtful whether this can be called that unconditionally. But calling it that is also not mistaken. Hm~m, come to think of it this thing is also still not named.....yosh-, let’s name this thing like this.□

——Perpetual motion machine Grasp Gloria(Planet in hand that is rotating for perpetuity)

It seemed that demon god-sama finally created a planet that he took possession above his hand.

□Tio. I’m going to show Avenst at Yue and others when we go home. It feels like it can even go to space if it’s modified. There is also no worry about the fuel if there is Grasp Gloria. Let’s even try a space travel of year 20XX!□

Tio was in a state of being filled with astonishment until she was almost bursting, but when she was Hajime's good mood it seemed that her heart was also gradually calming down.

Even if she lived for more than five hundred years, but as long as she was beside Hajime then she might not get tired of living. While vaguely thinking of such thing, she energetically replied "Right!".

But, at that timing a voice resounded from a bit far away. "Oh?" The two of them tilted their head at each other, and then when Hajime and Tio looked behind, there they saw the figure of Roze riding on the back of Kuwaibel who was flying even though a bit unsteadily in his grown-up form.

In addition there were even Bovid, Crow siblings, and Sabas riding sky battlecraft. Even behind them there were a lot of people riding sky battlecrafts and small airships with every single one filled in over capacity. The dragons were flying in parallel of all those while they were watching over the humans worriedly.

"The thief over thereee~~. Return Avenst backkk~~!"

"From the legendary dragon knight to demon king, and then ranked up to demon god, and yet at the end you call me a thief. Don't you think that's a cruel false accusation?"

"I toast to Goshujin-sama's thick nerve that couldst declare what she said as a false accusation."

Hajime and Tio cracked jokes at each other. Tio smiled wryly and she suggested at Hajime while directing a slightly gentle eyes at him.

"Now then, getting caught here wouldst be too uncool for the end of the adventure. Goshujin-sama, let's return home

to earth soon.□

□Hm~? .....I guess. Yue and others will soon pick——□

□No, it's fine already. Thou bring it correct, the compass?□

Hajime smiled wryly□As I thought, it got found out huh□at Tio's statement and he took out the compass from "Treasure Warehouse II".

□When did you notice? As I thought was it that time, when I sent Avenst to Qwailent?□

□No, I felt suspicious at that time we were chasing after the sky battlecraft that got away at first. I was convinced when we boarded the mother ship. At either time, Goshujin-sama didst not show any sign of getting lost. Thou held confidence of the location of the opponent we chased in this vast world where there is only sky.□

□So, so since that time.....as expected from Tio. You are sharp despite being a pervert.□

□Nn-, stop it with the surprise reward. I'm going to fall. Cough-, in all possibility, that was a consideration so I couldst enjoy my time together with just Goshujin-sama without reservation correct?□

□It's meaningless if it was exposed so quickly though.□

Hajime scratched his cheek□I'm too high spirited huh□ looking awkward. With a flash Tio released her dragon transformation, and then she gave a kiss on Hajime's cheek really nonchalantly.

□I hath enjoyed to mine heart content of Goshujin-sama who art full of consideration, and also Goshujin-sama who make

merry like a child. Thank you. Now, let's go home to where everyone art.□

□.....Good grief. Sometimes when I'm with you it feels like I'm really childish.□

Hajime smiled wryly while he thrust forward the crystal key using the image of his homeland that he searched using the compass. The space undulated and a solemn door around two meter high appeared.

□Aa~~~, wait! Please waii~~~t!□

□Piuh! Piuh!□

With Roze in the lead, the people of Avenst also yelled loudly.

Hajime turned around toward them while he also raised his voice.

□I'm borrowing Avenst a bit! I'm going to play again here eventually! At that time, I'll show off the Avenst that became something like a luxurious ship from my demonic remodeling okay!□

Not as a battleship, but as a extravagance ship that invited people's dream and romance.

Those words caused the chests of Roze and the people of Avenst to feel tight. In the first place they didn't come here with serious intention of taking back the ship. They wished to say this without any strange misunderstanding.

□Aah, geez-! Please take a good care of it okay! Because that's our second homeland! Please make it into an extraordinarily lovely ship! Because I'll entrust it to you

forever and eveerr~~! Plee~~~aase, absolutely come here again to meet us! Riding that ship at that time!□

□Hahah. Fine! Flying in the sky of this world is the best. We are going to come again for an adventure! Later, for real this time!□

Hajime and Tio smiled while waving their hand and they threw their body as though falling into the gate behind them. They could see the figure of Avenst's people waving their hands from the gap. Along with a very loud words of □Thank you!□.

\*hyuuoooooooo-\* Such sound of wind pierced the ears.

□Goshujin-sama, couldst I ask why we art like this?□

□Sorry, I made a little miss.□

Hajime and Tio safely accomplished returning home. The place was at altitude eight thousand meter. They were in the middle of a grand free fall. It seemed that they were more or less right above the home of Nagumo grandparents. Because they were always above the sky at the other world, Hajime's sense was amiss and they came out in the sky despite trying to teleport in the garden.

Hajime averted his gaze looking a bit embarrassed at the really sloppy return.

While they were talking the ground was approaching, by the time the two thought about taking landing stance soon, soft golden light enveloped them. The two were immediately released from the wedge of gravity and their altitude slowly descended.

When they looked at the ground, there were the figures of the grandpa who was unable to stand up from shock, and the grandma who was looking up open mouthed at the sky with one hand holding laundry, and then, the figure of Yue smiling gently.

It was about three days since they departed. But, there was no sign of worry that could be seen in Yue's expression. Myuu and Shia who came out to the garden with light footsteps and Remia also didn't look worried at all. Rather the color of exasperation "Finally coming home huh~" could be seen strongly in their face.

While looking at Yue who quickly used soul magic to return to the present world the souls of Jii-chan and Baa-chan that slipped out because they were knocked out of their wits from seeing Hajime and Tio who landed on the garden,

"I'm home."

"We hath returned."

The two said their coming home words.

"Geez-. Hajime-san and Tio-san, where were you two loitering around with just the two of you desu!? We saw the letter that said you two are going adventuring, but I never heard about doing it for three days!"

Shia went angry with a huff. Her rabbit ears were pointed straight up as though to say "Hey hey, what's the meaning

of this?□.

□Muu. Papa and also Tio-oneechan are unfair nano! Even though Myuu also want to go in a trip□

□Putting us aside, Ojii-sama and Obaa-sama were really worried you know?□

Myuu ran with a fast pace \*sutetetete-\* still wearing a sullenly bloated cheeks and she clung tightly on Hajime's leg. When the two turned their gaze from Remia's words, there they saw the Jii-chan and Baa-chan who fainted even though their soul had returned back. Sumire and Shii were looking after the two. Both of them said□Welcome home~□ with really light feeling.

□.....And? Where were you two going until now?□

Yue tilted her head while asking. She understood that the two went out spontaneously from the letter left behind, but as expected it seemed she guessed that the two encountered some kind of unavoidable circumstance with how they were spending three nights away without notice.

Hajime looked at Tio. Tio also looked at Hajime. After looking at each other for some reason, Hajime made a small smile

□Secret□

And said such thing.

He decided that he would save his adventure that he started with just Tio inside his chest until the time came it was necessary. Tio's gaze was wandering around with an expression as though she had stuffed her mouth with sweet candies.

Seeing such two, Yue tilted her head a bit before she smiled gently.

□.....I see. Tio, did you have fun?□

□Yes. Very.□

Enticed by Yue's gentle smile, Tio also made a smile that looked like a girl.

□.....It's afternoon only just now but, want to eat?□

□Ou. My stomach is really empty here.□

□I guess. We hath just gone through various things.□

The moment Yue suggested that, Hajime and Tio's stomach growled harmoniously, Yue chuckled seeing that while she returned inside the house.

Hajime and Tio followed behind her while for some reason they looked up to the sky, and then they chuckled at each other for some reason seeing each other doing similar thing.

□Wai, what's with that atmosphere of mutual understanding! Even if Yue-san ignored it, I won't be like that! Hey hey, what happened desu? Please teach meee. This is the two of you, so something must be blown away, someone raised a scream, and it absolutely became a festival of pandemonium right? I'm really curiossss□

□Myuu too! Myuu is also curious nano!□

Getting coaxed by the rabbit ears and little girl, the two of them were increasingly smiling more in humor.

Like that Hajime and Tio secretly talked at each other while soothing down Shia and Myuu.



—Someday, let's unveil the huge battleship and perpetual motion machine.

They said at each other.

While looking really amused.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Tio arc is finally over. It was long.....

The passage of perpetual motion machine was done vaguely, so please spare me from any retort (sweat)

By the way, not using monarch dragon core was Hajime's consideration after a fashion.

About what will the people of that world do with the monarch dragon cores of Helmut and his sibling, it will depend on that world's people.

Well, surely Kuwaibel won't let them do as they pleased.

.....I'll also say that it was simply because it was too much to write.

Now then, who should I write next I wonder

# Arifureta After II Dream and Love and Hope'sss——

AN: It will be idle stories until the next long arc after story.

I will put in unserious story one, or two more times.

By the way, this chapter's chronological order is around one month after the return.

---

The occupation of a reportage writer is a work of finding an interesting topic, collected data on it, and then reported it as news.

I, Hamada Shouta (28 years old), am such a reportage writer. I mainly introduced hidden well-known store and specialty of a town. ....I have never missed a meal doing this job, but there were times when there was no story to sell, so I have also done running gossip occasionally.

What someone like me is observing lately is a western restaurant□Wisteria□. It's a hidden well-know store in the city, a restaurant where you can enjoy food and coffee together without doubt.

Originally this will be where I get requested for formal news coverage and I will interview the owner for several of their prided menu, but currently I,

□Welcome. Have you decide what you will order?□

□Ah, yeah. This omelet rice, and jasmine tea. Also a blend coffee after the meal please.□

□Omelet rice and jasmine tea. And then a blend coffee after meal is it? Thank you for the order. Please wait for a bit.□

Like this, I'm coming as a normal guest. Of course, I don't tell the restaurant side that I'm a reporter or that I'm wishing for an interview.

I am staring at the back figure of the girl that is one of the reasons of that—the girl that just now was politely taking my order, the daughter of this restaurant's owner Sonobe Yuuka-chan.

Her style, I guess is fairly nice. Her chestnut hair that seems to be dyed is tied into one and her nice walking posture give a diligent impression that run counter with her appearance that is like a juvenile delinquent. How she is helping in the restaurant in holiday like this is also showing that. She is a high school student but she has a really calm atmosphere. That make her look adult.

Her long slits eyes and sharp gaze that even look glaring at other people also softened gently when she is talking with customer, that become a gap that deepen the favorable impression to her.....

Hah!? The auntie at the opposite seating is glaring at me with a terrible look!? Tha, that's not it! By no means I'm staring with a feeling I need to feel guilty about! It's true I tell you! That's why, please don't look at me with those eyes as though I'm a pervert aiming at a high school girl!

The auntie averted her gaze with suspicion still remaining. From how she is calling at the girl using Yuuka-chan, most likely she is a regular customer. It seems there are a lot of elderly people in this restaurant who are thinking of Yuuka-chan like their real daughter or granddaughter.

It's not just the auntie at the opposite seat, there are even an uncle who is sitting unnoticed at the neighboring seat sending a gaze toward here like a hard-boiled detective investigating a criminal, and an old man who is reading a newspaper at the inner seating of the restaurant, but actually there is an opened hole on that newspaper from where the old man is observing me like an investigator.

.....Surely everyone is worried about the girl, thanks to the incident that happened to the girl some time ago and the commotion of this and that currently happening around the girl.

Of course, it's not just because they are worried, it's also because she is really that charming of a girl——

□Thank you for waiting. Here is your jasmine tea.□

□Ah, tha, thanks.□

Damn it. I completely stuttered. Yuuka-chan is tilting her head at my suspicious behavior. Her expression is also puzzled.....

□Is something the matter?□

□N, no, there is nothing.□

This is really a disgraceful behavior for a pro reporter. What are you doing getting shaken against a girl more than a decade younger huh. I cleared my throat once. I change my

mindset to work mode. What is necessary is an observation ability that won't overlook even anything trivial. And then, the concentration needed for that.

□By the way——□

I open my mouth to casually probe whether I can pull out some information even just for a bit, but before I can do that, the restaurant bell is ringing \*cling cling\* to notify of a customer's arrival.

Naturally, Yuuka-chan's gaze speedily moves away from me. The girl's eyes narrowed just for a moment at the entering person before she turned at me once more, bow and left.

For some reason I become curious about Yuuka-chan's gaze that turned sharp and so I turn my eyes toward the man who just entered the shop even while feeling the gaze of the auntie on me. The man is wearing a shabby jacket, carrying a large bag hanging on his shoulder, and a lot of stubble on his chin. My sense of smell as a pro smell that man's true identity. In that case, as expected his objective is.....

□——I told you many times already, I won't accept that kind of interview. Please don't come intruding until the restaurant.□

□Just calm down, please don't be that cruel here. If you are that obstinate, then I too cannot help but think that there is really something suspicious. It's fine even if it's just five minutes. Of course I'll wait until after the restaurant's closing. Please let me ask just for a bit——regarding all of you the "returnees".□

Bingo. As I thought he is a person of the same business with that reason.

## ——Returnees

That is the cause that makes the situation that dragged in the girl to be complicated.

The whereabouts of Yuuka-chan along with her classmates became unknown more than a year ago. At the time it was a really big uproar about a case of spirited away that happened at a school in daytime. Similarly my interest was also pickled and I investigated various things about it.

But, regardless of the many specialists who investigated the case, in the end the cause of their disappearance and their whereabouts stayed unclear.

It was thought that perhaps this case will vanish from the people's memory at this rate, but just a little bit of time ago, Yuuka-chan and others suddenly returned back. Along with most of the students.

Where did they go? Naturally, not just the police, every public institution and information media pressed for an answer, but the answer the returnees gave to all of them was——fighting an army led by an evil god in another world, they said.

Naturally they were suspected to have abnormality in their mind or perhaps they were brainwashed using drugs. It seemed that they had been examined many times, but in the end there are no abnormality discovered from them and many institutions concluded like this.

——These people who were spirited away are trying to hide the blank one year when they vanished.

Like that. The press got superheated, and it seemed the questioning from the government also became more

forceful. There were also students who don't come back until now, so it can be said to be only natural.

However, a strange situation is occurring here. With one day as the turning point, the questioning toward them is settling down like a tide pulling back.

Even a free reporter like me got warned by my comrades and seniors in the industry, and by the publishers I'm close with, they said "It's better to not get involved with this case". Surely something, a great power that an individual like me cannot measure is in the work.

Even so, there are a lot of people who cannot stop because of their curiosity and ambition that is even bigger than that, and I'm one of such hopeless people, this man is also the same.

"Please quit it already. More than this is an obstruction of business already."

".....Haa. I get it. Then I'll ask again another day. It will be great if at that time you will talk about what's inside your chest. Surely it's also hard for you to keep close to the chest about the matter of your friends who won't be able to come back forever right?"

"....."

Inside the restaurant become enveloped by an uneasy air. An aura that absolutely isn't respectable is emitted from the gaze of an elderly! That man, is he looking for death here!?

As expected, the man who noticed the strange air inside the restaurant is starting to rapidly retreat with twitching expression. He take out a business card from his pocket and forcefully make Yuuka-chan to hold it.

□I hope you won't misunderstand, I actually want to become your strength. Surely it's tiresome for you who is still a student to carry this large burden right? If you are fine with me, I'll listen to your story anytime.□

The man said such thing while showing a smile that is obviously fishy for anyone with working eyes before he turned around, and then perhaps to look at how Yuuka-chan is taking the situation, the man turn around while his hand is reaching toward the entrance door.

Instantly.

□Aa~, right right. Your——□

——\*supan-\*

The man's speech stopped. No, it was stopped.

By his own business card that flew so close it almost grazed his eyes when he was turning back, and without pause it then stabbed on the door like a joke.

No, really, what kind of joke this is? Looking there, Yuuka-chan is standing with one hand on her waist, and her other hand is lifted with two fingers pointing toward the man. It's as though those fingers were just throwing the business card that was held between them.

.....Before this, I once watched a television show where a vegetable was cut using a trump card. That's why, this situation really looks like a joke, but it's also not something impossible if one has a preeminent skill I guess.

Even if for example the business card is made from paper that is far thicker than a trump card, or even though the door is made from wood that is hard in nature. Or even if the



thrower isn't a pro with such occupation, but a female high school student helping out her family in her holiday!

The man's gaze is moving slowly toward the business card that is stabbed on the entrance door. The twitching on his cheeks is already at the level that cannot be hidden away.

Yuuka-chan speak with a dignified voice toward that man.

□Thank you for your concern. But, even though I look like this I'm a really strong woman, so I'll shoulder by myself the baggage I have decided to shoulder by my own will until the end. Besides.....□

Yuuka-chan smile gently. In that smile there is the utmost trust? Anyone who see that smile will understand that there is no gloominess or worry at all in there, it's a smiling face that is packed with a charm that is hard to describe.

□I know someone who will do something about it when it really matters.□

'That's why, take away that business card and scram right away.' Such wordless pressure is lurking inside that charming smile. Aa, certainly, if someone get ordered by that kind of smile and gaze, then that person won't even feel like disobeying.

□I see. It will be great if you won't regret that.□

Surely that parting threat is the best the man can do. The man roughly pull out the business card and get out without even hiding his irritation.

Yuuka-chan sighed 'fuuh' and then she lightly nod at her parents who have been watching over all this time from the

kitchen and counter. The parents also nodded back lightly and they return back to their work.

□Eerr, I'm really sorry for the disturbance. Please forgive the discomfort it has caused you customers.□

Yuuka-chan faced the customer seats and she quickly bowed her head. The regular customers are striving to be the first to say□Don't mind it□□It's fine you know~□□The next time he come, uncle will make my subordinate deal with him□and so on. Even the customers who aren't regulars also doesn't look like they mind it, perhaps they are affected by the dignified figure and smile of Yuuka-chan just now.

Rather, they are keep sending glances with deep interest. Those gazes feel like they are looking interested purely at Yuuka-chan herself rather than because she is a "returnee".

Right, like this Yuuka-chan's fans are increasing. Similarly I too feel toward Yuuka-chan just now——

\*glare-\* The auntie's gaze is flying at me. That auntie is absolutely an esper.

By the way, who is this person who will do something somehow that she refers to?

Now then, around one week since the day I learned the shocking truth that Yuuka-chan is actually an expert at card throwing.

During that time I visited Wisteria four times and observed Yuuka-chan.

.....No, I'm not a stalker. Until the end this is for work. A data gathering. I feel bad for Yuuka-chan, but I too am a pro, and so I won't be merciful. I endure the abnormal stare of the regulars and also the bombing that is Yuuka-chan's smile, and stand on guard waiting until the girl reveal her faults!

The result is that it end in vain, it's completely a wasted effort. There is nothing suspicious about the girl, and there is also nothing suspicious about her classmates that come playing to the restaurant.

If I have to say what I have learned, it's that the girl is a serious girl as expected, she is lovely, and not just card throwing, from pen until vegetable stick, she is a master at throwing whatever, those are all that I learned.

I only learned for the first time the fact that even a pen can pierce through a smartphone.

The male student who seems to be a classmate and got such thing done at his smartphone and Yuuka-chan herself are,

□Sonobeee!? What the hell have you done!? My smartphone is dying here! Don't get carried away just because you are that guy's mistress okay!?□

□Shut up, idiot Tamai-. I'm not a mistress! So it's because you guys are saying such things that recently Yue-san and others are looking at me strangely isn't it!?□

□Just because of that, this is still too much right!? Aa, now my smartphone looks like Tio-san whose ass is stabbed by Nagumo ain't it. Even though my smartphone is skewered it's still gasping and not dying yet. Shiitt, can I at least take

out the data? Oi, Sonobe, take responsibility and ask Nagumo for a new one. Even that guy if he is begged by his mistress——

□Fuhn□

□Aa!? Carrot and radish and cucumber are stabbing my smartphone all over!?!□

They were quarreling with each other really like a student.

I only learned for the first time the fact that even vegetable stick can pierce through a smartphone.

They yelled several words that I'm curious about, but Yuuka-chan who is angry with that bright red face is somehow cute so I cannot remember.

Nevertheless, what is the meaning of “aijin” I wonder? Oh man, I don't really get the most recent vocabs that the youngsters are using. (TN: Aijin means mistress in Japan. The dialogue in Japan is heavily relying context because many Japanese words sound similar. When Yuuka and Tamai were talking, the word aijin was written using kanji so it can be quickly understood what they were talking about. But the reporter is parroting aijin using katakana, he is under the impression that it might be some new slang because it's unthinkable for a good kid to be called a mistress just from that conversation.)

I am recalling such trivial thing while today too my feet are heading toward Wisteria.

Even if there is no information I can get about the returnees, the cooking in that restaurant is really good. The atmosphere of the restaurant is also calming, so I can drink coffee at the end while relaxing. After soaking my body in

this harsh industry, taking a short time in this kind of restaurant is really healing me.

I can see Wisteria in front of me right now. A large stylish signboard can be seen on the quiet restaurant's appearance. The time is evening, so Wisteria that is illuminated by the madder red of evening even looks like the entrance to a different world.

□Just what am I thinking□

Is it because the girl had encountered spirited away phenomenon? I retort to myself after saying that kind of impossible imagination. I'm thinking for a little, perhaps it's better to just normally interview about the restaurant.

The restaurant's atmosphere and cooking, coffee, and then a beautiful high school student is the future second generation~

Yep, I feels like that can become a good enough article. Although, if I do that, then inevitably Yuuka-chan's background will get exposed and it will only shift back to the topic of "returnee".

When I'm about to arrive after a little bit more with a wry smile on my face, suddenly a familiar girl get out from the restaurant, it's Yuuka-chan.

□What? She looks strange.....□

Yuuka-chan is holding a mobile phone in her hand and she is talking to somewhere while walking briskly through a path that is different from the path I'm coming from.

I become strangely concerned and in the end I don't enter the restaurant and follow behind Yuuka-chan instead.

Yuuka-chan ended her call midway and she started jogging.

.....She, she is unexpectedly fast. I have confidence with my waist and legs from my work, but after ten minutes I'm starting to run out of breath. The cause is one. Yuuka-chan looks like she is jogging in a glance, but the fact is, amazingly with each step she is steadily accelerating. Inevitably I am sprinting almost with all my strength.

Yuuka-chan. You aren't just a throwing master, you are also a jogging master aren't you?

A man desperately following behind a high school girl while breathing roughly 'zee~ zee~'. If someone is looking from the side then it's definitely out. I'm praying so that no one will report me while sprinting for a while.

Yuuka-chan entered an empty building that is for sale.

□In this kind of day when the sun is already sinking, toward this kind of place, just what is her business?□

I'm feeling suspicious while gripping my phone tightly so that if something happened to Yuuka-chan I can report it anytime. At the same time, I'm also feeling the indication of a scoop and take out the camera I'm always carrying.

While confirming that there is no one around, I step into the building cautiously.

I guess originally this building was used for office. The first floor is spacious and wide, and there is the figure of Yuuka-chan at the center.

I'm hiding behind a pillar and watch over the situation.

And then before long, five men appear from deeper inside the building. All of them are wearing black suits. No matter how you look they aren't respectable person.

□I came. And then where is the customer of my restaurant?□

I guess it right now. Yuuka-chan was called by those suspicious fellows! Her customer is taken hostage! Just who are these people?

Abduction and confinement, this is not a usual situation.

I clicked my camera shutter wordlessly.

□Don't be so rushed. We aren't kidnapping anyone or anything. They must be eating dinner normally around this time. It's just that our colleagues are on the lookout near the,, that's all.□

□Oh, really. And? What do you want me to do?□

Even though this is an outrageous situation, Yuuka-chan is still keeping her hands on her jacket's pockets, while her mouth that is holding a chewing gum without me noticing is blowing out a balloon. Fear and unease are nonexistent in her expression, if I have to say the color of exasperation is stronger in her face.

In a glance, she is a delinquent girl looking down at an adult—she can be seen like that.

In fact the opponent might be feeling like that because their face frowned slightly.

□Just like what we said before, we only want you to cooperate with us. About the ability that all of you have, and then about the method to obtain it and the place.□

□Haa. And, why is it I'm the one who you called out using a method that is going as far as that?□

I understood that they are people aiming for information of the returnees based from the flow of their dialogue. However, Yuuka-chan isn't the only returnee. Why is she the one targeted and not the other students?

The answer is spoken from the man's mouth.

□It's nothing big, you are that boy's mistress right?□

□.....□

That word came out again. The word "aijin". Is that some kind of secret jargon? Hahah, I really don't get it all~. Eh, why is Yuuka-chan turning that red? Just where does her cool figure just now gone to!?

The man glanced at the fiercely trembling Yuuka-chan and he continued.

□We are really well aware about that boy's abnormality. It's impossible to even approach him and his relative. Our colleagues were only "changing job" one after another. The other students look like they have weak influence. But, you are different. You are outside the framework of relative, but you have special relationship with that boy. If it's your words, even that boy won't be able to bluntly ignore it.□

Special re——eh? What did he say? I didn't hear it really clearly just now.

□We want you to request him following our instruction. That's all. If you do just that, all of your customers can go to your restaurant without knowing any——□



□First thing first, that thing about mi, mi, mistress. Where did you hear it from?□

Yuuka-chan questioned while still looking down with her body trembling. The man raised an eyebrow as though to say□Why are you concerned with that one?□, yet he still answered.

□Mainly from your classmates, then also from your parents. They were talking about it normally in the restaurant, and then even from the conversation when shopping, I got the report that your parents were talking worriedly that they wished you won't be a mistress but marry normally.□

□.....Everyone you better remember this. My vegetable sticks are hungering for smartphone.□

It seems that the smartphones of her classmates and parents will become the prey of the vegetable sticks, just like the smartphone of that boy some time ago.

The eyes of Yuuka-chan who lifted up her face are steady. As might be expected from the face of a beauty that possess long slits eyes, it has a remarkable intensity when it make such expression. The man in the front stirred for a moment as though he is faltering.

□A, anyway, will you follow along with our “cooperation request”?□

□If I don't, my customers will randomly meet misfortune?□

□.....□

The wordless reply is the proof of affirmation.

Seeing the situation that is becoming more and more outrageous, I decided to withdraw for the moment from here to report this. What is passing through my mind is the sudden calming down of the returnees commotion and the warning from the people in the same business. Furthermore, from the talk of those men in suits in addition with their experienced air, the possibility that they are government people is high.

Perhaps reporting this to police will be pointless. On the contrary, perhaps I will also be in danger with the reason that informer = witness.

However, there is no way I cannot leave this as it is. Yuuka-chan came here alone for the sake of her restaurant customers even knowing the danger. She is a girl who is more than a decade younger than me, but she came here after mustering her courage for the sake of others! Then, I too have to do what I can!

Because, even I am a customer that love Wisteria!

(Yuuka-chan. Please don't provoke the opponent and do your best just a little bit——)

While gritting my teeth that I cannot leap out like a hero, I try to retreat until a place where my voice won't be able to be heard when I report this.

But, that cannot come true.

□Uguh□

□.....Good grief. Rat like your kind is always barging in from everywhere.□

I got caught. There was also these guys comrade behind me. My neck get choked by an arm and I get trouble breathing. My body get groped around with one hand and my camera and smartphone are taken. I get dragged along out from behind the pillar.

Noticing the commotion, Yuuka-chan and the men look to this direction. The men are making unpleasant face. Yuuka-chan's expression looks like she wants to say "What the hell". No, it's strange for me to be the one to say it but Yuuka-chan, isn't it better if you show a bit different reaction than that..... What happen with your cool and unperturbed attitude?

"That person, is more or less my customer though?"

"A reporter, Hamada Shouta. Looks like he is investigating your surrounding."

My background is exposed from the business card they took. What kind of expression Yuuka-chan will make now she know I'm tricking her I wonder. Her expression that enter my sight that is turning blurry from the distress is.....ah, yep, it's just like usual. She isn't thinking anything of it. She is cool and lovely. Can I cry?

"It doesn't matter what is that person's background. And? What are you going to do with that person?"

".....It's something you don't need to know. Can I consider that our deal is struck? Then, you can go back to your restaurant. We will contact you again later. Our thanks for your cooperation."

Whose mouth is saying that? After threatening a girl who is still a student!

An indescribable rage is surging inside me. What will happen to me after this? Of course I'm feeling scared about that. The inside of my head is already messed up. What to do? What to do!? There are only those words that keep flowing in and vanishing inside.

In this hopeless situation, a voice suddenly resounded. It's Yuuka-chan's voice.

□.....Ah, yep. This side is all right though. Ah, I see, so it's over. Okay.□

The men look suspicious. Me too. The reason is because Yuuka-chan is talking to empty space.

The sudden happening make me only able to be confused, but it appears the men are different. Their facial expression changes as though they recalled something and their hand moved toward their chest pocket.

□Chih. Some kind of ability!? Don't mo——□

□Shut up.□

Yuuka-chan says sharp words. Right after that, the two men raised short scream and they crumble down. Almost at the same time, Yuuka-chan's face turn at my direction, and at the next moment, 'puih' she spit out something.

That thing make the sound of slicing wind while passing through near my forehead, right after that, the pressure restricting my neck vanished.□Guah□That cry make me turn around reflexively, and there I see the figure of a man holding his eye looking pained.

The hand of me who fell on my backside felt a flabby sensation. When I look there, there is a chewing gum that

has been stretched long and narrow. This is the chewing gum Yuuka-chan was chewing. There is no need to guess, perhaps Yuuka-chan threw the gum she held in her mouth to hit the man's eyes.

Groans and screams are overlapping even while I'm slightly befuddled.

When I turned my gaze, there are already five men collapsing. Their leg is stabbed by a knife that release electrical discharge \*crackle crackle\* and then men are convulsing.

□Shit-. Do you think this will end well for you after doing something like this?□

The man who received the chewing gum spit said such thing while tears are trickling from his one eye. At the same time, his hand secretly reach toward his breast pocket, and \*ton-\* that hand is stabbed lightly by a long and narrow knife like a joke.

□I'll return those exact words back to you. Get punished a lot later by the demon king-sama.□

\*pachin-\* Yuuka-chan's fingers snap resounded. The knife stabbed into the man's hand immediately crackled. The man raises a small scream and fall powerlessly.

□Please don't move from there.□

Faster than I can comprehend that those words are directed at me, Yuuka-chan look toward the entrance while she lifted her hand toward the collapsed men. Thereupon, of all things. The knives pulled out by itself and fly toward her hand.

I can only open my eyes wide at the strange happening before my eyes. I don't even have the composure to scrap off Yuuka-chan's chewing gum from my hand.

Yuuka-chan catch the five knives flying at her with one hand and she start juggling them using one hand like a street performer. Wha, what a dangerous act.....is what I thought, but her gaze is fixed toward the entrance without change. From that I understand that this extremely dangerous skill is nothing more than a diversion for her.

The figure of the girl looking relaxed with one hand still put inside her pocket and the other hand juggling throwing knives is really picturesque that I get completely fascinated.

Even unconsciously I feel like I have to say something here, I try to let out words by desperately moving my mouth that doesn't really want to hear what my brain is ordering it to do.

However, before I can, the reason why Yuuka-chan is staring at the entrance finally arrives.

What entered the building along with a low engine sound is two black cars. No matter how I think, they are obviously the comrade of the fainted guys here. Come to think of it, before I entered here, I believe I saw no car nearby. That means, were they already coming here to pick up these men, or else they had arranged to come if there is no contact in certain interval.....

□How ill-prepared. As expected is it just like Nagumo said, they are underestimating us because we are children?□

Yuuka-chan whispered that. The cars' headlight illuminated at Yuuka-chan. At her feet are naturally me who fell on my

ass and the collapsed men. The cars came to a sudden stop and they try to back away in hurry.

□My bad, but this is an order from the sca~ry demon king-sama. Well, he told me to only do it if possible though.□

Inside the building that is shined by the headlights, a new light source is created. It's from Yuuka-chan's knives. The juggled throwing knives are blazing up along with \*gou-\* sound.

Yuuka-chan throw three knives high in the air, she catch the remaining two blazing knives between her fingers, and right after that, □shih□she throw them along with such spirited voice.

The two knives are flying while pulling trail of fire behind them. Each of them is like a streak of laser, stabbing on both cars' bonnet and explosive sound roared from there. The cars lost their momentum and also the control before they crashed on a pillar and wall.

.....Unbelievably, it seemed that Yuuka-chan's blazing knives pierced the car engines.

Men rolled out from the driving seats of the cars. At that time Yuuka-chan caught the falling knives and throws them again. At the same time, even though she is throwing with one hand, the two knives splendidly follow two different tracks and stabbed the thigh of the men. They collapsed with a thud from the stun gun effect.

□Something like this I think. The rest, I'll leave the clean up at Nagumo just like he said.....□

Yuuka-chan is playing around with her knives by twirling them around while her gaze is moving toward me.

.....Just what is this extremely extraordinary situation?

Now I'm sharing a special circumstance with her. Will I become a secret cooperater that protects her secret after this? Will the two of us face against powerful organization? Will I give comfort to her when she is tired of fighting?

Like that someday the two people.....

□E~rr, anyway, sorry to do this while you are in your own world but, hoih□

\*pushu-\* It feels like something stabbed me. When I look at the back of my hand, there is a knife that she was holding before this. Hm, can you wait a bit, Yuuka-chan? Right now my hand is sticky with the chewing gum that you were chewing, and now the back of my hand is stabbed like this, just what is this situation.....

□Please come to the restaurant again as a normal customer.□

□Ah, wai-, ABABABABABABABABAABABABABABAHBAAH!?!□

There my consciousness is swallowed into darkness.

Her last words. I see, until the end, you are going to fight without anyone else knowing huh. So that's your resolve.

Loving the normal everyday, possessing mysterious power, you leap into the extraordinary days without hesitation for the sake of other people.

Aa, I know. Just what is such a girl is called. I never thought that it really exist in reality.

Yes, you are——



A few days later after the ill-prepared attack of a certain government agency. The western restaurant Wisteria that was loved by the local people. It was afternoon, when it was time where people's visit was the slowest, inside the restaurant was sparse despite it was a holiday.

At such Wisteria the bell that informed of the customer's arrival played its ring. When Yuuka who was wiping the table turned her gaze, there she found the boys trio Tamai and co, and also Miyasaki Nana and Sugawara Taeko.

While smiling wryly thinking that her friends came for jabbering again, Yuuka opened her mouth to welcome them,

□Yo-, magical girl!□

□Are business flourishing, magical girl!□

□Oh man, that's really a great picture yeah, magical girl!□

She got called with strange nickname by the boys trio. After mistress now it was magical girl? Fine then. If that's what you wish then it's war. Do you have enough spare smartphone in stock?

With a fixed smiling face, Yuuka took out vegetable sticks from the kitchen.

□Wait wait, Yuuka-chi! It's not like we are making fun of you. No, Tamai-kun and co are making fun of you though.□

□Ahaha, err, Yuuka. Here.□

Nana immediately hid her smartphone and pacified Yuuka, while Taeko was smiling wryly and took out a magazine from

her bag and handed it over to Yuuka. Beside her, "Ple, please spare at least this child!" Tamai embraced his new smartphone on his stomach and crouched down.

"Geez, just what's with you guys."

When Yuuka dropped her gaze at the magazine she was given while saying that, it appeared that it was a minor gossip magazine. It was something that published things like urban legend and so on. Its credibility was zero. It was that kind of magazine.

Yuuka found a page that was folded and she opened that page while gazing dubiously at Taeko,

"!?"

She stiffened.

It was only natural. Because there,

—A battle of dusk! Magical girl exist! What is the true identity of her who protects the citizens from a mysterious organization!?

Such headline was written with large font, and the picture of Yuuka who was emitting flame was printed there.

Of course, Yuuka's face wasn't shown, there was only the side profile of a girl who looked like she was emitting flame projected there. But, it was obvious in a glance for those who knew Yuuka. The knives that were faintly visible inside the flame and the sparking knives were also the proof.

Yuuka was opening wind holes using curving throwing vegetable sticks at the smartphones of Tamai and co who were cackling while saying things like "Magical girl(mahou

shoujo)? No, this is magical high school girl right?□□No, it's magical mistress(mahout aijin) see□□That sound indecent somehow. Rather how about demon king mistress(maou aijin)?□, and then she made a phone call from her own smartphone.

□What's up?□

□What do you mean what's up, Nagumo! The concealment!? You were concealing the case weren't you!?!□

□Aa, about that article huh. You see.....hm? Do you hear anyone screaming? Sounds like Tamai and co there.□

□Who cares about that, explain the reason why I become a magical girl!□

Yuuka questioned Hajime while ignoring Tamai and co who were grieving□This time it's celery!? Damn it!□while embracing their smartphones that were returning blank eye(screen).

□No, I erased everything like the camera data and so on, I also manipulated their memory. But as expected from a pro journalist. It appeared he also took several picture using his smartphone and transferred the pictures into his PC at his home.□

□Guh. His gaze was always following me stickily every time he came to the restaurant, so I thought he was surely a no-hoper third class reporter.□

□.....Well, putting aside your harsh evaluation. That reporter put out the article at a gossip publisher while I was pressed with dealing at the public safety side. Even though he should have no memory, he moved fast to make the article because the picture was just interesting.□

Yuuka was determined. The next time that reporter bastard came, it wouldn't end well for him, she resolved.

It was impossible for anyone to judge that it was Yuuka from that picture except her friends and comrades, and above all the magazine was a local gossip publisher. The number of copies printed and also the number of buyer was few. Yuuka considered the reporter as a customer and against her better judgment she didn't make him faint. She cursed her careless self and let out a sigh of resignation.

By the way, when she eventually made him fainted, for some reason around the end that reporter was staring at her stickily, on top of that he was excessively grinning in his own world, he looked simply revolting so Yuuka electrified him somewhat reflexively.

□Well, in the end it's just gossip. It won't become a big problem I believe. If it happens then it happens, I'll crush it entirely at that time. So don't worry about that.□

□It's not like I'm particularly uneasy or anything. It's Nagumo after all.□

Just what was it? Yuuka felt smirking gazes from outside her field of vision. It also felt like there was exasperated gazes  
□They are do~ing it again~□.

A voice calling at Hajime could be heard from the other side of the phone. It seemed that he was still in the middle of dealing with a trouble.

□My bad suddenly calling you. I got already for now about the situation.□

□Aa. Then later——□

Yuuka told that she was ending the call seeing that Hajime was busy, Hajime too also replied——just before that, it was as though he got a mischievous idea and made a stifled laugh. And then,

□Later, magical girl Yuuka-chan□

□-, You-□

Before she could complain, \*tuut tuut\* lifeless electronic sound sounded. Yuuka was trembling all over with her eyes staring fixedly at the smartphone while her cheeks were gradually turning red. Then she whispered.

□.....Don't call me, Yuuka-chan.□

Naturally, it went without saying that she was given the wide grin of the two people at the kitchen and the counter, and her five friends.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I caught cold. The Word frequently deadlocked. When I changed using Ichitaro(TN: Japanese program), my data flew. Okay. I'm gonna post the chapter at any cost.

And so this chapter was late, but it's Yuuka chapter that felt tedious.

I also want to write a long arc with Yuuka as the main, so this time it's just an idle story.

The chronological order is around one month after the return.

Everyone too please be careful of catching cold.

# Arifureta After II

## Mundane School Life ①

AN: Thank you for waiting.

It's a trifling ordinary day arc.

I wrote ①, but I'm planning to interpose the student life arc with idle story, so it's just for numbering.

I'm undecided whether next week I'll also write student life arc's continuation. It will depend on my mood.

---

Blue sky without a single cloud was spreading vast, in a corner of resident area that was filled with comfortable cool air that was characteristic of the morning time,

——\*gashan-\*

Such sound of crashing and,

——Gupeh!?

Such scream were resounding.

□.....Hajime? Are you listening?□

□Hm? A, aah. I'm listening Yue.□

Yue who was walking beside Hajime while making footstep sounds regularly puffed up her cheeks in a bit of dissatisfaction.

With their height difference as one factor, Yue who was turning her gaze at Hajime as though she was peering from below was naturally looking like she was directing upturned gaze at him, and despite having seeing her gesture that was like that many times until now, Hajime couldn't prevent his heartbeat from jumping up for a moment.

And so, the cause of the sound of crashing and scream just now—a passing by salary man riding a bicycle in his way to his workplace who was driving inattentively, and in the end he crashed onto a telephone pole and toppled over, such tragedy was smoothly slipping off from Hajime's mind along with his moving away gaze.

Yue fastened her pace to move ahead of Hajime and then there she made a beautiful turn with a twirl. Her golden threads hair softly fluttered and glittered as though it was even blessed by the morning sunlight, while her skirt that was similarly fluttering softly greatly emphasized her whitely alluring absolute territory. (TN: Absolute territory = zettai ryouiki = exposed skin between top of knee-high socks and hemline of skirt)

——\*zubo-\*, dowah!?

A boy who seemed to be a high school student from another school walking at the edge of street put his foot into a ditch and he screamed, but Hajime whose heart was captured by Yue who was staring straight at him while walking backward didn't even turn his gaze there.

□It's dangerous walking backward like that you know?□



□.....Nn. But, like this both of us are inside each other's sight.□

Yue was staring still at him expressionlessly, but her default expression crumbled slightly. The gently softening expression——Yue's smile stimulated Hajime's déjà vu and he narrowed his eyes.

.....A postman overtaking Hajime from the side seemed to get his brain stimulated. As the compensation of not looking straight while driving, he almost got into an accident and put on his emergency brake \*kikii——!!\*. He came to a stop with a really impressive drift.

□.....Hajime?□

Yue tilted her head at Hajime's state. Hajime realized the source of his déjà vu and he muttered□My dream became reality huh□. Hearing that mutter, Yue tilted her head even further to the opposite side to show her confusion.

That gesture was so lovely that Hajime loosened his face.

At the same time, a female high schooler walking from the roadside suddenly pressed on her nose and crouched down. Red liquid of joy was dripping from between her hand. This female high schooler who was whispering□I, I saw it again. It's just too angelic just now□was also discharging out drips of red joy at the same place four, five days ago, so surely she was in a healthy state without any abnormality.

□You see, I had seen Yue's figure wearing that uniform while walking backward like this before.□

□.....Nn? I had done this before?□

□No, we have gone to school together many times, but something like this is the first time. It's just, it's embarrassing to confess this but.....I saw it at Haltina's great dungeon, yeah.□

□.....ah. Fufuh. Did you dream it?□

□Don't laugh.□

Hajime looked aside while scratching his cheek. For his delusion and desire to be known by his lover, even though it was at this late hour, no, exactly because it was at this late hour that it was a bit embarrassing.

The true identity of the déjà vu Hajime felt. The cause was one of the trial that he received at the capturing of great sea of trees Haltina. The capturing members were shown world of dream at the same time when they were teleported. There they experienced a world of supreme convenient wish they desired on top of having their inconvenient past written off.

What Hajime dreamed off inside that world was ordinary days on top of the erasure of his despair and hellish pain he experienced at the abyss. Inside that world there was Yue as his lover and he went to school with her like this. Both of them were carefree under the sunlight without any conflict, pain, and anxiety.

Yue was twirling like now and she steadily walked backward in front of Hajime, wearing the uniform of the school Hajime attended.

The figure of Yue wearing blazer and skirt, and then loafers, with the school bag held behind her, she was walking backward..... This spectacle of dream waiting ahead after he passed through all difficulties was truly the symbol of happiness for Hajime.

□Haa haa, my goddess——abeshih!?!□

The finger bullet Hajime unconsciously fired splendidly hit the forehead of a man peeking out from between the curtain of the second floor room of a house the two happened to pass by. Of course, the glass window was beautifully pierced through.

The man who was blown away along with an impact that felt like it would tear off the head, without pause he was sent flying into the corridor with a force that could smash through a door. From inside the house,□Dear-, Takeshi is! Takeshi is coming out from his room!□□What!? Recently he is doing this every morning isn't he!? Finally Takeshi too is resolved to return to society.....uuuh□such harmonious voices could be heard.

Surely the number of family conversation there was increasing in proportion of the number of hole in the window. It was something wonderful.

□You are used with the school already?□

□.....Nn. It's fresh and novel. Especially the going to and from school alone with just Hajime.□

Yue's smile deepened at Hajime's attempt to change topic while she replied.

□Though I also feels like this isn't something we need to decide the rotation shift and even purposefully not using car though. Even going through shortcut, it's still faster by riding bicycle.□

□.....Hajime don't get it. Going to and from school with just two people is our important time. This is the consensus of opinion so objection or refusal won't be allowed.□

□I, I see. But still.....□

Just as Yue said, Yue, Shia, Kaori, and Shizuku enforced a rotation shift where each of them would go to school with just Hajime once a week. It was something that was decided by their consensus of opinion, and the time became an important time where they could be together with just Hajime who most of time was together with someone among his families.

Hajime more or less also guessed that. However, there was a relatively pressing problem in the case of all these four people, especially in regard to Yue, because of that Hajime's expression was a bit twitching.

□.....You don't like, being alone with me?□

□There is no way that's true.□

Getting asked such thing with a sad looking gaze, Hajime had no other option than giving an immediate answer.

Even if he witnessed the tragic scenes of all the passerby in the range where Yue's expression was visible were crashing, tumbling over, or spraying out joy from their nose.

When he was going to and from school with just Yue, most of the time the path they traveled became like a disaster site in their passing. Also to say more, the smartphones of the smartphone users all over the place who suddenly became unmannered were invited to heaven and agonizing cries in that kind of meaning also echoed in the path that was turned into a road of tragedy.....

Hajime fastened his brisk pace and caught up to Yue, he then took out a glasses with crimson frame from his pocket and gently put it on Yue. Glasses girl Yue blinked her eyes.

This glasses was actually an artifact that possessed recognition obstruction effect but,

——\*Gashan! Kikii——, gosha! Chuin!\*

——So, so cutebuberah!? Hidebuh. Abeshi!?

In front of the charm of *Yue wearing glasses*, the artifact bent its knees in defeat.

□.....A charm that nullified an artifact that is enchanted with age of god magic, huh. You haven't actually obtained a concept magic of charm or something haven't you?□

□.....?□

Hajime whispered to himself and took off the glasses that had opposite effect from Yue. The glasses artifact of recognition obstruction was quite effective at first, but recently it was becoming an item that increased Yue's charm instead.

Hajime could only cocked his head in puzzlement, but his mother Sumire who heard this story was staring blankly while answering□That's must be because she is with you□as though it was nothing. Recently their surrounding had calmed down compared to at the beginning and Yue became able to enjoy her time alone with Hajime to her heart's content. Surely Yue's euphoria was overflowing out at her time alone with her beloved, that seemed to be the case.

While thinking 'Don't tell me it's really that kind of reason?', Hajime turned his gaze from the glasses back to Yue,

\*howawan~\*

Small heart mark bubbles were gushing out from Yue's body only from her gaze meeting Hajime's.....was how it looked like. Hajime scrubbed his eyes and when he looked at her one more time, there was only Yue there smiling normally. It seemed that he was hallucinating.

□We arrived, at the station.□

□Nn□

Deciding not thinking deeper about it, Hajime thought of preparing a more powerful artifact. When Hajime was thinking that, they arrived at the nearest station that was actually the a detour in their going to and from school.

Yue returned walking at Hajime's side once more and with an extremely natural motion she linked her arm with Hajime's. Her soft sensation and sweet fragrance tickled his nose and he received sharp gazes from the station workers and salary men. Even now their expression looked as though they were going to yell out□Showing off right from the morning□with spits flying out.

Yue-sama who was in cloud nine of happiness from the morning didn't seem to bother at all with the surrounding, but for Hajime who was endeavoring to return to his former livelihood in the modern Japan, this situation was really serious. It was to the degree that he needed to hold back his hand that wanted to immediately move toward his thigh. Of course his partner railgun wasn't there.

While the two were having idle chat like nothing at the station platform, a strange situation that was already the routine every morning was starting to occur.

No matter how one looked, people were congesting at the position of the train coach Hajime and Yue were lining up for.

There were many male, but there was also quite the number of female. Also, in a glance the females were looking like they were fixing their eyes on smartphone, newspaper, or book, but from Hajime's viewpoint it was totally obvious that they kept glancing his and Yue's way.

(Every single morning, they aren't getting tired of it. This is already at the level of killing intent. ....Well, going to school with different woman every morning, if it's asked whether this can't be helped then it really can't be helped I guess.)

Among these people that were forming lines, there weren't only Yue's fans, there must be Shia's fans too there. Small voices like "Toying around with Shia-chan, this shitty braatt" could be heard sometimes. By the way, when he was going with Kaori or Shizuku, Hajime would go until their house to pick them up by riding train, but at that time there would be salary men that happened to catch sight of him without fail.

By the way, the closest station from Kaori and Shizuku's house was at the opposite site with the school sandwiched in between of that station and the nearest station from Hajime's house. There were eight stations until this station.

If this happened to a normal male high schooler, their mind would surely get disturbed from getting exposed to this storm of negative emotions like jealousy and so on that the mere expression of bed of nails wasn't possibly enough to signify the significance.

Of course, the one here wasn't a possessor of soft mind that would wither down from such thing.

Glancing at a salary man uncle lining up behind him who was subtly closing the distance, Hajime circled his hand

around Yue's waist and he pressed her body tightly toward him.

The surrounding became noisy. Murderous gazes were doubling.

□.....Hajime?□

□Hey, Yue. It's fine even if we take detour, so how about we stop riding train? I don't have any intention at all letting you get touched by anyone, and if there is that kind of guy trying that, I'll tear off his nails even if it's still in the stage of attempt, but there is also no need at all to mass produce people with their life ended right?□

Yue who tilted her head in puzzlement seemed to guess the meaning of his words a beat later. Or rather, it seemed she was really ignoring the surrounding's situation as though it was only natural. As expected from a former royalty. It appeared that it was the default state to put the gazes of the rabble outside the mind. Or possibly, perhaps it was also that she wasn't able to see anything but Hajime.

Yue showed a bit of thinking gesture□.....Nn~~□and her index finger suddenly stood up straight.

□.....□Everyone, bee~~come unconcerned with us□□

The words sounded slow and stupid, but they were whispered with a mysterious echo. Invisible power permeated the whole station as though it was spreading in ripples, and right after that, including the salary man who was gradually getting closer, the expression of the people who were focusing on Hajime and Yue went 'hah' as though they returned to their senses.



And then, they were making wondering expression about why were they making long lines in the entrance for this train coach like this while scattering toward other spots.

□What should I say, that's a special bargain sale of□Divine Statement□huh. You want to go to school by train that much?□

□Nn-. To speak in Hajime's wording, this is romance. Therefore I won't give it up.□

□Yo, you are insisting it like that huh. I got it. Well, it's also nothing really difficult, I'll reinforce the recognition obstruction artifact quickly.□

□.....Glasses?□

□Glasses.□

He wouldn't give that up. Glasses girl Yue-sama was the key point for Hajime.

After that, during their walk until they reached the school, it went without saying that the words of god were literally firing in rapid succession toward the people who just arrived to ride the train and the crowd of people getting off the train. If it was for the sake of her desire, Yue-sama wouldn't be stingy with using the words of god! It was Hajime> Unsurpassed wall> Everything else for her!

Hajime and Yue who arrived at school reached the shoe locker while respectively gathering attention.

There was one more template that was still continuing here.

——\*rustle rustle rustle-\*

Numerous letters surged like avalanche. It was a really retro method to put letter into shoe locker, but there was no other way for these people to convey their feeling so it couldn't be helped. After all, the contact address of Yue and co weren't known except by their classmates and a part of friends, and on top of that if they tried to talk to them directly there was always demon king level escort constantly beside them.

□Just like always.□

□.....Nn. Being liked itself isn't bad. But I cannot help to say that this is really a bother.□

Yue didn't even hide her expression of feeling troublesome, her eyes narrowed for a moment to see through something and she put several letters into her pocket while she pushed in everything else into another locker. By the way, that locker was Kaori's.

□Are those love letters from girls again?□

Hajime said that with a wry smile after guessing the sender of the letters that Yue pocketed. Just as he said, about 30 or 40 percent of the love letters Yue received came from female students.

□.....Rather than calling them love letter, the letters are more like from fan or requesting to become friend, those kind of things. Idiots who are sending love letter even knowing I have Hajime doesn't matter at all, but I cannot carelessly treat the letter from girls who want to be friend with me.□

□That kind of treatment is the reason you are popular.□

Seeing Yue who lowered her eyebrows looking a bit troubled, Hajime said that looking amused while opening his own locker. Several cute letters were piled up snugly inside. Yue-sama's gaze stabbed.

Helplessly Hajime took out the letters and put them inside another locker. By the way that locker had the name "Amanogawa Kouki" written on it.

Seeing such Hajime, Yue asked with a bit amused expression.

□.....Hajime. Is it fine not to read the letter right at the top?□

□The top one? What, is there something in it?□

The words of Yue who somehow understood the state of when the letter was created by using regeneration magic caused Hajime to make a dubious expression.

Yue took out the aforementioned letter from the locker and,

□.....Nn. This is from a cute fan of Hajime.....a girlish boy's——□

□Sooih!!!□

Hajime snatched the letter with godspeed, super compressed it with his grip strength and threw it with full power toward outside the school. The crumpled letter casually hit the speed of 166 kilometer per hour and the letter that was compressed until it was smaller than a pinball flew away like a laser beam.

It felt like a pained voice "Aah, my letterrr!!" could be heard from somewhere, but surely it was just an imagination.

".....As always, Hajime is popular among the cute boys."

"Stop that. They don't feel repulsive like when I was stared at by Chrystabel, even so those guys' gazes are unbearable. Recently the fellows in class are shuddering "The demon king is finally feeling like turning his hand at that direction!?" while nonchalantly taking distance away from me. It's just plainly weighing the mind."

".....Even though, Chrystabel is a good person."

"Your lover's ass is being targeted here you know? Don't just conclude that he is a good person."

Yue chuckled at the dejected Hajime. Lured by that amused look of Yue, the students who were arriving at school were rapidly getting slower in their walk. A crowd trying to get even just a glimpse at the beautiful face of the girl who outwardly changed school was starting to form.

Hajime took Yue's hand to quickly head toward the classroom.

The classroom of Hajime and others were at the highest floor and the farthest corner of the school building. They were at second year of high school, so normally they should be at the second floor, but their classroom was at that place where normally no one would come at was because Hajime and others were "returnees".

With the uneasiness from the school side and a part of students' family, and the criticism from the society about the decency if the students who returned back miraculously at great pains were to be driven out from school, the school

administration compromised by wishing to gather the returnees in one place and they set up a “special classroom” at a place that was isolated in the same school building.

Also, Hajime and others were in the middle of their first year when they were summoned to the other world Tortus. And so, originally they should be held back a grade, but although Hajime and others were put into a special classroom, but their school grade was properly in the second year.

This was the result of the conformance between the demand of Hajime and co “no way we will repeat the year”, and the opinion of the school side that wished for them to quickly graduate the school and left with the official stance that it was their sympathy and compassion at work.

As the result, a special short course period was prepared for the returnees and on top of that they were given examination, it was to confirm whether they were equipped with the scholarly ability of the first year curriculum of high school, if there was no problem with the test result then their grade advancement would be recognized. That was the special measure that the school taken.

Of course, it was also the result of a demon king somewhere and the wife~s working behind the scene.

And so, amidst the hectic situation of dealing with the government and mass media, all the classmates received special short course and in the end all of them struck high score without anything that could be complained about and their grade advancement was recognized.

At that time, after the special short course, the classmates held a study meeting by their own initiative and diligently

study hard. The school officials were really in admiration seeing that but.....

Things like encouragement yell "Limit Break" could sometimes be heard from the classroom.

Actually, they increased their concentration power and learning power by taking in a drug named Cheatmate while in addition they invoked Limit Break using Last Zell to study. It didn't stop there, after the school was over they would also gather in Yuuka's restaurant for a study meeting and used Hour Crystal to lengthen their time.

It was only getting held back a grade that everyone hated. To a very great extent.

Arriving at the topmost floor, the number of people decreased right away the moment Hajime and Yue stepped into a corridor where their classroom was located. It was natural because originally the classroom here wasn't used and other than that there was only storage room.

But, this morning there was the silhouettes of another people other than the classmates.

"That's, the vice principal and, Aiko, sensei who is completely hidden behind the silhouette?"

".....Nn. It looks like they are quarreling?"

Indeed, over there they saw the back of the vice principal who was famous with his hair that had overly splendid 7:3 ratio it was unnatural, and opposite him seemed to be Aiko seeing from the tiny legs that were barely visible from the two's position. The voice of the vice principal sounded angry for some reason, so it seemed that Aiko was being scolded or preached at.

Hajime and Yue looked at each other and they slowly and smoothly sneaked behind the vice principal after cutting off their presence.

□Now listen, Hatayama-sensei. You are still employed as teacher in this school because of this school's kindness. I hope you will be aware of that a little bit more!□

□Ye, yes. About that I'm really grateful.....□

□In that case, why did you leak an extremely careless statement that show contempt to our school toward the likes of the press. I'm greatly troubled by this!□

□My, my deepest apologies. By no means I'm intending to show contempt.....□

□Hou. The statement that the reason the special classroom is set up because the school is discriminating, you are saying that's not you showing contempt?□

□No! I didn't say anything like discrimination! It's just, I was only saying, if only the school side is also able to treat the students a bit more normally.....□

The reason the vice principal was offended seemed to be the statement Aiko leaked out to the press. Aiko often came out in front of the press with her position as the representative of the returnees. So far as it went she took formal appointment for something like interview, and it was done after talking it thoroughly with the school side, but the persistent reporters were staking out in front of her house and rushed her with questions.

At that time Aiko fastened her pace while doing her utmost to not answer, but the statement of a reporter who spoke as though the students were dangerous individuals and

claimed that the special classroom was something that proved it to be true caused Aiko to object against her better judgment.

She said, that the students weren't dangerous or anything. That originally they should be able to attend school normally.

The press that happily picked up on that made an uproar claiming that the school side was discriminating and whatever, and the vice principal who received the news got angry.

(This wig-wearing baldy vice principal. What is he doing venting at Aiko.)

(.....Nn. It's the fact that the school is treating us with isolation. This baldy wig-covered head is only protecting himself.)

Hajime and Yue were squinting their eyes toward the vice principal who were still nagging angrily at Aiko. Both of them sneaked even closer behind the vice principal with their presence still cut off.

There, Aiko finally noticed Hajime and Yue's existence. Seeing the two who were slowly and stealthily approaching behind the vice principal, Aiko felt a violent bad premonition and she sent repeated glances at the vice principal and Hajime alternately.

Hajime smilingly conveyed "Morning" with his lip movement. Aiko too sent glances at the vice principal who was absorbed with his preaching while conveying "Good morning" with her lips movement.

Hajime nodded once and,



(For now, how about I attack this guy?)

He slowly took out Donner and aimed at the back of the vice principal's head.

□No way-! Absolutely no way!□

□Muh. Exactly. It's self-explanatory what does alma mater meant. It's something that will be unforgettable for the whole life for the students, and you must not do anything that can harm this alma mater. In the first place——□

Aiko reflexively yelled and crossed both her arms to make a cross mark. She did that incidentally right after the vice principal was saying□Do you think it's fine to put a stigma on the school?□, and so Aiko's sudden eccentric behavior was also miraculously ignored.

Yue straightened up her index finger all of a sudden,

(.....Don't worry Aiko. Right now I'll annihilate this barely remaining hair roots for you.)

Fire lit up above the finger. Yue's gaze was directed toward the vice principal's head.

□More than this is no good! It will be completely gone!□

□Exactly, Hatayama-sensei! The prestige of our school must not be harmed even more than this. If we lose our credence, it's also possible for the alma mater of the students to be gone!□

Once more it was a relay of miraculous conversation.

Surely under the 7:3 ratio wig, the hair roots that were already in the verge of annihilation were squeezing out their

final willpower. As expected, perhaps feeling the danger instinctively, the vice principal inadvertently looked behind. Hajime and Yue smoothly moved to his blind spot with harmonized breathing.

Confirming that there wasn't anyone behind him, the vice principal returned his gaze at Aiko. At the same time, Hajime and Yue also smoothly returned behind him.

The vice principal checked his watch and it seemed he would conclude his preaching. Surely this talk was something important to him that was grounded on his belief. But, Aiko was helplessly bothered by the two behind the vice principal that his words didn't enter her head at all.

(The bell will ring soon! Please enter the classroom quickly! Or rather, eh? Why am I conversing with lip movement like this?)

Aiko responded with lip movement talk from being somehow carried away by the place's atmosphere, she noticed the strangeness about that while urging Hajime and Yue with a scolding.

The two who even now were reaching out their hand together toward the wig of the vice principal as though to say 'This is the first group work of us two desu!' looked at each other's face after seeing Aiko's upset look and desperate lips movement. And then, they nodded as though something had passed between them, and right after that the two of them acted despondently which didn't suit them.

(Even though I did this because I thought Aiko is troubled.....)

(.....Even though I'm doing my best to help Aiko)

No matter how one thought of it what they were doing was nothing more than being mischievous, but Aiko who was in overwhelmed so much by the situation honestly felt guilt pressing on her chest.

Toward such Aiko, Hajime and Yue moistened their eyes with their mischievousness in full throttle while appealing.

(Aiko already hated me now huh.)

(.....Aiko already hated me now?)

Getting told that by the man she was in love with and the top of the wive~s, there was no way Aiko who was already at her wits end could recover her calm,

□Such thing-, it's obvious that I love you very much!□

□Wha-. Ha, Hatayama-sensei, what are you suddenly.....□

For some reason vice principal was greatly flustered. His wig head was blushing red until the tip of his ears and his expression was taken aback for a while. And then he cleared his throat once \*cough-\*

□Ha, Hatayama-sensei. That's, it's, just what do you mean by that?□

The talk of the wig vice principal before this was□Anyway, there is no time, I'll stop with this much for now. I really wish that you can realize just how large the influence your carelessness in your speech has brought to our school. Although, it seem that you are hating me, perhaps my words are only entering your right ear before going out from the left ear right away□that was said with a lot of sarcasm in his tone.

It was at that timing that Aiko finally turned her focus at her talk with the vice principal. Of course, she wasn't listening to the vice principal's talk just now so she also didn't really understand what was said and asked at her. But, with the atmosphere and also with her social standing, here she absolutely cannot say anything like "Actually I'm not listening! I'm sorry!".

(Wha, what to do? I don't know at all what is he talking about..... Wait, Aiko, remember it well. This wig, cough-, vice principal is talking about how to protect the school and about the necessity of protecting the school so.....that's right! There is no doubt he is asking me whether I'm treasuring, loving the school or not!)

"Err, even if you ask me what I mean, the meaning is exactly just like I said....."

Ai-chan-sensei replied carefully while watching the situation. With how she was also turning upturned gaze to observe the situation, the wig vice principal was further bewildered.

"You, you really mean what you said..... Hatayama-sensei, you, in this kind of place you suddenly.....please stop with you joke."

The vice principal averted his gaze away with a huff. Hajime and Yue escaped to outside the field of vision with a splendid moving technique.

Aiko felt a heartburn seeing the wig-wearing middle-aged man blushing for some reason, so she gripped her chest tightly and racked her brain hard.

(What's this, this situation feel somewhat strange but.....he is telling me to stop joking, that means he is thinking that I'm not thinking seriously about the school. As I thought

from the view point of vice principal who has worked in teaching profession for nearly thirty years until now, someone like me introducing myself as teacher is just presumptuous.....but, it's true that a school is a place to protect the students, and it's a place of important memory that will remain through our life. Then, at the very least I have to convey that I'm serious!)

Still being unaware that the perception of both sides were mutually greatly deviating from each other, Aiko took a deep breath with resolve. The wig vice principal twitched seeing that straightforward gaze.

Aiko didn't even pay attention to the wig vice principal twitching and she met his gaze frankly and,

□I'm not joking, I really feel fondness (for the school and students)! No, rather, it's not an exaggeration even if I say that I feel love (for the school and students)!□

□Wha, what did you saayy——!?!□

That powerful speech was delivered with a tightly clenched fist and a force that made one hallucinated the sea wave splashing behind her \*splaa~~sh\*. The serious feeling was conveyed clearly whether the recipient wanted it or not.

The wig vice principal took a step back as though he was overpowered and,

□I, I HAVE, A WIFE AND CHILDRENNNNNNNNNN~::~~::~~□

He yelled such thing while running through the corridor. Of course, Hajime and Yue escaped to the blind spot with divine smoothness. At that time, a divine wind also blew and the vice principal's wig was smoothly taken and fell on the floor.

Aiko watched with her mouth wide open at the vice principal who suddenly yelled out incomprehensible thing while running away.

□.....Aiko, you are a miraculous human. This is the first time since I was born witnessing this kind of artistic misunderstanding.□

□Hee? Eh?□

□Aa~, Aiko. You see, perhaps vice principal is thinking that he was confessed by Aiko. After all you gave him those lines after he was sarcastically asking whether you hate actually him.□

□Yes?□

Aiko was astonished. However, a beat later she recalled her dialogue with the vice principal and then thinking of what Hajime said she guessed the situation, which caused her expression to lose color in a flash. And then, she picked up the wig on the floor using her fingertips and,

□Vi, VICE PRINCIPAALLLLLLL-! IT'S A MISUNDERSTANDINGGG! THIS IS A MISUNDERSTANDING!!! ALSO YOUR WIGGG!!! PLEASE DON'T ENTER THE STAFF ROOM! THE TIME OF MORNING ASSEMBLY WILL BE HELL~~~!! YOUR WIG IS STILL HEREEEEEEEE-□

She yelled that and dashed with amazing speed.

It felt like it would ended up the same with her yelling 'wig wig' like that but.....

While staring at the back figure of the cute homeroom teacher who was energetically running in place today too, Yue shortly said.

□.....Nn. As I thought, school is fun.□

□Yep, well, I think it's relatively an extraordinary student life though.□

The bell rang at the same time with Hajime's retort.

Today too the mundane school life was starting.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

# Arifureta After II    So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other?    First Part

There was a spacious underground room at the underground of Nagumo residence. Of course it was a room that originally didn't exist, but after Hajime returned home from another world, he created it because it was necessary for various kind of his works.

In that personal underground workshop, the aforementioned Hajime was folding his arms while humming "Hm~~m".

"The stage is created. The basic system is also okay. The fixing of consciousness and also the safety are cleared. What's left is the concrete story and character setting that match with it but.....no matter how the idea doesn't really come to me."

Hajime reconfirmed the situation by speaking to himself while he raised the humming sound of his worry once more. The gaze of such Hajime was fixed at the item that was put on the work stand, something like a mechanical eye mask that was embedded with bluish white crystal.

Its appearance was like an eye mask shaped electronic massager for the area around the eyes, or perhaps like a headset for virtual reality game.....or rather, actually the item was exactly that, it was a game device that Hajime



created himself. However, the technology and materials used to create it came from the mixture of earth and another world, even age of god magic was applied to make this game of full body experience.

In earth it was still at the level where human finally laid their hand on the tip of the technology of virtual world production, but when it was by the hand of the world's strongest transmutation master this completed product was easily realized.

By the way, by applying soul magic only the user's consciousness would be send to the virtual world, but actually this thing was something that was mostly close to out-of-body experience, in addition the virtual world was formed from something like an illusion that was endlessly close to reality because of the application of regeneration magic, so not only the five senses, the user could even sense other things like magic power or presence.

This item was the painstaking piece of Hajime's work that especially paid close attention to the safety mechanism. Rather, it wasn't even an exaggerated to call it his greatest masterpiece. As a gamer, and then as the son of the president of a game maker company, he made absolutely no compromise in this effort!

Now then, about the impetus of this game device's creation though.....

(.....Even though I made it painstakingly, but it will be meaningless if Myuu cannot enjoy it. The concept is pretty much "fun training" so it's settled that the game must be RPG.....what kind of RPG that a girl will like? For now, I had put in characters noncommittally for checking its operation but.....hm~~~m)

Just as could be understood from Hajime's worry, this device was created for Myuu's training use.

With Myuu pleading that she wanted to be strong like Hajime and others as the impetus, Hajime and party (other than the wife~s, the classmates also joined in) educated Myuu about fighting skill.

About the actual training itself, it could be done anywhere if barrier of concealment was laid out beforehand using magic or artifact, so there was no problem. However, from Hajime's thinking that a real combat, and furthermore a real combat against stronger enemy was far better than training, then as expected there would be no place for Myuu to test her strength except if they went to Tortus.

But, crossing worlds every time for training and then preparing opponent that was just at the right level were really troublesome. However, from Hajime's stand point, in this current time when there wasn't any emergency situation, he didn't have the slightest intention to make his beloved daughter going through severe training where "the worst case" could possibly happen, like when he tempered himself in the bottom of abyss against the monstrous opponents there.

—He wanted Myuu to annihilate stronger enemy without rushing and with some elbowroom, so she could have healthy growth.

That was the genuine parental love of a father who had a daughter.

And so, fighting virtual enemy in a virtual world was actually a method that was just right for this.

Now then, like that the creation of the game device was roughly completed, but here Hajime bumped into a wall here. He had progressed with the creation until here based on the concept of “Fighting against stronger enemy. However, doing it while having a blast”, but he couldn’t think of the “story” that would become the fundamental of the essential part of “having a blast”.

After all, till the end this was a virtual practice for testing the result of Myuu’s training. And so, for example if a goblin was put as the opening enemy befitting the standard of RPG. However, naturally Myuu would fight by freely using weapon artifacts like Donnerr and so on, it was clear that the goblins would become□Gobuu!□at the end of their encounter with Myuu.

He didn’t want to make Myuu go Ore TUEEEEE. Having said that, he didn’t wasn’t to see a goblin that could evade railgun by sight. A certain bugged rabbit somewhere was already enough for something like that. (TN: Ore TUEEEEE = an expression in Japan that kinda mean like I’m strongggg. Used when in a net game or fighting game when there is a player that is overwhelmingly strong compared to other players. Or to refer when in manga or LN the MC have transcendental strength)

In other words, the power level of the enemy following the scenario of the usual RPG and Myuu’s strength didn’t mesh with each other.

If he was going to create a content that could clear up this problem well, where Myuu could have fun advancing the story while she could constantly fight enemy whose strength was always a bit above hers.....

□——No good. I cannot think of anything at all. Worst case, I can only set up goblin that can dodge railgun but.....before that, perhaps I should try consulting Tou-san first.□

Hajime who frowned imagining a goblin that was leaving behind a line of afterimages behind when it move roughly scratched his head that had reached the limit, he then sighed while standing up from his chair.

He exited the underground workshop, climbed the stair and entered the living room. Today was a holiday, but there was no one in the room except Shia. Shuu and Sumire were working, but he didn't know about what the other members were doing.

□Eh? Shia, what about Yue and others?□

□Fuwaa. Ah, Hajime-san. Is your work over?□

It seemed Shia was napping on the living room's sofa while pleasantly getting showered by the shining in sunlight. She asked back with a slovenly absentminded expression. She looked a bit like she was half-awake.

Hajime prepared to go outside while answering Shia even when he was writhing slightly seeing the figure of “droopy Shia” with her rabbit ears laying down limply.

□No, I reached the limit already. So I'm going to Tou-san's place. I'll bring him some supply and also try to ask him between his works whether I can receive some kind of hint.□

□Howaa, is that sooo. Have a safe trip desuu. Ah, right right, about Yue-san and others, Kaori-san will come to play so Yue-san just now is waiting in ambus——cough-, is going to pick her uppp. Tio-san and Remia-san went out shipping for Myuu-chan's clothees□

□I see. And Shizuku?□

□It looks like a self proclaimed rival of Yaegashi family was coming with declaration of challenge, so she accompanied her family even though she was really reluctant to deal with the challenger desuu. And so, she said that today she cannot come desuu□

□.....That girl is really a busybody huh.□

Imagining Shizuku who went along with her hustling family with a tired expression, Hajime looked at far away with a really speechless expression. She shouldn't be so reserved anymore after everything so far, so he guessed that her situation wasn't that serious if she didn't contact them for reinforcement.

□Well, got it. Then, Shia. I'm going out for a bit, so tell Yue and others for me.□

□Yhee~~s, leave it to mee~~desuu~~□

Shia who was burying her face again into the soft cushion sleepily waved around her rabbit ears as reply while she switched over into “droopy Shia mode” once more. She seemed to be in a really dreamy state of mind.

“Droopy Shia” who was bathing in sunlight while her panty was in full view, her rabbit tail shaking \*furin~furin~\* was terribly adorable. Hajime was driven with an impulse to give her lap pillow and loved her with all his might, but with an effort he endured in order to fulfill his duty as a papa and he exited the house.

A while after that, while the sound of sleeper's breathing \*suya~\* of a happy rabbit was resounding in the Nagumo

residence's living room, there was the sound \*clack\* of the entrance door opening.

□Geez-, Yue you idiot! Pervert! You rascal!□

□.....What abusive language against someone who went to pick you up. Stupid Kaori.□

□Something like that cannot be said as “picking up” you know? That’s called ambushing! Furthermore you even use illusion magic to the street, you are really idiot-□

□.....Kaori screamed ‘Hyaaa~~~~’. You screamed ‘Hyaaa~~~~’. Pufuh□

□Yueee~~~~□

Such noisy quarrel could be heard.

It seemed Kaori was ambushed by Yue when she was in the middle of going to Nagumo residence. It seemed Yue even used illusion magic to shock Kaori. Recalling back Kaori’s reaction of that time caused Yue to make a smile that looked really joyful.

Whether in the past or in the future, surely there would be no one other than Kaori for whom Yue would purposefully go out of the house just to make her shocked.

In her own way, Kaori as someone in the position who received Yue’s mischievousness with her body was angry, even so she didn’t look like that she hated it at all. Even now her hands were reaching toward the hair of Yue who was taking off her shoes, she used a hair styling product that she took out from somewhere and fought strenuously to tailor Yue’s hair into Mohican style.

Yue walked toward the living room without even paying any mind that her fluffy and soft blonde hair was fumbled around and turned into a strange shape like the trees of the witch's forest by Kaori. She then caught sight of Shia who was napping with a loose expression that looked extremely careless. She was in the same state like before Yue went out.

□Ah, Shia, she is in the middle of nap. Then, we have to be quiet.□

□.....Nn□

It was as though their quarrel just now was nonexistent. The two stopped their dispute completely and went quiet. They approached slo~wly toward Shia and they stared gently at Shia who was mumbling 'munya munya'.

□Munya munya.....ehehe, more than this is impossible—I cannot beat you to death more than this you knoww~~□

□□.....□□

□Nnyaa. ....Kufuu~~, then, just a bit moreee~~□

□□.....□□

It was slightly off from the template.

This rabbit-san was making a happy expression, with a leisurely atmosphere, looking like she was feeling really pleasant, while going to beat up to death someone a bit more. Run awaaay! That someone inside the dream! Super run awaaay!

□.....Let's leave her quietly.□

□.....Nn. That's better.□

Yue and Kaori slo~wly slo~wly backed away. They also took distance of heart.

□Err, and, where is Hajime-kun? I heard that Myuu-chan and others aren't here, but Hajime-kun is here right?□

□.....Nn. He is shutting himself inside the workshop since last night. It's troubling that he will forget the time right away when he got absorbed.□

□He would also forget his meal and sleep when he was like that. Then, let's go call him. Are we also going to make him rest while we are at it?□

□.....He haven't taken lunch yet too, so it's just right.□

They nodded at each other and headed toward the underground workshop.

By the way, the main path to head toward the underground workshop was through the stair in the corridor, but actually the sofa in the living room could also be used to go there. The sofa would be overturned backward when someone was sitting on it, and then that person would be dropped into the underground corridor.

There was really no meaning to purposefully get dropped like that, so everyone used the stair to head there, but limited to the people of Yaegashi family who sometimes visited (excluding Shizuku) and Myuu, the instead had never used the stair even once until now. They liked getting flipped and dropped down.

□.....Nn? Hajime, not here?□

□Eh? It's true.□



The two who entered the workshop tilted their head seeing that the place's owner wasn't there.

Did he leave the house? In that case did he not leave behind any notification memo? Thinking that the two walked deeper into the room.

It seemed there wasn't any memo, but in exchange a headset that was obviously in the middle of manufacturing entered their sight.

□.....That's the artifact that Hajime is currently getting absorbed in developing.□

□Is that so. Somehow it looks similar with a headset used for seeing 3D movie isn't it?□

□.....Nn. That's not necessarily wrong.□

Yue began to talk about the specific of its function in respond of Kaori's question. Kaori was listening in admiration and she was staring at the headset shaped artifact game device for some reason.

Yue spoke a sentence toward such Kaori.

□.....Kaori you silent lecher.□

□Why!?!□

Kaori was startled at the sudden insult. Yue answered that retort which was mixed with question.

□.....The reason you are staring hard like that is only one. I saw through that you were having delusion that you would be able to experience flirting with Hajime anytime in your home if you have that. Just what in the world you are

planning to do to Hajime in the virtual world? This silent lecher.□

□I'm not a silent lecher! I wasn't having any delusion like that! Or rather, it's Yue who is the silent lecher by the time you come to that conclusion!□

□.....What stupid statement. Even without having delusion, I'm always flirting with Hajime!□

□Certainly!□

There was no room for argument there. But, Kaori wished that Yue would stop already with her attempt of planting the impression of “Kaori is a silent lecher” at every available opportunity.

Kaori was able to assert. That she was leading a wholesome life! Even if she had a bit of daydreaming habit, even if she was conscious toward any kind of things that had just gotten used by Hajime, but it was beyond doubt that she was a wholesome girl! There was no room for suspicion there! Should be!

And so, here she firmly objected at Yue.

But, Yue-sama tried to utterly destroy the objection of such Kaori head-on.

As the result, at the end it connected to the usual cat fight.

Nyaah——!! Nyaah——!! Mui-mui-! Mukiiiiih!!

Both of them pinched at each other's cheeks and rolled around on the floor of the workshop for a few minutes. The situation only looked like they were frolicking around with each other if seen from the side, however, the two who were

seriously quarrelling with each other became engrossed with it against their better judgment and they completely forgot to pay attention to the surrounding.

Yes, they were at the workshop of a transmutation master where Hajime's hand-made artifacts, the artifacts created from Hajime's interest working in full throttle where there were understandable things until incomprehensible things scattered out everywhere.

\*GON-\* A nice sound rang out, coming from Yue who was going to stand out banging the back of her head strongly at the desk above her.

Yue reflexively raised a strange scream "Nmii!?" while Kaori was childishly making merry "Ya~i, ya~i" at such Yue, but the next moment, the headset and other minerals fell from the desk and hit the crown of her head and Kaori raised a matching scream "Nmii!?".

While the both of them were holding their head while trembling, suddenly an ominous sound \*pachi pachi\* struck their ears.

".....Ah, err, Yue? This, by any chance, is this actually bad?"

".....This is bad degozaru."

Cold sweats trickled down. If there was only broken item, then the two could just harmoniously prostrate dogeza in front of Hajime and apologized. But, the headset in front of them that was fiercely sparking and further flickering with magic power light and overflowing with immense magic power that made their skin tingled only gave off ominous feeling.

Yue's speech spontaneously became strange but her thinking was calm. No matter what happened, there was no way any phenomenon that happened here could leak outside from this workshop that boasted the strongest endurance in the world. Therefore, Yue would use the ultimate skill of instant teleportation "Divine Existence" and escaped together with Kaori.

Yue who decided that in an instant leaped toward Kaori, and then they escaped right——

\*Flash-\* Light exploded.

There was no sound or shockwave. There was only light that painted over the workshop for a beat.

Inside the workshop that recovered its former color, there were only Yue who was hanging over Kaori as though she had pushed her down, and Kaori who was tightly hugging such Yue left behind. It seemed that the two were unconscious.

□-, Yue!? Are you okay!?!□

Kaori who was aware that her consciousness had flew away for a moment raised her body in a flash at the same time when her consciousness returned and she confirmed Yue's safety. But, she didn't hear that voice that was so pleasant to hear it was odious that usually would respond after a beat later.

She had confirmed that a moment before her consciousness was cut off, Yue was jumping toward her to cover her. That was why Kaori completely thought that Yue was on her bosom, but she didn't feel her weight there, and even when she looked around restlessly she didn't find her anywhere.

Or rather,

□Wha, what is thisss~~~~□

Kaori was in chaos!

The reason was even though before this she should be inside the workshop wearing her personal clothes, when she noticed she was inside a room that was surrounded with coarsely made wood and she was waking up above a bed. When she looked more carefully, the clothes she was wearing was also changed into something coarse that looked like it came from the period of Europe's Middle Age. It was a one piece and loose, yes, if this was in a movie or drama then this would be the clothing of a villager girl.

Kaori was looking down on herself dumbfounded for a while, next she rushed out in hurry. She opened the thin wooden door so hard the door could come off from its hinge, ignored an aging male that was talking about something smilingly inside what seemed to be a living room, and without pause she forcefully opened the entrance door and leaped out.

□Ju, just where, is this?□

Blue sky stretched without end. Numerous houses that looked like hovel. Foreign people working busily wearing simple clothes. This place was obviously not Japan.

Still in chaos, Kaori called out to a young man who happened to pass by.

□E, excuse me. I have a bit of question.....□

□Heey, this is the village of beginning "AAAAAAA".□

□The name is too noncommittal! Or rather I'm not asking that!□

Kaori was in chaos! The young man tilted his head□Oh?□at such Kaori.

□What's this, just when I thought who is it because I was called so suddenly——□

□Eh, eh? What is it?□

Seeing the young man suddenly stopped his sentence was also surprising, but the transparent floating projection display that manifested in front of Kaori's eyes right after that also made Kaori's body trembled from feeling startled.

Above the display, there was a line "Please decide your name", and below it there was a frame with blank space, and even further below was an unfamiliar keyboard.

□This is.....could it be this place is.....□

'Could it be I'm inside that game device that is in the middle of development?' Kaori reached that fact. The present condition where she suddenly arrived in an unfamiliar world, the young man that was spewing out stereotyped line, and also the display that appeared midair, they were all completely like an RPG world. Kaori's appearance must be also the setting where she likely started as a villager girl in the beginning.

□So that's how it is? Yue said that the artifact used soul magic, so the instant it was broken only my soul was sent flying inside the game, is that it? .....It doesn't feel like I'm only soul at all though.....h~m, let's worry later. For now, I have to search Yue.□

Kaori who switched over her thinking looked forward at the young man who was smiling and waiting for her, she decided for now she would obey the rule of the game and at least decided her name before searching for Yue.

□Eerr, I'll use my name, Ka-o-ri.□

She typed in her name and clicked the enter key. A confirmation screen came out so she also pressed OK at it. And then the display vanished automatically.

□——but isn't this the regrettable daughter of the village chief Kaori.□

□Who are you calling regrettable!?!□

She was suddenly insulted.

□And so what's the matter, village chief's regrettable daughter?□

□There is no meaning typing in my name isn't it!? Or rather this thing about regrettable is the default!?!□

There was not even a fragment of ill will that could be seen from the young man who was still making an amiable smile without change. Kaori silently thought 'this is a game, this is a game' to suppress her welling up dissatisfaction and she asked once more.

□Do you know Yue? Ah, I wonder if you know what I mean by Yue. She is an extraordinarily beautiful girl with blond hair.....□

□This is the village of beginning "AAAAAAA".□

□Ah, yes. So you don't know.□

It seemed the person would return to its first line when he was asked something he didn't know. Kaori held the conviction that this place was a virtual reality as expected and she wracked her brain of what to do now.

But, it was at that time that the young man talked at Kaori.

□Come to think of it, village chief's regrettable daughter.□

□.....What is it?□

Resignation was crucial in the society.

□You know, it seems this morning priest-san was picking up a sister with a screw loose.□

□That must be Yue!□

If the person in question was here, surely the curtain of great battle Yue VS Kaori of who knows how many times would be opened.

Talking to the villagers, gathered information, and then determined the destination—it was truly the classic flow. Kaori who became convinced of that faithfully expressed her gratitude before she sprinted away.

The church was the tallest building in the village. Because the houses in the village were all one-story house, the tall building with a cross affixed on its top could be seen from anywhere in the village.

□Uuh, my body is heavy.....□

Although it was inside the game, in the first place the physical ability of Kaori who had obtained the flesh body of god apostle was in foul play level. Originally she was able to



easily display a running in the level that would smash the heart of an Olympic sprinter into pieces.

But, the current Kaori could only display a speed that was at the level of that Olympic sprinter. She was told that this was a game for training use, so perhaps it was possible that a limitation was set up for the initial configuration.

After all, the current her was a villager girl.....Kaori was sprinting while conjecturing the reason why her body wouldn't move like she wanted. She pretended as though she couldn't hear the villagers saying things like "Ah, that's the village chief's regrettable daughter!" "Today too she is running like that.....what a regrettable girl" while pointing their finger at her.

Like that, Kaori who was dealt with delicate mental damage finally arrived nearby the church's front, it was at that time when she was about to enter inside the church.

\*DOGON-\* Such terrific explosive sound and fierce vibration shook the village. What's more they happened consecutively.

"Wha wha wha wha, what!? Just what in the world is going on!?"

The bewildered Kaori put her emergency break and immediately took distance from the church.

Right after that, everywhere on the building's walls was blown away one after another, the church that lost its supporting pillars tilted violently. Without pause the building helplessly creaked \*gigigigi-\* while tilting even more drastically, like that the building collapsed as though it was toppled sideways.

Dust clouds rose up grandly.

Ahead of the gaze of Kaori who was looking at the church's destruction in astonishment, human silhouette swayed inside the dust cloud. The silhouette had small stature. And then, it gave a presence that Kaori was familiar with.

□Yue!□

□.....Nn. Kaori, I'm glad you are fine.□

Yue who said that while showing her figure by using wind to sweep away the veil of cloud dust——was a sister-san.

She was wearing a black loose one-piece that reached until her ankle and a wimple covering her head. Different from a pretend sister, her hair was covered properly that it couldn't be seen, so instead Yue's beautiful face became emphasized, matched with her expressionless face, a solemn atmosphere could be felt from her.

She was truly looking like a pious servant of god.....

If there was no destroyed church behind her.

Kaori wanted to ask various thing including confirming their present situation, but first thing first,

□Why is the church turned like this?□

□.....I flew into rage when I was said that my brain has a screw loose. I have no regret. I can boast that I have done a good work.□

□I, I see.□

Behind Yue, a priest with gentle looking expression was standing in the middle of the wreckage and he spoke with

his sooty appearance.

□With heart of valor and kindness, now, go forth. Sister with a screw loose Yue.□

The wind of the sister with a screw loose burst. The priest-san flew to the sky. It was as though he was a leaf that was toyed by the wind.

□This is your home. I will wait for your return at all times.□

The home was gone already. Or rather, that place was a sky.

While the gentle voice of the priest-san that was flying in the sky was resounding, Kaori thought about Yue who was fully exposing her displeasure and about the matter from here on, and she let out a de~~ep sigh.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The beginning seems long, but this is a short story.

It's a bit of scene of Yue and Kaori's everyday.

When this is over, I'm thinking that perhaps I should write a long arc of After.

# Arifureta After II    So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other?    Middle Part

AN: For Shirakome, three chapters are “short story”.

---

□Welcome! This is the church of “AAAAAAA” village. Will you carry out a confession? Or else will you carry out a confession? I also won’t mind if you want to carry out a confession you know?□

Yue finally calmed down, and while Kaori was talking with Yue in order to grasp their current situation, the priest-san was smilingly inviting a confession standing in the middle of the wreckage of the collapsed church. As expected perhaps he was holding a grudge.

Kaori was making confirmation to Yue while her cheeks were twitching at the priest-san who was earnestly throwing words confession, confession at them.

□As I thought, this place is really inside that game device isn’t it?□

□.....Nn. Based on the situation there is no doubt. Furthermore, there is a big possibility that it’s broken

somewhere.□

□Broken?□

□.....Nn. It's indeed true that the first position we appeared at is set randomly, but the speech of the NPC shouldn't be this strange. I was taught a bit about the content and the system so there is no doubt about that.□

□I, I see, indeed. There is no way Hajime-kun will make the default setting to be "regrettable" or "screw loose" even though this is a game created for Myuu-chan's sake.□(TN: Sorry, I changed the deplorable into regrettable)

Kaori nodded in comprehension. At the same time she let out a sigh that sounded a bit uneasy. She imagined something a little bit unpleasant, that perhaps by any chance Hajime was thinking that she was regrettable.

□.....Anyway, we should logout but.....□

□.....That function doesn't broke right?□

Kaori was feeling something ominous from Yue's voice with her gaze turning toward Yue, while Yue called out the individual information screen using a game gesture just like what she was taught before. She was whispering□Open□ while her hand was waved as though stroking the empty air in front of her.

As the result a blue shining window materialized in front of Yue's eyes. A unique sound \*von\* resounded, and then window fragments gathered from up, down, right, and left as though it was a block game, and in the blink of eye a screen the size of a 24 inch television was completed. It was Hajime's fixation that took all night to finish.

Anyway, Yue let out a sigh of relieve that the individual information screen was opened normally, next she clicked on the button “return to home” at the right bottom of the screen while feeling a bit nervous.

——Why are you giving up here! Do your best, do your best! You can do it, you can do it!

A voice of heaven descended. It seemed they couldn't go home. It appeared that more passion and guts were necessary.

□.....□

□.....□

Yue clicked the button wordlessly once more.

——If you give up, that will be the end of your adventure! Now, dash toward that sunset!

As expected, it seemed the voice of heaven wouldn't allow returning to home. And then, what should be rising right now was the morning sun, telling them to dash toward the sunset was just...

□I, I'll give it a try.□

While Kaori's cheeks were twitching seeing Yue throwing a dreadfully scornful gaze at empty air with her usual stare having advanced until the third stage, Kaori imitated Yue and called out her individual information screen, and she clicked the button “return to home”.

——You shitty maggot-. What are you doing trying to go home as you damn please-. The destination of you bastard is only to hell or to hell-. If you don't want me to “pii—\* you

then return to your squad! That's your one and only home you bastard!

□Hihi!?

Having suddenly poured with the angry yell of Hajime, Kaori spontaneously held her head with both hands and she became unable to stand up from surprise.

□.....Come to think of it, it seems that the program for Hauria use was also included separately.□

□The, the training for mass producing those berserk rabbits? Hajime-kun, how far she is planning to evolve those people?□

Yue shrugged toward Kaori who was trembling all over.

In the end their bad premonition hit the bull's eye and they couldn't logout from the game. It was unclear why when it was Yue, Hajime's voice had the tone of Matsuoka Ozo, while when it was Kaori, Hajime's voice had a tone like Sergeant Hartma, but surely this too was the adverse effect from the broken device. (TN: Matsuoka Shuzo is a retired tennis player who is currently hosting a TV show. He is known for his energetic and passionate character)

□What will we do, Yue. How are we going home.....ah, that's right! Yue, use soul magic!□

□Mu, there is that method.□

This game device was created by applying soul magic. The highly precise sensation where there was almost no difference with reality was because of that. In that case, it could be thought that for an expert of soul magic it should be possible to logout even without relying on the system.

Yue wasted no time trying to use soul magic.

——Insufficient level

□Mu? .....Mumuh□

□Yue?□

Each time Yue persisted with something while mumbling □Mumuh□, the heavenly voice “insufficient level” descended down. At the end a hypocritically courteous words “let’s understand your standing” descended.

Kaori who somehow guessed the situation asked.

□It looks no good isn’t it?□

□Muu. Even though it absorbed us because it’s broken, but I cannot accept it at all that only this system is perfectly working.□

According to Yue, Yue herself was also participating at the creation of this bodily sensation system that applied soul magic. And then, the “binding” of the game system that was directly affecting the soul was operating effectively even at Yue herself who was a cooperator in the artifact’s creation.

If this effect was purely due to Yue’s own magic, then she would only need to break that restriction, but if Hajime’s artifact was involved there then it would be next to impossible for Yue to cancel it.

Yue who was unable to release her “binding” no matter how many times she tried dropped her shoulders dejectedly.

□.....As expected from Hajime’s artifact. And then my magic. We have done a good work.□



□This is not the time for singing your own praise, Yue.....  
what to do. Is there no other way to logout?□

□.....Nn. It's not that there is none. If I remember correctly,  
there is a safe point at each village, we should be able to  
logout from there too. Myuu can go home anytime she want,  
but Hajime said that he won't let Hauria to escape as they  
please, and he said that he picked base logout method for  
them.□

□Hajime-kun, he is merciless to the people of Hauria isn't  
he.....□

They couldn't stop even if they wanted to stop. If they  
wanted to stop then they could only progress inside the  
game. And what's more that too surely would be a game  
scenario with an extraordinarily lovely hard mode, no, hell  
mode in Hajime style.

Thinking about the people of Hauria who someday would be  
thrown in here, Kaori quietly prayed for their happiness in  
the next world.

□And Yue. If there is save point in each village, then what  
about this village? Let's quickly try out that save point.□

□.....There is none in this village.□

□Eh? Why? You said just now that each village has one.□

□.....Be, because this is the village of beginning. So it's not  
needed.□

□.....Yue?□

Kaori quickly asked Yue about the save point of this village,  
but for some reason Yue was answering with her gaze subtly

looking away. It felt like her tone was also subtly strange.

Kaori turned a suspicious gaze at Yue, but Yue was muttering to herself“.....Well then, we have to go to the next village now that we have decided“with a subtly strange tone as expected.

Kaori turned her gaze. Toward the direction of the priest-san who was still eloquently urging for confession in the middle of the wreckage.

“Excuse me Father. Can you please tell me where is the save point of this village?”

“.....Kaori! You doubt me? That’s crue——”

“Village chief’s regrettable daughter-san. You are regrettable as usual. You know don’t you? It’s right here in this church!”

The church, was no more.

Kaori turned her face calmly toward Yue still with a smiling face. Yue calmly turned toward the direction of the far beyond.

A time of silence flowed for a while. The gaze was also flowing from Kaori=> Yue=> brilliantly shining sun.

A beat later.

“YUE YOU IDIOOOOOOOOOT!!”

“.....Ka, KAORI YOU STUPIID——mugyuh!?”

Kaori’s yell resounded.

Yue talked back in reflex, but her words sounded unusually frailer. In addition, her cheeks were swiftly stretched out

\*mugyuuuu\* and her words were cut off.

□Idiot idiot idiot idiot-, Yue you idiot! Why was the first thing you do after the game started was destroying the save point!? This screw loose sister-saN-!!□

□Re, rerause——□

□Don't say because!□

□Fho, fhovefer——□

□Don't say however! Geez-, you are really-! The way of thinking of blowing away everything the first thing if there is something that you cannot stomach, I think that's completely no good! I think, that's really no good!□

Kaori preached while inflicting \*mugyuuuuu\* at Yue's cheeks. Perhaps she was using a lot of strength, Yue's soft cheeks were stretching and stretching and her eyes turned delicately teary.

As expected it seemed Yue recognized that she had been rash, at first she was obediently letting herself treated like that and listened meekly, but right after Yue heard□In the first place Yue is~□and she felt the atmosphere that the preaching would become long, first thing first she counterattacked. Her index fingers poked \*dosu-\* at both sides of Kaori's stomach.

□Hehyah!?!□

Kaori-san's body bent stra——ight backward stiffly. Seeing such Kaori, Yue-san laughed□You said 'hehyah'. It was 'hehyah'. Puh, giggle giggle□.

The outcome was obvious.

——Nyah—nyaah! Mui muih, fushaa——!!

The gong of the usual cat fight rang. Both of them scuffled with each other while rolling around on the church that was transformed into a mountain of rubble and in front of the priest whose suggestion of sin confession was becoming forceful.

But, there several villagers were passing by.

□Okaa-san, those people.....□

□Shih. You must not stare at the screw loose sister and village chief's regrettable daughter!□

When a young child pointed his finger, his mother hurriedly covered her child's eyes and they quickly left as though they had just witnessed something terrifying.

□Those two did that to the church.....the hell with them.□

□I thought that someday they would actually do it. After all, they are the village chief's regrettable daughter-san and the sister-san with a screw loose.□

A young man shouldering farming tool was looking at the destroyed church and said that pitifully, while the uncle beside him sighed while saying that.

□A really good person, has left us.□

□How sad this incident is.□

An uncle pushing a cart looked at the church with an anguished expression, and another uncle who was similarly carrying a baggage faced the church and offered words of

prayer. The priest was still alive despite the destruction of the church though.....

The air of the surrounding villagers felt somewhat strange, or rather their atmosphere was dark. Yue and Kaori who were covered with dust from rolling around finally noticed. Both of them stood up feeling unable to stay there longer from being surrounded at a distance while being seen with a gaze as though they were dangerous character.

□.....Err, Yue. For now there is nothing that can be done for what is broken, about what should we do from here on.....□

□.....Nn. I am Yue. A woman who won't look back to the past.□

□How about you look back? The next time you do another destructive activity irresponsibly, I'll seriously make you eat disintegration bombardment okay?□

Yue averted her gaze from Kaori whose blood vein was emerging on her forehead still with a smiling face, and she called out her individual information screen once more.

□.....Cough-. Just like I said before, if it's save point, the next village also has it. And so, for now we should aim to go there.□

□I guess. Our body might be in the real world I think, and when Hajime-kun go home he will surely do something somehow, but if there is anything we can do then it's better to give it a try.□

□.....Nn. But, look here.□

The two easily progressed their talk so smoothly to the degree that would make anyone wonder just what was with

the quarrel just now.

Yue pointed at her status screen, so Kaori got close to Yue's shoulder and peered in with her body glued close on Yue. The content that was projected there was,

=====

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 1 / 50 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Apprentice Sister

Title : Sister With a Screw Loose

Skill : No Chant   Imagination Configuration

Magic : Flame Magic [ Fireball]

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit

Special mention : Has criminal record

Money : 1,000

=====

Other than those there were also items at hand and also playing time recorded, but there was no list for specs that were quantified into number like in Tortus's status plate. It was made like this with the reason so the player wouldn't misunderstand the number as their own strength in real battle and so that the player couldn't overwhelm the enemy using the difference in status amount.

HP gauge that was common for RPG also didn't exist with similar reasons. Conforming to reality, no matter how strong someone was they would get instant game over if their head was cut off, but in reverse no matter what kind of strong enemy could possibly be defeated depending on the method.

Kaori who saw Yue's status nodded and said "I see".

"As expected you have a criminal record."

".....Oi, Kaori. What do you mean by as expected? I am always obeying law——"

"Nn"

Kaori replied just like Yue while her finger was pointing toward the destroyed church. A beat after Yue turned her gaze there.

".....I'm generally obeying law in the real world."

"You nonchalantly ranked down "always" into "generally" even in the real world there."

Yue-sama wouldn't look back to the past! She also wouldn't accept Kaori's straight-man retort!

".....Rather than that, the problem is this "rank" and "money"."

"Before that, let me ask a little bit more, Yue-pon. See here, about my individual information screen, Yue-pon. In my special mention the word 'accomplice' is written. Yue-pon, why is this I wonder? I didn't really do anything but now I have criminal record, Yue-pon. Tell me Yue-pon. Heey, heey, Yue-pon. Yue-pon, sheesh Yue-pon—"

Very unusually Yue was covering her face with both hands and her ears were bright red for some reason while she crouched down on the spot. She whispered with a small voice“.....uu, because of a passing fancy I unconsciously” while trembling in shame.

The expression of Kaori who was crouching down beside such Yue was truly a really wide grin. She was showing her friendly smile that always charmed the surrounding while poking Yue’s cheek with her index finger. Kaori was enjoying the squishy sensation that might become a habit while intently speaking piercing words.

“Well, it doesn’t matter now, Yue-pon. I still cannot accept it but, we won’t finish anything like this Yue-pon. And? What is this “rank” and “money” about, Yue-pon?”

“.....Kaori, what nerve. This sister with a screw loose Yue-pon will turn the village girl into cinder for the peaceful life of the village.”

“Wawawah, calm down Yue! I’m sorry! I won’t say it anymore!”

A ball of flame lit up on Yue’s fingertip. Its appearance was shabby but the pressure that it gave off was a bad news. It seemed that even the most basic of elementary magic could be filled with high class power by the way one controlled the amount of magic power and the compression rate.

The sister with a screw loose Yue-pon pointed finger gun gesture at Kaori and mercilessly shot a lot of that. That magic that was shot wildly like the sweeping of a gatling gun was somehow evaded by Kaori even while her face was going pale.



In exchange, from behind Kaori countless explosions and screams were.....

□Aah!? The shoemaker Rodriguez is blown away!□

□What!? What is happening!? My house is gone!?□

□Kuu! Everyone-, I'll hold them back here! Run while you all still can!□

□Village chief! That's reckless! Your opponent is that sister-san with a screw loose you know!? Even for you that's rash!□

□Hah, don't worry about me. Even like this when I was young I did quite much as an adventurer. I'll just take her on a bit and then I'll catch up to you later.□

□Chief, someone like you is.....□

For some reason Kaori's father was becoming the hero of the village, but seeing that the daughter of that hero was involved with the turmoil, in a sense this was like a family scandal, or even like stirring up trouble to get credit from solving it.

After that, Yue who mercilessly turned the village chief into something like a ragged cloth and destroyed Rodriguez and the shoe shop mistaken the remaining amount of her magic power that was restrained more than she imagined by the system, and she collapsed face first from her magic power running dry. Similarly, Kaori whose physical ability was restrained and now not only she couldn't transform into apostle, she couldn't even use magic was also ran out of stamina and collapsed face first.

□Ju, just what are, we doing, in this time of emergency..... zee, zee□

□.....Haa haa. Uu, certainly□

While feeling the intense gazes of the villagers who were surrounding the two from a distance, Yue and Kaori got up somehow and they sat down side by side.

□Le, let's return to our talk. And, what is this "rank" and "money" about?□

□.....Nn. About this "rank", this is the restriction level that is put on us. I cannot use anything other than fireball, and Kaori's physical ability is low with apostle transformation and magic unusable are also because of that. By leveling up, we will get closer to our ability in the real world.□

□Is that so. Even when in not perfect state, manage it somehow with what you can do.....this concept is really like Hajime-kun.□

By the way, Kaori's individual information screen was something like this.

=====

Name : Kaori

Rank : 1 / 50 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Villager Girl

Title : Village Chief's Regrettable Daughter

Skill : Villager girl-style Twin Large Sword Art

Magic :

Equipment : A set of villager girl outfit

Special mention : Yue-pon's accomplice

Money : 1,000

=====

□.....Nn. Our ability is given limitation, but our individual technique is not given any limitation at all. It was because it's me that kind of elementary level magic could show such power and rapid fire. A mere villager girl could dodge all those is also the same.□

□I see. Err, is there any problem with that?□

Kaori nodded in understanding at Yue's explanation. It seemed that Kaori's father was revived at the corner of their sight. The mournful villagers applauded their village chief.

□.....Normally, we will raise our level at the surrounding area of the village of beginning while gathering money at the same time, we then will head to the next village after putting our equipment in order to a certain degree. The concrete scenario haven't been established yet, but if the enemy characters that were inserted for their behavior checking are without change, then they should be really strong.□

□Aah, I see. In other words, there is a chance we won't be able to reach the next village with our current level isn't it? Also we don't even have money to put our equipment in order.□

□.....Nn. I think that it will be fine if it's me and Kaori but..... in the case we received damage in this game that is in the verge of breaking, I don't know what kind of effect it will have to us. Based on how there is the prospect of Hajime

definitely rescuing us, it's also an option to not move from here.□

□Fufufu, you aren't thinking of that at all aren't you, Yue. There is no way we will choose avoiding risk and not doing anything.□

Help would come sooner or later and so let's not do anything. In a sense it was a solid method. However, the people who got close to Hajime wouldn't choose that option.

□.....Exactly. Besides, we also don't understand how long the current circumstance will continue. By any chance, perhaps before Hajime come home a fatal breakdown will occur and it will become a situation that cannot be recovered from.□

□You're right. Like that we also cannot leisurely level up and gather money around the village then.□

□.....Nn. We need to put our equipment in order as much as possible with the current money at our hand.□

Yue understood their problems. They needed to reach the neighboring village by struggling through quite strong enemies using only the minimum equipment while trying to not get hit even once as much as possible.

Indeed, it was a very severe situation.

But,

□Yep, I don't see any problem. Yue is here after all.□

□.....Nn. There is no problem. Kaori is here.□

That was how it was.

Yue and Kaori stood up and dusted off the dirt attached on their respective fluttering sister and villager girl clothes. The gazes of the villagers were as usual as though they were looking at dangerous characters. It was the truth that they were guilty so they couldn't bear at all to be there for longer. Even though it was a game world, wasn't the speech and conduct of the mob characters too free?

Even though it was fine even if it wasn't this realistic at this aspect.....Yue and Kaori were modestly venting their anger at Hajime's obsession while heading toward the equipment shop of the village.

Yue had magic job, so even in the worst case she wouldn't mind buying just several items for recovering magic power, but Kaori who seemed to be a user of villager girl-style twin large swords art needed weapon. If possible, she also wanted pants and tunic that were easy to move in, not her current loose one piece clothes for villager girl.

Midway they were also exposed to intense violence of gazes.

Kaori thought, 'This is, like that'. Yes, the stares were like the stares that were directed at a lion that escaped from its cage in a zoo. She saw it some time ago, the news of multiple wild beasts including lion escaping their cage and then moved freely inside the zoo.

At that time the gazes of the people that were running away filled with trepidation were truly the same like the gazes of the villagers toward them right now.

Am I a lion.....?

Kaori was feeling complicated and she looked at Yue who was walking beside her.

Luxuriant golden hair. Flexible limbs. Unmistakably a carnivore (hidden meaning). And then, her status as the strongest.

(Yep, it fit. Here is Yue lion. Yep.

Kaori imagined Yue wearing a lion cosplay while roaring 'gao~' on all fours and she strangely comprehended it.

By the way, the lion commotion of that time was the revenge of the zoo's former worker who got fired where he was also going to steal the zoo's proceeds at the same time, he released the animals was also for diversion, but the escaping lion and other animals were then taken care by a certain couple.

Actually, it had also become a hot topic how one of the couple, a small girl easily tamed the lion and then used that lion to catch the criminal. Then, it was also a hot topic how the boyfriend knocked down with his bare arm a bear that was escaping together and then returned it into its cage.

Kaori was imagining the news of that time and Yue lion half to escape the reality while chasing away the gazes of the villagers from inside her mind, and then her gaze caught sight of the equipment shop they were searching ahead.

□Both of us combined has 2,000 yen.....can we buy anything?□

□.....I don't know the price so I cannot say anything. In the worst case, I want to at least secure Kaori's sword.□

Kaori had inherited the combat skill of god's apostle, so she had also learned martial art to a high level. However, as expected her greatest offense was the apostle's characteristic ability and the twin large swords art. As

expected there would be a large difference in Kaori's combat skill from whether she had sword or not.

Yue opened the shop's door. And right away,

□Go home! Go back home! There ain't anyone here that will sell to you two criminals! Go home right away!□

□□.....□□

The equipment shop owner with thick moustache looking very obstinate suddenly gave the two a present of angry yell. Yue and Kaori reflexively stiffened.

The two understood what the owner was saying. Kaori timidly opened her mouth with twitching expression.

□E, excuse me, I, want to buy——□

□Shut up, this damned accomplice of Yue-pon! Just get out now!□

Kaori's expression stiffened. This was the first time in her life she was treated like this by a person that she met for the first time. Kaori who was always polite and bright was often favored especially by the elders. Naturally, her endurance was low against something like this.

□Yu, Yuee~□

□.....Nn. Leave it to me. Cough-. ——Owner-san, please listen to my story. We——□

□Shut your mouth, this great sinner, priest killer! How dare you did that to a kind person like that-□

□Ah, no, that, that person is still ali——□

□Good grief, even though you are a sister but to do something so terrifying! Listen here, this shop will only deal with honest customer! Someone criminal like you with a screw loose can just get out, now-□

A super condensed fireball materialized on the fingertip of Yue-sama. Its radiance, its heat, it was truly just like a sun!

□Don't be hasty Yueeee-! Calm down! This is you reaping what you sow!□

□.....Kaori, don't worry. Not even ash will be left behind. The owner of the equipment shop just disappeared. He only left behind a farewell letter that mentioned the property of the shop is handed over to the sister.□

□That's murder! What's more it's robbery murder! Just where is this mind of obeying law you said before!?!□

□.....The sister with screw loose, doesn't understa~~~nd.□

□A child!? Are you a child!? Geez-, it doesn't matter so just toss away that fireball! Quickly toss it away!□

□.....You wish to set fire here?□

□Aaah!? As I thought don't toss it away! Extinguish it quickly! Come on, quickly!□

In deference to Kaori who was persuading with a desperate look, Yue erased the sun on her fingertip.

It seemed that a situation that often appeared in game, where they earned the hate of the villagers too much and now they got hit with the demerit had been generated.



Not only the destruction of the church, the destruction of the shoe store and the private houses surely also added to their crime. When they tried looking at the individual information screen, at Yue's special mention part, the "has criminal record" had changed into "wanted criminal (Destroyer Yue-pon)".

Kaori thought that if they were denied to use the shop by the game's system, then it couldn't be helped anymore, they should give up, and so she pulled at Yue's clothes to get out of the shop, but Yue didn't move and stood firmly in place.

□.....Kaori. It's too fast to give up.□

□Eh, but, this is the game's system isn't it? There is nothing more that we can.....□

□.....You're wrong. Just like I said before, this game's characteristic is that you can overturn the difference in strength depending on your method. It's too fast to conclude that it's impossible because it's the system. I'll proof it to you. Watch.□

□Geez, I have nothing but bad premonition here.□

Ahead of Kaori's disheartened gaze, Yue talked toward the shop owner. It seemed she was planning to find a path by negotiating.....

□No matter what you are going to say, there is nothing that I will sell to——□

□.....I beg you. Please choose, will your shop be burned, or will you hand over your goods quietly.□

It wasn't a negotiation, but a threat. With a gesture that was like a sister, both her hands clasped in front of her chest,

and an expression like a pious lamb praying wholeheartedly to the god, she spoke something that would make even gang members to have cold sweat.

□.....I have faith, that you will surely understand our plight! That our heart can communicate with each other if we just talk it out! Now, let's not be stubborn and be obedient.□

'He is not being stubborn but making the justified reaction though.....'. That was what Kaori-san thought but she didn't butt in.

□.....The god hath spoken. Child, choose equipment for the sister in front of your eyes within the range of 2,000 yen, he said. Rather, give her a discount, a lot of it! He said. If you do that, then your sin too shall be forgiven.□

Who would believe a god haggling? Or rather, the shop owner-san didn't commit any sin. Rather, the sinner here was Yue. Kaori-san just barely endured from saying those retorts.

The sun-like flame materialized once more in front of Yue.

□.....Owner-san. I really don't want to see you receiving the judgment of god. I beg you, please obediently sell to us a gre~~~atly discounted merchandises!□

That wasn't god's judgment, but a punishment from Yue personally wasn't it? What's more it was exceedingly malicious. No matter how and where one looked at it, this person was really a splendid sister with a screw loose. Kaori couldn't endure and those straight-man retorts leaked out from her mouth. Yue-sama ignored it like nothing.

The shop owner's state was strange. His gaze was turning round and round, and his head was moving up and down.

Perhaps his program was bustlingly performing data processing because he encountered this unexpected situation.

Inside the shop that was wrapped in silence except the roar of the blazing flame, the shop owner's gaze finally settled down.

□Welcome to the equipment shop of “AAAAAAA” village!  
Today we are in a middle of a special promotion sale!□

It seemed the sister-san's sincere prayer reached the shop owner and the system.

□.....nn. Kaori, which item do you want?□

□If possible, a cheap one that can suppress my guilt even just for a little I think.□

Seeing Yue who turned toward her with a triumphant look, Kaori resolved that when they returned to reality she would train her once more about the meaning of obeying the law.

In the end, they couldn't buy anything in the equipment shop except for a single “Iron Long Sword”. In the first place, the starting price for equipment was around several tens of thousands yen, a few thousand yen could only buy things like wooden sword or stone sword. By the time “Iron Long Sword” that had a price of 70,000 yen reduced to 1,500 yen, it could be easily guessed just what had happened between the shop owner and Yue, must be.

With feeling of guilt gouging out inside the chest grindingly, after that the same thing was also done in the general store and several potions for Yue's magic power recovery were bought, and the two then headed toward the village's entrance.

But, not even ten seconds after they exited the shop.....  
\*kon-\*, a light impact assaulted Kaori's shoulder. When Kaori turned her gaze in wonder of what happened, she saw among the villagers who were staring at them from a distance that had increased relatively much, there were two children sticking out a bit from the crowd preparing to throw small rock.

Kaori's expression convulsed greatly.

□These criminals! Get out from the village!□

□Get out! Get out!□

The pure anger from the pure children smashed the pure (?) heart of Kaori-san. Kaori screamed□Hauh□and she pressed on her chest while falling on all fours!

Furthermore, the children of the village were gathering bustlingly and they were throwing rocks while hurling abuse with their lisping speech. And then perhaps that became the trigger, even the adults started to join in. They were yelling things like□Get out you sister with a screw loose!□or□I have thought from long ago that the village chief's regrettable daughter will someday become criminal!□while a chorus of □Get out from the village!□was arising.

□.....They are looking for war. Very well, I'll accept the challenge. I am Yue. A woman who will buy the fight sold to me until they run out of stock!□(TN: In Japan, selling a fight is how they said picking a fight)

□Stoopp! Just be obedient already, Yueee! If the village is obliterated with this, then I have the confidence I'll be annihilated along with my soul from guilt!□

Seeing the sister-san with a screw loose lifting the corner of her lips like a demon king with the tips of her spread out hands materializing flame, Kaori pleaded at her to not act rashly while holding her down by pinioning her from behind.

No matter how one thought about it, this was the just dessert of the overbearing Yue. The hate that had been piling up and up had reached the critical point, they weren't just ostracized anymore, a campaign to exile them from the village had started.

Yue who even in this situation was far from reflecting, she even announced her intention really naturally to counter attack was truly the wife of the demon king. She was the avatar of being overbearing and unreasonable.

Regret? Restrain? Never heard about that! Come at me from anywhere you li~~ke!

Kaori caught the scruff of the neck of Yue who was getting spirited like that and without pause she ran toward the exit of the village while apologizing "I'm sorry! I'm really sorry for our Yue!" with one hand deflecting all the rocks flying at them using the long sword that she had unsheathed.

Seen from the side, the picture of the villager girl running around while swinging around a long sword with one hand, and the other hand dragging away a sister who was smiling fearlessly—it was truly the very picture of a village chief's regrettable daughter.

When the two got out of the village, the villagers' yell suddenly stopped completely. It seemed the commotion calmed down if they went out of the village. Kaori who was filled with trepidation that perhaps they would be kept getting chased even outside the village let out a sigh of relief and she sat down on the spot.

□.....Kaori, are you okay?□

□My guilt is not okay at all, Yue you idiot.□

For Kaori who didn't have experience of being the target of the whole village's hostility and anger, it seemed she received substantial amount of mental damage. Her atmosphere felt somehow like she was sobbing.

□Geez, how can you be that calm? Even if this is a world of game, but I believe that normally anyone will get shocked if they got rock thrown at them by children that small.....I never even dreamed that you would actually try to counter attack.□

Kaori turned an expression that looked like she was speechless, like she was blaming her, like she was in admiration at that mental of steel or rather that shameless mental, and like she was in exasperation toward Yue. Yue's expression suddenly turned gentle and she answered.

□.....Because I had experienced it already.□

□? Experience? .....aa□

For a moment Kaori didn't understand what Yue was talking about, but she guessed it after thinking for a bit. And then, her expression turned very much like□Oh no!□and she attempted to change the topic in panic but.....the time was already late.

□.....Compared to getting beaten up to near death by my trusted vassals and my uncle who was like father, having rock thrown at me by children who I don't know, what's more by something that's nothing more than a program is really nothing at all.□

□Tha, that, Yue? It's, I'm sorry.□

□.....What are you apologizing for, Kaori? I just want to say that compared to the experience of getting ganged up by people who were like family, this is only trivial. Fufu, that time really hurt. Inside that storm of magic until my automatic regeneration ran out. Fufufuh, my heart hurt that timee~~□

□Sorry Yue! I asked you something stupid! That's why return backkk!□

Seeing and hearing the empty laugh of Yue who was staring at the faraway past with eyes that looked like dead fish, Kaori embraced her with teary eyes while apologizing. She should have become unbound by the past after knowing the true motive of her uncle Denreed, but no matter the fact it still didn't change that it was an event that was hard to forget.

Yue gently patted Kaori who was clinging on her with teary eyes while she turned at her and spoke with eyes that had recovered their light.

□.....I'm fine. I who had met Hajime, traveled, knew the truth about Oji-sama, and opened my eyes to the truth, has no more blind spot now.□

□Tru, truth?□

Yue nodded shortly and she puffed up her chest with an extremely triumphant look while replying full of confidence.

□Setting aside the reason, just slaughter everyone for the time being. If there is something that bothers you, then resurrect them again at opportune time.□

□.....Everyone all liberators. Everyone's magic is completed by perhaps the person who must not have it the most. I'm sorry.□

This is the first wife of the demon king! In front of her, life was just too light. No, surely, she was a bit more prudent in the real world, should be, Kaori was half praying while she lowered her head toward the protectors of the other world.

Kaori was crestfallen thinking that her strength had suddenly faded off even before departing to their journey, but right after that, they were visited by a situation that made them lost such composure.

\*flap-\*, such sound of flapping wings resounded once, twice.....it resounded inside the two's ears one after another.

When the two went 'hah' and they lifted up their face, over there were multiple beings descending down from the sky.

The beings were flapping beautiful white wings on their back, they were clad in impressive dress armor that looked beautiful, while their hand was each holding spear or sword or weapon that looked famous. The forms of the women who were emitting abnormal pressure were beautiful in contrast with that threatening atmosphere. Their beautiful look that ought to be said as god's creation was completed with dreamy silver hair that looked flowing.

Kaori couldn't even say anything. The existence and strength of these women were obviously boss class where in a game they would come out at the middle stage, no, at the latter stage.

'Aah, I see, this is an event!' Right after Kaori almost convinced herself like that, a ruthless voice of heaven



descended.

——Wild Valkyries appeared!!

The women who were greatly popular even among the Norse myth carelessly appeared as though they were goblin level enemy, \*jakin-\* their weapons were readied with such sound. They were brimming with hostility. They were fully motivated.

Kaori briefly said.

□This kind of world, is just mistakeenn.....□

Kaori doubted her beloved person's sanity just for a bit.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Things like the setting, the information screen, or the content, currently it is still a prototype and on top of that its behaving baggily, that's the setting so please forgive the vagueness.

I plan to someday make it into the stage of a long After arc, so at that time I'll think up the detailed content.

PS

The comic version of Arifureta is updated in the homepage of Overlap-sama.

As always the illustration has impact, Yue is also cute.

Please try to have a look if you like.

# Arifureta After II So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other? Last Part

AN: Regarding the case where everyone of Narou people has better understanding of Shirakome than Shirakome himself.

.....I have no more excuse.

---

The first attack was a swept of a splendorous sword. The speed of the eye focus couldn't follow it. One Valkyrie charged with a speed that even produced afterimages, lunging toward Yue and Kaori who was still embracing Yue.

Perhaps it was trying to bisect the two simultaneously. The sword line that drew a trajectory that almost looked like a flash was rapidly approaching at Yue's neck as though it was absorbed to there. If the target was an ordinary person, they wouldn't even have time to scream, when they noticed there was no doubt that their death would be already a certainty.

□FUWAaAAA!?!□

□Nngih□

Of course, the village chief's regrettable daughter, regardless of being a villager girl she was a regrettable girl that boasted a physical ability that was far removed from

ordinary person. The sweeping attack that approached like the scythe of death god was evaded by falling backward while her arm wasted no time to circle on Yue's neck and she pulled Yue with her.

Death was passing through along with a violent wind just a millimeter above Yue and Kaori's face who were falling backward like in a limbo dance.

Although Kaori's posture broke down with her falling backward, she somehow succeeded in evading. But a shadow appeared above her without even any time to sigh in relieve.

□WAAAA!?!□

□Higyo!?!□

Kaori put strength into the arm that she circled around Yue's neck and without pause she rolled on the ground, taking Yue with her. That appearance could be seen as a brave figure desperately trying to protect a friend.

A hair's breadth.

A spear that also looked splendidous raised a really unpleasant impact sound \*zudon-\* when it pierced the spot where the two collapsed at just now. A small crater was even created from the impact. It was a terrifying strength.

The Valkyries made their entrance like a common goblin, but as expected their strength wasn't in a level that should appear around the village of the beginning.

From Yue's individual information screen just now, "Automatic Regeneration" wasn't listed there. It was unclear

how much the system that was an effect of soul magic was suppressing that skill which was a characteristic ability.

In such state, furthermore inside this buggy world, if they got hit with that attack that was unmistakably a one-hit kill, even if it was Yue but there was a high possibility that she wouldn't come out of it safely.

And Kaori who was separated from her apostle body was also the same.

It wasn't clear what kind of effect a damage they got in this game world would inflict at their soul, because of that they absolutely must not get hit.

Cold sweat trickled from Kaori's forehead seeing the enemy's strength and the merciless one-hit kill attacks launched toward them.

Kaori made use of her rolling momentum to somehow straighten herself while she obeyed the warning that her combat experience informed her and leaped back from that spot. Right away, the vertical slashes of the Valkyries that launched pincer attack passed through before her eyes.

□Nngigih, gi, give-. I give!□it felt like some kind of strange voice could be heard, but right now there was no leeway to be bothered with that.

Kaori had to grasp the limitation of her lowered physical ability while during that time she had to evade the countless death approaching them!

Even if, there was the sensation of repeated tapping that felt relatively desperate on her hand that was circled around Yue's neck, but there wasn't any time to worry about that!

□It's fine! I swear I'll absolutely protect you Yue!□

□Tha, that's not-. My neeck! It's completely——□

Countless flame bullets rushed from middle range! Kaori strengthened her grip so that her friend absolutely wouldn't get separated from her while dancing the dance of death with determination!

Kaori stepped toward the swarm of flame bullets while still holding Yue. Rather than waiting for the bullets to converge at herself, she would move forward and slip through before the gaps were tightened.

Just like she planned, she slipped through the gaps in the barrage and passed through several shots, then with a rotation she evaded an attack that approached from the front. So that Yue's body wouldn't be separated from her because of the centrifugal force, she put even more strength to her arm that was holding Yue!

□Kafuu!? .....Ka, Kaori, I'll, I'll apologize, so, your arm, armmm~□

□*It's fine!* Because I'll absolutely protect you!□

□.....You, you bastardd~, you're planninggg——□

Yue tried to say something, but at the corner of the sight a Valkyrie archer could be seen nocking an arrow that was enveloped with some abnormal light. It caused Kaori's heart to jump.

□Look ouu~~~tt-□

□Kyupeh!?□

Kaori immediately jumped forward to get down on the ground. Flame bullets passed through overhead, further behind the sounds of explosion resounded. The impact that came assaulting within an instant caused Kaori and Yue's bodies to dance in the air like a leaf.

Kaori somehow kept her hold on Yue and she performed ukemi on the ground. There she noticed that the attacks stopped and she let out a faint exhale of relieve.

It seemed they managed to endure just barely the first wave of the attack.

The Valkyries were moving slowly. They were trying to surround Kaori and Yue. Kaori scowled at that while she talked to Yue.

□Yue. What should we do? Perhaps this is just as expected. These people are strong just as we thought. We have to break through this encirclement somehow.....Yue?□

□.....□

Just try to look. The white of her eyes is exposed and her mouth is half opened but, that's a beautiful face right? She is fainting y'know?

Such words crossed Kaori's mind. The friend in her arm, even now when the white of her eyes were exposed and her mouth was half opened, but she was still beautiful as usual.

□Who, who did something like this!? Yue! Get a hold of yourself! Just what in the world happened!?!□

Kaori shook Yue's body back and forth, but Yue was only staying limp like an octopus and she didn't react even with how rough she was shaken. 'Rather, perhaps this is because

of enemy's sleep magic I wonder!?' Thinking that Kaori glared at the enemies. While her mouth was twitching as though she was enduring something.

And then, while staying vigilant against the surrounding, she straddled Yue and lifted up her hand.

Yue had to be wakened up no matter what. Even if she had to use a heartless method, but in the battlefield it wasn't the place to say naïve things!

——\*PAN-, PAN-, PAN-, BISHII-!\*

Such sounds resounded in the battlefield. Kaori-san's double slap that was thinking about her friend burst on Yue's cheeks!

□Yue! Wake up! You are going to die if you sleep here! Quickly wake up! Come on quickly!□

Kaori's palm was swung with a display of accurate consecutive hits that drew artistic trajectory and hit spot. Yue's cheeks were painted with beautiful slap sound while moving to left and to right. Kaori-san's double slap also followed vaguely rhythmically.

□Qu-ick-ly! Wake-up!□

For some reason her voice sounded lively.....

The Valkyries were looking at each other. They might be feeling bewildered.

One of the enemy they were assaulting fainted by herself when they noticed, and then the other enemy for some reason was dealing additional blows to that enemy..... perhaps that was how it looked like to them. Objectively



looking. In that case, it was also natural for them to be bewildered.

But, the next moment, the wrist of Kaori who was dealing out rhythmical slaps was caught \*GRAB-!!\* forcefully.

□.....Good morning, Kaori. Sayonara, Kaori.□

□Eh?□

At Yue-sama's awakening \*buppa\*. A flame sphere the size of a pinball materialized in front of Kaori, and the next instant, it exploded grandly. It seemed that the "fireball" magic was super compressed before it was set free which produced directional shockwave.

'FUWAAAA' Kaori who was raising such scream while rolling around backward somehow stopped rolling in the posture of all fours. She then lifted up her face and began to let out a lot of cold sweats.

□.....Even though even Hajime has never slapped me. Kaori, is your resolve okay?□

Yue-sama's anger was in the state of piercing the heaven. She was getting so angry that behind her back it felt like there was the illusion of sound effect letters \*GOGOGOGO-\*

□I, I don't understand what are you saying here, Yue. Anyway, calm down? Surely we can understand each other if we talk about it.□

□.....Hou. You are saying that you constricting my neck while wretchedly swinging me around, and in the end slapping my face on and on happily, aren't something that you did purposefully?□

□Such thing! That's misunderstanding! I was only trying to protect Yue! And yet, how can you be so cruel saying such——□

□.....If you speak honestly, Yue's best selection. Ten sexy photo of Hajime, I'll prese——□

□Being able to payback for the daily prank, it makes my feeling really refreshed. You even made noise 'higyoh', or 'kyuveh', pupuh□

A blood vein jutted out on Yue's forehead with a snap.

And then,

□.....Today is your death anniversary!□

□Wawah, don't do that! If that flame bullet hit me, I'll totally die!□

□.....Don't worry. I'll absolutely kill you!□

Countless flame bullets were fired from Yue. Every single one was hiding a power that could make anyone comprehended how it could destroy a church.

Kaori who got a bit carried away and got surprised jumped away from that spot and tried to apologize in panic but,

□.....Perish, you eternal stalker woman!□

□Who are you calling a stalker I wonder!? I wonder!?!□

Kaori spontaneously talked back hearing the extremely disgracing statement. When she avoided the flame bullets while glaring at Yue, Yue snorted□Fuhn□.

□.....Just notice it already. Of your own true nature. And then, of Hajime's self-sacrificing spirit!□

□Self-sacrificing? What are you say——□

□.....Aa, Kaori who is a stalker, a yandere, and a hidden pervert is really troubling. But if I leave her alone I don't know what she might do, can't be helped, perhaps I should look after her a bit, notice already that true feeling of Hajime!□

□There is no way Hajime-kun is thinking anything like that! Yue is just saying irresponsible thing!□

□.....If that's what you think, then that's must be it. Inside Kaori that is.□

□.....Fufu, Yue. Those words are too much you know? If you apologize now, then I'll forgive you. Come now, apologize. Quickly apologize.□

□.....Eh? Why should I, yandere hidden pervert stalker-san. It's a bit scary, so can you not get nearer than that?□

\*snap-\* A blood vein emerged on Kaori's forehead. Even though she was showing a wide smile, but an illusion of sound effect \*GOGOGOGO-\* could be seen behind her.

□Right, I won't get near you at all. Who want to get near a hopeless vampire who is eternally horny. Ninety percent of the inside of your head is crammed with perverted things right? I wonder if perhaps Hajime-kun will notice it sooner or later? That this vampire princess (lol), is just a pervert. Ah, can you not get nearer to me than that? The legal wife (lol) can infect me.□

Toward Kaori who affixed (lol) even until two times at Yue's identity, Yue also smiled widely.

For some reason the Valkyries were flustered. 'What to do, it's a carnage, a carnage you know? Should we stop those two? Who will? You, go stop them already. Eh, no way, if you say that then you go there, you are a Valkyrie right? You are also a Valkyrie.' —Perhaps they were making conversation like that.

But, the next moment their movement stopped still.

Because an extremely cold blizzard was blowing violently.

Because a dark cloud that was scattering flashes of lightning materialized.

And then,

——SHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

——GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

Because behind Kaori who was smiling while sporting pulsing blood vein, a hannya-san tapping a large war sword on her shoulder materialized!

Because behind Yue who was smiling while sporting pulsing blood vein, a coiling lightning dragon raising a thunderous roar materialized!

The unthinkable supernatural phenomenon that shouldn't exist in this game system caused the Valkyries who were modeled after supernatural existence to tremble while backing away.

What reached the ears of those women was,

□.....KAORI YOU STUPIIIIIID-□

□.....YUE YOU UIDIOTTTTT-□

In contrast with such delicate insult and intensity, they uncouthly grappled, clawed, and pulled at each other in a delicate scuffle—rather, it was their usual cat fight.

□Fushaah——!□When Yue Punch was unleashed, Kaori growled□Muiiiih□even while receiving it with her cheek and her hand pinched on Yue's cheek and pulled. When Yue pulled on Kaori's hair, Kaori would grind her finger on Yue's side, when Yue pulled Kaori's cheek in return, Kaori would throw away Yue's wimple and pulled her hair in return.

Kaori struck cat punches \*poka poka\* on Yue who was pushed down by the difference in body height. Yue tightly grasped on the butt of such Kaori and when she flinched from that, Yue used the opening to overturn their position and then she launched a double slap on Kaori's relatively large breast as though to say that it was payback for before.

The rolled round and round, grappled on each other, then rolled round and round again and hit each other \*poka poka\* repeatedly, even though the two were beautiful girl, but they were covered all over with dust with their hair all ruffled. Both Yue and Kaori were wearing one piece type of clothing, so they were in a state where their panty was fully exposed, but they didn't even bother with that.

Just how long they were planning to do that?

The Valkyries who were somewhat dumbfounded suddenly returned back to their senses. They readied their respective weapon, making metallic sound rang to pull themselves together and galred at the two who were still entangled

themselves in a quarrel. They glared.....but, as expected the two were still going 'nyaa—nyaa—'.

The Valkyries looked at each other. They had no expression, but somehow they vaguely looked like they were speaking 'like this we don't even need to surround them to fight isn't it?'.

The women nodded at each other. One woman among them quietly walked forward. It was the Valkyrie carrying a divine spear. Perhaps she was being conscious of the blind spot of the rampaging Kaori and Yue, because sometimes she would circle around in her advance.

And then, she entered the range. The next moment, she stepped forward all of a sudden. She must be trying to skewer the two simultaneously. The sure-kill thrust was unleashed at Yue's back with a terrific speed.

Kaori who was looking up because her chin was pushed from below by Yue's hand couldn't see behind Yue. Yue too, her nose was pinched by Kaori so she couldn't look behind.

Killed.

If the Valkyrie could speak, then she undoubtedly would whisper that.

——\*Bang-, roll roll-\*

The two suddenly flopped to the side and without pause they insulted at each other while rolling over. They stood up again at slight distance away and then continued quarreling as though nothing happened. The spear that should be stabbed for certain kill was wandering vainly at the place where the two were at.

Her Valkyrie comrades were watching. The Valkyrie lancer showed a gesture as though she was clearing her throat, and then she pulled herself together before assaulting Yue and Kaori once more.

This time she wouldn't cut corner, she would bring down one person with certainty! Her aim was Yue. She would pierce the temporal region of her head——

□The yandere, is you Yue!□

The slap that struck along with such words dealt a clean hit on Yue's cheek. The lance attack passed through right beside Yue's head that was forcefully snapped away.

The Valkyrie hurriedly pulled back her spear. She didn't fail or anything. She was only testing the water a bit. That was just a practice swing. Now this is the sure thing attack! It stabbed toward Kaori's side!

□.....I'm not ill. It's only my dere that is overflowing!□(TN: Dere = affectionate)

Kaori fell from neko damashi that was continued with a tripping up. The sure kill (lol) attack passed through above her head. (TN: Neko damashi = a sumo move, where you clap your hands in front of the opponent's face to surprise them)

□That is what is called yandere! You don't know? Sometimes Shia will subtly flinch away from Yue. Yaa~i, you yandere girl who is feared by your best friend.□

□.....Shia doesn't fear me. There is no way that's true. Shia love me! Kaori yourself, you said that even though you were feared by Shizuku before this. Yaa~i, genuine yandere girl

who even make Shizuku whose fortitude is maxed out to get creeped out.□

□Shi, Shizuku-chan isn't scared at me or anything! After all Shizuku-chan will accept any kind of me no matter what!□

□.....Indeed, I won't deny the depth of Shizuku's broad-mindedness. Her figure is already like everyone's mother!□

□That's right! What's more, if I have to say which then she is the type of a gutsy mother of a big family! She is everyone's beloved and reliable mother!□

Yaegashi Shizuku—an active female high school student. She was She was a busybody who was being dissed in a sense before they knew it. Surely if she was in this place, she would resolve herself to participate in the fight from getting hit by the unexpected stray bullet.

By the way, even while these two were making this conversation, spear was wielded against them many times. The Valkyrie changed the angle of the spear, used feint, she used sweeping attack and the butt of her spear, launching attacks from every position like a surging waves.

But everything was evaded.

What's more, everything was evaded only with extremely natural movement from the scuffle.

Somehow it looked like the Valkyrie lancer was looking like she was going to burst crying anytime.

Perhaps thinking that was pitiful, her Valkyrie comrades surrounded the two and lunged. It was the beautiful friendship of Valkyries.



They wouldn't let their might getting humiliated even further than this by method that looked like gag scene. They wouldn't be ignored!

It was a perfect encirclement. There was no place to escape. It was impossible to dodge.

This time for sure, death in the shape of sword and lance assaulted from all directions toward the two who were in the middle of scuffling.

——\*SHaaAAN-\*

A clear sound resounded. It was a tone that was played by metals scraping each other. The scream of the targeted two people didn't mix there.

Rather,

□-!!!□

□a, a——□

□!?!□

The wordless scream, came from the Valkyries.

The Valkyries took distance all at once. However, there were three people who didn't retreat from there, no, they couldn't retreat. The Valkyrie lancer, and two Valkyrie saber who were carrying beautiful sword.

The reason was simple.

Because the Valkyrie lancer's lance pierced the heart of a Valkyrie who should be her ally, and Kaori's sword was digging into the neck of that Valkyrie lancer.

And then, the one other Valkyrie saber got her beautiful face—more accurately her right eye literally turned into a wind hole. It was a round wind hole that was carbonized black.

Looking closer, in the center of the Valkyries, there were the unmoving figure of Kaori with her iron long sword in an unsheathed state, and the figure of Yue laying down face up between the legs of such Kaori while her fingers were making gun shape could be seen.

The posture of the Valkyrie saber whose right eye was shot through turned limp and she was falling. Without hesitation Kaori smoothly took away that Valkyrie's sword and without pause she handled that sword casually, yet with an astonishingly elegant motion and mowed the neck of the Valkyrie lancer with that stolen sword.

Different from the iron long sword, Kaori's sword attack this time slipped through Valkyrie lancer's neck as though she was cutting butter. Blood didn't spurt out, in exchange red particles whirled while rising to the sky.

□Yep, this is a good sword as expected. Though I'd like it better if it's thicker and bigger.....□

□.....Kaori, lewd. That's why you are going to be called a hidden pervert eternally.□

□No one call me that! Or rather, I don't understand what do you mean by lewd!□

The two resumed their quarrel as though nothing happened. Yue stood up, and Kaori shrewdly stole the sword of the other Valkyrie saber and now she used two sword style. It was at that time the two defeated Valkyries also scattered red particles while disappearing.

The Valkyries were still spreading out as though they were hesitating to resume their attack.

Perhaps their battle program couldn't judge how should they attack after witnessing the offense and defense the two displayed just now.

The two's method to get through the attacks from all direction just now was simple.

Kaori who understood that she wouldn't be unscathed if she honestly fight from the front seeing her physical strength and also sword quality merged her sword with the approaching enemy's sword and twist its trajectory. As the result, the averted sword hit the sword beside it and averted that other sword's trajectory too.

Furthermore, Kaori rotated her body and used her bare hand to avert the lance and caused a friendly fire, by doing that she even evaded the third sword too.

And then, regarding the fourth sword that Kaori couldn't dealt with, it was dealt with by Yue that sniped at the weak point that was commonly shared by living thing using a super compressed flame bullet that was fired from Kaori's blind spot.

The Valkyries combat thinking rejected close combat against the two who in a glance looked like they were full of opening from being absorbed in quarreling with each other. If the visible opening wasn't actually opening, then they would make opening that coincided with their convenience.

The Valkyrie archer and Valkyrie mage launched a pincer attack!

Long range physical attack from arrows that were enveloped with light to increase its destructive power, and long range magic attack using invisible and swift wind blades became countless fangs that were like an intense rain, attacking Yue and Kaori.

Abruptly they rotated. Yue and Kaori were.

The two were facing each other and quarreling until now, but in an instant they executed their steps as though they were even dancing and stood back to back. With a matching elegant turn, golden and black hairs spread out softly like a dream.

Kaori's swords instantly drew countless trajectories in the air instantly, cutting apart or averting all the flying arrows that were hiding terrifying power.

Countless flame bullets instantly materialized like stars that were floating in the vast night sky, they obeyed Yue's slender finger and flew out like a meteor shower and blew away all the wind blades with the impact of destructive blast.

The two who were standing back to back didn't look like they were concerned at all against any threat that might come from their back. Even without looking back, they believed without doubt that behind them was an absolutely safe area.

The attacks suddenly stopped. The arrows and magic attacks that were fired consecutively ran out.

Right after that, Yue and Kaori danced once more. The sleeves of their one piece clothing elegantly spread out at the same time with their rotation using steps that looked as though they had been arranged beforehand. The two who

were dancing as though mirroring each other swung one hand as though inviting the other party for a dance.

Although, it seemed the invitation was for a world of death.

What flew out like a bullet from the swung hands were a flame bullet the size of a pinball and a beautiful sword.

The flame bullet that was hiding a destructive power that rivaled a high class magic pierced the heart of the Valkyrie archer with unerring aim, and the beautiful sword also pierced the heart of the Valkyrie mage.

□Hm~m, what's this? Just as I thought even though they are all the same Valkyrie but there is difference in their defensive power depending on their class but..... Is it just because the sword is powerful I wonder?□

□.....I think that's possible. But, no matter even if it's the enemy's weapon, I don't think that a sword thrown by the spec of a level 1 can easily pierce the armor of that close quarter combat type before. It should be seen that this one is weak against physical attack because of her mage class.□

□The flame bullet that I evaded before was deflected by the armor of the mage class wasn't it? But the flame bullet going through the archer means that even though their armors all look the same, but there is no doubt that this one's defensive power against magic is low.□

Yue and Kaori talked about their analysis result while still standing back to back. They were directing observing gaze toward the two Valkyries who were turning into particles and vanished.

The two remaining Valkyries were trying to take distance slowly.

\*snap-\*, Yue and Kaori's face turned toward the surviving Valkyries in a flash. It was awfully scary. As the proof, the Valkyries' body twitched seeing their gaze.

□.....Kaori. You noticed?□

□About the level up? Yep, while fighting 'pirurin!' sound rang out several times. Also, announcing sound like 'such and such is liberated!'. Though honestly, I'm wondering if there is option to erase the sound.□

□.....Certainly it's distracting. This will depend on the user's preference, so I'll suggest to Hajime if he can attach on/off function. But, for now——□

□Yep. For now——□

The Valkyries were slo~wly, slo~wly taking distance from Yue and Kaori who were conversing with each other. The moment the two's conversation cut off, the Valkyries turned their body adroitly and flew to the sky.

If it was said in game style, this must be a situation of □Valkyrie is running away!□.

A shadow loomed. On the Valkyries.

What the two Valkyries who quickly looked back saw, were the figures of the villager girl and apprentice sister who took their above with a leap that was higher than even themselves. The two readied overhead a sword that was gleaming from the sunlight and a flame bullet that was like the sun itself while looking down of the Valkyries.

□Let's try it out.□

□.....Trying out.□

They wouldn't let go of the chance to test out their liberated ability.

Yes, if it was said in game style——this is the situation of  
□Failed to escape from villager girl and apprentice sister!□.

There was no scream of death agony.

However, there were only beautiful red particles dancing toward the sky right outside the village of beginning.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just since when I was deluded that the subtitle of Yue - Kaori arc is one?

Next chapter, □Welcome, I am the village chief of demon king village desu□

# **Arifureta After II Welcome, I am the Village Chief of Demon King Village**

It was a highway with wind blowing gently. The grasses as high as the waist were making rustling sounds. Dusts were gently rolled up to the air by the breeze.

Silhouettes of two people could be seen at the other side of that dust.

One person was a girl with the appearance of a villager girl, while the other one was a girl with the appearance of an apprentice sister. They looked unsteady somehow. Or rather, the apprentice sister was completely carried on the back of the villager girl. Her body was limply leaning on the villager girl's back.

The villager girl too, she was carrying the apprentice sister while using a beautiful sword as replacement for cane. Her shoulders were moving much from her rough breathing "zee zee", so much so that it sounded like it could be heard from far away. If this area wasn't the highway that connected village to village, then she would be mistaken as a victim that was lost in the middle of mountain.



Her clothing also spurred on such impression. The two of them were tattered. Although the important parts were barely protected, the fringe part of the one piece had become a really original miniskirt state, the sleeves part was also in forced state of no sleeve that if it was seen from the side, the breast part felt a little bit dangerous.

The two's white smooth skin was exposed much, and those exposed parts were dirtied by dust everywhere, the two's hair also felt unkempt.

□.....Uu. I'm really sorry for troubling you, Kaori-san.□(TN: Here Yue's speech sounded like an old woman)

□Yue-san, you promised not to say that right?□

The carried apprentice sister—the previously sister with a screw loose Yue was running on joke material even while being dead tired. The one who was fixing her grip on the slipping off Yue with 'yoisho-' while returning the joke material precisely was of course the village chief's regrettable daughter Kaori.

Now then, why were these two so ragged until they were in this state?

That was caused by all the happening since they were victorious in the battle against the wild Valkyries nearby the village of beginning “AAAAAAA” until the present time. To speak frankly,

——A wild Odin appeared!

——A wild Zeus appeared!

——A wild Susanoo appeared!

——A wild Indra appeared!

——Wild Artemis appeared in great numbers!

——A wild Zoroaster myth appeared in its entirety!

——A wild Odin took along his children and Valkyries and challenged a revenge match!

——A wild Zeus who joined up with a wild Indra appeared!

——A wild Ia! Ia! Masteerr! Fhtag——

The gist could be guessed after seeing how the lineup above was the mob enemy for the surrounding area of the village of beginning. The random pounding of mythologies was coming so extremely without any integrity. Or rather, no matter how much the game was in the operation testing stage with undecided story, the enemy setting was just too noncommittal.

Of course, the enemies' strength was in the level that didn't put shame to their name, they were boasting strength to the degree that the Valkyries looked cute. They were also properly equipped with their characteristic equipments, Yue and Kaori would surely meet a swift end if they didn't cooperate in the same beat for real.

Regarding the difficult to describe something that came out in the end, both Yue and Kaori didn't really have the memory of their battle against it. When they tried to recall it, they would get a headache as though their instinct was trying to stop them and they couldn't recall it. However, there was only the feeling as though they destroyed it with a deathly desperation remaining inside them.

Just what in the world was that.....

And because of that, after repeating mortal combat after mortal combat, they were now in the verge of exhausting all their energy and willpower—that was the current state of Yue and Kaori. Yue was in an extreme state of magic power drying up and all the recovery item was also used up, that now she was entrusting herself to Kaori.

After a bit more advancing through the highway with staggering footsteps toward the save point of the next village, while they were making frivolous talk running on joke material with each other to take their mind off from their exhaustion,

□.....Nn? Kaori.□

□Right, something is coming. But, this is.....□

Kaori's walk stopped when she sensed a presence approaching from behind. When she tried to look behind, she could see rising dust cloud from ahead of the highway they had passed through. For a moment Yue and Kaori thought□Another wild god!?, but that thought was immediately proved to be a needless anxiety.

□That's, a house cart.□

□.....Nn□

Just as Kaori said, what was running on the highway toward them was a cart that was pulled by two chestnut horses. The figure of a plump man sitting on the coachman stand holding the rein could be seen.

Just in case Yue got down from Kaori's back and both of them stepped back to the side of the highway to open a path.

Not long after that, the cart arrived at where Yue and Kaori were at. The man on the coachman stand noticed Yue and Kaori and his expression went “Oh?”. The man pulled his rein and decreased the speed, and the cart stopped beside the two.

“My goodness, young ladies, what are you two doing in this kind of place? Although this area is relatively safe, it’s still too careless for two young girls to be here you know?”

No ill will could be felt from his voice and expression. The two heard his words which claimed that this area was safe which caused the two to doubt this man’s sanity, but if that part was put aside, this man’s feeling that was purely feeling strange and also worried that a villager girl and a sister were loitering alone in this highway was conveyed to the two.

Seeing that it didn’t seem like a battle event, Yue and Kaori looked and nodded at each other.

“Eerr, I am “AAAAAAA” village’s.....village chief’s daughter, going toward the next village.”

“Oo, is that so. So you are the “AAAAAAA” village’s village chief’s regrettable daughter. I am a peddler Sarani Yunker. If you are going to the next village, I am also going toward there right now. If you want, you can come along with me?”  
(TN: The name Sarani here is written in katakana as though it’s a foreign name. But in Japanese language ‘sarani’ could also mean ‘even more’. This peddler’s name can be read as even more Yunker)

The peddler whose surname was a name they had heard from somewhere was suggesting that kindly. Kaori was somehow feeling regrettable that even the peddler was calling her “regrettable”, but honestly she was really happy that they could travel using house cart here.

□Yue, what to do?□

□.....I think, this is perhaps a support event from the game. We can also use item to recover and change equipment by riding the back cart.□

□There is no problem then. Can we also purchase item while we are at it?□

As the result of the two's discussion, with their need to recover their stamina and mental strength and also with their lack of item, they decided to accept the suggestion of the peddler Sarani to help them. They were also taking advantage of the kind words of peddler Sarani who was smiling kindly while saying□Please, please. Get on the car behind. If there is anything that you want to buy then I'll sell it to you□.

Like that the horse cart departed. For a while the two purchased and used healing item and focused in recovering, and when their vitality returned the two sighed□Fuu~~~~□.

□I wonder if it really is over?□

□.....Nn, I think so. Or rather, I hope that's so. If not, then Hajime is just too savage.□

□Ahaha.....as expected, this cannot be helped isn't it? After all this game device is broken right? Right?□

□.....Nn. Certainly.□

Both of them doubted the sanity of their beloved just for a bit, but they concluded they had reached a checkpoint and they relaxed. And then, Yue who finished purchasing recovery item rummaged around the cart and discovered clothing.

Among the items that were being sold, as expected the clothing that the two could equip was only the sister outfit and villager girl outfit, but it was still a league better compared to their clothing that was in half undressed state. They immediately purchased the clothes and quickly changed.

The two who finished changing clothes and also replenishing item calmed down and sat side by side at the back cart. They threw their legs to dangle outside. The small vibration of the cart that was transmitted to their body felt pleasant.

□.....Come to think of it, Kaori. How far you have been liberated?□

□Ah, now that you say that we were leveling up with staggering momentum weren't we? My disintegration ability also came back, so I wonder if I have been liberated much? I didn't confirm because there was no leeway though.□

Saying that, Kaori summoned the individual information screen. Yue also summoned her own screen at the same time and they respectively confirmed their usable strength.

=====

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 75 / 2880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Sister

Title : Sister Whose Name Mustn't be Mentioned

Skill : No Chant   Imagination Configuration   All Element  
Aptitude   Combination Magic   High Speed Magic Power

Regeneration

Magic : Flame Magic Wind Magic Light Magic Water  
Magic Earth Magic Ice Magic Lightning Magic Darkness  
Magic Gravity Magic

※All magic name is omitted

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit R'lyeh Text

Special mention : A criminal on the wanted list

Money : 5,546,030

=====

=====

Name : Kaori

Rank : 72 / 1880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Villager Girl

Title : What is the Meaning of Villager Girl Name?

Skill : Villager girl-style Twin Large Sword Art Villager girl-  
style Close Quarter Combat Art

Magic : Villager girl-style Body Reinforcement Magic  
Villager girl-style Disintegration Magic Villager girl-style  
Wings Villager girl-style Godspeed

Equipment : A set of villager girl outfit Gram Ama no  
Murakumo no Tsurugi

Special mention : Yue-pon's accomplice

Money : 4,874,005

=====

□.....□

□.....□

There were certainly a lot of places that could be retorted at. Surely it was the fault of the bug. But, there was one point that the two couldn't turn a blind eye at no matter what.

□Yu, Yue? Thi, this is.....□

□.....Wa, wait. Wait, a second-□

Yue who unusually was in her wits' end patted all over her own body and performed a body check. There was nothing particular strange and she let out a faint sigh of relieve. Right after that, Yue's ragged sister outfit that she put above the box beside her was slipping down unnaturally even though there wasn't any particularly noticeable vibration. And then, the falling clothe didn't make light rustling sound, but a thud sound instead.

□.....□

□.....□

Yue and Kaori twitched but they didn't move further, they were staring at the ragged sister clothes. They couldn't avert their gaze from the clothes that was strangely bulged up.

The house cart was going onward while making small vibrations \*katakata\*. The sister clothe was slowly, little by



little sliding off because of the vibration.

What was certain was that when Kaori was carrying Yue on her back, Yue wasn't carrying anything except the clothes she was wearing. And they also didn't steal anything except the legendary swords Kaori stole from the previous battles. And then, when Yue took off her clothes just now and put it on the box, there was not "thing" or anything that would make that kind of bulge.

\*slide\*, \*slide\* The sister clothes was sliding off matching with the vibration of the horse cart.

Like that, finally, from the gap between the clothes, something like a book spine with strange color was.....

□SOOOOOOII-!!□

Yue's roar gushed! Before that thing that surely, perhaps must not be seen showed up its whole appearance, a kick with the body's whole strength exploded. The beautiful kicking leg that was performed like a pro soccer athlete also beautifully slammed flying the sister clothes along with the something inside it.

When the two saw it falling into the grasses and they couldn't see it anymore, they let out a long sigh and resumed their breathing that they were unconsciously holding.

And then, when Yue moved her hand impatiently and confirmed her individual information screen,

=====

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 75 / 2880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Sister

Title : Sister Whose Name Mustn't be Mentioned

Skill : No Chant   Imagination Configuration   All Element  
Aptitude   Combination Magic   High Speed Magic Power  
Regeneration

Magic : Flame Magic   Wind Magic   Light Magic   Water  
Magic   Earth Magic   Ice Magic   Lightning Magic   Darkness  
Magic   Gravity Magic

※All magic name is omitted

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit

Special mention : A criminal on the wanted list

Money : 5,546,030

=====

It became like that.

Yue and Kaori looked at each other's face and nodded shortly to one another.

□.....So, Kaori. You still cannot use healing magic, binding magic, and defensive magic?□

□Yeah. Even though my specialty should be in that field. But, just being able to use disintegration and godspeed is also enough. And the swords I stole are really sharp. Yue, you still only get gravity magic?□

□.....Nn. I pray that next I'll obtain space magic. It's completely different whether I have it or not.□

It seemed they treated as though the “something” that was kicked flying had never existed. Surely it was for the sake of their mental health. They had to protect their SAN status as much as possible.

For a while the two were talking with each other about their respective ability as though trying to forget something and they spent time doing things like confirming their cooperation and so on.

It was unclear how long they were doing that before finally their feeling cleared up and the vibration of the horse cart was inviting sleepiness, when suddenly Yue felt magic power reaction and she reacted.

The reaction source was right nearby. Yes, from the coachman stand. The magic power wasn't directed toward them, but flowing toward somewhere else.

□.....Peddler-san. Just now, what did you do?□

Yue's question caused peddler Sarani to twitch and his plumb body shaking for some reason. And then, he looked back with a smile that looked pasted on his face.

□No, it's really nothing important. Rather than that, it will still take time until the next village. It's better for the two of you to lie down and rest during this time.□

□.....I see.□

Yue was relatively good at reading the heart of someone from their expression. It was because she was a former royalty and she had also met painful experience before. And

so, she also immediately understood that peddler Sarani's words weren't honest.

It was really suspicious. Was this not a support event for player.....

Perhaps guessing that doubt of Yue, peddler Sarani's forehead was starting to sweat.

Yue's fixed gaze was piercing peddler Sarani. It was a dreadful fixed gaze. It was a splendid fixed gaze.

Peddler Sarani was starting to sweat like waterfall.

□It's the truth you know? A merchant won't spout lie.□

□.....I see.□

□No, it will really take time. I'm not lying. Hell will freeze over before I'm telling lie.□

□.....I see.□

□.....How about you take a rest?□

□.....I see.□

□.....□

Right now the face of peddler Sarani looked terrible because it was drenched with sweat like a fountain.

As expected, seeing it was getting stranger, Kaori also put her hand on Gram and Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi and strengthened her vigilance, it was at that time,

□.....-!? Kaori!□

□He? —Kyah!?!□

At the same time when Yue let out that warning voice which was filled with unease, \*gin-\* hard sound resounded from Kaori's neck. It was the impact voice of Yue's defensive magic that made it in a hair's breadth time to protect Kaori's neck from the rapidly approaching assassin's blade. The moment Kaori noticed that, she raised a scream while also using Villager girl-style Godspeed to leap out from the cart.

Right away, from the opposite side of the spot where Kaori was just at, a powerfully assaulting blade passed through there.

□Hmm, on top of noticing the invisibility of this me, even the following blow is dodged..... I see, it seems you two cannot be dealt with ordinary means.□

Yue landed lightly beside Kaori who jumped down. It seemed an attack was also launched at Yue simultaneously with the second attack against Kaori. Yue jumped down from the cart to dodge that.

Yue and Kaori were staring dumbfounded and open-mouthed in a da~ze seeing the black shadow who was looking down on them from above the cart. Whether it was the surprise attack that slipped through Kaori's guard, or the flowing consecutive attack, this wasn't the time for being dumbfounded.....however, the character that appeared was just too unexpected.

□Tha, thank god! You finally arrived! It's those two! Those two are the wanted criminal Yue-pon and Kaori! Please capture them quickly!□

□Merchant-dono. You did well using the magic item to contact me. Not only that, you even bring them until here to

not let them escape.....my gratitude to your bravery. Leave the rest to me, go on ahead!□

□Yes, may luck be with you!□

It seemed it was something like that. This merchant-sama noticed from the start that Yue-pon and Kaori were criminal, he pretended to not notice while guiding the two toward the boss character (perhaps the mid-boss). It seemed that he was a character for that.

What betrayal. But, thinking really really carefully, these two were wanted criminal so if this was said to be the proper treatment for them then no one could deny that. This was the karma that was following the two to the bitter end.

The two were able to purchase things like recovery item and so on, so to speak it was something like the recovery place and save point that was usually provided in front of the boss room. Of course, they couldn't save though.

But, what was more important than such things was regarding the person in front of the two's eyes.

Yes, for some reason this person in black clothes was making a cross with his two hands that were holding short swords while meaninglessly turning his body several times in a stance of half body. The two recognized this person very much. The person was wearing a sunglasses, but the two completely recognized him.

□Listen well, criminal Yue-pon! Accomplice Kaori! Now that I'm here, this place is the last stop for you two. Lament your own misfortune while carving this name into your bone! My name is Abyssgate! One of the four heavenly kings of demon king village, and an apprentice doctor! I'm the man who will consign the two of you to oblivion!□

Yes, it was Abyssgate-san desu.

Just what is the four heavenly kings of demon king village, how can an apprentice doctor saying things like “consigning to oblivion”, for the time being Kaori put aside those straight-man retort and she whispered into Yue’s ear.

□Yue, why is Endou-kun here? Seeing his act, he is in Abyss-san state isn’t he? Is this the real thing? Or program?□

□.....Come to think of it, before this Endou was called by Hajime and visited the home, but after a while I remember he rushed out while crying.□

□Ah, I can guess.□

□.....Nn. Endou who said□NAGUMO YOU STUPID IDIOOOOOOOOOT□while exiting the home was then chased by Hajime who was making expression that couldn’t endure being there while saying□Sorry! As expected I went too far! Even I got damaged!□.....□

By the way, Abyssgate was a boss like four heavenly kings for Hauria training mode. Of course, it was a program. Though he was constantly in Abyss Lord state.

□Fuh, you two finished your discussion? You can strain your wisdom to the utmost and wield all the strength that you have. If not, the abyss will swallow everything without even any time for you to blink you know?□

A turn. An upward push on the sunglasses. And arms crosse——d!

□.....Endou. How far will he go.□

□I'm thinking once more. Emily-chan who is fighting hard alone is really not half-baked.□

Inside their heart, Yue and Kaori sent their salute with streaming tear toward Abyssgate's lovable lover who surely even now was refining her Hauria correction plan.

Recently, her very act of trying to stop the chuuni with all her might itself became Hauria clan's amusement. Their affection toward Emily was rapidly heightening but.....the pure Emily-chan who was happily saying□Recently, it feels like they became slightly better!□didn't notice it.

With faraway look, Yue and Kaori was recalling Emily who several times before this was coming to play to the home, coming to consult, coming to grumble, coming to consult, coming while crying, and coming to consult.

□Then, it's time for judgment. Kousuke E Abyssgate——here I come!□

The two quickly returned to their senses when they heard those words along with feeling the presence vanishing like a mirage.

It was mostly something that was done in subconscious level. It must be because of Kaori's deep battle experience. When she noticed, she had already turned the unsheathed Ama no Murakumo toward her back.

Instantly, a metallic sound resounded and a light impact ran on Kaori's arm.

□Yaah□

What Kaori unleashed along with that short yell was the horizontal sweep using divine sword Gram that she let out



simultaneously with her defense. The attack with its travel time shortened using Godspeed that was let out immediately following the enemy attack normally would become the height of counterattack and bisected the opponent.

However, the attack Kaori unleashed ended up slashing empty air in vain. Not only that, what entered her sight was something black——no, it was Abyssgate's kicking leg. His body leaped midair at the same instant when he attacked and he unleashed a midair spinning kick.

Even when taken aback by the tricky movement, Kaori wasted n time to lower her head and dodged. But, from below that lowered head, the opposite leg of Abyssgate approached.

□Abyss-style Assassination Martial Art – Hi'en Renkyaku(The bird of abyss resurrected three times)□(TN: Swallow Tempered Leg)

Midair he used the spring of upper body and twisted to unleashed three consecutive kicks.

Kaori's eyes opened wide. It was impossible to dodge. But, perhaps the kick would just barely graze her chin. If that happened, in front of Abysgate who likely had prepared the next move she would be attacked in a state where her brain was shaken.

□——□Wave Cutter□!□

□Muh□

A super compressed water laser flew from the side of Kaori who was bending backward in her attempt to dodge the second kick of Abyssgate. That laser was flying in a straight

line toward Abyssgate who was midair, however, it only grazed his side and passed through because his body unnaturally slid to the side.

Looking closer, the steel string that stretched out from Abyssgate's black glove was connecting his torso with a kunai that was stabbed on the ground unnoticed. It seemed, he pulled on the steel string for emergency evasion and moved his body midair.

Abyssgate performed ukemi while landing. Kaori approached such Abyssgate using godspeed and the divine sword Gram lunged in a vertical slash. \*GOU-!\* The sword that was swung down made the wind roared and mercilessly split Abyssgate into tw——

□Naive□

□Ah!?!□

The moment when Kaori thought so, the Abyssgate who seemed to be split into two divided into two clones and rushed passing through Kaori from her left and right sides.

Yue tried to rapid-fired wind blades in order to snipe the two Abyssgate, but a thrown Kunai approached Yue faster than she could attack. Furthermore, another kunai that had also been thrown unnoticed behind Yue was also flying using its trait as artifact that would return to its owner's position.

Yue who was aimed with a pincer attack from the front and back wasted no time to use gravity magic to fly and dodged the kunais. But, her offense magic was interrupted just like Abyssgate intended and his approach continued unmolested.

□I won't let you!□

□That's why, I told you that's naïve.□

Kaori spread fired silver feathers to one Abyssgate while she tried to strike at the back of the other Abyssgate with her sword, but a clone that suddenly appeared \*poof\* used its body as shield to block the silver feathers.

And then, Kaori suddenly lost her balance because her ankle was suddenly grasped. Although she at least avoided tumbling down, but she let the two Abyssgate approaching Yue to get away.

When she looked at her foot,

□——Doton - Shin'en Ryuusha□(TN: Earth Escape - Abyss Quicksand)

The figure of Abyssgate who was speaking his technique name with a smug face was underground with only his face and hand protruding out. His hand was firmly grabbing Kaori's ankle. It seemed that he had made a clone hiding underground unnoticed.

Kaori who for some reason was strangely irritated used Amano Murakumo no Tsurugi to slice half the face and arm of Abyssgate like mowing down grass. Abyssgate-san vanished with \*puff\*. Seeing that was also somewhat aggravating.

The Abyssgate that approached Yue charged from the front into super gravity space where the gravity was multiplied that Yue laid out to stop the approach. Normally any person that entered the area would be crushed by the pressure and became a stain on the ground.

But, even Abyssgate was a user of gravity magic. His body was instantly clad in black mist and he plunged deeper as though there was nothing in his way.

□.....But, Endou is unable to invoke multiple gravity magic.□

□Correct. That's why I'll do this.□

Abyssgate's capability to neutralize attack of super gravity was something that Yue was aware of. Her aim was that by using gravity magic then Abyssgate would use his own gravity magic that was his most dangerous skill to neutralize her attack, thus sealing that repertoire of his. Yue estimated that she would be able to cope against any other magic and physical attack other than that no matter what he tried to pull.

But, that was only if it was really the case that Abyssgate had the intention to attack Yue directly.

□——Doton – Shin'en Dairyuusha□(TN: Earth Escape – Abyss Great Quicksand)

Abyssgate stabbed his short sword on the ground, at the same time the ground caved-in for about the diameter of ten meter. The ground that was turned into a quicksand was crushed down because of Yue's super gravity space. Her balance crumbled and her legs only sunk down even when she tried to find her balance.

A slight opening was created. The main body of Abyssgate didn't let go of that chance.

A sword flash approached smoothly from behind Yue. She didn't feel any presence. Before she knew it her attention had left the Abyssgate that was attacked with spreading silver feathers. Even though she certainly recognized that there were two Abyssgate approaching her rapidly!

Yue's eyes opened wide. Right now when her space magic was being restrained, she couldn't use the instantaneous

space teleportation “Divine Existence”.

□This is the e——afuh!?!□

□.....Nnn!?!□

‘Will I get hit with an attack in this kind of place.....’ The moment Yue thought that, a flying Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi cut Yue’s head skin just for a tiny bit while stabbing the Abyssgate behind her.

Abyssgate just barely avoided having his vitals pierced, it was his shoulder that got hit and he got blown away.

Kaori who flew toward Yue with her silver wings unfolded took Yue out from inside the quicksand.

□Are you okay Yue?□

□.....I’m not okay. My head got cut a bit. It was cut by Kaori.□

□I, I’m sorry. The gravity magic is stronger than I thought and the sword shifted. Is your soul affected?□

□.....u. Nothing particular.□

□I’m glaaad. For now I’ll pour restoration medicine okay?□

Yue’s eyes turned a bit teary while both her hands were pressing on her head. Come to think of it, she recalled that in the past when she met Hajime, when she was controlled by a monster Hajime fired without any hesitation and her head skin was also scratched a bit by the bullet.

‘Both Hajime and Kaori are merciless on my head’, Yue leaked out a complaint inside her heart. Although, it was the fact that she was saved so she couldn’t forget to say thanks.

□Nevertheless, this is the first time I fought him but.....  
Endou-kun, he is really troublesome.□

□.....Nn. He is completely making the best use of his own special characteristic. It's not just for show that he dealt a wound fighting a serious Hajime.□

Yue and Kaori were watching Abyssgate who was pulling out Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi from his shoulder while quietly talking about their impression of him at each other.

Both of them would have received lethal attack if they didn't cover for each other.

What was terrifying was his stealth. Even though they were clashing against him right from the front, before they knew it he had abnormally slipped off from their consciousness. It wasn't in the level of presence isolation and the like. It was a divine skill that should even be called as erasure of presence, no, existence. ....It was truly sad that this hereditary trait wasn't something that the person in question wished for.

Abyssgate once said. It was the best he could do to make a single wound on the demon king. That he wasn't even able to win against the wives.

That statement was certainly not mistaken. With the exception like Liliana or Aiko, if they fought seriously, Abyssgate wouldn't be able to win against Yue, or Kaori, or Shia, or Tio, and also against Shizuku even though it was just barely against her.

However, in that statement there was these additional notes.

In the case of Yue, she would win if she bulldozed through using her automatic regeneration.

In the case of Kaori, she would win if she used disintegration ability in apostle mode while ignoring any impact on the surrounding.

In the case of Shia, she would win if she used body hardening and blood manipulation to use the strategy of stabbing each other at the same time.

In the case of Tio, she would win if she used vast range annihilation in black god dragon mode.

In Shizuku's case, she would win if she created a sword world of several hundred black katana in Limit Break state.

Yes, anyone, even the veteran cheat group couldn't fight directly against Abyssgate's stealth tactic and his greatest trump card—attacking in waves using a thousand clones. There was a high possibility that they would be defeated before displaying their power if they didn't use something cheat-like like blowing away the whole surrounding area in one go or bulldozing through using specs difference.

Therefore, he was the right-hand man of the demon king. Therefore, he nonchalantly got categorized among mankind's strongest class.

The expression of Yue and Kaori who got that fact thrust before them once more was bitter.

Abyssgate faced those two and sneered "Fuh". He must be wanting to say that this was the beginning of the second round. Clones were materializing. The number was increasing than before. His strength and the painfulness of his speech and act were increasing following the depth of the abyss.

He was really a troublesome boss character.

And so, the two chose to annihilate the whole area.

□Mu? Where are you two going?□

Ahead of the gaze of Abyssgate who was looking up, there were the figures of the flying Kaori and Yue. Their hands were full with the MP recovery medicine that they had purchased by quite a lot.

What materialized at the next moment were five heavenly dragons and innumerable number of silver feathers. In addition, a silver sun and a sun of azure flame materialized overhead.

—He couldn't be defeated without bulldozing through by force. Speaking in reverse, if they were in an environment where bulldozing through was possible, he could be easily defeated.

□.....I'm glad this is a game.□

□You're right.□

The silver feathers and flame bullets for air bombing kept increasing without end. The five heavenly dragons growled while the sun of silver and sun of azure flame were enlarging.

Abyssgate who saw that was,

□No, aren't those a bit no good?□

The next moment, the scene of the end of the century manifested on the ground.



The earth that was plowed by the saturation attack could be mistaken as the scene of hell. The figure of the collapsed Abyssgate smoldering with rising smoke was lying there. He was dispersing into red particles just like an enemy character. It seemed that he was completely knocked out.

Yue and Kaori landed down beside such Abyssgate and they walked near his head to examine the situation.

□.....He is twitching.□

□It's amazing he still has complete limbs even after all that.□

'If this is in reality then he will be scattered all over the place', Kaori said such gang-like line with a cute face.

Abyssgate who was still barely conscious because of the game mechanism turned his gaze toward such two and he opened his mouth.

□Ku-ku-ku-, I'm the weakest one even among the four heavenly kings. I'm merely a disgrace of the demon king village.....□

□Eh, you are saying such thing yourself?□

□.....Hajime, brutal.□

Hajime-san who set this up was seriously savage, retorted Yue inside her heart. Surely this was the fault of the bug.

Abyssgate wrung out his last strength and pointed out with a trembling hand.

Yue and Kaori were on guard in case he was planning something at the end, but Abyssgate's fingertip was

pointing ahead of the highway.

□If you circle around that forest along the highway, you will be able to see the demon king village.□

It seemed he gave them the road direction.

The hand fell down limply. Abyssgate was vanishing into dust.

□Anyway, let's go there for now.□

□.....Nn□

Both of them started walking. They didn't look back.

About five minutes since they walked following the highway, when they circled the forest, it was just as Abyssgate said, they could see a tranquil village that was surrounded by wooden fence.

It was a small scale village with a calm atmosphere. It had scenery that was fitting for the next village after the village of beginning.

If there wasn't the figures of people in front of the entrance that looked like a lovely arch made from wood.

□.....□

□.....□

Yue and Kaori shared the feeling of 'somehow, I really don't want to go there huuh'. But those people over there were looking here. They were looking awfully intensely here.

Yes, the rabbit eared person leaning on the pillar of lovely wooden arch with arms crossed and face sporting a nihilistic

smile for some reason, and a masked pink, and a black dragon who was there for some reason despite the place being a village, and a man riding on the back of that dragon sporting a smile that looked like a demon king, they all were looking really intensely at Yue and Kaori.

For the time being, they tried to approach.

An intense pressure and \*GOGOGOGO-\* sound were emitted from the man. An atmosphere that gave the skin goosebumps was drifting in the area. The wind of battlefield was flowing viscously. A monstrous presence that wasn't inferior even compared to the real thing. By the point of time one confronted this man, don't mention defeat, that person would instead be given the premonition of death.

This was without a doubt, the last boss. The demon king.

Yue and Kaori who were made to understand that whether they wanted it or not finally arrived nearby, and the demon king opened his mouth with an expression that looked mocking toward the challengers.

□Welcome, I am the village chief of the demon king village.□

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I watched Sniper: Special Ops.

Seagal-sama.....

Anyway, I got a better opinion of Under Siege and Under Siege 2.

# **Arifureta After II It's All Peachy If You Just Win-!!**

The demon king village was a tranquil place that was surrounded with splendid wooden fence. The entrance that depicted a lovely arch could be seen as casually conveying the will "We greatly welcome other people than villager too" of the village chief.

As for its scale it was about twice as big as the village of beginning. There might be around three hundred people living there. There was a conspicuously large tower at the middle of the village, a cross was attached at its summit. Surely that was the church. That was Yue and Kaori's destination.

But, they wouldn't be able to reach there that easily. There was one reason for that.

Because the demon king village's village chief-san and four heavenly king-san were standing in their way with a somewhat awesome atmosphere!

"I won't let you two lay your hand on the village. Criminal Yue-pon and accomplice Kaori. You can choose, will you surrender obediently, or get punched flying."

The village chief who was meaninglessly emitting pressure \*GOGOGOGO-\* on the back of the gallant black dragon was saying that. It seemed in order to protect the villagers, the chief village was planning to punish the two criminals scheming bad thing right here.

It seemed the village chief of demon king village was treasuring his village and villagers.

The black dragon cried 「Gu~ruru♪」 in agreement looking like she was somewhat having fun. The rabbit eared girl fluttered her rabbit ears \*fuaasaa-\*, and the pink ranger..... the pink ranger was standing still without even a twitch. It was as though she was saying 「I want to be a shellfish」.

All of them were in a really motivated state!

Yue stared at the fearlessly grinning village chief and for a moment she showed a gesture as though thinking of something, and a beat later, she rolled up her sleeves completely looking as though she wanted to say 「Just bring it on~」 while returning back a fearless smile.

Seeing Yue walking forward, Kaori stopped her in panic.

「Geez-, Yue. Why are you that belligerent since we came here! There is an option of surrendering here, and by any chance perhaps we will be able to go to the church without fighting isn't it?」

「.....Fuh」

「Just now, why did you laugh? Heey, why did you laugh I wonder? I wonder?」

Kaori's Hannya-san almost came out looking at Yue scornful laugh that was making fun of her, but there she swallowed

back her anger with an effort and she cleared her throat while pulling herself together. And then, she faced the village chief and opened her mouth.

□Err, Haji——not, village chief-san. If we surrender can you let us go to the church? If possible, we don't to fight.....□

For the moment, Kaori attempted to negotiate in accordance with the game's setting but,

□.....Fuh□

□Just now, why did you laugh? Heey, Hajime-kun. Just now, why did you laugh I wonder!?□

She was laughed at scornfully and made fun of with an expression that was exactly like Yue. Kaori-san was enraged with her forehead sporting a blood vein.

□No negotiation against criminal. Death or Destroy-! That is the international common sense!□

□The village chief of a remote village talking about international common sense is.....□

Kaori became despondent when she heard the unhesitating declaration of the village chief-san.

□.....Kaori. Stop being so unsightly by trying to negotiate after this late. We are criminal! Blowing up anyone who stand in our way and devoting ourselves to plunder until exhaustion are our duty!□

□I don't think that I'm someone so nasty to the level of a defiant criminal. Or rather, can you stop casually saying "we" to include even me as a criminal I wonder!? After all it's Yue who is the culprit for all the charges isn't it!?□

Kaori's straight-man act was well executed. However, Yue-sama paid it no mind. She took a step forward and held up one hand forward, then her fingertip bent and made a challenging gesture as though to say 'come and get me'.

Ignoring Kaori who was holding her head, the members of demon king village also showed their motivation in respond to the provocation.

But, there, the rabbit eared girl came forward alone.

□Chief-sama. Chief-sama himself doesn't need to be troubled only to keep company bunches of this level. I'll take care of them. Together with pink ranger!□

□!?!□

It was the common pattern. For some reason pink ranger turned her head to the rabbit eared girl in a flash with an air as though to say □Eh, me too!?!□ though.

□Hou, not a bad idea. Then I'll leave it to the rabbit ear and pink ranger. Teach them that the nicknames □Or rather, this girl cannot get hit with bullet though, seriously. This buggy rabbit□ and □The most wicked urban legend of the empire□ aren't just for show.□

□Roger desuu! .....Eh, just now, was I nonchalantly got dissed?□

□.....□

The rabbit ear girl reflexively stopped moving and looked back, while pink ranger was covered with dark cloud absentmindedly as though she was remembering a black history. The village chief sent a brief glance at such two before the black dragon flew to the sky with him still riding

it. It seemed that he would treat himself with being a spectator from up high.

The rabbit ears and pink ranger pulled themselves back together and they each took out a huge war hammer and black katana and they took their stance.

From looking it seemed that pink ranger wasn't motivated, but the strength of these two was the authentic article. From the point of view of Kaori who thoroughly knew that, it made her get cold sweat that they were fighting these two in this condition where they had no number advantage.

Naturally her expression stiffened while she pulled out Gram and Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi.

□These are, powerful enemies.□

No reply came against Kaori's words. In exchange what could be heard was □Sooi□ a stupid voice of throwing something. What was flying was a super compressed flame bullet the size of a fist. The speed was as fast as a bullet in contrast with that throwing voice.

□How cheeky desuuu——uu?□

The rabbit eared girl must be trying to send it flying with her war hammer attack. The rabbit eared girl faced the flame bullet and launched a horizontal full swing.

But, the flame bullet showed an unexpected movement there. It put on the emergency brakes and the next instant it flew high to the sky.

The rabbit eared girl unconsciously showed an astonished expression wondering 'Just where could she be aiming at?', but right after that, her expression became twitching.



□Eh, ah, wait, Yue!?□

Kaori's uneasy voice resounded, but leaving that aside, the flame bullet drastically angled down and changed its trajectory even further and it quickly hit the target.

Grand explosive sound reverberated, a terrific fire pillar rose up.

——From a corner of the village

It felt like the time of the world stopped. Both the rabbit eared girl and the pink ranger, and the even the black dragon and the village chief, they were looking at the flame blast behind them with widely opened mouth. Naturally, Kaori was also the same. Screams were resounding from the village.

□.....Fumu. Although this is a game, but even in a boss fight the village isn't turned into immortal object or no entry zone.□

A voice that sounded profoundly understanding, and lovely, and in a certain sense terrifying was resounding in the area excessively clearly.

Kaori who returned to her senses with a 'hah' made a grand straight-man retort without even hiding her convulsing face.

□Wha wha wha wha, what are you doing Yue!? Are you stupid!? Do you want to die!? This sister-san with a screw loose!□

□.....Calm down Kaori. I only blew up a corner of the village a bit.□

□That wasn't a bit! You cannot throw away your ethics just because this is a game you know!? If you don't stop this, I'll get seriously angry here!□

Kaori raised an angry yell 'Ugaa——' that was unlike her, however, Yue shrugged her shoulders as though wanting to say □good grief this little girl□. A pulsing blood vein emerged on Kaori's forehead. Hannya-san was standing by~.

With a gentle expression, Yue started to explain kindly, carefully, and thoroughly as though she was talking with a dull-witted child.

□.....Are you listening, Kaori? No matter what kind of time and situation it is, it's no good unless you are thinking from the view point of your opponent.□

□At the very least, I understand really well the rage of the villagers who suddenly got bombed.□

Yue-san beautifully ignored Kaori's retort. She pointed her index finger straight up and began lecturing. Kaori was directing a fixed glare that was at the same level of Yue. As for the village chief followed by the four heavenly kings, they were also listening carefully in interest.

□.....Even if it's a demon king that show up in a game, but why is he fighting? What is his objective?□

□Eh? That's.....if it's normally then it's to conquer the world, something like that? In order to become a ruler is the royal road isn't it?□

□.....Exactly. In order to obstruct that, the hero and his party will try to defeat the demon king. Sometimes they will do illegal entry into civilian's home, they will rummage around as they please, steal, if there is anyone who stand in their

way they will murder them even if it's against their fellow human, in a boss fight they will lynch the single opponent with numbers. Under the name of justice! Under the name of justice-! You are mistaken! I am in the right! Because this is justice!□

□That's a terrible prejudice.....but I cannot say anything seeing I cannot completely deny that.□

Perhaps recalling of someone in the past, pink ranger looked up to the sky.

□Eerr, I don't dare to believe this but, if it's for the sake of defeating the village chief of demon king village then doing anything is fine because you are justice——don't tell me that's what you want to say?□

□.....Do you think I'm a hero? How impolite. Cough-. We are off topic, but in other words what I actually want to say is, fighting from the front is not the only way to exterminate the demon king.□

□Sorry, I completely don't get what do you want to say.□

'You still don't get it.....', Yue-sama lifted up both her hands like westerners in exasperation. Kaori was a child that had self-control. She unconsciously lifted up her Gram but she immediately lowered it back down.

□.....If you think from the viewpoint of the demon king, the demon king want the world and that's why he will fight even the heinous hero squadron alone. Then, in order to win against the demon king without fighting, you just need to erase his reason for fighting.□

□.....Yue. Right now, I'm feeling so much goosebumps here. My feeling is like someone who have discovered a madness

inside their friend here.□

Kaori who was feeling astonished hugged herself with both hands as though wanting to say that she was looking at a scary person. The rabbit eared girl and pink ranger, and the black dragon were also having the same reaction from hearing this talk. Their expression was like someone who had seen the darkness deep inside the heart of their loved one. Even the village chief-sama was holding his head at his wits end.

Amidst that, Yue created countless explosive super compressed flame bullet while speaking her conclusion with a smug face.

□.....The demon king said. I want the world. In that case, it's fine if the world is just destroyed beforehand.□

See, there wouldn't be any reason to fight anymore after that right?

Yue puffed up her chest 'ahem' with a cute face, but her idea was extremely disturbing. I won't let you conquer the world! Before you can, I will destroy the world first without fail!

Indeed, the village chief of demon king village said it. 'I won't let you two lay your hand on the village'. He fought for that. That was why, if the village was destroyed then he would lose any reason to fight. This was truly a stylish demon king extermination. Crush not the body, but the very purpose itself!

Anyway, first thing first Kaori, rabbit eared girl, pink ranger, and the black dragon, they all simultaneously,

□Yue you demon-!!□

□Yue-san you psychopathhh!!□

□Rather, you are an evil god!□

□The husband is like this, and the wife too!?!□

Hurled their straight-man retort.

Yue-sama wouldn't listen to mere words of the rabble. She floated up with gravity magic, made countless exploding super compressed flame bullets floating around her, and she spread out her hands widely.

She was truly overflowing with majesty like a demon king, with a fearless smile on her lips, and clear sadistic glint in her eyes. Like that she said,

□It's all peachy if you just win-!!□

Meteor shower rained down to destroy the world(village).

The rabbit eared girl and pink ranger screamed 'WAAAAAAH' while running around to intercept the flame bullets, and then the black dragon hurriedly participate in the battle. Seeing them like that, it seemed that it was really as expected that if the village which was a protection target was destroyed then it would be the defeat of the village chief's side.

□.....Take this and thi~s, and this this and thi~s♪ The village will perish if you don't try harder you know~. If any of you dodge or charge forward, then I'm sorry but I'll happily use the opening to destroy the village! Fu-fufu~nofu~~♪□

□Yue-san you fieeend! You bruteeee!□

□Aaahm geez-. That's why I don't want to do this~~~□

□Oooi, Goshujin-sama! Thy first wife art rampaging here! Do something about it!□

Flame bullets that were carrying terrific power densely approached like a volley of gatling gun, furthermore every single shot was flying randomly following complicated trajectory. If they dodged then the village would be blown up, if they charged forward and the defense line was broken then the village would instantly return to ash.

If Yue used one hit kill attack, the lightning dragon for example to send flying the rabbit eared girl, during that time pink ranger would rush to bring the battle into close quarter combat, but because Yue understood that she attacked with barrage of bullet.

She was merrily firing around like crazy, but the storm of magic she unleashed was delicate and possessed lethal destructive power. It was an artistic special move.

The village chief was going to join into the battle soon, it was at that time,

□Sto, stop screwiing, AROUN~~~~D!□

□.....Nmii!?□

The vertical slash of Gram (flat side) from Kaori-san who was flying in godspeed burst on the crown of Yue's head. The magic dispersed and Yue fell while making a strange cry. Perhaps she bit her tongue because her hands were pressing on her mouth and her eyes became teary while she was rolling around on the ground.

□.....Ka, Kaorii. What are you doinggg!□

□That's my line. This is too fiendish! Even though this is a game, but this is still too problematic for a human!□

The black dragon glanced at the village chief. Village chief averted his eyes.

Kaori huffed in anger, but even while in that state she carried Yue who was still teary eyed under her arm.

□Even without doing that, we can still go toward the church without fighting! We can enter the village with my godspeed!□

It seemed Kaori planned to breakthrough using super speed. She was determined to shake off the enemies and slipped into the church.

Yue opened her mouth to say something, but Kaori's godspeed was invoked faster than that.

This skill that made it possible to shorten the very time to move from point A to point B itself so the user could move in super speed, if it was in a straight line it could surpass even the speed of railgun bullet.

Against this speed that was beyond the pale of the perception ability of living thing in general, it would be beyond anyone's power to lay their hand on the user without using external aid like magic or artifact, or preparing a special plan beforehand.

Once, even the apostles of that god were unable to even perceive this speed. The cheat of this skill was already proved.....

(Eh, no way-)

(.....Even though I was going to say that it was impossible)

In this world of godspeed, putting aside Yue who was sticking close to Kaori, any outsider should be unable to perceive her.

With the exception of just one person.

Indeed, pink ranger didn't even twitch, the focus of the black dragon's eyes were also still fixed at the spot where Kaori was at before. Though the village chief was looking at far away melancholically, but anyway, he wasn't following Kaori's movement.

But, it was only the gaze of the rabbit eared girl—that was following Kaori.

A chill shuddered through Kaori's body, in that moment the ground under the rabbit eared girl exploded. The rabbit eared girl rapidly approached as though in a frame-by-frame playback!

If this was a race in a straight line where the two started from the same starting point, there was no way for the rabbit eared girl to win against godspeed. But, if it was just cutting into the path of an opponent that was approaching from the opposite side, it wasn't something impossible.

As though to proof that, when Kaori noticed there was a war hammer's hitting surface approaching before her eyes.

□Fuwah!?!□

Kaori unconsciously raised a strange scream while bending backward like a limbo dance to evade the war hammer. The war hammer passed above her head along with the sound as



though the air exploded. Kaori's expression was twitching grandly.

But, she dodged. She immediately returned her posture from the limbo dance state and without paused she rushed.....

A shadow loomed above. Obeying the warning her instinct was ringing at her, Kaori leaped to the side using godspeed. If she escaped forward, she judged that surely she would be hit by shockwave from behind and got blown away.

That was the correct move. It was unclear how, but after Kaori dodged using limbo dance she should have taken distance of several meter in an instant with her godspeed, yet the rabbit eared girl who seemed to have catch up swung down her war hammer from behind Kaori.

The impact smashed the ground and the shockwave surged forward like a tsunami.

It was a bad move for Kaori that her legs unconsciously stopped moving. \*DOU-\* When she could hear that sound of the ground exploding, the rabbit eared girl was approaching toward her front with a movement that was exactly like an instant teleportation.

(Godspeed——!?)

Kaori evaded while at the same time moving toward the village without pause. Certainly the rabbit eared girl was fast, but now they were side by side. If she could keep rushing forward toward the village like this, she would be able to shake off the rabbit eared girl. Kaori thought that, but the moment her leg stepped forward to advance, she caught sight of an iron ball approaching right from the side toward the position she would be going to and her legs reflexively stopped.

Just from where in the world it came from? Naturally the rabbit eared girl kicked it out almost at the same time when Kaori stepped forward. The iron ball that moved from the explosive leg strength was already the same like a cannon.

It was natural for Kaori to stop moving from the sense of danger, and then, as long as there was just that one moment it was enough for the rabbit eared girl.

(Ah, this is, no good——)

(.....I think it's pointless though.)

She got caught. Kaori who was convinced so resolved herself and she lifted her hand to use Gram as shield. There, Yue whose aura seemed resigned churned her magic power.

The next moment, Kaori and Yue's figure vanished and then materialized a few meter ahead.

It was Yue's instantaneous space teleportation magic "Divine Existence". Actually the skill was liberated after they got the better of Abyssgate. Although, because the skill was only liberated just now, it was affixed with use limitation and the distance it could possibly travel was around 5~7 meter.

This time too they moved to a spot five meter away from the rabbit eared girl but.....

□Eh, Shia is——□

□-, Divine Existence-□

The rabbit eared girl wasn't at the previous spot, and instantly, a shadow loomed overhead. Yue instantly invoked Divine Existence and teleported further five meter to the side.

And then,

□Whyyy!?!□

The rabbit eared girl-san was right before their eyes. The war hammer was raised up.

□Nnn-, Divine Existence□

More teleport! However, they were circled by the rabbit eared girl.

Further teleport! But rabbit eared girl was beside them!

Desperate teleport! Failed to escape from rabbit eared girl-san!

Even though they should be teleporting completely randomly, it was as though the opponent understood where would they teleport to right from the start, the distance of five meter was instantly filled and they were circled around!

□Ah, I see, it's Future Sight!?!□

□No? I'm not using it you know?□

Kaori pointed out that the method of calculating their current position was using the rabbit eared girl-san's characteristic magic, but the person herself simply denied that while swinging her war hammer. It was barely dodged using teleport. Although this time there was a slight distance between them, but it didn't change that their path was blocked and they were circled around.

□Then, how do you know our position!?!□

Kaori reflexively asked so, to which the rabbit eared girl-san smiled cheerfully,

□Instinct-!!□

And answered so.

Reacting against a speed that surpassed railgun bullet speed, and calculating the materializing position of instantaneous space teleportation using only instinct before circling around that position.

□.....This is the bugged rabbit's way of doing thing with the bugged rabbit's characteristic after all.□

The eyes of Yue who was saying that tiredly was looking at far away as though she was escaping reality somewhat.

Kaori had never fought Shia directly. She sometimes saw her training, saw her easily dodging Hajime's bullet and had easygoing thought 'how amazing~', but now that she faced her for real she understood well her dangerousness.

Try to imagine this.

A heavily armored tank that possessed a destructive power that was literally a one hit certain death, able to trickily move around with a speed that could dodge even electromagnetically accelerated bullet. In addition, that tank was equipped with automatic repair function, could jump around until the sky, and able to accurately find enemy position whether they were trying to hide or teleport. To say more, a future prediction would automatically activate in respond to an attack that would directly connect to its death, so surprise attack wouldn't work at all.

It was a nightmare.

Even that demon king was made to lament like this, □I don't want to earnestly fight only against that girl. There is no way

to defeat her other than using plan to checkmate her. Or rather, when I accompanied her training before this, Donner's bullet got caught barehanded by her.....now that she doesn't even need to dodge, just what should I do huh□.

By the way, after that training Hajime was improving his artifact's specs bit by bit. A demon king that was desperately increasing his strength because he was cornered by his wife.....it was really surreal.

□.....It's suicidal to do something like fighting Shia and others in this state where our ability is restricted. That's why, I thought to checkmate her while the game's setting is still in effect. And yet, Kaori you stupiid□

□Uu. But, Yue was just too much of a fiend, that was why.....□

If it was Yue in full power going all out then she would still manage somehow against Shia. However, right now she was in a state where finally Divine Existence could be used with limit. It was also difficult to declare that the space magic itself was fully usable.

The point was, it was a situation of "level insufficient to clear the stage".

However, there was no way the enemies would give anymore opening that would let them make an unavoidable attack by taking the village hostage. The enemies weren't that naïve that the same method would work more than once.

'Is this stalemate.....'

When Kaori was thinking that, she heard a sigh that leaked out from Yue.

□.....I don't want to use this move though.□

□Eh, you still have some kind of plan?□

The reliable Yue-sama. Kaori's eyes shined.

□Uh huh□Yue nodded half-heartedly, however, she was making a really lovely smile in contrast of that. It was a lovely smiling face that was sadistically bright.

□.....Some time ago, Shizuku secretly tried on frilly gothic Lolita clothes.□

□!□

The sudden words caused pink ranger to move her face in alert toward Yue as though to say □How did you!?□.

Everyone else were directing their gaze to pink ranger as though to say □Eh, seriously?□.

□.....When it was Shia's turn for washing laundry, she would sniff Hajime's laundry once without fail before putting it inside the washing machine.□

□!□

The rabbit eared girl's rabbit ears stood up straight as though saying □How did you!?□. Everyone else were directing their gaze to her as though to say □Eh, seriously?□.

□.....Recently, Tio was starting to write poem.□

□!□

The black dragon's eyes opened wide as though to say□How did you?□. Everyone else were directing their gaze to her as though to say □Eh, seriously?□.

Yue smirked broadly while declaring toward the girls who were like that.

□.....I am Yue. The first wife who grasp everything of the wive~s.□

She was implicitly saying, □If you don't want the happily embarrassing this and that get exposed even further, you understand what should you do, don't you?□.

In that place where dead silence had returned, it was pink ranger who made the first move.

She plucked off her own mask and then threw it away strongly toward the ground. And then, she collapsed all of a sudden.

□Pink ranger received critical hit. Pink ranger died.□

She even said such narration by herself.

The rabbit eared girl who saw that was trembling while raising her voice.

□Uu, Yue-san you cowaaard! Fight fairly and squarely desuu!□

The rabbit eared girl pointed sharply with her finger, in respond to that Yue-sama,

□It's all peachy if you just win-!□

She answered so while puffing up her chest. The rabbit eared girl collapsed spread-eagled on the ground. □I won't forget this desuuu□Such curse could be heard from her.

Yue's gaze caught the black dragon.

□Nu, nuguu.....□

The black dragon moaned and hesitated of what to do. Toward such black dragon, Yue-sama averted her gaze a bit, and she spoke with her cheeks slightly reddening.

□.....Tio, you was cute. You are really a maiden.□

□Thou read it!? Mine book!?!□

□.....Honestly, I'm sorry. But, before this you have the previous offense of reading my diary as you pleased, so we are even with this.□

□NuguoOOOOOH, it's just so embarrassingg□

The writhing black dragon then laid upside down and used both her front legs to cover both her eyes and then she stopped moving.

□Wha, what violence of words.....this is terrible.□

Kaori turned a shuddering expression toward her partner. Rather, an uneasy thought 'Does she know something embarrassing about me too?' was descending on her mind.

Yue-sama glanced at Kaori. She smiled pleasantly. Kaori grabbed at Yue while saying□What's the meaning of your smile!?!□, but even when she shook Yue's body back and forth, Yue was only smiling. Kaori's unease was only swelling up instead seeing that smile.

□Aa~, somehow this development is completely different from what I imagined.....but in a sense, perhaps I should say as expected of Yue?□



The village chief-san finally came out. His voice came from the sky sounding like he was exasperated, but also in admiration, with a really speechless expression filled with complicated feeling.

□.....Nn. As expected I cannot fight everyone. It's only natural that I will aim for a victory without fighting. The leftover strength that I can preserve——can be used to fight Hajime to my heart's content.□

□Nn? You want to fight me? I completely thought that you will also target me with verbal attack that I'm really staying on guard here though.□

The village chief-san tilted his head in puzzlement, which in respond Yue grabbed Kaori's hand and she answered.

□.....Nn. This is a rare chance, so a battle for the last. I think it's also fine to test how far can I go in a tag team with Kaori.□

□Eh, Yue?□

Kaori looked at Yue in surprise. Yue turned her gaze toward Kaori and asked □What do you think?□.

□.....Hmm, I guess. We *also don't need to worry about anything* already, let's go all out for the end!□

□.....Nn!□

Yue and Kaori touched their fist at each other in a display of their motivation. Their words caused the village chief to notice that the two *had noticed* and he made a wry smile.

Seeing Yue and Kaori who looked like they were having fun as though they were going to participate in the event that

would be the last enjoyment of the day after this, the village chief started to manipulate the floating display near his hand.

Yue and Kaori were enveloped in gentle light. Next, two large swords materialized in front of Kaori, they stabbed smoothly into the ground. They were a black demon sword and a white holy sword. They were Kaori's exclusive artifacts——  
□Demon Sword of Circle Calamity Anima Ernte□ and □Holy Sword of Gospel Bel Rexion□.

Yue herself felt her magic power overflowing from her body which became a golden undulation that whirled visibly outside. Her hairs that were fluttering gently and her shining eyes that looked like garnet wordlessly displayed that she was in her perfect state.

□Originally this is a space for training. There is no need for even a shred of reservation or mercy. Well then, let's play a bit grandly before the dinner.□

\*jakin\* What was taken out with such sound was Donner & Schlag. Their form that was emitting crackling sparks was truly ominous.

□Come, sister with a screw loose, and the village chief's regrettable daughter?□

The provoking words of the demon king village's chief caused the two to have blood vein pulsing on their forehead and,

□□Bring it on-!!□□

They replied with words that also sounded belligerent.

The stage was the sky.

The village chief who was flying around in the air with crimson ripples spreading from him was cornered by the splendid combination of the villager girl who was flying in godspeed with silver wings spread out, and the apprentice sister who had three layers of halo ring behind her and five heavenly dragons obeying her command.

Meteor shower of bullets streamed like a shower in the sky, giving rise to the profuse blooming of flowers of flame blast.

□Oo, Hajime-san is not just using Cross Velt, he even started using Grim Reapers.□

□Everyone is going at it seriously. Even though they understand that they won't die, isn't this a bit too extreme?□

□Sometimes going wild like that art also necessary. After all they couldst not really cut loose in earth.□

Shia and Shizuku and Tio had gathered before anyone knew it. They were watching the battle while sitting on the ground while grasping their knees. They were absentmindedly staring at the battle of the three.

Just as Shizuku said, they wouldn't die in this space, even so the extremely radical battle caused them the spectators to be in suspense with their heart pounding, but.....

They understood from watching.

□.....They look like they are having fun.□

□.....Right.□

Both Yue and Kaori looked like they were really having fun. On top of that, the combination of the two was harmonizing further into godly level. It was as though they were

practicing dancing to the same beat for real, which made anyone who watched would want to shout "Oooh" in admiration, the two were exhibiting such artistic techniques and tactics one after another.

Actually, from some time ago Tio had been going "Ooh, amazing! There! Go!" completely as a spectator.

But, both Shia and Shizuku seemed to be in a slightly different state,

".....Muu, I will be able to match the rhythm more skillfully there. For Yue-san, doing it like this, like boring inside will be better."

".....Yue is also too soft there. In that setting Kaori have the habit of going to the right. Even though if it's me I will be able to do it in the way that makes it easier for Kaori."

For some reason the two were pouting a bit with an expression that didn't find the show enjoyable. Perhaps they were jealous toward someone. And from their words it could be easily guessed who was the target of their feeling.

Even while there was a fierce battle going on the sky, the voices of "Kaori you stupiid~", or "Yue you idiooot~" insulting at each other could be heard from below. Each time they found something to be dissatisfied about from each other's movement, they would quarrel with each other, but even that quarrel itself looked like they were having fun somehow.

And then, each time Shia and Shizuku saw that, they would pout "Muu" again.

"It's really wonderful that they are getting along well."

After glancing at Shia and Shizuku, Tio turned her gaze toward Yue and Kaori in the sky. Tio who were looking at both sides in order then whispered with a gentle tone.

A while after that, the showy extreme game continued until the magic power and bullet that were prepared by the setting ran out.

The hazy consciousness surfaced from the pleasant shaking and the voice of their beloved calling their name.

□.....Nnu□

□au?□

Yue who opened her eyes slightly absentmindedly looked at the face of Kaori which was in front of her eyes. Kaori was also staring in a daze at the face of Yue who was in front of her.

□.....I'm sorry, Kaori. I have no interest of that way.□

□That's a terrible misunderstanding. I also don't have an interest of that way. Yue you idiot.□

Perhaps they were slightly half-asleep, it seemed they were thinking that the other was crawling into their bed.

□Don't sleep talk, wake up.□

When their gaze followed the direction of where the voice came from, there was the figure of Hajime looking down at

Yue and Kaori there. The two blinked their eyes repeatedly and then when they looked around, they understood that they were in Hajime's underground workshop. Not just Hajime, there were also Shia, Shizuku, and also Tio there.

Hajime laughed a bit while talking to the waking up duo.

□There should be no problem, but both of you, do you feel anything strange in your body?□

□.....Nn. Nothing particular.□

□Yep, I'm also fine here. ....I see, we came back.□

They had returned from the world game back to reality. Kaori who took in that fact let out a sigh of relieve.

□Yeah, that's right. I was surprised you know? When I came home, both of you were sleeping in this kind of place, you two wouldn't wake up, and when I investigated the game was activated.□

□Uu, I'm sorry Hajime-kun. Looks like the game device broke because of our carelessness. When we noticed we were taken in already.□

□Looks like it.□

Hajime shrugged his shoulders to tell her to not mind it. Yue looked over the workshop and asked.

□.....As I thought, only Endo was a program?□

Hajime answered positive to that question.

Actually, Hajime, Shia, Shizuku, and Tio who appeared at the end of the game were the same like Yue and Kaori. They were the real people who were diving into the game.

It seemed Yue and Kaori weren't really conscious of the time, but the time was already evening right now, Hajime who was in the middle of going home accidentally met up with Shizuku who had taken care of her family business and was heading toward the Nagumo residence. The two of them then went home together. Right after that, Tio's group also returned home.

They woken up the droopy Shia who was still sleeping like a log even when the sun had set, searched for Yue and Kaori who weren't anywhere and when they tried looking at the underground workshop, they found the two collapsing on the floor.

When they investigated, it became clear that the game device was malfunctioning and taking in the two.

At that point, it was when the two had finished their series of random encounters and were walking on the highway. At that time Hajime was pretty much able to quickly make the two returned to reality if he wanted but,

□Why didn't you do that then?□

□The two of you looked like you were having a lot of fun. Besides——□

Recently Yue's use of magic (offense magic instead of handy magic) was remarkably few, perhaps it was because of that her trigger of offense magic inside the game became really light.

When Hajime investigated the game log, he saw that Yue destroyed the church right after she entered the game. Hajime thought that perhaps, was she stressed out from living inconspicuously in earth although it didn't show up in her surface? Thinking that this was a chance that was hard

to come by, Hajime decided to continue the game so Yue could cut loose once in a while.

To say more,

□About this game device, I'm especially paying attention to its safety. That's why, originally it's impossible for it to absorb the surrounding people by its own just from it falling a bit. And yet, for it to malfunction and get bugged like this——Kaori, you are the cause.□

□Eh!? Me!?!□

□Yes. This is just my guess, but when this device hit you, I think you unconsciously used your disintegration ability at that time. You used it for just an instant, and it was really only a slight activation, but a part of the safety mechanism along with the magic power in it were dispersed because of that.□

□Wa, was that true?□

□Yeah. Even for just an instant but it was still disintegration magic. Even though it was an incident, but you unconsciously activated that kind of atrocious thing, to put it another way your control was sloppy——Kaori, you are too much of a peace idiot.□

□Hauuua!?!□

Hajime's exasperated pointing out caused Kaori to crouch in guilt and shame. Yue poked at her repeatedly while dealing additional blow □.....Kaori is too loose~, your stomach is also too loose~□. □My stomach isn't flabby-□ Kaori objected back in reflex.



And so, in order to disperse Yue's possible stress, and admonished Kaori's peace complacency, Hajime used Abyssgate program in order to buy time while he and the others finished their preparation and dived in inside the game.

□Well, though it seemed that Yue saw through that we weren't program right away.□

□.....Nn. Naturally. A program and the real Hajime, there is no way I'll mistake between the two even just for an instant.□

□Uu, even I noticed it right away.□

By the way, Kaori noticed after she saw Hajime's reaction against Yue's violence. Kaori's expression turned complicated. perhaps she felt vexed of losing against Yue.

Seeing such Kaori, Yue rubbed the salt on the wound once more, Kaori made her rebuttal against that, and then they started going into a fight like usual.

But, there an amused chuckle interrupted them. When the two who were glaring at each other turned their gaze over there, they found the figure of Hajime chuckling with a really pleasant expression looking at them.

□No, really. The two of you get along well huh.□

Even though they were going to start quarrelling for real just now, but why was his impression toward them was like that instead? Yue and Kaori tilted their head in puzzlement, to which Hajime pointed at the hand of the two while saying.

□When you two collapsed, the two of you were hugging each other so strongly as though you two absolutely wouldn't let

go of each other. Look, even now you two are holding hand without any sign of letting go.□

□.....Nn?□

□Eh?□

Hearing Hajime pointing out so, Yue and Kaori gazed at their own hand. Indeed, they were tightly grasping each other's hand. What's more it was what was commonly referred to as lover hand holding with how their fingers were interlocked with the other's fingers.

When push came to shove they covered for each other faster than they could think, and when it came into battle they displayed action that was dancing to the same beat, and even when they quarreled they snuggled close to each other naturally.

What could these two be called other than intimate friend? Seen from the view point of a certain demography of people, there were already lily flowers blooming profusely at their background.

'This is involuntary-!' As though to say that, the two let go of each other's hand hurriedly, but before the two could speak out any complaint or excuse, the two were pulled backward strongly. At the same time, their face got buried \*mofu-\* into a soft place.

□Kaori-san, I'll say this in advance, but Yue-san is my Yue-san. I am her number one best friend! Be aware of that, thank-you-ve-ry-muchh! Desuu!!□

□Yue. Don't meddle with my Kaori too much. After all I'm Kaori's number one best friend. Be aware of that, thank-you-ve-ry-muchh!□

Shia and Shizuku sullenly glared at the other with Yue and Kaori who were gasping for breaths from their face getting buried into the voluminous chest of the two were in between them. It seemed they were respectively feeling a bit jealous that their best friend was going to be taken away.

□Nou, Goshujin-sama. While this sight art something commonplace, I'm feeling really alienated here, what shouldst I do?□

□.....Should I step on you?□

□!? This damned Goshujin-sama-. I love thee.□

The underground workshop was somewhat in chaos, but right after that, a new character descended down from the ceiling. A part of the ceiling toppled over suddenly, and a little girl came down smoothly from the upside-down sofa.

□Muuh, leaving out Myuu like this! How unfair nano! It's dinner nano! After eating Myuu will also play that nano!□

The princess of Nagumo family seemed to be helping Remia and Sumire while her papa and others were playing. What a well-behaved daughter.

Urged by Myuu who didn't forget to call them for dinner even while huffing in anger, the decisive battle for the seat of number one best friend ended for the moment. They all climbed up the stair while Yue and Kaori were pacifying Shia and Shizuku respectively.

□Nn? Myuu doesn't go?□

□I'll return by 'pyon-' nano.□

□.....You really like that huh.□

Hajime chuckled while exiting the room.

By the way, what she meant by “pyon” was the shortcut to the living room. If the sofa toppling over was the shortcut to fall into the underground, the ‘pyon’ was a mechanism to leap to the living room from the underground. It was like that thing singer used to leap up to the stage in a concert and so on.

The princess of Nagumo family didn’t like normality!

Myuu moved to the floor tile where she could ‘pyon’, and that time she was about to activate the mechanism, \*thud\* a sound came from deeper inside the workshop.

‘Oh?’ When Myuu tilted her head and took a look, there she found a book with strange colored front cover.

Myuu took that book with her hand.

□Hm~m, Myuu cannot read this nano..... Well, doesn’t matter! Rather than that it’s dinner nano!□

Myuu wasn’t bothered and jumped into the living room using ‘pyon’.

With her hand still carrying the book.

The living room of Nagumo residence was overflowing with liveliness. Yue and Kaori was still quarreling with each other stingingly like always even in the dinner table, however Shia and Shizuku could only see that as the proof of them getting along well and they were blazing with strange rivalry, Shuu and Sumire yelled □We are home—□, Tio was raising voice of ecstasy from getting stepped on, and the neighbors were startled.

The little adventure of the two love rival(friend) that happened from a little happening ended, and today the common day of Nagumo family ended peacefully and safely too.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, in the middle it felt like I don't understand anymore what I'm writing, but for now the small adventure of Yue & Kaori is over.

Sorry that in the end I put a strange groundwork.

I just put it in for the time being, thinking that someday I might be able to use it for the material of an extra story, something like that.

Come on, Myuu has the property of being liked by strange existence after all.

By the way, perhaps the material I dropped was a bit unfamiliar, so I'll explain lightly.

- R'Iyeh Text

A fictitious grimoire that appeared in Cthulhu Mythos. It might be able to summon something bad. Possibly the reader would be called by something bad.

# Arifureta After II The Reunion of Monster Friends

AN: Short story. This isn't an introduction for a long arc.

The word count is also few because I'm a bit busy. The story will finish in the next chapter.

As expected, it's impossible to make a long arc with these guys w

---

\*zudon\*, an impact sound that resounded until the bottom of stomach shook the air.

A thunderous sound and vibration that even felt as though a demon king somewhere had launched a bombardment didn't stop ringing at just once, the sound and impact were occurring in succession.

At the same time, in the rust colored world—in the great desert Guryuen, a large sand pillar rose up and the rolled up sand cloud obstructed the sunlight.

Although, what obstructed the sunlight the most wasn't the sand cloud. If there was a *person* here, they would undoubtedly open their eyes wide and doubted their own

sanity, or escaped from reality by convincing themselves that this was a mirage characteristic of the desert.

An object that could cause any person to be like that was dancing in the sky, higher than the sand cloud and locally obstructed the sunlight.

Yes,

■■■GYU000000000000■■■

By the killers of the great desert that were screaming while getting launched up to the air—the sandworms.

Originally, they would lurk underground and detected their prey through sound and vibration, then suddenly leaped out from underground and swallowed their prey into their mouth that was like an excavator. That was sandworm's trait. Their difficulty to be detected and their surprise attack were the greatest target of precaution for people who were going through desert, they were a symbol of terror.

Such killers who wouldn't show their figure above ground except when preying on the prey, why would they now dancing not just above ground but even in the sky.

Of course this wasn't because they had evolved and learned the ability to fly in the sky.

The cause of that was this.

■GO DIEEEEEEEEEEEEE-■

Higher than the sandworms that were launched up, was an existence that was dashing to the sky. It spoke sharply like a yakuza while it descended with its *rabbit ears* fluttering.

The rear legs that were abnormally developed accelerated each time they kicked on the air, finally it broke the wall of air and transformed into a white cannon shot. It was the kick rabbit that originated from the bottom of abyss——Inaba.

His rush that was jointly using gravity's acceleration, Air Force, and Explosive Ground Shrinker was just like a meteor. There was no way the launched up sandworm had any way to evade, it received Inaba's heel drop kick and the middle of its body burst.

Faster than the rain of blood and flesh, Inaba kicked on the air and rapidly altered his path, without pause he performed forward somersault and pulverized the head of the sandworm that was further below.

When he rushed passed the sandworm midair his body twisted and launched midair roundhouse kick. The fluttering of his rabbit ears due to the breeze of wind was beautiful. But, the result that was brought about was the very definition of gruesome. A shockwave that flew out following the trajectory of the kick exterminated one sandworm that was beginning to fall.

In addition, when Inaba swung his leg upside down in reverse as though he was break dancing, a slash that should be called as foot sword flew out from there, cutting apart the last sandworm into two.

Inaba who landed on the ground lightly flicked his rabbit ears \*fuasah\* with his front leg. Right after that, flesh and blood and the corpses of sandworms rained down around him. Inaba was standing with composure in the middle of the squall of flesh and blood.

□Do you think I don't notice? Come out already yeah. If you still has in you the dignity as the lord here.□



By the way, when Inaba-san talked normally, his talk would sound like □Mokyu, mokyukyu? Ukyu. Mokyu~~kyumokyu□. It was lovely. He is a lovely bunny-chan who in the end of his evolution had his appearance turned into pure white with his round and cute crimson eyes looking moist.

He was able to talk with human language because of the function of one of the ear cuffs attached on his rabbit ear. The ear cuff possessed the skill of “Language Comprehension” and “Telepathy”, using the broadcasting function his words could be conveyed to his surrounding as though he was talking normally.

Of course, the creator was that guy.

The great desert Guryuen returned a silence like calm water at Inaba’s questioning. A beat, two beat.....no change appeared even after waiting.

□.....Well, it ain’t matter. I too don’t really want to bully the weak. I only bought the fight that was sold to me. If you say you gonna tuck your tail and run away, then I won’t follow. See ya.□(TN: Inaba’s speech is using thick Kansai dialect)

Inaba quickly turned around and began walking toward west.

Right after that, the ground exploded.

The opponent that Inaba called out. It was a deser monster that was emitting especially strong magic power. It was a giant sandworm—to the degree that the sandworms before this looked like children. It blew up the ground and assaulted Inaba from directly below.

Inaba’s figure wasn’t there.

There was only the giant body of the sandworm that pushed out until more than a hundred meter instantly, it looked like a tower that suddenly appeared right in the middle of desert.

Was Inaba whose body as a monster was comparatively small swallowed whole in a flash by this sandworm.....

Right after it looked like that,

□Not just your movement, even your instinct is dull huh. This is the end yeah! Lament your own stupidity——pass to the next life ya!□

A black spot was created inside the blazing sun. The true identity of that was obviously, Inaba.

The moment the giant sandworm leaped out, Inaba kicked on its jaw at the same time and flew up high to the sky.

The powerful leg that was swung down along with a piercing yell cut across the pointed up jaw of the sandworm along with an impact, without pause the cut and impact ran until the ground like breaking piled up roof tiles with a punch.

The rabbit ears of Inaba who stepped on the ground went \*fuasah\* once more.

A beat later, the twitching giant sandworm was cleanly split into two and collapsed to left and right.

□If you want to pick a fight with me, at the very least wait until you can win against the monsters running rampant at the bottom of the abyss's bottom.....hey, you cannot hear me anymore huh.□

Inaba shrugged with his rabbit ears and turned around, this time for sure he aimed toward the western sea and rushed using Multi Ground Shrinker.

□Even so, as I thought the monster on the surface ain't satisfying to fight yeah. If it's like this, perhaps I should go to the palace even I gotta wait for a bit, so I can fight that cheeky rabbit or Ou-sama again huh.□(TN: Ou-sama = king)

Inaba was letting out her complaining of dissatisfaction while sprinting explosively in a speed where even the surrounding desert looked blurry.

Currently Inaba was separated from her employer and also friend Suzu.

In the first place she became Suzu's subordinate monster was to become stronger. But his wish wouldn't come true in the present-day Japan. Of course, if he actually accompanied Suzu to Japan, he would also be able to do mock battle against Shia or Hajime or others, but as expected there was no way he would be able to fight against them every day with how busy they were.

And so, Inaba was traveling from place to place that had enemy that seemed strong, like the deep part of the northern mountain range and the sea of forest, the interior of great canyon Raisen, the lowest level of abyss, and so on. But for the current Inaba, there was finally no more enemy that could give him a hard battle.

Training, and then growing from that itself was what Inaba was living for. Heightening his martial art and knowing his own limit was exactly his life work.

He wanted to proof that even a monster could reach the height of martial art in the end of hard work, that his kick was able to reach the top of the world.

For Inaba who was such a martial artist, his current situation where he found no battle that could make his blood boiled and his flesh danced, where he had to cross through the verge of death, was honestly a really withering situation for him. It was to the degree that his rabbit ears were completely limp compared to usual.

□Boredom and stagnation are exactly the greatest enemy. Yosh, if I cannot find anything after searching for a bit, I'm gonna head to the palace and wait until Ou-sama open the gate. It also has been a long time since I met Suzu-han. If that Ryu person made Suzu-han cry.....I'm gonna split open his head.□

After about a few hours of dry desert sound that fluttered his rabbit ears.

Inaba who crossed the desert with astounding speed finally arrived at the western sea. There was the □Sea City Erisen□ at the coast, but Inaba's destination wasn't there.

Inaba came here to meet someone. He was going to meet a friend that he suddenly remembered amidst his days where he was starting to feel boredom. 'Come to think of it, I haven't showed up my face to him for long already', he thought.

Inaba took a step forward from the coast. Inaba didn't fall to the sea. Dark red ripple was spreading under his feet,

making a firm foothold midair.

Like that Inaba rapidly left toward offshore by walking above the sea.

And then, when he reached a spot where soon it would be hard to even see the coast, Inaba took a really deep breath, and he called loudly at the one he came to meet.

□BO~~~~~SS, LE~~~~~E!!□

The loud telepathic yell spread out like a ripple. The call that was filled with magic power and magnified by artifact would reach the radius of 100 kilometer if it was done seriously.

Inaba focused his rabbit ears for a while to look for any reaction.

And then.....

□DON'T SCREAM, SO LOUDLYYY~~~~!! Which idiot is doing this huhhh!!?□

An angry yell of harsh voice came back. The voice sounded pointlessly dandy, but it contained sullenness as though the voice's owner had just gotten woken up from his sleep by someone screaming into his ear using a megaphone.

□Oo, it reached out just with a yell. My luck is really good yeah.□

A few minutes after waiting while saying such easygoing thing, \*plop\* what showed up its face out from the sea was a fish with a human face that looked like a middle-aged man—that person (?) Leeman. (TN: The katakana of Leeman can also mean salary man in Japan)

□What's this, ain't this Inaba. I thought it was an idiot from somewhere.□

□Really sorry, boss Lee. I picked the fastest way to find you boss. You were sleeping?□

The two congenially conversed.

Actually, these two were acquainted with each other. It was after the legendary decisive battle was over during the one month before the return to earth. Hajime went to show his face to Leeman and Inaba who accompanied him met Leeman at that time.

As fellow monster who had strong ties with human, especially with Hajime, the two hit it off and since then their relationship grew where they could call each other friend.

Inaba scratched his head while apologizing. In respond to that Leeman splashed around the sea surface while shaking his head.

□I didn't sleep. Recently, the west from here is a bit noisy, so I patrolled and straighten up the idiots who got too rowdy. After all my wife and children cannot feel peaceful because of their noisiness.□

□Nothing beats your family in good health. ....But, acting stupid in the turf of a friend of the godslayer.....those guys really don't value their own life eh. Well, normal monster cannot think anything like that though.□

Inaba sat down on the midair foothold that he created within inches above the sea surface while saying that with his rabbit ears swinging in amusement.

Leeman who was lightly bobbing on the surface beside the foothold was also throwing his gaze in a relaxed gesture in order to enjoy himself in the idle talk with his friend that he finally was reunited with after a while.

□I'm not that much of a big shot. If it's not for Ha-bou's meddlesomeness, my strength is only to the degree where I can command the dweller of sea a bit. I'm just a trivial old man. It's uncomfortable that a lot of people, including you are strangely paying me respect, so stop it.□(TN: Ha-bou, the bou is like calling the other person sonny.)

□That's because boss Lee is Ou-sama's lifesaver after all. It's natural that you were paid respect about that much. As the proof of that, ain't boss got gifted with a lot of artifacts? There was even some human who schemed or got loud tryin' to get their hand on boss's artifacts but got their just desert in the end, ain't that right?□

Just as Inaba said, the human faced fish Leeman's name was actually relatively well-known among the humans.

After the legendary decisive battle, naturally the historians and poets were making a lot of tales and poems that extolled that godslayer demon king. Amidst all that tales and poems, they identified the true identity of Leeman who Hajime meet during the one month before his return home, the interviewed a certain rabbit eared girl, and then they circulated the conspicuous service of Leeman far and wide.

When Hajime's party was about to get eaten by the monster lurking in the bottom of sea since the ancient time—the Evil Eater, he came running in their predicament, and by himself he bought time and gave them the chance to recover from the hopeless situation.

The historians said. If at that time Leeman didn't come running, the world would lose the man to oppose the mad god and perhaps the world would perish.

—A human faced fish monster that was also the close friend of the godslayer demon king Leeman

It was recognized as a legend that spread far and wide through the continent.

Leeman let out a deep sigh, however, he then glared sharply at Inaba.

□You are prattling about artifacts or being lifesaver, but you yourself is also outrageous.□

Leeman's gaze turned toward the several ear cuffs fixed on Inaba's rabbit ears. Every single one of those ear cuffs was national treasure class artifact that ought to be managed by the palace, they were Hajime's quality product that currently were becoming super rare legendary artifact in Tortus.

And then above all else, was Inaba's popularity that was surpassing Leeman. After all,

□The only monster that became an ally of the demon king party by his own will, someone who fought through the Holy Precincts—Kicking King Inaba. Whether it was the hundreds of corpse beast soldiers, or the mighty and unequalled monsters of Holy Precincts, they weren't allowed to stand before his technique, right? Kukukuh□

□Sto, stop it already boss. I didn't do anything big. I only helped a bit so Suzu-han could talk with her friend. I'm the one who really didn't do anything much.□



Looking at Inaba whose rabbit ears folded down powerlessly with a troubled face, Leeman raised a pleasant laugh.

Both of them had the self-awareness that they were monster. Both of them ended up having deep relationship with the savior of mankind through a strange fate, but originally monster was the enemy of mankind. Both of them didn't even have a shred of hostility toward human, but even so, having praise and respect from those humans directed to them made them felt really awkward.

□And, what's your business here?□

Leeman asked to change the mood.

□No, I don't really have any business here y'know. There is no more enemy here that can fight me satisfactorily, so at the next chance I got I'm thinking to go to Ou-sama's place. At that time I won't be able to meet boss for the next while, so I showed up before that.□

□What a diligent guy. Well, thanks. When you meet Ha-bou, tell him I said hi.□

□Got it ya.□

After that Leeman and Inaba talked about the recent happening.

Two monsters getting heated up with old man talk in the middle of nowhere on the ocean. One side was talking with excessively dandy voice, spinning wording that was excessively suggestive, while the other side was using Kansai dialect. Boke & tsukkomi were bursting flowingly in their talk.

In the middle, hearing Inaba who was dissing Shia, Leeman smiled wryly while remonstrating Inaba "Don't treat the missy like an enemy too much okay" and so on, the time was flowing while they were getting heated up talking about Shia.

But a little while after that, Leeman-san suddenly muttered "Nn?" as though he noticed something and he turned his gaze toward faraway.

"Boss, what's up?"

".....The sea, is crying."

It wasn't chuuni. Leeman wanted to say that the residents of sea that weren't sea monster were moving about in fear it seemed.

Inaba's eyes narrowed and he gazed at the sea at the west. Leeman also frowned while nodding.

".....Just now, I said that at the west it was noisy right? It seemed that it was flowing this way from really far away. I once went to investigate when the sun had set enough, but there wasn't anything particularly strange. But, it was curious."

"Curious? What is?"

"The monsters straying this way. All of them, they felt like they were scared."

"Scared..... Is boss sayin' that something is happening at really far away there? And that something made the scared monsters to wander this way, is that it?"

"It's just my guess in the end though."

It was really suspicious. But, at the same time Inaba's heart leaped. If it was unknown then that was great. If it was a threat then that was even better. Boredom and stagnation was exactly Inaba's greatest enemy.

□Good thing I'm here, boss. The wandering monsters are coming here again right? Bring me along too ya. It's better the more helper there are right? Let's protect the peace of the sea with high spirits yeah.□

□.....Good grief, someone like you. You are talking about peace with that kind of cheerful face? That's just your battle maniac in full force.□

□I ain't a battle maniac. I'm a martial artist. Fighting strong enemy is just what I'm lookin' for. Even if boss don't bring me along, I'm still gonna follow you.□

Leeman who shook his fin as though wanting to say 'good grief' in exasperation turned a glare toward Inaba.

□Can you fight underwater huh? I'm not going to babysit you okay?□

□I cannot fight underwater. But, if they want to kill me, they have to jump out from the sea. I just need to provoke them ya. Besides, look, I look delicious right?□

□You are rabbit after all. Your appearance that is.□

Inaba was laughing 'ha-ha-ha-ha', to which Leeman was making an expression that seemed like he was enduring headache as though to say □I won't say any more□ while right after that, he let out a powerful telepathy.

That telepathy was to guide the living things in the sea. It was a measure so they wouldn't be vainly killed by the

monsters pouring in from the far western sea, to protect the sea environment (Leeman's sphere of daily life).

At the same time, an abnormal pressure of fighting spirit was emitted from Inaba. His fighting spirit that was perfectly controlled reached out toward the west.

Inaba grinded his rabbit legs for warm-up while he was making a fearless smile and made his rabbit ears went \*fuasah\*.

□Come on, let's go yeah, friend of godslayer.□

□Good grief, can't be helped. Let's go already, kicking king of holy precincts.□

Saying that, the two rushed toward the chaotic west.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Recently, I'm thinking that middle-aged old man is nice huh.

Harsh old man, cool old man, absurdly strong old man.

Old man who is unperturbed no matter what happened, and can deal with it like adult.

I want to try to write story with that kind of old men as the main characters someday.

That's all from Shirakome.

PS

The latest chapter of comic version Arifureta is updated.

Yue is cute. I can see various Yue.

If you are interested it can be seen at the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please try to have a look.

# Arifureta After II The Monsters, Chasing the Unknown

AN: Even though I'm making good on my words, why do I feel like I'm betraying the expectation.....

---

There were two silhouettes dashing to the western ocean.

Both had strange appearance. Rather they were a bizarre phenomenon.

One was a rabbit running on the sea. More accurately, the rabbit was using dark red ripple spreading midair forming an energy platform as its foothold but because the rabbit was extremely near the sea surface and it was moving with abnormal speed, its dash caused sea spray to rise in its wake as though the sea got split.

But, Inaba whose rabbit ears were going \*fuasah fuasah\* from the sea breeze was a monster that possessed that kind of characteristic magic, so putting aside the reason of why he was at sea, there was no doubt that this was still within range that could be comprehended.

The problem, was about his companion.

□.....Boss. Isn't that foul play?□

□Shut up. It's convenient so it's fine.□

Inaba glanced aside at his companion—the human faced fish Leeman. His straight-man soul that was welling up the moment Leeman took that out was finally breaking through and leaked out.

\*KIIIIIIII-~\* Such unique sound was resounding. Even though Inaba was holding back, but it still granted Leeman the speed to follow Inaba's speed.

The thing's appearance was closely resembling a delta shaped fighter jet. Its terrifyingly smooth body that was colored with sea camouflage brought the sea resistance to nearly zero. The ripple that was flowing backward was beautiful. The picture of a shark exposing its fangs painted on its prow showed the playfulness of the creator.

There was a spot that seemed to be the cockpit near the center of the ship frame. The inside of that cockpit was filled with water where Leeman was snugly settled there. A part that seemed like the propulsion device was installed at the stern, for a glance it could be seen like the propulsion method of water jet, but what was jetting out from there wasn't water but silver particle. Without a doubt it wasn't normal from that point.

——Small submarine with dual use for water and sky Triana (v.2)

It was the strongest and fastest artifact for open sea that the demon king gifted for his lifesaver (?).

□You are already a sea monster through and through boss. You are flying. You are sparkling. A flying human faced fish,

that's just too surreal ya.

I told you, shut up. This is more or less a submarine. It can also fly. I am a man of sea.

Perhaps feeling somewhat awkward, inside the cockpit that was filled with water Leeman-san averted his gaze toward faraway.

By the way, this Leeman's exclusive submarine (?) was linked with Leeman's telepathy, from its activation until its steering could be performed with only Leeman's thought. In addition, a part of Leeman's scales was transformed into living mineral using metamorphosis magic and regeneration magic, those scales themselves were artifact that possessed the function of "Treasure Warehouse".

I never thought that boss's own body would also get demonically remodeled.....Ou-sama, how terrifying.

I already told him that I don't need it. But Ha-bou said Lee-san is the type to get dragged into something troublesome, so just think of this as something for reducing my worry and accept it and requested on me. Even though it was me who was in the receiving side. Good grief, our position is all messed up. If Ha-bou requested me that far, uncle just cannot refuse it.

'What else is there other than gratitude that I can show to him huh?', Leeman shrugged his fins with that thinking looking somewhat troubled.

Inaba shrugged his rabbit ears indeed in agreement. The ear cuffs that were attached on that fluttering rabbit ears were also not something that Inaba asked for, all of them were Hajime's thoughtfulness for Inaba who was continuing his warrior journey to become strong.



The demon king-sama was comparatively harsh to human, but it seemed he was really kind to his monster comrades.

□By the way, what's that sparkling things? That ain't magic power right? Made in earth thing? Somehow I felt absurdly strong power from it though.....□

□Nn? Aa, this thing. I also don't really get it. A few years ago you see, that chap Ha-bou got lost in different world that isn't this world or earth. It seemed to be a world of sky and dragon, and this energy seems to come from there. He improved it a lot, and then he said that for this kind of vehicle this thing's convenience is better than gravity control and improved it only recently.□

□Hohee~, a world of sky and dragon huh.....as expected from Ou-sama. He will go anywhere yeah. As I thought being at Ou-sama's side will be the most interesting huuh.□

Inaba-san and Leeman-san didn't know. How the energy of that world was fundamentally limited. How Triana's energy strangely wasn't running out at all despite of that. How the cause of that was the "small planet" loaded inside the ship.....

After several years of research, that demon king finally completely grasped one of mankind's great problems and made it possible to miniaturize and mass produce it!

By the way, the former battleship that was similarly demonically remodeled like Triana had been reborn as an extravagant passenger ship that could fly anywhere whether to the space or the dimension sea, and it had also been unveiled already in front of a certain queen and her group.

At that occasion, the grown up queen-sama was overcame with emotion from her reunion with the demon king-sama

and did this and that, then there was a dispute with the introduced wife~s but.....

With the mediation of the workaholic princess-sama who for some reason seemed to be excessively getting along with the queen-sama, they all managed to avoid further problems.

And then the former classmates who were also boarding the ship and came along together said "He didn't stop with just having mistress, now he even have local wife!?" "How far the demon king is planning to go....." with a shudder when they witnessed that.

Now then, Inaba and Leeman were absorbed in their carefree talk while there was something strange happening in the ocean, but the next moment, they withdrew from that place at the same time.

Inaba was making water pillar from the impact of his step. While Leeman took a sharp turn.

——00000000000000——

The place where Inaba and Leeman were at a moment ago was assaulted from inside the sea by a giant sea snake with its mouth greatly opened just like the sandworm before this.

The jaw closed with a snap in vain without catching any prey. The leaping out giant sea snake monster turned its fierce gaze toward the pre——

"CHESTOOO——!!"

"We got an energetic guy here. Here"

What came flying was a white cannon ball. Inaba's flying kick that accelerated with a sound as though the air was bursting the flank of the sea snake until halfway, snapping that huge body into '<' shape.

The sea snake was going to scream unconsciously, but before it could there was a projectile flying with fire line trailing behind—a small missile that hit its head directly which gave rise to the blooming of flame blast and flesh and blood.

□A hot blooded fellow huh—uoh!?!□

□Chih. What are these guys?□

Inaba was about to land near the sea surface while making his rabbit ears went \*fuasah\* as usual, but the next moment, a monster that looked like a swordfish fiercely flew out to stab toward him.

Leeman struck using Triana's machine gun and blew it away from the side, but then a lot of monsters of the same type assaulted Leeman.

Inaba's shockwave and extending kick slash turned the monsters into minced meat one after another, Leeman was using telepathy to use the weapon loaded in his submarine—an ultrasonic wave impact and scattered the monsters.

But, Leeman frowned. It was just as his leaked out words said, the monsters' action was obviously abnormal.

There wasn't just swordfish type monster, all kind of monster were attacking toward Inaba and Leeman above the sea surface without balking at their disadvantage.

□Wait, boss! I felt horrible number of reactions with my senses though!? Is this how it always is!?!□

□There is no way that's true! This kind of number is the first time! Geez, just what kind of troublesome thing is happening this time.□

Even while Leeman was spitting out his complain, monster types that was related with sea like shark, snake, squid, and so one were appearing in succession.

There would be no way Inaba would fall behind the sea monsters in an air battle. Thinking that it was safe to leave Inaba, Leeman left the front line for a moment and went underwater, there he let out an even bigger sigh.

Inside the sea, it was jumbled with a variety of monsters spiraling up like a fish swarm. Fellow monsters with different species were in a close formation without even killing each other, originally this should be an impossible sight.

In addition, monsters were marching in one after another from the west.

This was like a stampede by sea monsters. A tsunami of monster marching from the west.

□These guys are bad news. If this number pushed in all at once, even Erisen won't hold although they have Ha-bou's defense mechanism.□

□Monsters marching forward without fightin' each other——this is really, this is a nostalgic phenomenon huuh.□

Inaba was exterminating all monsters that he could possibly attack from above the sea without letting even one getting

away, as though to perform one kill per second. He answered at Leeman's telepathy with a voice filled with complicated feeling.

Indeed, it was as though this was the monster army at the legendary decisive battle.

A bad premonition crossed at the back of Inaba and Leeman's mind.

□I don't know what is going on. But, at the very least it's clear what we ought to do right now. Am I wrong?□

In respond to Leeman's question, Inaba's mouth split open into a fearless wide grin.

□I'm not thinking of protecting the human until that much. Yeah but, kuku-. This is a battlefield. This is my battlefield where enemies of all choices are crowding so much. I'll kick them all flying. I'll be the last one standing. If as the result the humans are saved, well, that's fine ya.□

□.....Haa. Got it, got it. I'll just casually take care of the bunches that slip through, so do whatever you like, you damned battle maniac.□

Leeman launched a line of torpedo with an exasperated expression.

When Inaba heard Leeman's words, he laughed in even more good mood.

□Hahha——!! As expected from boss! You get what I'm talkin' about! Well then, sea monsters! Let's decide a bit, just who is the strongest monster yeah! Now, COME AT ME FROM ANYWHERE ANYTIMEE~~~~~E!!□

The war cry of the battle rabbit echoed. It broadcasted to four directions and up and down accompanied with dark red ripple!

——Characteristic magic Dance Battle Frenzy

Originally one monster species should have one characteristic magic. The characteristic magic of Inaba who was a kick rabbit was “Sky Step”. It was a magic to create foothold midair, moved in high speed, or increased the kicking power, producing shockwave or extending kick slash and so on, it was a characteristic magic that was related with movement and kick attack.

But, under the strange fate, Inaba who achieved a unique evolution later on managed to master several characteristic magic.

One of those skills was “Dance Battle Frenzy”. So to speak it was something like “Provoke” in RPG game. It magnified the hostility of enemy and directed it to the user.

The ripple of provocation that reached until the bottom of sea invited the monsters aiming at the delicious looking rabbit into battle frenzy.

——oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

——GAaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA

——GIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII-

Countless roars shook the ocean and burst the sea surface with pressure.

Aiming at Inaba who was intentionally standing near the sea surface, the swarm of monsters spiraled and assaulted all at

once.

The sea surface bloated up. It looked like it could be mistaken as a volcano eruption. Right after that, monsters were charging all at once from all directions.

□SHAORAAAAA!!□

Inaba performed a handstand but using his rabbit ears while rotating in high speed to perform roundhouse kick to all directions. The technique that looked like a break dance blew away the surrounding monsters in radial area. The monsters were sent flying like pinball.

A giant shark monster flew out from right below him.

□I'm gonna send you back downnn-□

The rabbit ears went \*pyon!\*, the recoil made Inaba's body reversed with a beautiful front midair somersault. A heel drop kick was launched from there.

The head of the leaping out shark split. Next even the sea was split open. The monsters that were within the impact range had their body's inside whipped up and blood vomits scattered around.

□ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-!!□

Monster leaped out and got sent flying, monster leaped out and got sent flying. On the sea surface with Inaba at the center, monsters were flying like machine gun strafing to all direction. They all were turned into sea scraps while skipping on the sea surface \*splash, splash\* like rock skipping.

Countless tentacles surrounded Inaba from all direction and enveloped him. It was a genuine monster that should be called a Kraken with body length of thirty meter.

□Bring it on-□

From the encirclement of the tentacles, Inaba leaped out—not. He jumped up a bit and then reversed his body upside-down. He kicked on the energy foothold and aimed toward the sea!

Inaba who by his own decision flew into the sea where he would be disadvantaged made a foothold inside the sea and using the skill above “Ground Shrinker” and above “Explosive Ground Shrinker”——the “Ground Shrinker - Divine Piercing Leg”, he forcefully blew away the water resistance inside the sea and passed through beside the Kraken.

The Kraken was trying to turn around with a sluggish movement to chase after his prey but,

□This is my service ya. Your first sky travel since you were bornnn, enjoy it to your heart’s content yaah!!□

Inaba kicked. At the Kraken. Along with the sea.

The sea surface undulated. Right after that, \*GOU\* the sea flew to the sky along with an explosive sound. No, more accurately what was launched up was the kraken along with sea water clinging on it, which caused the hallucination of the sea flying up, but because it was launched up faster than the water could be shaken off, seen from the outset it looked like as though a part of the sea was wholly sent flying to the sky.

——KUEEEEEEEEEEE~~~~~



The kraken's scream was surely something it raised for the first time since it was born.

Aa, the sky is really blue!

□Did you enjoy it? Your life will be enough for the payment ya.□

Oh? Before it knew it at its side a rabbit-san was.....

The kraken's consciousness was blew away to beyond the sky.

□Ooi, Inaba. How long you are going to play there? A lot is also straying here you know? There are also bunches that are ignoring us and going toward Erisen. If you can only finish them off one by one, then I'm going to take care of it okay?□

□Mu? Even though I had especially picked a fight, but it didn't really work? As I thought this is strange huuh. Well fine. In that case I'm going to pick a fight even more seriously yaa!□

From Inaba, a valiant war cry□MUKYUU~~~~~!!□ came!

——Characteristic magic Dance Battle Frenzy Derivative Skill “Survival Frenzy Battle”

One of the ear cuffs. This derivative characteristic magic was limitedly generated from the ear cuff's ability that brought strengthening effect from sublimation magic. Its effect was several times the Dance Battle Frenzy, it made the enemy seethed with fighting spirit that made them threw their body into a banquet of battle.

A part of the monsters heading toward Erisen while ignoring Inaba and Leeman who was holding back their invasion underwater changed their route and gathered toward the sea surface right below Inaba.

The monsters were clamoring like carps flooding under water surface demanding food.

□My trump card ya. Eat to your heart's content and then head to the next world.□

Dark red magic power surged. Inaba's pure white fur was starting to be colored with dark red line faintly pulsing.

Inaba kicked on the air and dashed even higher to the sky. Far above the sky he suddenly rolled around. With an upside down posture, he activated "Ground Shrinker – Divine Piercing Leg". Inaba instantly broke through the sound barrier and further rolled around midair. His leg was directed to below——

□Blaze bright red, and burst open□

Just as those words said, Inaba's both legs were being wrapped with hell fire!

——Characteristic magic    Myriad Clad Leg

It was the second characteristic magic that Inaba obtained later on. It enchanted Inaba's kick with elemental magic to reinforce his strength while also enchanting the element's characteristic effect.

From really high altitude, while falling down in the speed of sound, with the super heated kick attack Inaba——

□Bla☆st!!□

the enemy!

The sea warped. A moment later, a terrific shockwave blew up the air and sea in circle shape, a fierce heat wave instantly evaporated the sea water.

A temporary crater was created in the sea. It was truly the fall of a meteor.

All the monsters that were near the sea surface were blasted by the shockwave, even the monsters who were quite deep inside the sea had their internal organs crushed by the penetrating impact and they writhed in agony.

Even the monsters that were luckily quite far away and avoided deadly wound, a part of them lost consciousness, or else they lost their will to fight and desperately escaped to the north or west.

The crater of sea that was suddenly created was finally starting to recover its former appearance with the sea water at the surrounding flowing into it. The sea was fiercely undulating in a rampage. Dark red flesh and blood were coloring the whirling sea.

□Fumu. So so I guess.□

The rabbit ears went \*fuasah\*. Inaba-san whose whole body was dripping wet flew out from inside the sea and then he basked in self-esteem midair.

There,

□This stupid idiot-!!□

□Abah!?!□

The Triana that Leeman controlled rammed at the back of Inaba's head hard. \*gochin-\* A painful sound rang out.

□Whether it's Ha-bou or you bastard, I think it's better if both of you will be a bit more considerate to this uncle's safety. I thought I was going to die.□

□Ah.....I, I'm ashamed, boss. Don't tell me, was the submarine broken somewhere!?□

Inaba's previous dignity vanished without a trace. He immediately became all shook up with trembling rabbit ears. Seeing that Leeman let out a deep sigh and went 'good grief' with his fins.

□Well, I'm fine though. This will make a tsunami like this. Ha-bou was also installing tsunami countermeasure in Erisen so just this much won't be a problem but.....I'm telling you there should be a bit better way of doing thing.□

□.....Well, it's not like that's impossible. But, see, ain't my soul a blazing one? Then the finishing move must be a flame one ain't it?□

□Who cares.□

Leeman's cold straight-man retort burst. Inaba's rabbit ears withered.

□Well, let's just say it's all right in the end. Everything is mostly taken care of, the rests are also running away.□

□Hm~m, even so, just what in the world happened ya?□

A stampede of sea monsters. If Inaba and Leeman weren't here, surely Erisen would be attacked. This was something that had never happened before.

□We lack information. But, the scale of this is different compared to the sporadic attack by the “straying monsters” until now. Perhaps we better inform the humans too about this for now.□

□Guess so. Especially Erisen, because that’s Myuu-dono and Remia-dono’s birthplace ya.□

‘Anyway, let’s go back for now.’ Inaba and Leeman were of the same opinion like that with an exchange of their gaze, however, their monster instinct notified them of “something”. The two turned their gaze to the west at the same time.

□.....What’s this?□

□.....I wonder□

From the direction of the open sea far away, there was a small black spot that looked standing out. No matter how they looked, it looked like it was floating in the air.

Inaba and Leeman looked at each other’s face and then they advanced toward the black spot while heightening their vigilance.

Before long the thing became clearly visible. It was a mechanical object with the shape of a rectangular pyramid. There was nothing supporting it from below, it was floating still two meter above the sea surface.

□Somehow it look similar with Ou-sama’s item huuh.□

□Ha-bou’s artifact, is it? But, this is.....□

If talking about a floating mysterious object, what came to mind was the artifact of a certain demon king. But, both

Inaba and Leeman didn't assert that. It was only a vague feeling, but their monster instinct sensed that "this thing is different".

Just like how Inaba and Leeman was observing it, the quietly floating mysterious rectangular pyramid also felt like it was somehow observing Inaba and Leeman.

□Boss. What should we do with this? I'm only guessing, but this might be related with the monsters just now don'tcha think?□

□Must be. Something like this is best if we left it to Ha-bou. Anyway, how about we collect it for now?□

Right after Leeman said "collect", a change appeared at the mysterious rectangular pyramid.

□——□□□□□□□□□□ ———□□□□□□□——□□□Ehito□□□□□

Right after it let out that gibberish language, Inaba rabbit ears stood straight from shock, and Leeman's listless half-opened eyes——it was like that from the start though——looked somewhat surprised. Then the pyramid ignored them and started to move smoothly toward the west.

□Wha, what was that? It talked ya.□

□Chih. Troublesome. It's making me letting go a bit more of the service time for my family like this.□

The mysterious rectangular pyramid moved away with really high speed.

Inaba's eyes that were seeing that were gradually getting brighter. That shine was exactly the curiosity to the

unknown which exterminated his boredom. He was sensing the presence of strife at the destination where this rectangular pyramid object that was related with the monsters stamped was going.

□My bad boss. I'm——□

□I got it. You are going right? Can't be helped. I'll go with you.□

Not letting Inaba finished talking, Leeman consented of accompanying him with an atmosphere that if he was a human this would be where he took a smoke.

□No, it's better if boss stay behind yeah. This might be dangerous.□

□If it's really dangerous, then I have to bring back the information of what kind of danger it is. If I let you go alone and you don't come back, what am I going to do then? If I and you go together, even if we meet danger one of us can hold back the danger while the other escape isn't that right?□

□No, but still ya, what are you gonna do with your wife and child boss?□

Leeman sent a glance at Inaba who was scratching his head before turning his gaze to the east. Seeing how he was sending magic power to that direction, he must be activating telepathy.

After talking about something for two, three seconds, Leeman's body rocked and the white of his eyes was bared as though he got hit by a shockwave.

□Bo, boss!? What's the matter!? Are you okay!?!□

□I, I'm okay. No problem. I only touched my wife's sore spot a bit.□

□Sore spot.....what did you say?□

□No, I told her I'm going out for a bit. I don't know when I'll go home so take care of the rest please. That's all.□

□.....That, even I who don't have a mate think that way of telling her is too insensitive. And, what did boss's wife said?□

□.....Even if I go home, don't think that your room will still be here. This useless husband, something like that.□

□.....As I thought how about going home? Right now.□

Leeman's mouth formed a small grieving smile before saying  
□Now, let's go. We are going to lose sight of it□ and chased after the rectangular pyramid.

It seemed the wife's stock of patience had ran out against the husband's wanderlust. In the end when Leeman went home, would he be welcomed back by his family.....

By the way, Leeman's home was built by hollowing out a rock at the reef area nearby Erisen. It was a splendid home. In a human sense it was unmistakably a stately mansion of a celebrity.

Seeing the back of Leeman who was going ahead, Inaba's expression looked really complicated, but he then shrugged his rabbit ears and chased behind him.

The two monsters advanced forward through the ocean in order to ascertain the unknown object and the unknown something.



Their figures before long vanished at the other side of the horizon.

After that, Inaba and Leeman's whereabouts became unknown for a few years.

Because the two by nature had wanderlust habit, no one were especially concerned but.....

One day, due to a notice that suddenly arrived, a turmoil that started from the incident this time as the impetus dragged in the demon king family and it developed into a great tumult where hell broke loose.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The story this time is for the extra story that I'll write someday.

For now, I'm thinking that it will be a story where Nagumo family second generation will also show up but.....well, it's still in the future.

The artifact presented to Lee-san.....

This is Lee-san who was once taken out from aquarium by flying cross, so when thinking that now he became able to control that by himself, it's normal isn't it? It's surreal though.

Inaba's sure kill move.

Everyone, did you recall that person from One Piece?

But, Shirakome wrote by imagining that person from D-Gray. I like the scene of Falling Technique [Iron ShacO].

Twin tail is also not different then rabbit ears. Both are justice.

# **Arifureta After II    You, You Are Calling Yourself a Samurai Like That!?**

Evening. The time after school when the light of the sun was starting to be dyed orange bit by bit.

In a place a slight distance away from the school building, there was the spirited yells of the students resounding.

That place was a building that was separately built from the gymnasium and was exclusively used for martial arts type club activity. The students were calling the building as dojo building. Clubs like kendo, judo, karate, aikido, jeet kune do, ninjutsu, naginata, kodachi two sword style, wrestling, boxing, and so on did their activity here, its spaciousness was more than the gymnasium with three floor in total, the completion of the building was really rare even for a private school.

People said, that it was the result of the hobby of the first generation board chairman surging out.....

At the place in the first floor of that dojo building that was allocated for the kendo club, unique spirited yells that sounded a bit different from other club were resounding. Surely, most likely, the club members were yelling

□MEE—NN□, but even when the yell went well□eE—NN□, when it went bad □EAAAAAHNH□, and if things didn't go well □ENDEEEEEERR□. Like that it became an hour of mishearing. (TN: In kendo, the athlete would usually used 'men' in their yell)

Of course, that was the result of the gushing out fighting spirit.

Though about this kendo club, they were showered with a lot of attention from the karate club, judo club, and aikido club that were also allocated the first floor as the place for their club activity. It wasn't something blatant, but there were quite a lot of glances flying toward the kendo club.

The cause of course wasn't those yells, but a beautiful girl with a trademark of a black hair ponytail.

The excellent style that could be seen clearly even across the loose kendo uniform and the dignified atmosphere that also gave off kindness. She was someone who even before her disappearance was evaluated as a composed girl, but now she appeared like an adult woman from where a core far stronger than before could be felt from her.

□Haa~. Yaegashi-san, she is seriously amazing. I wonder if I should join kendo club even after this late.□

□What are you gonna do even if you join huh. Rather, if you try to do something, you are gonna get done in by her seriously scary boyfriend you know?□

□Right right. Taking glances from afar is just right toward that kind of person.□

The target of the glancing looks——Yeagashi Shizuku. When a boy of the judo club who was taking glances at her was

whispering ecstatically, his friends retorted with expression and voice that were filled with resignation.

If one looked around, it could be somehow understood that even the karate club and aikido club were also making that kind of conversation. The extraordinary mystery of her one year disappearance and her atmosphere that changed for some reason were raising her charm and degree of attention by a lot.

□Aah, sheesh. How irritating. Even though the match will be soon.□

□Really. If I remember correctly, the karate club will also have their match next month though..... They are lacking spirit.□

When one member of the female kendo club grumbled that with a frown, another member also showed her agreement while wiping her sweat.

It was at that timing Shizuku came with a drink in one hand and an apologetic expression on her face.

□What should I say.....I'm sorry. As I thought, isn't it better if I don't come here so much? I'm also not a club member anyway.□

□Eh!? Wai-, that's not it! We weren't saying that with that kind of meaning!□

□Yep yep! The bad one are those guys who aren't concentrating at their training, it's not Shizuku-chan's fault!□

□Or rather, we are the one begging you to come here, so you don't need to be that considerate I'm telling you!□

□That's right, Onee-sama! If Onee-sama like it, I'll ambush those peeping bastards later today from the darkness!□

Shizuku had quit the kendo club after her return to school. That was because her physical ability and kendo skill had become cheat level from her experience in another world.

She was literally unbeatable by anyone if she didn't hold back. Shizuku judged that if she faced students who were seriously putting their heart into kendo and participated passionately in a match, and won when she wasn't serious while holding back, she would only bring harm to those students, and that was why she resigned from the club.

However, the club members who thought that Shizuku who returned to school would naturally also returned to the club wanted to somehow stopped Shizuku from leaving the club, however, their persuasion ended up in vain and Shizuku still wouldn't return, that being the case, they consulted the club adviser and created a position of "manager that could also coached the members" to keep Shizuku in the club.

Long story short, 'it's fine even if you aren't a member, if you have time come playing her while also coaching!' it was something like that.

Shizuku was tearfully pleaded at by her juniors, and clung at by her friends of the same age as though they were konaki jijii, and even the seniors who already retired from the club were wordlessly pressuring her everyday with their sad gaze.

Regardless of how the society and also the students' parents were vaguely keeping distance from the "returnees", Shizuku's comrades from the kendo club who tried to maintain their connection with her as though to say □Who

gives a damn about something like that!□ made Shizuku felt bashful and tickled.

In the end it was Shizuku who yielded and like that she was coming to coach especially in the days before a competition.

Thinking that it would be terrible if such Shizuku stopped coming because she was considerate of her surrounding, the female club members simultaneously gathered toward Shizuku who was looking apologetic.

It was also because they were simply fond of Shizuku, but it was also because Shizuku's coaching was actually fruitful, the students who received her coaching were without a doubt growing in skill. At the following month the qualifier for the national kendo meet would start, so the kendo female students didn't want to let go of the greatest coach that was Shizuku for that reason too.

□Hm~m, I guess. It will be irresponsible for me to stop helping midway in this kind of period isn't it? That's why, stop it with the ambush when it's dark. Also, it will make me happy if you can also stop calling me Onee-sama.□

□No way-. Onee-sama is disqualifying me as your stepsister(soul sister)!?□

Kohai-chan staggered with an expression of despair. The kohai-chan's friends of the same grade supported her □Get a hold of yourself!□□Hang in there!□. Furthermore, it seemed that all the juniors here were "soul sister". The soul sisters multiplied while Shizuku wasn't looking..... Consider there are thirty in the dark if you see one in the open! (TN: Japanese's saying that if you see one cockroach, you better consider there are thirty that you aren't seeing. And kohai mean junior.)

The soul sisters were looking at Shizuku. Their moist eyes were pleading, 'please grant mercy to our comrade soul sister who is connected by the bond of soul-'.

□.....Geez, it's fine if you call me Onee-sama, that's why don't look at me with those eyes.....□

It was always the Onee-sama who gave in. The crumbling kohai-chan recovered her posture with a bizarre movement like a video being rewound. Perhaps these girls were already something beyond stepsister already.

When the practice that was fairly hard even with those things happening was over, all the female club members other than Shizuku were dead tired while changing clothes in the changing room. At that time a club member asked something that had been asked almost every time.

□Then Shizuku. When will you return back to club?□

□No, that's why, I told you already I won't.□

While ignoring with all her strength how the moment she undressed from her kendo uniform the bloodshot gazes of all the kouhai-chan were stabbing all over her body, Shizuku replied to the question of her friend of the same grade with a wry smile.

□But still, even though you are that strong. You were the champion all those years even when you were in middle school and also in the first year.□

□It's really a waste.□

Because Shizuku showed up in practice to give them guidance, the club members were satisfied to a certain degree just from being able to be together with Shizuku.



However, purely as a kendo practitioner, knowing the skill of Shizuku (only to the extent of common sense), they felt it was really a “waste” no matter what that she didn’t participate in competition.

Shizuku’s wry smile deepened while she quickly wore her clothes to hide her body. All the kouhai-chan leaked out □Chih□ from clicking their tongue.

□I’m already satisfied enough with kendo. Besides, even though I stop doing kendo, I’m still continuing kenjutsu. Rather, right now I’m busy with that, about various things.□  
(TN: Kenjutsu = sword art)

Shizuku couldn’t say that it was because she now knew the truth about her family.

However, getting suspicious about various things from hearing that “various things” part was how girl worked.

□Various things, is it? I see, it must be something like trying to have your boyfriend getting recognized by your family.□

□I won’t hand over my daughter as long as you cannot win against me! Something like that?□

□Ah, so it’s as I thought, Nagumo-kun is training in the dojo of Shizuku’s family then.□

It seemed such rumor was spreading. The eyes of the fellow club members in the same grade were shining bright with curiosity.

□And, recently, what’s going on with the boyfriend in the rumor?□

□Our classrooms are separated after all, so it's hard to get any information. Or rather, Shizuku, are you okay? You aren't two-timed? From what I heard other than Kaori-chan, he is also getting served by other amazing members right?□

Concern could be glanced at inside their curiosity. The woman relationship of the man who Shizuku got close to wasn't normal at all, and it was a well known fact in this school. Someone who was laying his hand on two extraordinarily beautiful transfer students, was even getting served by Kaori who should be Shizuku's best friend, and he was even knitting love relationship with their important friend Shizuku.....the kendo club members weren't holding a good feeling about such thing.

□Thank you for worrying about me. But I'm fine. Kaori, and also Yue and Shia, they are important people for me, and we are staying at his side fully comprehending how it look like. Though it's certainly not something commonplace. But, it can't be helped.□

The thing about a person in love was the loser, and Shizuku's happy expression without even a shred of bitterness in it, and how she spoke fondly of her love as though showing it off, while all these also happened every time, the expression of the club members still turned speechless every time.

Incidentally, there were sounds of grinding teeth \*grit grit grit grit-\* ringing. Everyone tried to not bother about it, but of course the source of the sounds were from all the kouhai-chan. Dark conversations which would make one wanted to retort 'You guys, just what kind of secret society this is huh' like □As expected, we have to ambush that man in the dark is.....□, or □However, several people already had the table turned on them.....□, or □We need to draw up something,

some kind of new strategy.....□, and so on were secretly spoken among them.

□Well, if Shizu said that it's fine, then it's not also our place to say anything.....□

□Just what is so great from Nagumo?□

Almost all the club members had finished changing, but there was no sign of the girls talk ending even while they were putting their appearance in order. This was something usual.

The cheeks of the questioned Shizuku faintly blushed red. It was a cute expression that she had never showed even once before her disappearance. The club members' expression turned even more complicated because whether they wanted it or not they were made to realize that was how serious her feeling toward Hajime was.

Several of the kohai-chan were starting to beat up their fist onto a doll they took out from somewhere. \*zudon, зудон\* The punches were making unpleasantly nice sound. Those were wonderful punches that would make anyone wondered if they were more talented in clenching their fist rather than swinging shinai. (TN: Shinai = bamboo sword used in kendo)

□Even if you ask that.....there is a lot.□

□If you are forced to give one example?□

□uu.....like, how he always protect me at all times, I guess.□

Shizuku's answer that she spoke while acting bashful made her friends of the same grade said □Aa~□ sounding like they understood but also didn't understand.

When speaking about Yaegashi Shizuku, she was “onee-sama” for all the kouhai-chan. For other girls, she was a reliable knight-sama that would protect them. Even for the boys, they evaluated her as a gallant beauty that would somehow manage by herself no matter in what kind of situation.

It was difficult for the boys and girls at the same grade to hold impression toward Shizuku as a target to be protected. After all she was actually an owner of specs far superior than all of them.

But, people who were especially close to Shizuku knew that Shizuku liked cute things and her personality was really girly. The female club members of kendo club were included in those close people category.

Therefore, they understood what Shizuku said. Although they absolutely didn’t want to understand the disgusting man who wouldn’t see Shizuku as his only one.

□Really, just what in the world happened while you disappeared? From everything before this, I thought that Shizuku might go out with Amanogawa-kun.□

Several girls looked startled hearing that question and they turned their gaze toward the girl who said it.

Asking the “returnees” about what happened during the time they disappeared was considered as taboo right now based on their tacit understanding. At the beginning, everyone was really curious about that and kept asking, but even through the commotion in the society and abrupt quieting down, the answer of the “returnees” was always the same, and because that answer sounded preposterous, a recognition that the topic was “something that mustn’t be asked” was spreading.

Shizuku was firmly aware of the atmosphere that was containing slight nervousness while speaking an answer that was unchanging from before.

□I already said it before this right? We adventured in another world, and fought the underlings of an evil god.□

□□□□.....□□□□

Sure enough, the schoolmates of the same grade were at loss for words in hesitation of what should they say. All the kouhai-chan were staring at Shizuku with worried gaze that looked vaguely pained.

‘It depends on you whether to believe it or not.....’  
Shizuku’s relationship with the kendo club members were a bit too close for her to say that. She didn’t want to deal with them the same like how she dealt with mass media, government officials, and outsiders who were only curious. Even if what she spoke was the unvarnished truth itself.

And so, Shizuku winked playfully and added her words.

□Also, I punched Kouki until he cried and apologized. Kouki who lost some teeth with his face swollen all over while sobbing ‘I’m sorry, I’m reflecting, I won’t do it anymore’ was really a sight you know?□

□Ooou.....that’s really.....□

□I, is that, true?□

□Just what happened there. I’m absurdly curious here!□

The small tension from before vanished somewhere. The female club members started going ‘kya-kya’. What kind of situation that would make that perfect superhuman number

one handsome boy in the school to apologize while crying? And then, what was the circumstance that would make the caring and gentle Shizuku to be that angry? Their girl's indefatigable love delusion power was tickled to rise up high.

Shizuku was calming down her exited friends while,

□This is also about Kouki's embarrassing past, so I cannot speak the detail but.....at the very least, when I wished for help from the bottom of my heart, the one who responded to that wasn't Kouki, it was always——Hajime at those times.□

Shizuku was saying such suggestive thing with intensely charming expression looking like a dreaming girl, or perhaps more like an adult woman who knew what was the meaning of love. Even her friends who were the same sex unconsciously felt their heart jumped seeing that expression.

This time, a different silence descended. The expression of the female club members was somewhat dazed, as though they were charmed by Shizuku. There was 'buhah' sound. It was the sound of the feeling that thought about Onee-sama spurting out from the nose of kouhai-chan.

Shizuku who noticed the situation around her looked down in embarrassment from her own words and she attempted to change the topic.

□Ra, rather than that, the preliminary next month. Do your best you all. Everyone has shockingly become strong, so I'm looking forward not just at the group match, but also the individual match. Our kendo club will dominate the top ranking of the individual competition.□

□That's quite the pressure on us though.□

The figure of Shizuku who was plainly changing the topic while busily finishing her preparation for going home with bright red ears made the female club members to look at each other's face and exchanged small smile. And then, following their friend who had become far cuter compare to before she disappeared, they finished their girls talk.

Next month.

Shizuku's figure could be seen at the spectator seat at the second floor of the joint gymnasium of a large city at the neighboring town.

Below the kendo club of her school was competing ruthlessly against the kendo club of other school. The loud yells that were filled with fighting spirit, and the sound of shinai striking the opponent, and then the cheering voices were echoing inside the spacious gymnasium.

□Our kendo club is strong huh. Especially the girls. Shizuku's influence on them is tremendous.□

Hajime who came together with Shizuku to watch whispered that with an admiring expression. Hajime personally wasn't interested with kendo match, but today was Shizuku's turn for the "holiday of just two people", so Hajime accompanied Shizuku in the form like rooting date (?).

The competition had progressed almost to the end, the group competition left only the final, and the members of

the group competition were also mostly undefeated through all the matches until that stage.

Even in the individual competition, the third place had already clinched by a student of their school, Shizuku's schoolmate was also going out to the final match that would start after this. Even all the kouhai-chan won their first match without anyone losing, that was why this was actually something big.

□This is the fruit of their hard work.□

Shizuku said that not only from being humble but also because she really thought so. But, Hajime tilted his head and objected.

□Is that so? Sometimes my ears picked up words that sounded like □Onee-sama is watching! With the title of soul sister in the line, I cannot show anything unsightly!□ though. It feels like it's only our kendo club whose morale is in different level.□

□.....The, they are all cute kohai aren't they.□

□Cute, huh. After they looked at you Shizuku, they then looked at me and a lot of them were making yakuza face that seemed to say □Sitting beside Onee-sama with a smug face like it's only natural-. You bastard-. I'MMA KILL YOUUUUUUUUU-□ though..... I think it's not a face a girl should make you know? Look there, that girl's opponent, she is trembling even before the match begin.□

□.....□

Onee-sama averted her gaze.



But, her averted gaze suddenly met the eyes of another. The final of the individual competition would begin after this, but the opponent athlete was looking at Shizuku. The person was already wearing the protector mask, so it wasn't like their eyes were exactly meeting, but it was clear that the person was focusing on Shizuku.

That was how strong the emotion that was filling that gaze. In addition, if pushed to say, it wasn't a positive emotion like the respectful and affectionate gaze of the soul sisters, but the opposite—an emotion of denial.

(That build.....also that school.....)

The referee called out to the athletes and the opponent athlete's strong gaze moved away from Shizuku. Shizuku tilted her head and pondered whether she had done something, but she couldn't think of anything.

The match began while she was doing that.

At that moment,

□OOOOOOOOOOOOH!!□

The gymnasium shook. It was a roar so loud that made one hallucinated so. The loud yell of fighting spirit surged and electrified the skin. The audience seat became deathly silent.

Right after that, a sharp sound \*paan-\* rang.

While everyone was dazed, the referee suddenly returned to his sense with a 'hah' and gave his verdict □Clean hit□. Yes, in just an instant, Shizuku's friend who was unmistakably top class even within the school got one point taken from her. (TN: Here the referee said 'Men ari', which mean a clean

hit on the face I guess. Tell me if anyone know a better translation for it.)

Both sides immediately returned to their original position and then the match resumed. A loud yell of fighting spirit surged once more.

This time Shizuku's friend barely blocked the vertical slash from above aiming at her mask protector. However, that one attack must possessed sharpness and weight that didn't betray its appearance. The blocking shinai almost fell off from the hands holding it.

Without overlooking that opening, the opponent athlete began to hammer in with a flowing motion. Shizuku's friend was also a top class as expected that she continued to defend only just barely, but the opening she showed at the beginning became a big shackle that made her unable to stop the consecutive attacks, she wasn't able to return even a single counterstrike.

□Oi oi, that girl, is she really a girl?□

□He, hey. That's just too rude.□

The opponent athlete that was cornering the athlete of their school with an intense pressure caused Hajime to reflexively say such thing, which was chided by Shizuku in respond even while her cheeks were twitching.

Indeed, the yelling voice sounded deep, and the volume could even shake the gymnasium, it was really unthinkable that such voice came from a girl.

In addition, the body build of the opponent athlete was also out of norm. Her height must be over 180 cm. Her big boned body that could be clearly seen even across the protector

was just like a heavy weight class judoka, muscle fibers were jutting out from both her hands that were holding shinai.

Looking objectively, that body build was something splendid that would make anyone couldn't help but ask 'that's really a high school girl?'.

While Hajime was blinking in surprise and Shizuku was drawing out her memory regarding the opponent athlete, the match showed the end.

Finally the athlete of their school couldn't endure the fierce attack, and the moment her shinai strayed away, \*pashiiin\* such clear striking sound rang along with the shinai striking the mask protector.

Shizuku was looking worriedly at her friend who was standing still looking dumbfounded. When the referee urged on the girl she seemed to return to her senses and bowed once before quietly returning to her own area. She took off her mask and clenched her fist tightly in frustration with her faced still looking down.

The kendo club members gathered around her one after another and talked to her.

□She got dealt with a bad match there. If the opponent was merely pushing on with brute force the would be able to still manage somehow but.....□

□Yes. Indeed, the opponent.....isn't simply like that. But, why is she in the qualifier here.....□

It seemed Shizuku knew something about the opponent athlete.

□Nn? Looks like they are quarreling there. Is it all right there?□

□Eh?□

Shizuku who was pondering something returned her attention to the match venue from Hajime's words, and there certainly the opponent athlete just now seemed to be in some kind of argument with the female club members of her school.

□.....What, is she your acquaintance just as I thought? I'm hearing Shizuku's name mentioned from there.□

□As, as I thought it looks like she has some kind of business with me.□

Hajime's inhuman ear wasn't as amazing as the rabbit ear of the rabbit clan, but it had really high performance in its hearing ability. Using that, he could hear that it seemed the opponent player was questioning the female club members about why Shizuku didn't appear in the competition.

The female club members looked really nervous against the really dangerous atmosphere, but when they saw the opponent athlete who still hadn't taken off her face protector lowered her voice tone and asked if by any chance Shizuku was seriously injured, they calmed down a bit and managed to somehow answer.

But even though they now could answer back, there wasn't a lot that they could say. It seemed they told the opponent that Shizuku simply quit kendo club because of personal reason and not because of injury or anything.

Surely the female club members were thinking that this person was an acquaintance of Shizuku who was a regular at

the national meet, and she was worried why Shizuku didn't participate in the competition. They said to her that Shizuku wasn't injured so there was no need to worry, however, the opponent athlete then showed an unexpected reaction.

She suddenly took off her mask as though tearing it off, and then her gaze turned toward Shizuku with a glint as though saying that she would kill her. No matter how anyone looked, that expression was of anger, like a volcano in the verge of erupting. It was also an appearance with extreme intensity.

Hajime unconsciously got reminded of a certain guy haunting a certain clothes store in the other world to the degree he put himself on guard.

The square features, thick eyebrows and beastly eyes, large nose split chin, they were all impressive.

After the opponent athlete glared at Shizuku, she moved looking like she was going toward her. The female club members who guessed that tried to stop her, but she pushed them aside and moved to exit the venue.

Feeling the dangerous atmosphere, even the teammates of the opponent athlete came to stop her, but perhaps she already had lost all her cool that she couldn't even hear their words. She was advancing while dragging her teammates clinging on her body with her.

□.....Looks like she couldn't get talked with unless I go there. I'll head there for a bit.□

□Okay. Just in case, I'll be nearby.□

Hajime also stood up following Shizuku who stood up from her seat.

No matter how abnormally big the body build that person had, it was impossible for a high school girl of the present day Japan to do anything at Shizuku.

However, what could hurt a person wasn't just simply violence. Looking from the other party's abnormal state, she might throw "words" that could hurt Shizuku.

Words were magic. Depending on the situation, it could be greatly powerful even compared to the highest level of magic from another world.

From the standpoint of a "returnee", they already heard a lot of inconsiderate words until now, if they could finish this business without hearing anything from the other party then that would be the best.

Because Shizuku possessed a strong heart she could endure a lot more than most people, but because of that her heart was easy to be wounded. Therefore, depending on the situation, Hajime was prepared to release "Pressure" that would make the other party fainted while foaming on their mouth without any hesitation.

The demon king-sama was increasingly getting indulgent toward his relatives since he returned back to earth.

□Err, I'll really be fine you know? That's why, don't do anything too reckless okay?□

□.....I'll consider it optimistically.□

The extremely unreliable words of the overprotective Hajime tickled Shizuku and also troubled her.

Like that, when the two got down to the first floor and approached the entrance toward the venue, the

aforementioned opponent athlete appeared while dragging behind her teammates and Shizuku's friends.

Even the tumult around her that was trying to stop was only trivial matter. With a look that caused a hallucination as though the Fudou Myouou had descended, the opponent athlete ran her gaze fiercely and caught the appearance of Shizuku. (TN: Fudou Myouou = Acala; Acalanatha Vidyaraja; The Immovable, a manifestation of Mahavairocana)

While somewhat desperate yells like "Run awaayy! Shizukuu, super run awayyyyyy!", or "Onee-sama! Please leave this place to me and go on ahead!" could be heard from the female club members, the female opponent who was emitting an intensity that even resembled Ashura.....

"Yaegashiii! You-, you are calling yourself a samurai like that!?"

Said such thing with unexpectedly cute voice that would make anyone wondered just what with the war cry at the middle of the match.

Anyway,

"I'm not a samurai."

Toward the girl who surely was at the same grade with her, Shizuku returned back words of correction with a serious face and polite language.

---

Shizuku component was insufficient, so I wrote her just now.

When this is over, I'm thinking if I should write the 'Kouki get summoned too muchh'.

When I saw the thought column or the messages,  
unexpectedly there are a lot who said they want to read it,  
Shirakome who when flattered will indulgently get on board,  
as expected, feel like doing it.

But seeee, this is Kouki after allll. Anxiety whether I'm going  
to have fun writing it is coming and going...

But when I write, there is also the feeling of wanting to write  
properly too.....

If the writing of the 'get summoned too muchhh' arc feel like  
it become slovenly, surely I will be revived if I can receive  
yell 'Shirakomeeee get a hold of yourself!' from you all.

Please take care of me.



# **Arifureta After II Is This Grudge, Ought to be Left Uncleared Like This-**

Dead silence filled the lobby. The cheering for other match and other voices came in from the match venue, but even with all those noises it felt like silence had visited this place, it must be the fault of the atmosphere that was brought about by the two high school girls staring at each other.

“You are calling yourself a samurai” “I’m not a samurai” It was only those words. It wasn’t a conversation that high school girls would generally make, but the atmosphere of the two was too serious to call it a joke.

The asking side even now was exhaling out wild breath that was accompanied with vapor from her mouth, with an atmosphere where it was as though her bloodshot eyes might even emitted mysterious beam, while the replying side wasn’t even making an astonished expression that said “Just what is this girl saying?”, rather a desperation of “You think I’ll let anyone attach anymore strange attribute on me more than this! I’m not a samurai, believe it!” could be peeked at from the gap of her expression.

“I’ll change how I said it. You, you are calling yourself a kendoka like that!?”

The kendo girl who boasted a huge body frame where people who seemed to be her kendo club teammates and Shizuku's friends from kendo club were still sticking on her, was raising an angry yell with a cute anime voice just like before. The gap between the voice and the Fudou Myouou face was terrific.

The first thing Shizuku did was to let out a sigh of relieve while stroking her chest hearing she was entered into a category that wasn't that strange for an active high school girl to be in while showing a perplexed expression at the indignation of the Fudou Myouou girl.

□I don't understand what do you mean by "like that" but..... at the very least, right now I'm not even in kendo club, so I cannot say that I'm a kendoka.□

□-, then, it's as I thought, you are saying that you resigned? You are not just taking absent?□

Her aura of anger was still unchanged, but the Fudou Myouou girl asked with an expression that somewhat feeling shocked.

□Yes, I have formally resigned, and I also don't have plan of coming back.□

□.....I know that you encountered a serious incident. Is that the cause? I heard that you aren't injured, but do you have a circumstance that make you unable to return?□

\*grit\* There was such sound. It was the sound of Fudou Myouou girl clenching her fist tightly. The kouhai-chan that was clinging on that arm to stop the girl stared still at that fist while her expression was starting to go pale. Her tear gland looked like it would burst crying anytime.

□No. Both my mind and body are healthy. It's not that I "cannot" return, but I "won't" return. That's what I decided.□

□-, Yaegashiii, you are-, -.....wha, what is, your reason?□

Kouhai-chan's arms were repelled away! By the inflating arm muscle! Kouhai-chan fell on her butt and she trembled all over! The friends of Shizuku, and also the teammates of the Fudou Myouou girl too, they were seeing the vision of the girl's rage aura and shivered in fear!

The Fudou Myouou girl desperately repressed the something that was overflowing out from inside herself and tried her best to be calm. Hearing that question, Shizuku scratched on her cheek awkwardly while deliberating of how to answer.

If she said her reason honestly, it would be because in the world of kendo there was already no one that could become her opponent, because the specs she obtained in another world was a foul play, those were the reasons but.....

By no meant she could say those things just like that. If she said such thing, perhaps Fudou Myouou would really descent to this world for real.

Now then, how to answer so that the matter could be settled peacefully.....

Shizuku didn't even need five second to ruminate.

But, it seemed that little time instead gave the other party a conclusion.

□.....I see. I get it. I didn't want to believe it, because I thought that there is no way that Yaegashi would, but——it's because you got a man aren't you.□

□Eh? Ah, no, it's not like——□

Shizuku noticed that the gaze of the Fudou Myouou girl turned toward behind her and she tried to say something.

But, before she could the Fudou Myouou girl threw a gaze that glinted with murderous brutality!

Not only the kendo girls right nearby, even the kendo boys and officials who became curious onlookers from afar were trembling violently altogether!

□Aaa?□

□-!?!□

Hajime-san's glint reversal!!

What was overflowing out from those shrinking pupils was exactly madness! It caused everyone to feel shiver and their body locked up thinking□Those eyes, those are absolutely the eyes of a murderer aren't they!?!□. That thing over there was a demon wearing the skin of a high school boy!

The Fudou Myouou girl quietly returned her gaze to Shizuku.

That thing was no good. That was something that a human must not get involved with no matter what. The instinct of Fudou Myouou girl-chan that made that judgment wasn't mistaken.

Now, let's get a fresh start.

□It's because you got a man aren't you!□

□For now, wait a little bit okay. ....Hajime, stop with the glaring. She is getting teary eyed, and several people

collapsed already while foaming in the mouth. Look, like my kouhai over there.

Hajime-san was looking.

When Shizuku looked back across her shoulder and asked Hajime to stop with a wry smile, Hajime obediently settled down his ghastly aura. He folded his arms once more and also closed his eyes. His atmosphere was turning back to a quiet one. The madness had left. Everyone's SAN value was protected!

Shizuku's friends let out whispers of gratitude—Shizuku is goddess—. Also, it seemed the legend of the school's two great goddess would increase. In a bit of different meaning than before.

—So, you are ignoring me. You are telling me that someone like me is not even worthy to be your opponent is it?—

—Err, you look like you are going to burst into tear anytime now you know? I won't ignore you or anything, so don't force yourself to progress the talk and wipe your.....—

—Are you pitying me!?—

Looks like she was already in a state that couldn't withdraw back anymore. The rage that she harbored toward Shizuku for some reason and the glint reversal that a normal high school girl shouldn't get exposed at for their whole life seemed to cause her mind to be really at her wits end.

Shizuku was opening her mouth to calm down Fudou-chan who was picking a quarrel with that teary eyes while still emitting her great intensity, but the heated up Fudou-chan raised her voice angrily as though to drown out Shizuku's voice.

□I, in order to win against you! I'm giving it my all until now only for that! Whether it's in the middle school, or at the first year of high school, I was undefeated! Except against you! You were the one who always became the champion at the tournament! Even though defeating that you is my only objective, and yet!□

Angry voice, was it really? Her intensity caused the people there to feel that it was like that, but for Shizuku, she was somehow getting the impression that the girl looked like she was clinging to something, or perhaps as though she was lamenting because she understood that what she wanted was forever out of her reach.

□When you disappeared, I despaired at that time! I even thought for a moment to stop with kendo-. I transferred here was also because I thought, that if I do kendo at the district where you were at, then perhaps my feeling will cleared up a bit! That's why, when you came back, I was really happy, and yet.....and yet, for you to abandon your sword just for a man!□

□Fudou-san, you.....□

Surprisingly, the Fudou Myouou girl-chan's surname seemed to be "Fudou". What a match. Shizuku's whisper was faint and it only reached Hajime, but that Hajime was obviously shocked while saying □What, did you say.....don't tell me, her name is Myouou?□.

By the way, the girl's name was Fudou Akari. Hajime, consolation price for you. (TN: Fudou Myouou = フドウミョウウ, Fudou Akari = フドウアカリ)

Fudou-chan rapidly walked toward Shizuku, leaving behind her teammates and Shizuku's friend who had let go of her due to her menacing aura.

And then, she pointed with a snap at Shizuku's nose, and with a blazing straightforward gaze she,

“Fight me, Yaegashi Shizuku. If you forget about me because you think it's something trivial, then I'll make you remember. This kendo of mine that you don't pay any attention to, I'll beat it into your body to teach you how formidable it is!”

.....

Yes, it was a war declaration.

Of course, Shizuku had no duty or responsibility to accept. The other party was considering her as rival, feeling furious, and tried to drag her into a fight were all by her own convenience. It was completely unrelated with Shizuku.

But,

(—It will be easier if I can just ignore this, huh)

That was exactly why Yaegashi Shizuku couldn't ignore this. Her personality wasn't one that would let her choose the easy path.

To say nothing of how the other party didn't come at her with ill will, and seeing how the other party somehow gave her an impression as though she was struggling with her own heart, made her unable to refuse even more.

Therefore,

“I accept your challenge.”

—

She accepted that challenge gallantly. The sharp glint of the other party, was replied back with a deep gaze that looked like a tranquil forest.

That voice wasn't raised to be louder or displayed intense pressure by any means. However, the heavy and deep "something" inside that voice definitely made Fudou to unconsciously hitched her voice.

Seeing that, Shizuku's look loosened up slightly.

□However, is it fine with you if we do it at another day? Today, I'm coming to cheer for my friends. I cannot prioritize you here. Fudou-san yourself, you aren't planning to come at me by neglecting your teammates correct?□

□That's.....□

Lured by Shizuku's gaze, Fudou looked back behind her. Over there, there were her kendo club teammates staring worriedly at her. A small groan □u□ leaked out from Fudou. It seemed she recovered her senses for a bit after seeing her teammates.

Her expression turned awkward and apologetic, and then she shook her head as though to shake off something.

Shizuku handed over a scrap of paper to such Fudou.

□This is, my contact address. Please contact me when you have made your preparation.□

□.....I get it.□

Fudou received the paper and she directed a gaze that seemed to want to say something to Shizuku for a bit, but then she returned toward her teammates.



□Shizuku! Are you okay?□

□Onee-sama, are you safe!?□

Shizuku's friends gathered one after another and talked to her with worried voice. Even the kouhai-chan who had revived before anyone knew also rushed toward Shizuku after glaring angrily at the back of Fudou.

□I'm fine, I'm fine. That person also isn't someone that I didn't know at all.□

□But, something like a match at another day..... This is something personal right? It will be against that kind of person you know? Won't it be dangerous?□

□I thought she is a barbarian from somewhere. That was scaryyy. The saying of a face like a demon must refer to that kind of person. Shizuku, I'm telling you this for your own good, it's better to report this to the teacher or someone.□

□That's right, Onee-sama! There is no way that lump of muscles is a normal high school girl! That must be a monster wearing the skin of a high school girl! Onee-sama is going to get eaten by that!□

It appeared that everyone was scared against Fudou's pressure and threatening aura, and also her atrocious body build and face. At the same time, they also seemed to be feeling great unease with this personal match where the rule might be ignored without the supervision of any adult. It was clear that they were worrying for Shizuku from the bottom of their heart.

But, the one in question here, Shizuku was instead frowning slightly.

She was happy that they were worried for her. But, if they then deprecated Fudou's appearance and body build because of that, even if that was because of the consequence of the girl's own action, what they were saying still wasn't something that felt good to hear.

Not noticing the inside of Shizuku's heart, Shizuku's friends were getting heated up even further with their criticism toward Fudou because seen from the side, it looked like Shizuku was only getting completely dragged into this.

□.....Everyone, I'm happy that you all are worried for me, but putting aside criticizing her action, saying those kind of words toward her appearance that she was born with is a bit too much.□

□Eh, ah, Shizuku.....□

□So, sorry.....□

The friends came back to their senses suddenly when they saw Shizuku's expression that was enduring distress. Shizuku's friends knew about the personality of the busybody Shizuku who would feel other people's pain as though it was her own pain. At the same time, Shizuku's expression also vaguely looked sad seeing them speaking maliciously behind someone's back.

□Hmmm. I'll say it one more time, thank you for getting worried for me. But she——Fudou-san, just like I said just now, she isn't someone that I didn't know. I almost never talked directly with her, but she is a regular in the national tournament, and I had faced against her several times. She is definitely not a bad person.□

Shizuku said that with a wry smile, and then □Besides.....□ she continued while glancing behind across her shoulder.

□Even in the unlikely chance that she took unfair method, I'll still be fine. After all a sca~ry person is watching over me.□

□Aa.....□

□.....□

It went without saying who was it that Shizuku referred to. Shizuku's friends looked at Hajime who was quietly standing behind Shizuku, and then they trembled when Hajime glanced back at them in respond. Kouhai-chan was hiding by using all the senpai as shield.

□Indeed, it will be fine if Nagumo is there, I think?□

□In a sense, it feels like the person just now is still better.□

□Onee-sama, that person, he absolutely had killed two or three people before. You should rethink about going out with——hiihn!?!□

To tell the truth, Shizuku's friends were thinking □Is it really okay going out with that kind of boyfriend□, but when they recalled the glint and aura from before that resembled a devilish homicide, they couldn't think that Hajime would be really unreliable. Rather, they imagined the end of the person who tried to lay their hand on Shizuku and even felt sympathy welling up toward such person.

On top of that, if they knew that kouhai-chan's words was actually an underestimation.....

For some reason kouhai-chan felt an intense chill in the middle of speaking and she screamed. When Shizuku's friends looked at Hajime all at once,

□What did you say, about Shizuku and me?□

□You two are really a match made in heavennn! I'm sorry, please forgive me! Don't kill me!□

Kouhai-chan was trembling like a baby deer that was only just born. Shizuku's friends were getting cold sweat seeing Hajime's faint smile.

□Hajime. Don't bully my kouhai like that.□

□I'm not bullying her. It's punishment. It's including the admonition toward her usual strange gathering and action.□

□Do it moderately please?□

□Ou□

Shizuku's friends thought. 'Nagumo is totally a bad news', and then 'Shizuku is a wild beast tamer'. By the way, for some reason there was a person who blushed slightly hearing Hajime saying 'punishment' with his S face though.....

For the sake of friendship, Shizuku pretended to not notice that.

After that, Shizuku's friends returned to the venue in order to participate in the remaining matches, while Shizuku and also Hajime returned to the audience seat. Shizuku's friends splendidly took the championship in the group competition.

At the closing party, Hajime read the mood and he didn't participate in it. For some reason they were all getting excited talking about Hajime which caused Shizuku to be blushing from start to end. After the closing party, Hajime expressly came to pick up Shizuku which caused Shizuku's

friends to get excited again and Shizuku's face got even redder from their banter. Such things happened.

Shizuku whose hand was pulled by Hajime to go home right away then looked back to give her parting greeting to the others. Her expression while doing that caused kouhai-chan to lift the slogan "Onee-sama reign supreme, Nagumo Hajime ought to die". That expression looked so happy, to the degree that it would make anyone else envious seeing it.

A few days later.

Slightly after school ended, at the period when the last of the students would go home, there was the figure of Shizuku wearing kendo uniform and protectors inside the kendo hall.

The students of the other clubs had mostly gone home, the people there were only kendo club members who had specially received permission and Hajime who came for being spectator.

".....so you came."

Shizuku suddenly turned her gaze toward the entrance. The club members who were continuing their practice because it was a waste to not do anything were making a wondering expression while turning their gaze following Shizuku's gaze.

About a few seconds later, a large shadow of a person slo~wly appeared at the entrance of the dojo building. Even

though the shadow appeared quietly, \*Dede-de-deden! Dede-de-deden!\* the BGM of Termitor was playing in everyone's head.

Every single fingers grasping the door of the dojo building was thick, the legs that were stretching from the skirt were burly like rock. The upper arms caused the sailor uniform to look like it would burst open anytime, the uniform looked like it was a no-sleeved clothes like what the 'hyahhaa' group living at the end of century was wearing.

And then, her expression was also.....

He must be seething with fighting spirit. The deep groove carved between her forehead, her lips that were pressed on each other to form a straight line, sharp eyes that were gleaming brutally. The shinai bag and kendo protectors case she were shouldering looked like flail and metal rod.

This situation was truly 'The fierce god's descent!'.

Several female club members spontaneously screamed "Hih" and fell back on their butt, but it must be a bit too harsh to reprimand them that they were being impolite to the opponent.

Speaking objectively, it was something that couldn't be helped, it was clear that for normal people, ten out of ten would say that she looked terrifying.

"Excuse me. I'm Fudou Akari. I came in order to have a match against Yaegashi Shizuku."

With a lovely voice that like before had a terrific gap with her appearance, Akari-chan gave her greeting also following the decorum. For a moment she frowned seeing the girls

who fell on their butt and the male club members backing away, but her expression soon returned to before.

She focused toward one thing. Only toward Yaegashi Shizuku. She decided that everything else was but a trifle.

□Please come in, Fudou-san. Welcoming words—are unnecessary isn't it?□

□Yes, I came here to fight after all. Your preparation?□

Fudou was approaching with a pressure that made it felt like the ground was shaking with each of her brisk step. Shizuku calmly stared back at her while nodding□There is no problem□.

Fudou was guided into the changing room and she changed her clothes there, and then she sat down across Shizuku and began to put on her protectors.

□Before the match, can I ask one thing?□

Shizuku asked while wrapping a towel on her head. Fudou nodded.

□You said, that your objective is to win against me. Is that really all there is to it?□

□.....What do you mean?□

□No, it's fine if this is just my misunderstanding but..... No matter how, it feels like this is not simply you purely wanting to raise your skill in kendo further above.□

□.....□

Being unable to have a match against the athlete that was her objective. That athlete completely stopped doing kendo.

Would she display that much of a rage just because of that.....

An athlete that was considered as rival not participating in competition or retired from the club because of some kind of circumstance wasn't that rare of a story. Many people must have harbored dissatisfaction or tasted the feeling of being off their game regarding that.

But, Shizuku thought that the intensity of the emotion that Fudou showed was hard to be explained with just that. She felt from Fudou something more, as though her important thing was stolen away, a fervent something.

The expression of the questioned Fudou warped slightly. It was unclear whether it was directed toward Shizuku, or toward herself. But for Shizuku, if she was pressed to say, it looked like it was directed toward Fudou herself.

□.....A person like you who have everything won't understand, the feeling of a person doesn't have. For me, I have nothing but kendo.□

After saying only that with a faint murmur, Fudou put on her mask protector as though to hide her expression.

Shizuku stared at such Fudou for a while, but urged by the gaze of Fudou that peeked out from behind the mask, Shizuku put on her own mask.

Both of them entered the match area while the kendo club members were watching attentively. They followed the etiquette with flowing movement and with the word□Begin!□ from the club member who took the referee role as the signal, the match began.

Right away,



□oOOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!!!□

A yell of fighting spirit that felt as though the air ruptured resounded. The club members simultaneously became paralyzed, while the window glasses were rattling for real, not just metaphor.

Fudou attempted to shake up Shizuku with fine sliding step that seemed to be flowing.

In respond Shizuku was only quietly standing still with her shinai readied in front of her. She didn't look perturbed or paralyzed at all.

□-, oOOOO-!!□

Like a large tree. That was how Shizuku seemed to be like. As though to blow away the weakness that she felt for a moment inside herself, Fudou clashed her dominating aura many time over toward Shizuku. She moved the tip of her shinai with small movement, she made feint with her gaze and footwork, all in order to lure in the opponent.

Images were emerging in her mind.

She would strike the face protector.

—Her torso was hit.

From the face toward the torso.

—Her forearm was hit.

From forearm to face. Even if it was blocked she would push in.....

(-, it would get, returned-)

No matter how she ran her imagination, she could only image herself getting struck back.

Didn't she give up doing kendo? Didn't she stop participating in match and everything until now? Or else, was it that even with her only doing kendo in her spare time, even with her blank period of not doing kendo, yet she was still unable to even reach toward her feet.....

(Such thing-, that's absurd-)

An indescribable emotion welled up from inside. The image of defeat.

To crush down that feeling, Fudou tried to gush out a yell of fighting spirit that would be even louder than before——

□oOO——□

□yAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

She was crushed instead by the sudden war cry running through her.

\*shin\*, silence fell. It was as though even the insects outside the building were holding their breath, a quiet world. Just with a roar, it was as though the world was overwritten with Shizuku's territory.

If it was just impact, then surely Fudou was above.

However, in “weight” that was hammered into the heart, Shizuku was overwhelming.

While everyone stiffened,

□-!!!?□

When Fudou noticed, in her field of vision, a shinai swinging down was.....

She was able to move even faster than her mind could think must be the fruit of her everyday training.

\*PASHIIIIIN\*, the sound of two shinai clashing resounded. There Fudou finally noticed that she was blocking against Shizuku's attack toward her face.

Fighting spirit that surpassed hers. A terrific step in that she couldn't even perceived. And then,

(It's, heavy-!?)

Weight that was unthinkable to be coming from Shizuku's slender body. Shizuku's pressure that was maintaining the sword-locking contest without moving into consecutive attack caused Fudou who should be superior in body build to reflexively step back.

□E, eh. That's, Shizuku right?□

□Should be, but.....□

Bewildered whisper leaked out from the female club members. Shizuku's style was a "sword of finesse" that made use of variegated technique with elegant footwork and speed to the maximum, it was a common knowledge. They had never seen Shizuku bringing in the fight into a sword-locking contest by her own initiative, in addition she didn't unleashed her technique from there but instead pushing in with strength.

□Has your eyes opened I wonder?□

□-, Yaegashi-□

Hearing those words from Shizuku who was staring at her from point-blank range, Fudou noticed herself that almost got swallowed in. She clenched her teeth hard and pushed Shizuku back with a shout.

Shizuku didn't resist and gently pulled back. And then, she once again took her previous stance.

Fudou clenched her teeth grindingly seeing Shizuku's state.

□Not taking advantage from enemy but giving advice instead, you are really composed aren't you□

Fudou unconsciously let out such curse. Shizuku still only observed calmly.

□What is this match for I wonder? Right now, is not the time to exchange words.□

□-, I know that!□

The calm reply caused Fudou's face to flash red in shame and this time she fiercely assaulted.

Fudou was getting back to form her pointless exertion of strength and her mind that was shrinking back from her own image, she unleashed an unconstrained assault that was backed with weight that was unbecoming for a high school girl.

The strikes came consecutively and clear impact sounds that sounded like handclapping echoed inside the dojo building.

Against the blows that were like a storm, Shizuku sometimes dodged, sometimes, parried, sometimes blocked, and dodged more by even making use of that pressure. If Fudou's footwork was like a flowing water, then Shizuku's

footwork should be called as a floating leaf dancing lightly in the air from receiving the wind.

No telling blow could land on her.

Even though normally the opponent's stamina and mental would be shaved due to the unceasing offense and overwhelming pressure, causing them to expose an opening, the one who was starting to breath roughly was Fudou instead. It was obvious even from across the mask protector. Shizuku was breathing without even the slightest disorder without even a drop of sweat.

Impatience caused Fudou's attack into something indulgent.

Shizuku smoothly stepped in.

□MEENN!□(TN: Go [here](#) for explanation about yell in kendo.)

□aa.....□

\*zupaan\* A sound that even felt pleasant to ear resounded. Without relaxing her alertness, Shizuku turned around toward Fudou's back and took her stance.

Fudou didn't move. That was because the hit just now was too beautiful. She could only opened her eyes wide in amazement.

It seemed that the all the other club members, the referee included were in the same state, everyone was paralyzed. They never even imagined that Shizuku who had never participated in a match even once since her return to school, far from not looking like she had no blank period, she even had become so strong to the degree that it was incomparable from before.

Strong, that word wasn't enough to describe it. In everything, what was called as the extremity was something that would make anyone felt beauty from it. This was exactly that. Shizuku's kendo already possessed "beauty" that would even made one felt moved.

□Referee.□

□Ah, err, me, men ari one point!□

Those words made Fudou to return to her sense too.

She still looked amazed, however right after that, seeing Shizuku taking her stance while calmly facing her, her expression greatly distorted. Her expression looked as though she was facing a reality that she didn't want to recognize, as though something that was hard to accept was thrust before herself.

□SEYAAAAAAH!!□

Fudou leaped forward. She began a fierce assault once more.

But, as expected her sword didn't reach, it was blocked, parried, and evaded with cruel calmness.

And then,

□MENN!!□

Once more, with a perfection that wouldn't allow even a single excuse, Shizuku's face strike landed. A clear impact sound echoed.

Fudou powerlessly fell on her knees. That wasn't because the strike caused a concussion or anything. It was because her heart broke. She crumbled down.

While the referee was troubled seeing Fudou who didn't look like she would carry out the etiquette for after the end of the match, Shizuku put away her shinai, took off her mask protector, and opened her mouth.

□Fudou-san. You see, this is the reason I resign from kendo club.□

□.....□

Fudou slightly looked back across her shoulder. Shizuku continued.

□While I was missing, I wasn't playing around at that time. I was desperately polishing my skill in a struggle to the death. Because there was no other choice than that. Even though I stop doing kendo, but I'm still continuing the kenjutsu of my family even now. That's why, for "kendo", for the people of kendo club, my sword has become nothing more than a poison.□

□.....In other words, you are saying it's because you are too strong, because no one is a match for you anymore? That I am not even worthy to be your opponent?□

□-, that's not it. I'm saying that even though it's the same path of sword, but the direction we are going toward is different. Even if you make me as your objective, it will distort your sword instead——□

Shizuku tried to find the right words somehow.

Shizuku allowed her friends in the kendo club to be present in this match too was also to divulge this reason to them who were urging her to come back to the club one way or another, but Shizuku had the self-awareness that she was

saying something that also could be taken as her being haughty.

And so, even while she was talking to Fudou, a shadow of unease loomed in her expression wondering whether she would be hated by her friends.

Seeing such Shizuku, the club members were divided between people who understood what Shizuku meant, people who showed a complicated expression that didn't know of what to say, and people with eyes that got even brighter while saying "As expected from Onee-sama!". But, none of them showed a clear displeasure. Surely that was the result of Shizuku's personality and the friendship that she had built until now.

But, it seemed Fudou couldn't be like that.

"Why, just why-. There is only kendo for me! Even though I only have kendo! Even though I have devoted everything for it until now-. But why is it you who have everything that instead become this strong! You who easily abandon kendo-!"

"Fudou-san. What do you mean....."

Shizuku asked Fudou who was starting to leak out tears while she still hadn't taken off her mask.

"I'm envying you!! You are beautiful, stylish, and adored by everyone! On top of that, even in kendo where I have devoted my everything, you easily surpassed me! Even though you have everything that I want! And yet, and yet-, you easily abandon my important kendo for a man! Even though you abandon it, you are still stronger than me..... such thing, it's just too much"



□.....□

Such envious heart was thrown at Shizuku right from the front.

The body build and appearance of Fudou Akari were to the degree that it was fine to say anyone who met her for the first time would feel fear. It had been like that since she was a child. No matter how much of a girl her heart was, her outward appearance wouldn't let anyone see her as a girl.

Other people would make a complicated face, or in a terrible time they would laugh when she tried to be girly. Just by walking around, the people she passed in the way would send her a shocked expression. Even though she liked cute thing, she was ridiculed that it didn't suit her.

She already lost count how much her heart had been broken by clear malice. Just how much she had been wounded by insensitive words and deeds. How many times her heart was gouged because a boy that she liked was actually speaking ill behind her back. The heart of Fudou Akari was unmistakably a girl's heart. The world was too cruel toward such her.

What was the most painful for her, was when she saw her parents looking pained when they saw herself feeling pained. It wasn't that they didn't love her. Rather, it could even be said that they were doting on her. That was exactly why, seeing her parents getting troubled due to their troubled daughter fanned up her guilt.

Consequently, that must be why. Why she stepped into the path of kendo.

It was no use even if she kept getting troubled about her own look. In that case, she would try stepping into a world

that would suit even someone like her. And then, so that she would be able to approve of herself, she would become number one in that path.

She decided so.

But, she encountered her. Inside the world she stepped into, there was that girl.

□Why are you that beautiful? Why are you that strong? Why are you that loved? Even though I'm like this-, isn't this unfair!?□

It wasn't like Shizuku knew about the detail of Fudou's circumstance. But, Shizuku guessed it just from those words. The daily life that Fudou Akari had experienced until now. The bitter experiences.

Suddenly, the words that were always thrown at her in the past resurrected inside Shizuku's mind.

—Are you a girl?

Her chest tightened. Shizuku saw her past self overlapping with Fudou who was shedding tears. She was about to open her mouth following her boiling emotion.

However, before her feeling could turn into words,

□.....You can just feel hurt. You should just taste the same pain like me!□

After saying such thing, Fudou whose eyes were giving glimpses of flame of envy and hatred deep inside rushed out from the dojo building without even giving anyone time to call at her to stop.

□Fudou-san-, wait——□

Shizuku immediately tried to chase after her, but her hand was grasped by a powerful strength and she was pulled back. When she quickly turned around, the one she found there was Hajime who had been silently watching until now.

Shizuku showed impatience and told Hajime to let go of her hand, but Hajime spoke back with a serious gaze.

□Don't worry, Shizuku.□

□Hajime.....□

□I'll finish her off later. I'm not gonna lose to anyone in how to break the heart skillfully.□

It seemed that Hajime-san was planning to go and finish off the girl who was running off while crying.

Anyway,

□Stop that-, this demon king-!□

\*zupaan\* A raging shinai was launched in a straight-man attack to the face of the demon king. □Ouch-□ Demon king-sama pitched forward while saying that.

Even the kendo club members who were dumbfounded by the chain of events also crept away, or even shuddered from Hajime's words.

Hajime stroked her own head while looking at Shizuku.

□You have calmed down a bit?□

□Eh?□

Hajime made a wry smile toward the astonished Shizuku and he continued.

□What is someone at her wits end going to do chasing after someone else who is also at her wits end? Calm down first for now.□

□Ah.....□

□Besides, a beauty like you, no matter what you say toward someone who has complex about their own appearance, in most case it won't end well.□

If someone who didn't have confidence with their own appearance was then told □It's fine, face doesn't matter!□ by someone who was recognized as attractive by everyone—it was guaranteed that the person would go □You bastard, you are making fun of me huh!?!□.

Strength left Shizuku's body. But, she also didn't look like she was accepting it.

□Then, are you telling me I should leave her alone because of that ? Such thing——□

□That's why, I'm telling you to calm down. What that girl is holding inside, is it something that light that words you thought up in the spot will be able to solve?□

□That's.....□

Shizuku was at a loss for words. Hajime let go of her arm and in exchange his hand touched Shizuku's soft cheek and pinched there tenderly to calm her down.

□Isn't it better if you give her a bit of time? Like that, if that girl become shut in then you can visit her however many

times you like, and if she try to do something then you can just stop her. Either way, doing it right now won't be anything good for both sides.□

The caution of Hajime who seemed to have seen through that Shizuku was shaken seeing her past self overlapping with Fudou, made Shizuku to hang her head down while nodding despondently.

□Don't make that kind of face. I'll also look out so that it won't become something that cannot be undone. That's why, you can think slowly, what kind of words you should say, and what kind of action you should take the next time you meet her. Come on, for now let's go back home for today. Go change your clothes.□

□Yes.....□

Perhaps she was feeling regretful that things didn't go well, or perhaps she was worrying of what she should do. Shizuku was totteringly vanishing into the changing room looking somewhat dejected. Hajime saw her off while making a troubled expression. As for the kendo club members, they were writhing a bit seeing the figure of down-hearted Shizuku that normally she would never show to them.

□He, hey Nagumo. You won't stop her? You are her boyfriend right?□

□Tha, that's right. It's absolutely dangerous to go meet that girl or trying to stop her when she comes to attack! That person's state wasn't normal!□

Shizuku's friends were arguing vehemently at Hajime's act that seemed to push the back of Shizuku who was trying to do something about this matter.

Fudou's state at the end was certainly uncommon. Different from when she was pushing for a match, her strange atmosphere just now looked as though a stronger negative emotion was overflowing from her. No matter who one thought about it, she looked like she was going to do something bad to Shizuku.

Normally this would be where one ought to stop from getting involved. No matter how strong Shizuku was, there was no need to allow her to purposefully head toward danger. And if Hajime was her boyfriend, he should not let her lover to get involved with this all the more, was what the girls argued about.

But, Hajime indifferently declared to them who were like that.

□Her meddlesomeness and worrying habit are hardcore one. It cannot be helped right?□

□Cannot be helped you say.....isn't that too irresponsible even though you are her boyfriend?□

□It's fine. If that's what Shizuku want to do that is. If she is going to be meddlesome toward other people and she is burdened with trouble because of that, then I'll take care of her and shoulder the burden twice of that, I'll also spoil her while I'm at it. That's my role.□

□.....□

The expression of the girls went \*munyuu\*. It was an expression as though they were forcefully fed with a terribly sweet pastry. As for the boys, their expression was half admiring, and half jealous seeming to say 'Anyway, won't Nagumo just die already' in their own way.

□Putting that aside, there is one little problem though.....□

□Eh, wha, what?□

One girl asked back while stuttering a bit for some reason.  
Hajime scratched on his cheek awkwardly while,

□That Fudou girl, she was running out still in her kendo uniform, or rather she was still wearing all her protectors. What are we going to do with her uniform?□

□Ah.....□

When they looked at the entrance, her shoes were also left behind. In this time when the sun had already set, a huge girl wearing full set kendo equipment except the mask protector was running away with tearful face while barefooted..... It felt like a new urban legend would be whispered in the neighborhood.

□As expected Fudou won't come back herself to take back her things. Even if we want to return her things to the kendo club member at her school, it will be a problem if a male like me go there carrying girl uniform.□

□If it's Shizuku it feels like she is going to say that she want to return it herself but.....from the talk just now, it will be questionable if we let Shizuku go do that.□

□Yeah. And so, oi, you kohai over there.□

Hajime's gaze locked on to kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan reflexively jumped on the spot while giving a strange reply  
□Yhess!□.

□Tomorrow morning, go deliver the uniform to Fudou's school.□

□Eh? Tomorrow morning.....err, I have class normally tomorrow though?□

□Aaa? Then, you can just come here to collect the uniform first thing in the morning, go to her school, and then return here before class start. Ah, you cannot bring the uniform home okay? Just in case, what if that girl comes back here to take her things herself.□

□E, err, senpai. That person's school, is really far from here though.....□

□Looks like it. And?□

□E, err, my house is also, quite far from here so, looking from the total distance it will take a lot of time.....□

□I see. And?□

□.....Uu. At least make it after school, is that no good?□

□Oi oi, what are you going to do if by chance Fudou doesn't have spare uniform? If you deliver it first thing in the morning, in the worst case she can change after arriving in school. But if you deliver it after school.....you are a cruel fellow huh.□

□Whi, which mouth is saying thaatt□

Kouhai-chan grinded her teeth \*gugigigigigi\*. It was a rebellious attitude. Really inexcusable. Added with her usual mischief that was crossing the line, her attitude really wasn't good.

Hajime made a wide grin while stepping forward as though taking advantage of the gap of her consciousness and approached near, dealing an iron claw on kouhai-chan.



\*creak\* An unpleasant sound rang..... (AN: Iron claw = a wrestling move? where you grasp the face of the opponent with one hand hard)

□Ouch-, ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Se, senpai!? My head, my head is splitt——□

□Oi, kouhai. I'm saying that if you clear this mission, I'll forgive all your mischief until now. You get any complaint?□

□Hahih, none at all! I'll work hard and complete the missionnnn!□

The pitiful kouhai-chan was released, and then she crumbled down on the floor with her legs glued close to each other, that posture was as though she was a pitiful girl that encountered a violent hoodlum. In front of the kouhai-chan who was whispering□Onee-sama, is this also a trial for me?□, was Hajime-senpai who was standing imposingly without even a shred of guilt while dealing additional blow□If you fail, or if you play hooky.....you understand right?□ to the downed opponent.

The gap of this with his act against Shizuku before this that was indulgent in various meanings was terrific.

While the club members were shuddering once more,

□.....What are you all doing? Or rather, why is everyone not changing already?□

There, Shizuku who had finished changing clothes arrived with a dubious expression.

□No, there is nothing. ....Right?□

Hajime looked over the kendo club members with a smile.

□□□□Yes! There is nothing at all!□□□□

The hearts of the kendo club members were as one. They couldn't go against Yaegashi Shizuku's boyfriend.

Shizuku seemed to guess what happened somehow and she sent an exasperated gaze at Hajime while also making apologetic expression at the club members at the same time, but before she could say anything, □Now, we are going home□ her hand was pulled by Hajime and she was taken away.

At the entrance, Shizuku looked back and somehow said only□See you all tomorrow!□ before fading out.

Inside the dojo building that became silent,

□Uu, how dare you do that to a girl's face. Is this grudge, ought to be left uncleared like this-□

There, the grudge of kouhai-chan who didn't learn her lesson echoed.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Shizuku arc will continue for a little bit more.

By the way, the scene where Shizuku returned a yell of fighting spirit, I imagined the awesome scene of Tama-chan of Bamboo Blade for that. Atomi○ Fire Blade.....Shirakome was trembling in various senses.

# Arifureta After II

## Residential Area's

### V○der-sama

Author Note: I'll post one more chapter at 19:00.

The last of Shizuku arc.

---

The next day after the incident with Fudou Akari.

A short time before the morning homeroom started, Shizuku talked about the details of yesterday to Kaori, Yue, and Shia who had arrived.

□He, hee~. So there was something like that..... That must be terrible, Shizuku-chan.□

□Well, it's not that terrible though..... I'm thinking whether I should be able to handle that better. It's just a meaningless what-if though.□

Shizuku's shoulders dropped while saying such thing. Yue and Shia made a bit exasperated face while Kaori smiled wryly to such Shizuku.

Although, even though Kaori was smiling wryly, it seemed her attention was taken by something else, since some time

ago her gaze kept glancing at other direction even while she was listening to Shizuku's story.

Yue and Shia didn't look like they were really bothered about it, but even the classmates who had arrived already were paying attention to it with cringing face "Uwaa" or admiring face "That girl, she is a hero huh".

"Ouch ouch ouch ouch-, my head-, my heaaad"

"You're right. Your head is dumb huh."

"It's painful-, let go you bastarrrd!"

"Aa? Bastard? Your way of speaking is improper huh, kouhai."

"Hihi, I'm sorry! I got too cocky-! Don't grin on my forehead-, Onee-samaaa! Help meee!!"

A scream echoed inside the classroom.

"And then, I have a friend in Fudou-san's school, so this morning I tried calling her to ask, is she going to school. But, normally she would come early for morning training, but my friend told me that she hasn't come yet....."

"Tha, that's really worrying isn't it, Shizuku-chan. But, I wonder if perhaps it will be better for you to also feel worry about somewhere nearer to you for now?"

"Onee-samaaa! Help meee! Onee-sama!"

"There is also that thing that happened only yesterday, so I plan to wait and see for a while but..... I'm thinking of being the one to go meet her when the time is good."

□Eeehh? Onee-sama? Onee-sama! Your soul sister is falling into a devil's hand right hereee!□

Shizuku-oneesama didn't turn around. Seeing such attitude from Shizuku and the deed that was being carried out behind Shizuku right now, Kaori couldn't help but let out cold sweat.

The kouhai-chan who was always hanging around Shizuku.

Right now she was receiving iron claw from Hajime first thing in the morning. Her face was being tightly held in an eagle grip while her forehead was nonchalantly getting grinded against with increasing strength, even watching from the side that looked painful.

Kouhai-chan was desperately tapping repeatedly on Hajime's arm while desperately seeking help from her beloved Onee-sama, but she was also casually insulting Hajime while doing that, so each time the grip's strength was increased and she was gradually losing momentum.

□Hey, Shizuku-chan. That girl is desperately calling at Shizuku-chan though.....□

Shizuku's beautiful acting as though nothing happened which was unlike her made Kaori to finally ask while she raised her eyebrows with a troubled look.

□Aa~, Hajime? Won't you forgive her soon? I'll also speak with her later about it.□

□Well, fine then.□

Hajime casually tossed away \*poi\* Kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan fell on her butt with□Ahih□. □Uu, that hurtt. My head feels like they are splitting opeenn□ Kouhai-chan's face contorted

looking like she was going to cry, but only after a bit she glared at Hajime fiercely.

□That's cruel, Nagumo-senpai! Just what I have done that made me deserved that!?!□

□It's because how you were trying to post those blasphemous edited photographs.□

By the way, it was about edited photographs where Hajime was in a dreadful situation in them. In the photographs he was co-starring with macho onii-chan. As expected it was a doing in the level that made even Shizuku plainly snapped seeing the appearance of her lover that crossed the line.

Having a gaze that had crossed being chilly and even looked nihilistic like a black hole directed at her, kouhai-chan trembled with a sudden chill. She was drenched with cold sweat, and inside her heart she whispered□As I thought, have I overdone it I wonder?□.

But, in front of the hateful son of a bitch, the pride of a soul sister wouldn't allow her to apologize or anything.

In the first place,

□Uh, bu, but! This is because Nagumo-senpai's own fault!□

□Aa? Why is that huh?□

Against Hajime in his current mood as an opponent, even though it was only at the level like a puppy yipping \*yap yap\*, but Kouhai-chan was still taking a defiant attitude against such Hajime. A commotion was running through the classmates.

□Hey, is there anyone who has a fresh status plate? I'm gonna ascertain that girl's vocation.□

□It's obvious already even without doing that.□

□Yeah. One who oppose the demon king is always—a hero.□

Such conversation were done between Atsushi, Akito, and Noboru. The other classmates seemed to also in strong agreement.

Not knowing that all her senpai was looking at her as though they were seeing a hero, or perhaps seeing a rare beast, Kouhai-chan shook her twin tail wildly while pointing sharply with her finger.

□Today, I woke up at five o'clock you know! I came at school at six o'clock without even eating breakfast, and from there it was also terrible!□

□Terrible? What is?□

□The school gate, it wasn't open!□

'Well of course', everyone nodded. As expected, even the teacher who came early for morning training and so on wouldn't come at six o'clock.

□You came too early.□

□But, if I want to participate in kendo club's morning training even just for a bit, I won't make it in time if I don't come at least that early. After all, the other school is really far.□

All the senpai were in admiration, thinking 'she is unexpectedly diligent huuh'.

□And?□

□It couldn't be helped so—I had no choice other than trespassing in.□

All the senpai tilted their head, thinking 'she is diligent, right?'.

□But, our school, it was really a big deal for a period because of all of you senpai's disappearance remember? Because of that the gate and fence were also reconstructed for a bit.....□

□Aa. The countermeasure for unlawful intruder. Well, it was made so that it's a bit harder to enter here, only to the degree like the school of the rich I guess.□

□Yes. And so, right from the morning I was copying wall climb sport. It was difficult to climb up the wall. There were few protrusions to use.....□

□You must looked completely like a suspicious person.□

A high school girl doing wall climb on the school's wall at six in the morning..... The gazes of all the senpai were once more turning into eyes that were looking at a hero in a different sense.

□But, I accomplished it. I collected that girl's uniform and climbed the wall once more to escape, and then sped away with my bicycle.□

□No, use the train. Just how far do you think the distance is? If I remember correctly, it's about three, four station. Using



bicycle to go there is.....□

□Round trip cost 440 yen. You bourgeois senpai won't understand the value of that amount.□

□.....□

Saving 440 yen by pedaling bicycle. Was it her lunch money for today? The eyes of all the senpai were really gentle. At the same time, there were also accusing stares piercing Hajime. Hajime-san whispered □Perhaps I should at least pay extra for her expenses.....□.

□And then, a hell was waiting for me.....□

□Here is Japan isn't it? But for some reason I'm smelling the smell of adventurer from her though.....□

□Yes, it was a heart-breaking hill! The school of that girl, the school building is located on top of a hill! Can you believe it! My legs were already like jelly! What's more, there was a bus stop at the hilltop, the people who were arriving for morning training or whatever were overtaking me using bus! In addition, they were staring at me across the window! It was like they were saying □Eh, what's with that person? Why is a student from another school is desperately pedaling a bicycle until she got drenched with sweat like that? She is a bit out of place though~□! There were even people who pointed at me I told you!□

□.....□

Not losing against the hill, not even losing against the curious stares, kouhai-chan climbed to the peak.

By the way, looking at kouhai-chan who finally arrived wobblingly like a ghost while breathing roughly 'zee—haa,

zee—haa', a teacher that must be an adviser—a young female teacher welcoming the students at the front gate was screaming.

□I who safely accomplished my mission received a lot of water from a kind female teacher, after resting for a bit I left the school. Haha, that hill road, when coming it's like hell, but the return home it's really heavenly! The exhilaration was amazing! I rode the bicycle down while my hands let go of the steer handle you know! What a thrill!□

□You, are really enjoying life huuh~□

The classmates nodded □Certainly□ at Hajime's whisper.

By the way, regarding kouhai-chan who was going down the hill road with a fierce speed while happily yelling

□Hyahoo——□ with both her hands in banzai pose and her twin tails fluttering, currently it was becoming a hot topic at the school over there even now.

It was a terribly dangerous stunt, so good children absolutely must not copy it at home okay?

□After that, I sent a grandma who was tired from walking her puppy and became unable to move back to her home, and in the end I didn't make it in time for the morning practice.....□

□Your trouble attraction rate is unbelievable oi□

Lightly ignoring Hajime's words, kouhai-chan suddenly opened her eyes widely in a flash.

□I have accomplished the mission that gave me enormous difficulty the first thing in the morning. And what did Nagumo-senpai say to such me after that!?!□

“? Did I say something?”

“Yes, you said it! When senpai saw me drenched in sweat,  
“Unbelievable. It was like you are a comedian wearing wig  
that produced water. Are you gonna participate in R-1 after  
this?” that was what senpai said! Who did you call a  
comedian! I’m not training for that just so you know! That  
was the result of my hard work you know! Praise me  
properly, you bastard!” (TN: R-1 seems to be a comedy show  
in Japan. Anyone know more detail about it?)

All the senpai thought. That was a splendid tsukkomi. If she  
could find an excellent partner that took the role of the  
funny man, wouldn’t she be able to participate in even M-1?  
Such thought ran through their mind.

By the way, right after kouhai-chan got her sweaty state  
pointed out at her, she rushed toward the dojo building with  
a fierce speed and properly put her appearance in order  
using the necessities for female club member that were  
constantly prepared in there. After that, she went to take the  
aforementioned edited picture from “Soul sister’s secret  
armory”, and when she tried to paste the photo on the door  
of Hajime’s classroom she got the first iron claw of the  
morning.

“Now, praise me. While you are at it, apologize. Say “You  
have worked hard. It’s really inexcusable for me to bully  
such capable kouhai. As my apology I’ll part from Shizuku  
right now. I won’t come near her anymore from here on until  
the doomsday”. Now, quickly! Quickly say——ah, stop-  
Please stop senpai! Don’t tie my hair into a reef knottt!  
Onee-sama, save meee!!”

Hajime-senpai’s technique shined bright. Kouhai-chan’s twin  
tail was tied into a reef knot in the blink of eye, furthermore

the tips were formed into heart shape. The hairstyle was then thoroughly fixed in place with rainbow colored wire with great detail.

The gazes of all the senpai who were looking at kouhai-chan struggling and squirming with teary eyes were lukewarm. Their gazes looked as though they were watching a frolicking small animal while they were saying "She isn't learning huuh" or "She still haven't get enough huuh". Kouhai-chan's petite body build also spurred that image further.

Shizuku smiled wryly while standing up to save kouhai-chan. The bell rang in a good timing.

"Come on, the bell has also rang, let her go already with that much."

"Can't be helped."

Kouhai-chan crumbled down on the ground with legs gluing close on each other as though she had just gotten assaulted by a hoodlum. Shizuku replaced Hajime and expressed her thanks to kouhai-chan regarding the matter of returning the uniform (Shizuku knew that kouhai-chan was ordered by Hajime to do that only this morning).

Kouhai-chan who were gifted with the words of thanks from the onee-sama that she loved and respected instantly made a loose expression that couldn't be showed in front of other people.

And then, after she stood up while trying to hug onee-sama which was casually dodged by Shizuku, she glared hatefully at Hajime.

"You better remember this!"

She said such thuggish line and ran away. The heart styled hair was bobbing up and down above her head. Was she planning to enter her own classroom while still like that? She was a kouhai whose soul of adventure was overflowing everyday nonchalantly.

□That photo is really too much but.....so far as it goes she was doing it at the door of our classroom where no one other than the people of our class would see it, so forgive her already okay?□

Hajime shrugged at Shizuku's words.

Seeing such Hajime, Yue let out □Nn~□ from her mouth while tilting her head.

□.....Hajime. Actually, you are really pleased with that child?□

Those words toward the husband that came from someone who was acknowledged by everyone as the legal wife were basically recognized as correct by everyone in that place. If Yue saw it like that, then the possibility that it was actually like that was extremely high.

Not just Shizuku and others, but all the classmates also looked at Hajime feeling □Eh?□. Hajime smiled wryly from getting seen through while he lifted both his hands in giving up posture.

□Well yeah. Somehow seeing her feels nostalgic.□

□Nostalgic? By any chance, did you know her from before?□

Shizuku asked. Hajime shook his head and denied it before his gaze moved toward Shia. Shia tilted her head because Hajime suddenly looked at her for some reason.

□That's not it, perhaps I should say it's that girl's regrettableness, or how she won't get discouraged, somehow those sides of her resembled Shia when I first met her.□

□.....Heh? Resembled, me?□

It seemed everyone didn't get what Hajime meant, but only Yue nodded □Aa~□ in understanding.

□Yeah. The you when we first met could only be called as a regrettable rabbit. What you did and your attitude, rather it was your very existence itself that was regrettable. If there is a race of regrettable rabbit, then you will get a perfect score of 100 without any objection.□

□Hajime-san, are you picking a fight with me?□

Right now anyone could see the vision of her rabbit ears that were invisible because of the artifact hairband she wore going \*usaa-!!\* in indignation. (TN: Usa => Usagi => Rabbit)

□Your face was terrible with snot and tear and drool, your important place was in plain sight, even though you were the one asking for help but you were strangely impudent, your forcible attitude.....□

□Nuh, guu, I, I cannot deny that desuu.....□

□Even when I elbowed you, kicked you, electrified you, sent you flying, but you absolutely wouldn't let go even while weeping.□

□When I recalled it now, Hajime-san was really a brute that time! Or rather, even when I asked for help when I almost

became a monster's meal, you tried to desert me so nonchalantly!□

The classmates who had never heard of the story how Hajime met Shia made a shuddering expression at Hajime's deed at that time. They couldn't even imagine it looking at his current attitude toward Shia.

□But still, I think Yue also felt it but.....you were that kind of regrettable rabbit, but even so you didn't get discouraged, looking at you energetically hopping around running over there, hopping around running that way, just watching you like that was really fun, that even us felt like we were also energized.□

□.....Nn. Just looking at Shia was somewhat fun.□

□Aa, u.....is, is that so.....□

Shia shyly played around with her rabbit ears that must be there. Even while looking at such Shia with a gentle gaze, Hajime also wafted off an atmosphere that felt vaguely lonely.

□You who needed to get looked after when something happened, is now in the remonstrating side instead right? Like when Yue and Kaori quarreled, or when Myuu was going to do something reckless, or when I wasn't reading the mood.□

By the way, what Hajime meant by not reading the mood referred to the time when he was flirting with the wife~s (mainly Yue) without even caring of other people's eyes.

□.....Nn. Shia is a firm person. Her housework is also almighty.□

“That’s why, seeing that girl who even though is regrettable like that, yet still charging ahead without getting discouraged, it’s like I’m facing Shia in the past, it’s a bit nostalgic.”

“I see now. When we met Shia, it was when she was already transformed into the bugged rabbit.”

Shizuku and the classmates also nodded “I see” in comprehension. And then, thinking that they also wanted to try witnessing the “regrettable rabbit Shia”, but seeing how such thing couldn’t be witnessed anymore, many of them whispered “how regrettable”.

Hajime also looked at Shia once more, and then he whispered “how regrettable” while narrowing his eyes fondly.

Yue looked at Shia with nostalgia, and she whispered “..... regrettable”. Kaori and Shizuku too, they were thinking of the no good Shia and imagined that such thing might be cute in its own way, but seeing that they wouldn’t be able to see it already, they whispered “That’s regrettable” “It’s regrettable”.

“E, excuse me, I think that perhaps all of you are saying that in a good meaning, but still, getting called regrettable, regrettable on and on so many times, it’s a bit.....”

“How regrettable”

“Stoop! Please stop looking at someone’s face while calling that person regrettable earnestly like that desuu!! Auuu, my past self is resurrecting desuu~”

The rabbit who was still called as regrettable whether she was actually regrettable or not was trembling all over while



falling down powerlessly face down on her own table.

Hajime and others were staring at such Shia with a lukewarm gaze.

Sunday.

Kaori was walking alone through a residential area toward the station in that day off. The time was just past noon. Her appearance was casual, but seeing her it was clear that she put her appearance in order while being properly conscious of her outing.

(Hm~m, I wonder if the time is fine? Nevertheless, it was shocking that that person is coming here. It seemed that person came when Yue opened the gate but.....she said that it's a secret from Hajime.)

Kaori glanced at her arm watch while talking about such thing to herself. Today she had a plan to meet with a person who came from the other world secretly from Hajime. It appeared she was going to talk with that person a bit while also having tea but.....

The point where it was a secret from Hajime gave off a really bad vibe. Although, it was just as Yue said, in this world there were things that weren't ought to be known.

Kaori fastened her pace while making a really complicated expression—it was at that time,

□.....Who is it? Do you have any business with me?□

Kaori stopped still and said such thing toward the street where there should be no one else other than her.

After a while, there was only dead silence filling the street, but before long, from the gap between the fences of two houses behind Kaori, a person came out while making rustling sound from the clothes that rubbed the wall of the cramped space.

SSSHHH, HOHHHHH

□.....□

A strange breathing sound resounded in the street.

Kaori who turned around was speechless. She was speechless, however, inside her heart she was greatly shaken.

The reason was,

(Da, Oorth Vader is here-!?)

Yes, what came out from between the houses, was someone wearing pitch black clothes, pitch black mantel, and then wearing a unique full faced gas mask, Lord Oader! Even now he was breathing 'SSSHHH, HOHHHHH'!

If this was just a mere deviant, Kaori surely wouldn't be this shaken. She would finish it by normally defeating the other party. But, the opponent here was Lord VOder. She didn't understand how she should react!

As expected, should she praise 'what a lovely collection you have there!' like that here?

Even while Kaori was shaken and thinking of such thing,

□.....If you're going to hate someone, then hate Yaegashi Shizuku for this.□

□Eh?□

Lord Va○er took out a shinai from his mantel. Seeing that what came out wasn't a light s○ber, Kaori went 'hah' and returned to her senses, however, her attention was diverted when she heard the name of her best friend spoken out.

Taking advantage of that opening, Lord V○der unleashed his shinai saber in a horizontal slash. The attack didn't aim at the head, but aiming at the shoulder blade. From that it seemed the attacker still had some rationality left, but even so there was no doubt that this was still a dangerous deed the attacker was doing.

If a delicate girl like Kaori got hit with that, it was possible her bone would break, even if that wasn't the case there was enough possibility she would get sent flying and got knocked somewhere on her body.

Well, that was if Kaori was just a delicate girl though.

□Eih□

□Eh?□

What was instantly taken out along with that cute voice, was a cleaving attack from a special security baton that stretched out from the centrifugal force when it was taken out.

Against that cleaving attack that was swung down like a guillotine, the horizontal slash of Lord ○ader was knocked

down—not, far from that the shinai saber was snapped into two in the middle.

Lord Va○er was dumbfounded. A lovely voice “Ei!” came toward such him once more.

What entered his field of vision, was slender fingers that were clenched tightly, it was a fist that could even be called small. Although, the power was so heavy to the degree it felt like a gorilla was behind that punch.

“Buhee!?”

The Vad○r mask was smashed apart, and the person behind the mask was blown away. The person inside the ○ader rolled around on the ground before they fainted spread-eagled.

“Eh? This person, could she be.....”

Kaori whispered that while she moved to restrain the person for the time being, and then she took out her mobile phone after making a thinking gesture for a bit.

And then, she began to contact her best friend.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Why am I writing kouhai-chan that much, that’s because as the result of my self-analysis while writing, I felt nostalgic about the regrettable rabbit just like I wrote in this chapter.

The regrettable rabbit is no more.....how regrettable.

# **Arifureta After II I'll Defeat You Bastard- Today, Right Here!**

AN: This is the posting of the second chapter for today.

The previous chapter had been posted, so for those who still hasn't read it, please visit there.

---

□Kaori!□

□Ah, Shizuku-chan.□

Shizuku rushed with a worried look into a small park a slight distance away from the residential area from before. It seemed that Hajime was also nearby, because he arrived together with Shizuku.

□So she ended up causing a scene. What's more, she did it by taking a really nasty method.□

Hajime said such thing with a cold voice when he saw the person sitting down beside Kaori. The voice without a shred of warmth in it and the straightforward words caused the person's big body to twitch.

Shizuku thanked Kaori once more for contacting her and then she moved her gaze toward that person——Fudou Akari.

□.....Fudou-san.□

□.....□

Fudou didn't react and kept looking down. Her expression and eyes were dark. Not even the slightest bit of dominating aura could be felt from her large body. And above all else.....the track of nosebleed Kaori-san's face punch was terrible. The smashed mask put beside her indicated the gruesomeness of that punch.

□.....Just quickly call the police or whatever.□

After some time of silence, Fudou whispered those words with faint volume. Self-abandonment could be felt from that voice. There were also resignation and weariness mixed in it. It was as though she was a tired old woman despite her youth.

Indeed, although it was only an attempt but what Fudou did was still a criminal act. She was completely a suspicious person. After all, she was Lord Vad○r in the middle of day. She had no way to make any excuse.

But, Shizuku really hesitated when Fudou mentioned about calling police.

As though sensing that hesitation of Shizuku, Kaori opened her mouth with an expression that looked worried for both Fudou and Shizuku.

□You see, Shizuku-chan. From the start it didn't look like Fudou-san planned to actually hit me you know?□

□Kaori?□

□-.....□

Fudou looked at Kaori with a taken aback expression, and Shizuku also faced Kaori with a questioning look that wondered what she meant.

□The shinai sabe——cough-. The shinai you see, it suddenly lost momentum just before it was going to hit. Perhaps, she might be intending to stop just barely before it hit. Even in the case that it hit me, I think it would only hurt me somewhat without any injury. She was also aiming at the shoulder just in case.□

Shizuku understood that Fudou still hadn't lost her rationality after hearing Kaori's words and let out a sigh of relieve. On the other hand, Fudou was looking at Kaori with a shocked expression for some reason, but right after that, she made a ridiculed face as though exposing her whole sense of inferiority.

While that happened, Hajime was directing an admiring gaze toward Kaori.

□Even while understanding that it won't be a problem, you snapped the opponent's shinai, and in the end you even smashed her face..... Kaori-san, that's lovely yes.□

□Tha, that couldn't be helped! Because, it was Lord Vade○ right in the middle of town! Anyone would be shaken just like me! There was even the sound 'SSSHHH, HOHHHH'!□

□I think that sound is unreated though.....□

Kaori was speaking her justification with bright red face. In respond Hajime was looking at her with a gentle and

understanding expression while glancing at the pulverized mask and Fudou's face that was dyed with nosebleed, and then he snapped a thumb up at her.

Kaori-san rushed forward. She let out her protesting punches \*poka poka\* at Hajime.

Seeing such Kaori at the corner of her sight, Fudou raised a low laughing voice that was unmistakably self-deprecating this time.

□Fudou-san?□

□Just laugh at me, Yaegashi. My sword is completely seen through by a normal girl who doesn't even do kendo. Hahahah, I'm really laughable. Anything and everything I did is just pointless. In the end, the kid who have it will go above the kid who is have-not even without doing anything.□

Actually Shizuku really wanted to make denial at the part when Fudou said normal girl. Depending on the situation, Kaori was stronger than Shizuku. After all, her specs were that of a god's apostle. It was fine to even call it a foul play.

After laughing for a while, Fudou looked exhausted as though her soul had slipped out from her body, then she said one more time □Just call the police already□. It was clear even without any words. She was broken right now. She had given up her own life as worthless.

Seeing such Fudou, Shizuku closed her eyes once and then whispered with a faint voice.

□——You are a woman?□

□-□



Fudou twitched and trembled. She thought that Shizuku was making fun of her. She thought that this was the payback for her trying to hurt Shizuku's friend.

But, Shizuku's next words caused her heart that should have been closed to unconsciously react.

□You see, at the past when I was in elementary school, I was once told that.□

□.....Yaegashi was?□

It couldn't be helped that her gaze turned unconsciously suspicious. There was no way Yaegashi Shizuku who was praised as a beautiful girl by everyone would be gotten told that.

Shizuku made a wry smile and she then talked about her appearance when she was a child and the series of events related to that.

Fudou snorted at that.

□What? Do you want to say that by working hard you can become beautiful like now? That's only the talk if the person has a good base from the beginning. That kind of talk——□

□That's not what I meant. I'm not talking about look. I'm talking about whether you like yourself or not.□

□Liking, myself?□

Fudou's gaze turned even more suspicious from not getting what Shizuku was talking about, to which Shizuku nodded silently.

□I, hated myself. I wasn't aware of it myself, but I stifled myself, ran around busily for other people's sake, took only the role of protecting others..... Even though I actually didn't want to do something like kenjutsu, even though I want to be more girly, I want to lament and complaint, get protected like a princess..... Even though it would be great if I could be like that, but everything was the polar opposite of that.□

□.....□

The self she wanted to become, her ideal self, they all were the polar opposite of her current self—those words caused Fudou's eyes to widen slightly. It was as though she was hearing about herself.

□Even my current self is fine, there is nothing wrong with it, that was how I persuaded myself and pretended that I was accepting it, but one day, the day when I needed to pay the price from continuing to deceive and hate myself came.□

□Price?□

□I almost died.□

Fudou gulped. She wanted to laugh Shizuku down from saying such absurd thing, but Shizuku's expression and voice didn't even have the slightest bit of humorous atmosphere in them.

□Really, I was beaten up so laughably pathetically. My whole body was chopped up, I was also humiliated with words, if he was late in coming to save me just by a hairbreadth, a blade would have already sticking into my head at that time.□

□No no no no no, just what the heck with that kind of situation huh!□

Shizuku let out a dry chuckle when she recalled that time, while Fudou spontaneously acted the straight-man. As expected, it was a situation that was unimaginable to happen to modern person of this era. Fudou thought that it was a lie, but it was just too out there for a nonsense talk, and above all her instinct screamed at her that it wasn't a lie.

□When I was at elementary school, I was saved by Kaori. During the time I disappeared, it was Hajime who saved me. Other than them, I was also always getting saved by someone. ....Fudou-san. You said that I'm someone like me is in the category of the have, but if I really have everything, then I wonder why is it that I'm always saved in the crucial time.□

□.....Yaegashi.□

The perfect and dignified girl who was recognized by everyone. Shizuku who Fudou thought as such person was now making an expression that looked pitiful from the bottom of her heart. Fudou's expression turned into disbelief.

□It's the fact that everyone has difference due to things like their birth and upbringing. But, surely it depends on themselves whether they can make use of it or not. I who Fudou-san said to be someone in the have, was really no good that I almost died. I finally could affirm that after really almost dying and then getting saved again.□

Shizuku cut off her words for a moment there, and then she turned a nostalgic gaze at Fudou who was staring at her in astonishment.

□The national meet when I was just entered middle school. I faced a first year like me. An athlete that unusually fought

with upper stance. Her skill was obvious even when that was the first time I faced her. Even though her first move looked slow, when I noticed “the invisible face strike” was already swung down.□ (TN: Upper stance = a stance where the athlete held the shinai with both hands above their head.)

□Yaegashi, you, remember.....□

Shizuku got a faraway look in her remembrance of that time, however she then shook her head.

□I don’t remember most of what happened in that match. My head became blank when I received the first face strike, I was simply losing myself in my thought. When, how did I get hit, how would I block it, how would I see through it! Those were all I could think. Your sword was really really scary.....□

For Fudou, the first time she fought Shizuku, she could only see it as though Shizuku was perfectly handling her technique. It was a bolt from the blue for her to hear that unexpectedly, Shizuku at that time was fearing her.

□When the match was over, after I comprehended that I somehow won, when I looked back I couldn’t recall anything..... However, after my excitement passed, the strongest impression that remained inside me was only——what a beautiful sword that was.□

□Beau, tiful?□

Shizuku nodded. Her gaze returned toward Fudou. It was difficult to describe the emotion that peeked out from deep inside her eyes. It was like envy, or respect, or perhaps fear, it was an emotion with such a mysterious color.

□It wasn’t a cheap trick. An attack of certain defeat that doesn’t need the second attack. Simply, swinging down the

lifted up sword straightforwardly. It was direct, and resolute to the utmost. There were earnestness, sincerity, and resolve riding in it, it was a beautiful sword.□

Shizuku had never even dreamed that there was a girl the same age like her who could swing such sword.

Because Shizuku had done kenjutsu since she was little, the skill she had piled up led her to victory in the match, but Shizuku wasn't able to be happy at all with her victory. She won the match, but lost the fight. That was how she felt.

□After that, I became conscious of your figure each time I participated in the national meet. At our second match, as expected your sword was beautiful, but that time I fought without getting swallowed, executed the technique I trained to face you, and I was able to win.....I couldn't do it in the match venue, so I secretly sneaked out ahead and made a guts pose outside.□

□Such, thing.....□

There was no conceit in those words. The athlete who was her objective was training hard the same like her in order to win. And she felt genuinely happy from being able to win against her.

Fudou's sight became blurry after knowing that fact.

Shizuku picked up the snapped shinai of Fudou and she suddenly took a stance with in on her waist. It wasn't a stance for kendo match, but a stance of sword drawing art. At the same time, a heavy aura burst out from her body. Fudou's body froze spontaneously. The cause was because that aura was of killing intent. Even though a kendoka and a swordsman both wielded sword, but there was a decisive difference between the two sides.

Shizuku suddenly relaxed her stance and talked with a wry smile.

□I'll leave it to you whether you will believe it or not, but I, during the time of my disappearance, had cut living things.□

□Eh? Cut?□

□Yes. I cut down a living thing with real sword. Even now I remembered it. The sensation of cutting flesh, the smell of spurting blood. Doing that was necessary to survive, so I don't regret it. But, I'm already unable to continue kendo. Whether in strength or the meaning of wielding sword, even though I'm a swordsman, but I'm not a kendoka.□

□Not a kendoka, but swordsman.....□

She had heard the rumor about Shizuku and her classmates. It was a story that was so hard to believe so suddenly. It would be strange to believe the story of a war in another world.

But.....

The gaze of Shizuku that was staring at her, in the end was it something dishonest that could be washed away by "common sense"? Fudou didn't think so.

□I won't return back to being a kendoka anymore but.....I want to keep watching it. That beautiful sword of yours. Perhaps this sound like sarcasm to you, but I think that you who swung that sword was also really beautiful.□

□.....is that so.□

Fudou looked back at Shizuku, and then she looked down.

She clenched her fist tightly as though enduring something, and her body was a bit shaking. Tears were falling drop by drop on top of that fist.

It was unclear how much time passed.

Before long Fudou lifted up her face. Her expression was a refreshed one that looked as though something that haunted her had vanished away somewhere.

Fudou sat with seiza posture on that spot, and then her gaze met Shizuku and then Kaori straightforwardly. And then, she lowered her head hard and pressed her forehead on the ground.

□I had done something dreadful and caused trouble for all of you, I'm sorry. I'm really, sorry□

The words of apology of Fudou resounded inside the small park.

Shizuku's gaze moved toward Kaori. Kaori immediately guessed Shizuku's question to her whether it was okay to forgive Fudou, and she smiled while nodding.

Hajime moved his leg up and down. He was meaning to urge Shizuku to step on Fudou's head to make her repented deeply. Shizuku immediately guessed his meaning and she smiled while ignoring him.

□Promise me, Fudou-san. Continue with your kendo. Polish your sword, without getting influenced by someone like me.□

□Yaegashi..... Yes, I promise. ....It will take time until I can like myself. I also cannot declare that my unjustified resentment will absolutely vanish. But, I won't discard what I

have piled up until now, that's the only thing that I won't do. I will work hard, so someday I can like myself.□

Seeing the clear eyes on the face that Fudou lifted up, Shizuku smiled and nodded happily.

Fudou also smiled seeing that expression. Even though her look was severe just like Fudou Myouou, her refreshed smiling expression looked somehow charming.

Surely, in a future that wouldn't be so far away, she would be able to grow to like herself for sure. That smile caused Shizuku to be convinced of that.

Fudou grasped the hand that Shizuku presented and she stood up. Kaori tried to wipe up Fudou's blood with her handkerchief, but Fudou hurriedly backed away. Kaori was unmindful of that and insisted, making the atmosphere to turn harmonious.

'Well, the case is closed with this', Hajime thought so leisurely. It was at that time,

□Uu~, what a nice story this iiis! Truly the springtime of youth! Onee-san is really moved!□

That deep but strangely charming voice suddenly resounded.

Hajime's spine instantly got goosebumps. His instinct rang the warning alarm loudly!

□Ah, Chrystabel-san! I'm sorry, even though we have an appointment.□

□Don't worry about it Kaori-chan. You had already contacted me beforehand after all, Onee-san doesn't mind at all



yahn♡□

He couldn't understand the reality. Why was the monster haunting that clothes shop in Brook was here? Why was that guy talking to Kaori so naturally like that? Why was that guy wearing frilly one piece made in earth!?

The impact felt was as though a monster inside a picture book was encroaching into reality.

No, rather that was, an indescribable, blasphemous——

□Hajime-kyu~~n? I wonder if right now, you are thinking about something impoliteee?□

□-!?!□

'Be cool, be cool, me.' Hajime desperately told himself.

□Why, are you here? How did you creep out from that world?□

□Nnmaa, how rude! It was like I am something that always crept out smilingly!□

The sudden invasion of monster——not, the appearance of the manager of clothes shop, Chrystabel, it caused Kaori to ignore Fudou who was flustered for the time being and she explained the situation with a wry smile.

It seemed Chrystabel was interested with the clothing and accessory of earth and he (TN: Or she? What should I use here?) consulted Liliana whether she could possibly learn about clothing and accessory in this side.

Liliana also took into account about the promotion of Tortus's culture and gave her okay sign, however, thinking

whether Hajime who really disliked Chrystabel would easily let him passed through the gate, in the end Liliana then consulted Yue first.

Yue had close relationship not with just Chrystabel, but rather with the manly women group too. But although she readily agreed to invite Chrystabel to earth, but she didn't wish to give Hajime any worry.

There, when Hajime was busy and Yue took his place to periodically open the gate, she secretly called Chrystabel. After that Chrystabel's livelihood in earth was secured mainly by Remia who from the beginning had work related with clothing and accessory, and recently she even created an office for that in earth, and now Chrystabel was working hard in his study.

The first thing that Hajime who heard the circumstance did was——

□Okay, die□

Performing quick draw with Donner.

□Munh□

Shop manager Chrystabel repelled away the bullet with his chest!

By the way, the loaded bullet was a rubber bullet.

□How fervent nn♡ I'm feeling Hajime-kyun's love yahn!□

□Stop it! Don't look at me with those eyes! Or rather, weren't you taught that when someone is talking you should look at their eyes! You bastard, your gaze is shifting below each time you are looking at me!□

The gun fired continuously! The fired out bullets was repelled by the arms that shop manager Chrystabel crossed in front of his body. The gaze of the shop manager that peeked out from the arms' gap was locked on at Hajime's lower body!

Hajime's SAN point was shaved down!

□I don't understand what are you talking about hereee——fumu, that's a nice tight.....□

□SHAORAAAAAH!!□

Hajime-san's flying kick burst! The ground under shop manager Chrystabel who received that kick scattered around in radial shape from the impact.

□Ca, calm down, Hajime-kun! This is in the middle of residential area! A lot of families are right nearby! Aah, don't fire your gun! Tha, that's right, I have to lay out the barrier!□

Kaori was laying out the barrier for sound isolation and recognition obstruction in flusters while charging into the battle in the attempt to stop Hajime who lightly lost his senses from feeling the danger toward his ass.

□He, hey, Yae, Yaegashiii? Your boyfriend is holding gu——□

□That's just a toy.□

□Eh, but, it's making loud firing——□

□Just a toy.□

□The concrete is split——□

□Just a toy.□

□.....□

The thing Shizuku's boyfriend was holding was a toy gun.  
The final answer.

Though incidentally, the ground was smashed from his step and it also looked like he was stepping on the air and leaping around.

□It's just magic trick and acrobatic there. My boyfriend, he want to be magician in a circus at the future.□

No matter what there was a limit in forcing that logic. Akari-chan thought so, but the face of Shizuku who was smiling while staring still at her with her forced explanation looked scary somehow, so she just nodded.

Surely, that was the correct choice.

Even if for example, that boyfriend-san was suppressed by Shizuku's friend using extendable baton in two swords style while moving in a speed where her figure vanished. That too surely must be magic trick and acrobat. Surely.

When Kaori who hugged Hajime tightly and covered him from the sticky gaze of shop manager Chrystabel said □If you don't quit with it, I will get angry here□, as expected even shop manager Chrystabel also gave up on Hajime and turned around.

Hajime gasped with a weird voice □Ubooa□ from his mouth due to insufficient sanity point while Kaori was embracing him with a face that didn't look that dissatisfied as one would have others believe with her hands patting Hajime to calm him down. Shop manager Chrystabel glanced at that from the corner of his eyes while walking toward Akari-chan who was being dumbfounded.

Extremely thick eyebrows, arms, chest, torso, legs. Every part of his body was huge added with his thi~~ck face. No matter how one looked at him, he was a man of giga muscle lump, but his body was clad in frilly one piece clothes. His braided hair was fixed with a pink ribbon!

The shop manager who like usual was fiendish in various senses was pouring his gaze at Akari-chan.

A beat. Shop manager Chrystabel nodded as though he had comprehended something and his sparkling eyes turned at Akari-chan.

□You, it's fine for you to temper the beauty of your sword, but tempering your female beauty is also fine isn't it?□

□Eh? Err?□

Akari-chan was bewildered!

□Seeking beauty is something natural for human yahn. If it's Onee-san here, I will be able to make you shine even more!!□

Arms and legs that looked like log. Thick chest. Muscles that were obvious even through the clothes..... But with frilly one piece and ribbon.

Just what in the world this person was saying? Fudou-san was even more confused.

But, shop manager Chrystabel didn't stop. From his wriggling movement that looked like tentacle.....

□Yes!□

Fro~om~hi~is Front Double Biceps!~

□Just!□

Fro~om~hi~is Most Muscular!~

□Like me here!□

Side Chest-!!

Shop manager Chrystabel was shining radiantly!

□Ah, no, I'm good.□

Akari-chan quickly prepared to go home. She politely said  
□Once more, I'm really sorry for all the trouble□ to Shizuku  
and walked away to exit the park. Her shoulder was gripped  
strongly.

□It's fine, don't be scared yahn.□

□No, you are scary.□

□It's fine pyon☆ Leave everything to Onee-san! This Onee-  
san's name is Chrystabel! The ally of every manly woman  
and maiden!□

□Ah, no, really, I'm already fine even if I stay like this  
so——wait, ah, don't shoulder me! What's with this person-  
this dreadful strength!? Where are we going!? Helppp!  
Someoneeee, Yaegashiii! Helpppp!!□

□Kaori-chaaan! Shizuku-chaaan! Please take care of the rest  
okaayy! Also Hajime-chaaan! Let's meet again laterrr!□

When they came back to their senses, both Akari-chan and  
shop manager Chrystabel were nowhere in sight.

A week later at Sunday.

A contact came from Chrystabel who had been out of contact until now. He said that he would return Fudou Akari who he kidnapped.

“So, she is alive.....” Hajime who was tense in this one week whispered so with an expression that was showing respect to Akari-chan’s survival ability. Shizuku and Kaori glanced at such Hajime with their hands dragging him along because he was throwing tantrum “I don’t wanna go” because he was also a concerned party while heading toward that small park.

By the way, Shizuku and Kaori dealt with Akari-chan’s house and school. Their dealing method was by forceful suggestion using the demon king quality product artifact. The figure of Shizuku and Kaori nodding to each other with a desolate smile while saying “We are completely infected huh” might or might not happened.

And so they arrived at the public park like that. There wasn’t any sign of people. Other than Hajime who was strangely nervous, there were only Shizuku and Kaori there.

“Fudou-san, is she fine I wonder.”

“Well, honestly I have something to say with how he was suddenly taking Fudou-san away that even caused her to be absent from school but.....this is Chrystabel-san we are talking about, so I think it won’t be anything bad.”

□I, guess. Chrystabel-san can be forceful sometimes but, he is a person with a good will.□

□Even though his gaze went toward my lower body each time we met?□

Hajime's words were treated like nothing. Hajime silently looked up to the sky. Who ever thought that the sky was this blue.

After ten minutes from the appointment time, the appearance of that huge body appeared. It was shop manager Chrystabel. As always he was really frilly. And then his arms and legs were all lethal weapon.

There was no one beside him. It seemed he was alone.

□My? Have I made you all wait I wonder?□

□No, we also came only just now.....rather than that, Chrystabel-san. What about Fudou-san?□

Shizuku asked representing all of them.

□My my, don't be that impatient. Her remodel——cough-, beautifying was going really well yahn♡ It's the result of her heart's reformation! It's just as I thought, whether woman or man, if they work hard to become a figure that they thought to be beautiful, then it will come trueeee! I too is feeling honored that I can be of help with that yahn!□

'Just now, did she say remodeling?' Before anyone could cut in even while thinking so, shop manager Chrystabel circled his hand at behind him. And then, he pulled out someone. It seemed that Fudou was only hiding behind the large body of shop manager Chrystabel.



Like that, the person that came out was——

□□□Who?□□□

□Uu, long time no see, although it might not be that long that I can say that. It looks like I have troubled all of you, like taking care of my family, or my school.....that, thank you.□

Tall body, and extraordinary body style. Hair in princess cut that reached until the waist. A color of bashfulness could be seen vaguely on the person's well-featured face.

Really, just how was this? No, actually they already knew who. However, they simply didn't want to recognize the reality. Of this abnormal situation, this bizarre phenomenon!

The girl with hair in princess cut thrust the reality before the stiffened Shizuku and others!

□Err, I am, Fudou Akari you know?□

It seemed that was how it was.

Just what in the world happened that the girl who even resembled the Fudou Myouou could become a yamato nadeshiko like this.....

Anyway, putting aside the dumbfounded Shizuku and Kaori, Hajime was——

□As I thought, you bastard cannot be let to live!□

Gun fire.

□Muhn□

Shop manager Chrystabel repelled everything with his chest!

□What the hell is that!? That ain't a problem of beautifying or anything anymore! Ain't her bone structure changed there! Just what in the world did you damned do! Metamorphosis magic!? Is that metamorphosis magic!?!□

□That's a trade secret pyon♡ If you dee~epened your relationship with me, then I'll-teach-you♡□

Shop manager Chrystabel's full power wink and kissy gesture were thrown!

A blood vein snapped to the surface of Hajime's forehead. With a twirl the gun spin reload was carried on.

□I'm convinced right now. You cannot be left to do as you pleased in this world. If you are left as it is, this world will get infested with the bunches that received your demonic remodeling. This world, my birthplace, will be encroached!□

□My, speaking as though I am like a black bug in the kitchen! That's rudeeee. And? What will Hajime-kyun do I wonder?□

□That's obvious.□

Hajime pressed Donner's barrel on his forehead and yelled his oath.

□I'll defeat you bastard-. Today, right here!□

□Fufu, fuhahahahah! Just try it if you can! My manly woman soul, is undying!□

The demon king-sama spoke something that sounded like what hero-sama would do, and then he charged toward the shop manager-san of clothing shop.

The result of the battle was.....as could be easily guessed, Hajime received lap pillow from Shizuku in order to recover his scraped off SAN point. Anyway, Shizuku who was gently brushing Hajime who was making noise in his nightmare looked really happy.

By the way, about Fudou Akari-chan though, after that she made a name for herself in kendo world as a beautiful kendoka. Regarding the reaction of the surrounding about her transformation, so that the shop manager of the clothing store wouldn't be demanded for by anyone who became interested with the before-after of the girl, Hajime might or might not ran around to follow up with that.....

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Overcoming complex by mental growth, I planned for such a story, but when I realized it had became a story with solution of fantasy and physically remodeling the body.

The plot of Shirakome is always not breathing.....

By the way, I also put this in the activity report but, the comic version of Arifureta is updated.

No matter from where you look, you will be wanting to enjoy the cute Yue without fail, if it's fine with you please try to go take a look at Overlap-sama's homepage(Comic Gardo).

Please treat me well.

# Arifureta After II Is That God, Really Alright?

\*KUEEEEEEE\*, a high pitched shriek resounded.

Right after that, a squall that struck down from the sky rolled up cloud of dust and blocked the field of vision. Small pebbles of sand attacked the eyeball which would force anyone to narrow their eyes while covering their face with their arm.

As though waiting for that opening, rain poured down by mixing in among the squall.

However, it wasn't a rain of water. It was a rain that was made from stone needles. The stone needles with total length of around 15 centimeter approached the ground looking really like a heavy rain.

——Coatrice's stone needle

It was the characteristic magic that was fired by a huge black eagle monster, Coatrice. If someone got hit even by a single needle, they would be petrified in the blink of eye. And such needle was fired in a wide area by several hundred needles simultaneously, while the target's sight was blocked by the squall and cloud of dust.

□——"Wind Wall"□

A magic trigger with the chanting abbreviated was whispered with a small voice. Wind that whirled with the caster as the center blew away the cloud of dust.

What appeared was a young man. He had silky brown hair and well-featured face. His body was lean and tight despite being slender and tall. Wearing simple protectors that only protected his body's vital spots, his hands were holding a western sword that was shining faintly in a low stance.

That young man——Amanogawa Kouki didn't even look nervous facing the squall of stone needles, he calmly lifted the holy sword above his head and began rotating the sword fast with only the motion of his wrist.

The holy sword that was starting to rotate like a pinwheel in an instant looked like a round shield in addition with the radiance it was clad with.

Right after that, stone needles showered down on the round shield of holy sword. But, it seemed the stone needles couldn't slip through that shield because of its great momentum, the stone needles were easily repelled and scattered to the surrounding, piercing the ground around.

\*KUEEEEE\*, a shriek that was unpleasant to the ear resounded once more. It seemed the monster lost its temper from witnessing its characteristic magic gotten scattered.

The coatrice folded its wings that produced squall physically, and then its huge body rapidly swooped down.

□tsk——"Light Explosion"!□

Light exploded. Flash gushed out from the holy sword round shield like an explosion, and the shockwave blew away the remaining stone needles.

The stone needles stabbed the surrounding like thorns. If he moved recklessly to dodge the coatrice, he might get hit with petrification from below. Kouki picked this forceful option because of that.

Using “Ground Shrinker” skill, Kouki leaped out to the air in one go.

The coatrice put forward the sharp claws at its legs.

□——“Light Severance”-□

Just before both sides crossed each other, Kouki created a simple barrier in midair using light element elementary magic. Using that barrier as a foothold, he changed his trajectory midair. At the same time, he swung his holy sword in a circle arc.

Coatrice and Kouki crossed over each other midair.

The coatrice charged toward the ground without decelerating at all. Its neck plopped off and flew like a joke, and its flesh made a graphic sound with its impact from crashing on the ground.

Kouki twirled midair while rotating his body to fix his stance, and then he landed on the ground. Just in case, he confirmed that there was no stone needle on the ground, but the needles were already crumbling as though weathering from age, so there would be no problem even if he landed on a stone needle.

□.....□

Kouki confirmed the crumbling of the stone needles and the death of the coatrice, and then he let out a small exhalation

to unravel his tension. At the same time, he held down something that was rising up inside.

His complexion didn't change at all. The change of his physical condition didn't show up outside. Even that condition that was becoming typical post-battle was already something he was used to.

(Not just getting used to it, I have to overcome it though.....)

Kouki talked to himself inside his heart while using his spirit to push back the breakfast inside his stomach that was gradually rising up as though to say "You calling?". He unconsciously smiled bitterly at himself that was like that.

"What are you doing grinning like that, it's disgusting."

"Nnguh!?"

The caustic words that stabbed at him like a throwing javelin caused the breakfast to rise up as though to say "As I thought you are calling aren't you?". Using spirit! He pushed it back!

The one who threw the javelin of words from the nearby rocky area was a female knight clad in Hairihi kingdom knight order's equipment. She looked good looking, and she could be seen like a noble's daughter if she shut up and wore a dress.

In fact, the girl was from the background of a noble family though.....

Anyway, while Kouki was fighting the coatrice, the girl was hiding in the cover of rocky area and didn't come out at all. She didn't look like she was feeling bad at all about that, far



from that, when the battle was over she came out with a violence of verbally attacking her ally while approaching near with a brisk pace.

□Nn, nnh. Err, isn't it going too far calling me disgusting?□

□A man grinning while standing in front of a corpse with its head and body separated from each other, at a scene that is drenched with blood, how could I not call him disgusting? My apologize, I cannot really follow hero-sama's sensitivity.□

□Ah, yea, sorry.□

Seeing the female knight backing away like in a rewind toward the nearby rocky area while her whole body was radiating aura □It's creepy□, it caused Kouki to consent inside his heart □Well certainly!□ in desperation while his mouth was apologizing.

□So, hero-sama. We more or less finished exterminating the monster in the request.....are we going back to the town? Or else, will you continue hunting like usual?□

The female knight asked while looking up to the sky. The sun hadn't even reached the zenith yet. This was a time period that was just right if they were going to go back to town to take lunch and reported to the guild about the request's completion.

Normally anyone would do that, but from how the female knight was asking like that instead, it could be imagined that *usually* Kouki wouldn't return to town in this case.

□The eyewitness report about the coatrice and also the extermination request we received said that there is only one of it but.....there was also other eyewitness report of other monster. The monsters of □Duvune Precincts□ are

troublesome. And this place is also nearby Raisen grand canyon, there are a lot of hiding places here. We have time, so I'm thinking of investigating further.

.....So it's like that.

The female knight was turning a vaguely exasperated gaze at Kouki and she let out a small sigh.

Kouki and others had went back to earth and returned to school.

But, Kouki who was tormented by his sin persuaded his family and childhood friends and he dropped out of school by his own choice. He immediately crossed over to Tortus, and like this he moved around exterminating monsters as an adventurer to atone for his sin.

At the legendary decisive battle, the monster swarm that overflowed from [Holy Precincts] wasn't completely annihilated. Quite a number of them succeeded in escaping. The monsters of [Holy Precincts] were powerful. Every last one of them possessed the strength of the monster at the deep part of Orcus great labyrinth.

For the adventurers of this world, these monsters were severe if they weren't adventurer of "Gold" class.

It was for that reason that Kouki crossed over world without waiting to graduate from high school, and here he accepted monster extermination request especially against monsters from [Holy Precincts]. He asked for cooperation from Liliana, he also appealed to all the branch heads of the adventurer guild, and like this time he was given the preference to receive information and request about such thing.

He was carrying on request with the highest degree of danger by his own wish. It was also wasn't rare for him to have consecutive battle every day. Indeed, there was no doubt that there would be enormous damage if these monsters were left alone, and rapid disposal of them was necessary and also something to be thankful for.

However, Liliana and some others were worried that if Kouki kept being reckless like this then it might brought fatal danger to him someday, they advised him to care for himself a bit more but.....

At present, there wasn't any sign that Kouki's action pace would drop. This time too, Kouki seemed to be planning to search for monsters outside of the request and fought them just like usual.

(I wish he will also be considerate about me who is being dispatched as his watcher and also supporter.....)

Although fighting side-by-side with Kouki wasn't included in the range of the female knight's duty, just watching a battle against the monsters of [Holy Precincts] was nerve wracking.

At the battle against coatrice just now, it would be the end for the female knight just by getting grazed by the stone needle. Kouki and others of the another world group was in different level when it came to resistance against magic. Most likely, she would be completely petrified in a matter of seconds if she got hit.

Before this too, she felt uneasy only hiding in the cover of a rocky area, so she was hiding herself by creating a trench with godspeed hole digging.

[Aaa, I want to meet Onee-sama.....]

□Hm~m, the periodic gate opening is still quite far away I think.....□

The female knight whispered to herself while following behind the walking Kouki. Kouki smiled wryly while recalling the onee-sama that this female knight greatly respected, or rather she greatly loved to the degree that might be a bit too extreme——Yaegashi Shizuku.

□I know that already. Aa, I hate my own powerlessness. I thought that trivial thing like the world can be crossed using spirit and guts if it's for onee-sama's sake, but, nugugu□

□If the world can be crossed like that, just what is the meaning of Nagumo's hardships then.□

Kouki's wry smile deepened.

This female knight. Originally she was a royal guard that was attached to Liliana, a direct subordinate of the formerly royal guard commander and the present kingdom's knight order leader, Kuzeri Rail. But, why then she was now accompanying Kouki? If such question was asked——the short answer was, she was demoted.

She was one of the stepsister group that greatly loved Shizuku, she caused troubles over and over again because of her overflowing onee-sama love, and she turned out from royal guard knight -> normal knight directly under the leader -> normal knight -> this girl is no good already.

At the legendary decisive battle, Kouki was at the enemy side. That fact was a common knowledge also because of Kouki's own declaration.

And so, no matter even if it was for hunting the monsters of □Holy Precincts□, naturally there was also opinions that were

uneasy of leaving Kouki unregulated.

Although Liliana declared that such thing was unneeded but.....Kuzeri consulted to Kouki with an exhausted expression "That girl, I'm thinking of firing her", that being the case in order to give peace to the heart of the people who was yelling their anxiety, let's attach a knight as a watcher, let's make it this girl! That was how it ended up.

"I wish that you won't speak of the name of that son of a bitch."

"You will meet another painful experience if you keep saying such thing you know?"

"You mean, like hero-sama who got Shizuku-oneesama taken from him so thoroughly?"

"Gahah!?"

Kouki pressed his hand on his chest and fell down. He got on all fours with his head hanging down. It was a terrific counter.

"Good grief, putting aside Kaori-sama, I wished that you would at least protect Shizuku-oneesama to the death. Even I will be able to snatch away onee-sama if it's only from hero-sama....."

"Uguh"

"Rather than hero-sama, you are the loser-sama. You are chicken-sama!"

"Kafuh!?"

□Hey hey, how does it feel to be treated as “little brother” by a girl the same age with you? How does it feel? Hey hey□

□Uu, uuuuu□

The female knight poked repeatedly with the sheath of her knight sword at the crouching Kouki. She was venting her anger with her all, filled with the grief and lamentation toward the present situation where she couldn't even scratch that son of a bitch demon king.

But, it was at that time that a strong presence was transmitted from the direction of □Raisen Grand Canyon□.

□.....Looks like, I have a good luck today.□

Kouki stood up so easily it was unthinkable that he was getting so grandly humiliated until just now.

And then, he immediately walked forward while urging the female knight to follow with his gaze.

The female knight followed in a hurry. Kouki suddenly turned his face toward such her.

□Aah, that's right. I had asked this several times already but.....can you stop with the “hero-sama”?□

□.....□

Kouki said that with a small smile casually. The female knight spontaneously turned silent, and after thinking for a while,

□Then, I'll call you chicken-sama.□

□Can't you just call me Kouki normally!?□

Kouki spontaneously tsukkomi-ed. As expected it seemed he couldn't turn a blind eye at that.

The female knight slightly backed away and made a shuddering expression while she hugged her breast.

□Asking me so we can call each other by name.....please stop, I'll get pregnant.□

□You won't! What are you saying so suddenly!?!□

□It's Onee-sama's warning. I received that warning when I went to report to her that I am appointed with this duty. First he would create familiarity by calling each other by name, after that he would nonchalantly increase the body touch rate, for some reason some incident would occur and he would resolve it, and in the end he would smile pleasantly with sparkling teeth. That is that guy's modus operandi you know, be careful okay, onee-sama said to me.□

□SHIZUKUUUUUU-□

The tsukkomi of Kouki's heart burst out. The roar of monsters echoed from afar as though hailing in concert with that.

□Well, it's impossible for me to be infatuated to other person that is not onee-sama. Kouki-sama, I'm really sorry but, I hope you will give this up.□

□Why is it like I was confessing and then get rejected..... wait, this is bad! Isn't this an aurora dragon!?!□

Kouki felt exhausted, but right after that he saw the monster that showed up and he raised his voice in panic. The monster that flew out from □Raisen Grand Canyon□was the dragon shaped monster that fired breath of extreme light that was once called as grey dragon. The white dragon had

disappeared and right now they were called as dragon of extreme light.

Their original specs were high already, but now they were the [Holy Precincts] version and their level had been increased. It was a formidable enemy that wasn't really a laughing matter for adventurer.

Kouki gritted his teeth at the appearance of a monster that wasn't in the report while he turned his gaze behind him in order to give instruction so the female knight would retreat.

[Quick, get away—wait, fast!? No, that's fine though!]

At that time the female knight had just leaped into the trench that she dug before this. It was a wonderful escape.

Kouki's expression was complicated feeling somehow not satisfied, but the next moment he twitched due to the light shining above and he turned around. And then,

[Uu, UOOOOOOH]

He faced the extreme light that was released at the same time and raised a war cry in desperation.

The female knight who was only showing out her face a tiny bit from the trench to observe such Kouki was,

(.....Hmm. Even though he actually didn't mind even when he was ridiculed about his relationship with Shizuku-sama, but he cannot endure getting called "hero-sama". What a difficult person.)

Kouki's act before this. Despite his big reaction, but he easily returned to reality. From that it could be understood that he had already come to a clean decision about his relationship



with Shizuku. Rather, he was accepting with the relationship where the two of them were like family of older sister and younger brother and felt satisfied with it.

But, in regard of getting called “hero-sama”, Kouki smiled cheerfully and acted like it was nothing, but if one looked carefully they would clearly see that he had tense expression.

And then, the emotion that he was desperately hiding in front of the corpse of coatrice. That was.....

(It was, fear. Now then, what in the world that fear is about.....)

The female knight was watching Kouki who challenged the monster in midair battle with simple barrier as his foothold while pondering a bit.

The current Kouki wasn't wearing the “holy armor” artifact that was given to him from the palace. That was because Kouki returned it himself. He also returned all the artifacts he received from Hajime like “Air Force Boots” and others.

That was because of his guilty conscience that said that those items weren't something that could be possessed by him who wasn't a hero, at the same time it was also a decision that came from his determination to train himself back from zero without relying on artifact.

He was only carrying the holy sword wasn't because he wouldn't let go, but because he couldn't let go of it. For some reason, when Kouki left it behind, it would fly back to him when he moved a certain distance away from it. It was as though the sword was saying it had no user other than Kouki.

In any case, it didn't change that Kouki's defensive capability had declined remarkably, if he was hit by the breath of light then he clearly wouldn't get away unscathed.

Then, in that case, was that linked to his fear then.....

The female knight had a hunch that there was no way that was all there was to it.

However,

(Well, it's something incosequential!)

The female knight easily abandoned that thought.

At the distance, it seemed Kouki had finally finished off the dragon. And then, right after that, three more aurora dragons appeared and he raised a shocked scream  
□Whaat!?□.

(.....Hmm. I guess I better make the trench a bit deeper.)

The female knight who actually was nonchalantly an expert in darkness element magic ignored Kouki who raised a war cry □I, I WON'T LOSEEEEEEEEE-□, and then she diligently worked hard in digging a hole.

□Uguu, I thought I was going to die.....□

□How exaggerated. In the end other than getting knocked down by a tail, didn't you normally win without even getting particular wounded?□

□.....Kaa-san, thank you for birthing me with a tough body.□

Kouki got a distant look and offered his feelings of gratitude toward his mother that was in different world.

As expected, it would be severe for Kouki and the female knight who had just underwent a mortal combat to continue searching for monster, so right now they returned at their base recently——□Brook Town□.

If one walked at the bustling street, aroma that really stimulated one's appetite would waft from the street stalls. Kouki's stomach was already empty too from his intense exercise. His breakfast that rose up even when he didn't call now didn't show any sign of showing up.

Kouki's gaze was unconsciously absorbed toward the numerous street stalls, but——

□Oi, that's□

□Ah? .....Chih, he is still in this town huh.□

□Is this alright? What if he is scheming something.....□

The men who looked like adventurer that happened to pass by were talking whisperingly to each other when they saw Kouki. Their voices entered his ear.

The area around Kouki's chest slowly turned chilly. He unconsciously moved to cover his head with the hood of his cloak, but he stopped his hand from moving and kept his appearance without change.

Their expression that he caught in a glance was clearly feeling disgusted, along with color of anxiety that oozed out. Even though they understood that right now the hero was

taking the initiative to hunt the monsters of □Holy Precincts□, their disgust didn't really vanish. No matter how they couldn't wipe out their unease.

The traitor of mankind. The hero of betrayal. The envoy of evil god.....

Would he bare his powerful fang toward mankind once more, could he be scheming something.....

Trust that was lost once wouldn't return easily.

It was something he understood. It was something he was prepared for. That was why Kouki didn't hide his face. He looked forward, determined to accept it with resignation.

□Regaining trust is something really difficult.□

□Eh?□

The words that female knight suddenly let out caused Kouki's eyes to open wide. The female knight was staring straight ahead while further adding more words.

□It cannot be done in a day. Losing it is easy, but obtaining it is hard.□

□You're, right.□

□However, giving up is exactly what a "person that cannot be trusted" would do. Therefore, one must never give up.□

It felt like warmth was spreading slowly inside Kouki's chest. He was getting looked coldly at like this was him reaping what he sowed. At the time when he was needed the most, he instead prioritized his own emotion and betrayed everything.

But, like this there was also a person who was concerned for himse——

□Someday I will bloom a second time for sure at central! And then, I will be at Onee-sama's side.....guheheh□

□Ah, yea, that's what you mean huh.□

A fatigue suddenly assaulted him. But he thought positively 'Well, my heart is lightened I think!' and fastened his steps.

The inn that the two of them used as their base came into view. The large wooden signboard had "Inn of Masaka" written on it. It was an inn that was used by that demon king and actually was considerably famous, to the degree that it became a bit of sightseeing spot. (TN: In Japan, 'masaka' meant 'don't tell me...')

After all the inn was brazenly advertizing in a big way by hanging down a banner that was written with "Demon king-sama's appointed inn! Your journey started from here!". It seemed the inn was also selling things like demon king manjuu and so on. They had a really good business spirit.

Kouki was making a complicated expression while opening the inn's door and entered inside.

The landlady of the inn welcomed the two of them with □My, welcome back□ and a gentle smile. It seemed the people of this inn also didn't really think of anything particular toward Kouki. They were always attending to him with an attitude that was the same with other customer.

It was a really calming inn, with the exception of one thing.

Kouki and the female knight took their seat in order to have late lunch. They took the menu to take a look of what they

would eat today. It was at that time,

□Today our recommendation is the teriyaki of Kururu bird you know?□

□Uoh!?□

□Nnnh□

The voice that suddenly resounded from nearby caused Kouki and the female knight to jump on the spot altogether.

The cause was one.

The inn's poster girl who was bringing the two of them water with a cheerful and charming smile on her face——Sohna Masaka-chan. The approach of that Sohnna-chan wasn't noticed by the two until she called out at them. (TN: Sohnna sounded like 'sonna' which could mean 'such thing', or 'no way'. Sohnna Masaka, sounded like 'no way, don't tell me...')

Both Kouki and the female knight were people who served in battle. Kouki's Presence Detection was especially excellent to the degree that it could be said in extraordinary level, even if the other party possessed the skill of "Presence Isolation", as long as they weren't the same another world group like him, he would be able to detect them. The exception to that was like the rabbit eared bunches lurking in a certain sea of trees.

But, such Kouki didn't notice Sohnna-chan when she approached him.

□So, Sohnna-chan. Since when you were there.....□

□Eh? I normally came out from the kitchen bringing water to you two just now though.....□

She answered Kouki like that with a puzzled expression. Kouki cocked his head wondering whether it was just him feeling exhausted.

However, this kind of situation had happened several times, like when he walked in the corridor at midnight when he woke up to go to toilet, or when he came out from the bath's changing room, or when he was taking meal like this time, when he noticed she was already behind him. He really couldn't believe that it was just a coincidence.

□Sohna-chan, by any chance, do you have experience of receiving some kind of special training?□

The female knight unintentionally asked that.

Sohna-chan showed a puzzled expression toward that question, and the next moment she let out a chuckle. As though to say that she had heard a funny joke.

□Giggle, geez, what's with that question? What kind of special training that an inn girl would receive!?!□

□Ah, no, it's just my feeling. My apologize, it seems that I was a bit confused.□

□You were working from the morning weren't you? Surely you are really tired now. Please eat a lot and get lively.□

Sohna-chan smiled sweetly. By no means that she was a beautiful girl that would make other people opened their eyes wide, but she possessed warm loveliness of a plain flower that resolutely bloomed fully.

Kouki and the female knight also forgot their shock just now and their expression turned warm. Surely, it was just as Sohnna-chan said, they were only feeling a bit tired. Thinking

that, they ordered their meal before looking at each other's face and exchanged a wry smile.

□Ah, that's right. Sohna-chan. About the dinner tho——ugh□

Sohna-chan wasn't there. It was after she took the two's order, and Kouki and the female knight looked at each other's face only for a moment. Yet despite so, when the two returned the gaze back, Sohna-chan wasn't there anymore. They didn't even feel any sign of her moving away.

□.....□

□.....□

Kouki and the female knight unintentionally fell silent.

□Did you call?□

Sohna-chan materialized.

□Ah, no. It's nothing at all.....□

□Is that so? Then, please wait a bit until the cooking is finished okay!□

Sohna-chan vanished energetically.

It was like her presence was slippery.....

Kouki and the female knight waited for their meal silently for some reason. When Sohna-chan brought them their order, as expected they also couldn't grasp her presence.

Kouki and the female knight ate their meal silently.

When they finished their meal, Sohna-chan cleared up their empty plates.



But, at that time, Sohna-chan dropped something. A metal plate the size of a hand palm—a status plate.

□Ah, Sohna-chan, you drop——□

Kouki immediately picked it up and his gaze inadvertently moved toward the status plate. Originally, a status plate's content couldn't be seen as long as the owner didn't pour their magic power into it, but this status plate was shining faintly with its content visible, perhaps because Sohna-chan was displaying the content just now because of some kind reason.

Kouki stiffened when he saw the content. The female knight who unintentionally peeked at it also stiffened.

The status plate was quickly pulled away from Kouki's hand.

□Thank you very much, Kouki-san. But, seeing other person's status is a violation of manner you know?□

□Eh, ah, sorry.□

□No, no. It's me who is carelessly leaving it in its visible state after all. But, please be careful the next time okay.□

Sohna-chan smiled sweetly. The smile of a poster girl was dazzling.

The female knight whispered with a small voice while staring at the energetic back of Sohna-chan who was returning to her work.

□Just what is that girl?□

□No, even if you ask me that.....□

A strange silence fell.

□We, well, it must be that. This is the appointed inn of the demon king after all!□

□Tha, that's true!□

The two who forcefully convinced themselves excitedly headed out for their afternoon work.

By the way, the status of Sohna-chan that the two saw was,

=====

Sohna Masaka 16 years old Female Level 22

Vocation: None Occupation: □Brook Town□ Inn of Masaka Employee

Strength: 9

Stamina: 15

Endurance: 6

Agility: 5

Magic Power: 3

Magic Resistance: 3

Skill: Accounting - Love Smell Sensing - Sharp Ear - Night Vision - Rope Descent - Wall Climbing - Infiltration - Diving - Elusive Phantom

=====

It was a collection of skills that was really oriented toward spy except the first two skills. Or rather, as long as one wasn't from another world group, normally a person would only have about one or two skill. Most likely those skills bloomed later on through arduous training.....

There was a monster in the inn of "Brook Town", perhaps.

In addition, in the evening of that day, a letter from Liliana reached Kouki. The next morning Kouki and the female knight returned back to the palace.

As expected, at that time too, Sohna-chan was behind the two of them to see them off with her presence beyond grasp even from hero. Both Kouki and the female knight couldn't hide their shudder.

Kouki and the female knight who arrived at the palace were welcomed by Liliana and knight order leader Kuzeri.

The moment she saw Kuzeri, the female knight scowled "Gee!? Leader!?". Her scruff was grasped by Kuzeri who had pulsing blood vein on her forehead and she was dragged away. It was a really natural flow of event without even any time to stop it, just like how water would flow from high place to low place.

"Eerr, for the time being, it's great that you return safely, Kouki-san."

□Yeah, thanks, Lily. You wrote in your letter that there is a troublesome monster appearing at the outskirts of the capital but.....□

Seeing Kouki who hurriedly gave his return greeting before quickly asking about the monster sighting caused Liliana to smiled bitterly thinking ‘just like always huh’.

□About that. I think even the knight order can deal with this monster, but I called Kouki-san just in case. But even though I said that, there is only eyewitness report so far and the situation is nothing urgent. The knight order plan to depart tomorrow morning, so first please drink some tea and rest.□

□I see..... If that’s how it is then I get it.□

Kouki who noticed that Liliana was being considerate at him also smiled wryly while he complied with Liliana’s suggestion.

Like that, Liliana was about to ask about the problem Kouki was holding in his heart in a casual manner—it was at that time,

□I found you, hero-sama. Please I beg you, save my beloved world.□

From the sky, a gentle voice that gave off earnestness came down.

□Eh?□

□Eh?□

Both Kouki and Liliana stiffened in puzzlement. Right after that, a pattern of magic circle that looked like hieroglyph character they had never seen before stretched out on the

ground below Kouki. The magic circle increased in radiance and overflowed with a power that was falsely similar with magic power.

□Do, don't tell me-□

□Ko, Kouki-san!?!□

The face of Kouki who guessed what was happening was grandly twitching.

At the same time, the hieroglyph characters of the magic circle flashed fiercely. Liliana reached out her hand toward Kouki right away, but Kouki shook off that hand and pushed away Liliana instead.

□Lily-, tell everyon——□

□Kouki-san!□

Before Kouki could finish talking, the raging light settled down. And then, there was nobody there anymore.

□Thi, this is terrible! I have to tell Hajime-san!□

Liliana was dumbfounded for a while before she raised her voice □It's terrible! Terrible!□ while rushing away in a feverish haste.

After the light completely blanketed his field of vision, Kouki tasted a sensation as though the gravity was changing direction every few tenth of second. Kouki who could only let

his body getting carried away inside the darkness where he couldn't see anything finally found a streak of light.

He desperately reached out his hand to that. The light was rapidly approaching.

Kouki said "Eei, to hell with this!" and leaped into the light——

"Gaboh!? Ugogoooh!?"

He became panicked from the large amount of water that entered his trachea.

(I, I can't-, breath!? Wa, water!? Underwater!?)

Yes, the destination of the light he leaped into was underwater. At the corner of his sight, he could see the radiant sunlight and the beautifully swaying water surface.

But, he didn't even have the slightest bit of composure to enjoy such sight. He was unable to breath sufficiently, on top of that he spewed out a lot of oxygen because he suddenly coughed. His consciousness was already in red alert state. It wouldn't be funny if he died by drowning right after getting summoned.

He desperately struggled while trying to surface, but his sight was gradually locked into darkness. It felt like his consciousness was falling away.

While it was already getting hard to even think, the water surface suddenly shook.

His dazed mind was barely able to comprehend that a person leaped into the water.

The shining sunlight illuminated that person.

Long white hair. Chocolate colored skin. Sharp gaze that conveyed a strong will, jade colored eyes. Her approximate age might be a bit older than him. She had extraordinary figure that was wrapped with clothes with a lot of exposure, her body was painted with mysterious pattern.

(Beautiful.....)

Kouki who was unable to even moved his limbs anymore could only think of such thing in amazement.

Right after that, that woman grasped Kouki and swam up to the surface with a staggering force. It took only a moment until they popped out of the water.

□Gahah, gehoh, -□

□Are you okay? Get a hold of yourself! Come on, spit the water out!□

Voluptuous breast pressed on Kouki while he was being carried. The woman who saved Kouki had a masculine way of talking in contrast with her appearance.

□Gefuh, tha, thank you. Yo, you saved me.....□

□Don't mind it. I never thought that you would appear at the bottom of the spring. I was a bit late. Sorry.□

The white haired and brown skinned woman's sharp gaze softened a bit hearing Kouki who was thanking her even while coughing painfully.

From her words, it seemed that she grasped that Kouki would appear in this place, but it could be inferred that it

was outside her expectation for Kouki to appear underwater.

To speak further, the voice that spoke from the sky before he was summoned sounded completely different than this woman's voice.

(There is no doubt that I'm summoned but..... It looks like this person isn't the summoner.)

While Kouki who recovered her thinking ability was thinking of such thing, he could hear countless splashing sound of people entering the water.

When he looked there, there were multiple men and women raising their voices saying things like "Your majesty, you are safe!", or "Please leave something like this to us!", or "Suddenly jumping in like that, what are you thinking!".

"There wasn't even a second to waste. It couldn't be helped. Rather than that, let's quickly pull him up."

"Aah, geez-. It will be a scolding when we go home! Now, hero-sama. Please hold on to me."

It appeared the woman who saved Kouki was called her majesty—in other words, it seemed she was a queen of a country somewhere. While feeling obliged that the queen personally jumped in to rescue him, a man past middle-aged with great physique and a look like a seasoned warrior grasped Kouki and lent him a hand.

When Kouki looked around, everyone's skin was similarly brown colored. Although, it was only the queen who was white haired.

Kouki who was pulled up to the bank reflexively sat down. The queen who stood imposingly in front of such Kouki



opened her mouth with a powerful gaze directed at Kouki without looking bothered at all with the water dripping down her body.

□Now then, this had become an inconceivable first meeting, but for the time being, I'll introduce myself. I am Moana. Moana de Shelt Synclea. I am the one who is currently like the queen or whatever of Synclea kingdom.□

The people who seemed to be her subordinates made an expression that looked like they were feeling headache thinking □What's with that 'like the queen or whatever'□.

Moana completely ignored them and her expression turned a bit hesitating.

□You might think that my way of talking is pompous, but this is what I'm used to due to my position. If it bother you, then I will try to talk as courteously as possible.....□

□Ah, no, it's fine like that.□

Kouki immediately said that which caused tension to leave Moana's shoulders in relieve.

And then,

□I see. That saved me the trouble. Then once more, welcome to Synclea kingdom. O envoy of "the mother of all life" "the will of the great blessing" ——Foltina. We are imploring, so that your existence will become our salvation. Please treat us favorably.□

Saying that, she presented her hand slowly.

It was a feminine hand, but looking closer there were a lot of callus on her palm from the result of handling sword. Her

skin also had small scars here and there. She was someone who fought. Was it normal in this world for the queen to fight personally, or was her country placed in a situation where she was forced to do so.....

Seeing how he was summoned, and these people were looking for help, surely the situation was a fairly troublesome one.

Well, putting that aside, for the time being he had to ask this one question no matter what.

□Is that god-like person, really alright?□

Surely that god wasn't the last boss who enjoyed toying with human right? That was Kouki's question,

□Nnnn??□

It was obvious but, that question only served to make the queen confused.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Kouki arc.

First thing first, thinking that perhaps there will be reader who thought 'The queen's way of talking is different from the queen who showed up for a bit before this!', the

supplementary explanation is that this queen's unadorned way of talking is like at the previous chapter after a fashion.

I'm not planning to continue Kouki arc for that long, but if it actually get long then sorry. I'll apologize in advance.

Now then, now is Golden Week huh.

How will everyone of Narou people will spend it?

Shirakome whose heart is moving into a certain village for the lonely people will surely get pursued with dealing with the piling up game.

If possible, I also wanted to upload a short story for Golden Week..

If nothing else, I pray so that everyone of Narou people will be able to enjoy Golden Week.

PS

I revised a few words at [The Obstinate Princess Lily] of the third world -> of the second world.

Thank you very much for pointing that out.

# Golden Week Special After Story Yue's Diary①

AN: It's short, but if is okay for you readers, please use it to kill time.

---

——Month ○ Day x. Clear weather.

Tomorrow will be the first day of Golden Week. Everyone will go camping. I hear we are also going to have BBQ.

From what I heard, it seems that it's an event of grilling and eating meat outdoor.

.....Just what in the world is interesting about that, I don't really understand. Even though we had been doing that all the time in our journey.

But, everyone is looking forward just to go have an outing. Perhaps, there is also a way to enjoy it that I don't know.

Very well. Oh camp, oh BBQ. Bring it on. I'll determine your caliber!

By the way, the members for the BBQ event will be Nagumo family, in addition there are Kaori, Shizuku, and Aiko (Lily has work and cannot come no matter what), other than them Kaori and Shizuku's family will also join us it seems.

I see. They are telling me, show us the power of the first wife if you can.

Very well. Oh family, oh Kaori. Bring it on. I'll teach all of you, the caliber of the first wife!

Now then, it looks like tomorrow will be really busy. This is a rare chance, so let's write the diary in real time, I'm thinking of developing a magic for automatic recording mode, thoughtography style.

.....

I did it. As expected, me. But, it's thoughtography type, so it will be mostly like a live coverage. I'm uneasy whether the paper space will be enough, so I'm thinking of going with a brand new diary for the camp. Also, while the magic is in operation, there is the risk of things that I'm not planning to write or things that I thought about strongly will also get written. This point required special attention. Hajime, I love you.

Putting that aside, the weather is really warm recently, so Hajime's is gradually dressing lightly, I love it.

I am Yue. A woman who won't steal glances at what I want to see, but stare fixedly at it without any shame!

Hajime, sniff sniff. Rub rub. Kufuu~~

——Month ○ Day x. Clear weather

.....Oops. I noticed it when I reread back, but my emotion leaked out a bit. I have to be careful, if not it will be disastrous for Hajime inside the diary.

Now then, today the weather for camping is clear. The temperature is also warm, a day that is really pleasant to spend it outside. Although, even if it actually rained, the weather can be manipulated to be clear so there will be no problem.

Any rain cloud that dare to hinder Hajime's plan, will be obliterated without any trace.....fufu

Nnn. Just now, it feels like something leaked out. Just in case, I made it a secret that I'm writing diary, so I won't take it out in the middle of this camping. If something strange get written, I'll have to erase it when we go home.....

Letters that is written by thoughtographs, can it be erased so easily?

.....Anyway, let's think about it later.

The campsite was inside a forest three hours away from home by using car. It is in the foot of a mountain range, and there is also a river flowing nearby. So to speak it is a little-known good place, it looks like that it's not equipped with facilities as a camp site. However there is a suitable open space for camping inside the forest, something like that.

I believe the place isn't developed strangely, but a good place where one can feel the nature.

Are those the locals? Several families, and group of young men and women can be seen here and there, regardless of the Golden Week, this place doesn't feel crowded. That too make it easier to spend time here.

Though it seems Hajime found this place using the compass.....

Good job, Hajime. I love you.

A while after we arrived in the campsite. The family of Kaori and Shizuku also arrived. The plan is to gather on-site, so it was a bit of worry that perhaps they might get lost, but it looks like they arrived safely without any incident.

The car of Shizuku's family is a black colored wagon type.

.....The car looks like what a secret service agency in a movie or book would use as on-site base.

The car of Kaori's family is a normal car, so it looks all the more bizarre.

Shizuku and Kaori got down from their car. Both of them have a nice smile.

.....Let's prank Kaori later. I'm going to distort that smile for sure. Kaori who is in indignation is funny after—cough-cough-. It feels like something leak out.....

Nnn.

Kaori's papa-san is looking at Hajime with an expression brimming with dreadful animosity. It feels like the caption [FIGHT] is going to appear anytime.

Oh? Hajime suddenly waved his hand. Is it a gesture toward Kaori's papa-san?

Oh? A small metallic rod stab the ground near Hajime's feet. If I remember correctly, that thing is called rod shuriken.

When I follow Hajime's gaze, Shizuku's papa-san and Ojii-san (TN: Grandpa) were there. Right now, it's only for a brief glance, but something is hidden inside their sleeve.

Ah, Shizuku's papa-san and Ojii-san were hit by Shizuku.

Ah, Kaori's papa get frightened by Kaori's hannya and get into dogeza.

Ah, Otou-sama (TN: written as father-in-law) is burning with rivalry for some reason and try to hug Hajime.

Ah, he get joint locked.

Fumu. I think it's really very well that the event started livelily.

Now then, this is not our first meeting, but for now, let's go there to teach both families that the first power is 530,000. It will be the end if the world of the wife~s get underestimated. Teyandeiberaboumee! (TN: The last gibberish, it seems to be a line that sometimes is used by old man that were born and raised in Edo. It roughly means, 'what the hell are you saying huh, this damned stupid bastard')

Everyone carried the camping tool and secured a spot. The gazes of the youngster group that seems to be the local keep glancing this way, but this happen every time so it's not worth worrying about. If they come for picking up girl then they only need to get washed into the river.



There is also a heated gaze coming from the family group. It's a boy about the same age with Myuu. It seems he is immensely interested with Myuu.

Oo, Myuu turned a bright smile and waved her hand to him. The boy became bright red! The boy waved back! However, at that time Myuu's gaze already moved toward Hajime papa! The boy fell on all four!

To toy with the opposite sex at this age.....

Myuu, what a terrifying child-!

Putting that aside, Hajime papa's hand is wandering around his thigh. Today Donner-san has day off you know. Also, take off your gaze from the boy.....

While the boy's mental state is in danger, the simple tents are set up, and the preparation for the meal is also being done.

The mama~s and papa~s are resting, also for thanks for their everyday work. It's BBQ, so we only need to cut vegetable though.....

Because of Hajime and Otou-sama's insistence, it seems that it's no good unless there is curry while camping.

And then, it seems I'm not allowed to join in with the cooking duty.....

Why? I cannot understand it. Just what had I done to deserve this?

Eh? It's no good because I'm trying to add originality~? Especially because what I'll put into pot cooking when they take off their eyes from me?

.....I wish to profess that it's an extremely regrettable accusation.

Indeed, when we were in our journey I wasn't really well-acquainted with cooking, and perhaps there were a really few times that I ruined Shia's cooking.

But, that is in the past. I am Yue. A woman that is always progressing. Right now, even cooking is something that I can normally——

Eh? Indeed there is no problem with my normal cooking? But, I'm not allowed to do pot cooking? Absolutely? Try to put my hand on my chest and think back of what I have done?

.....Certainly, when I'm in front of a pot, there is itchiness in my soul. I can hear the voice of the ingredients appealing [Now, throw me in!] to me.

However! However still! That's——

Ah, yes, I'm sorry. It's nothing at all desu.....

That's why, Shia. Stop looking at me with that eyes where the light is turned off. Even though you are sweetly making a cute smile, please stop shrinking your eyeballs, I beg you!

.....Fumu.

If I'm not allowed to participate in the cooking duty, what should I do then.....

The mama~s has quickly entered drinking bout time, but joining in that group is.....

As expected, it feels awkward to enter among the papa~s who are all consoling Kaori's papa who is crying for some reason.....

When I focused my hearing, I can hear words □My daughter you see, my daughter, recently, she is really cold to me.....□ that sounded as though they are wringed out from his throat. Shizuku's papa and Shizuku's ojii-chan are nodding 'un un' in agreement. Otou-sama said □Well, don't put it into mind!□ while his hand is tapping Kaori's papa shoulder, comforting him with absurdly light feeling——

Ah, Kaori's papa threw himself at Otou-sama. Ah, Otou-sama dodged. Furthermore he nonchalantly makes Shizuku's papa and ojii-chan into his shield. A game of tag that circled around those two is starting.

The look like children.....

Hm~m, as I thought, let's stop trying to enter the circle of the parent~s.

I'm bored.

What to do.

Oh, digital camera is discovered inside the luggage.

.....

Fumu. How about taking the photographer role? Should I print it and stick the picture in the diary, making a picture diary?

.....

Not bad.

From today I am paparazzi Yue.

Speaking about that, before I knows the figure of Hajime and Shia and Myuu has vanished. Where are they going?

Their presence is.....

Shia is in the nearby river. Hajime is in the mountain. Myuu is at the upper stream?

When I thought that they are together, it turns out all of them are all over the place. They really are free spirited.

Anyway, let's follow Myuu for now. She is carrying the minimum equipment, so nothing should happen to her in the mountain and river around here, but as expected it's worrying that she is alone.

.....

.....

.....

Myuu discovered. But, for some reason she looks strange. She is heading to upper stream following along the river, but sometimes she will tilt her head, and focused her hearing.

What could she be doing? Curious. Let's try following her a bit without calling at her.

.....Nevertheless, the more we head to the upper stream, the more the ground became unstable, but the pace of Myuu who keep advancing is quite something.

Even though we are already in a place that can accurately be called as a mountain stream, Myuu is hopping 'pyon pyon' from rock to rock in a speed as though she is running on a flat ground.

It looks like she is activating the artifact for physical ability reinforcement but.....

Even so, her body balance and choice of footsteps are quite something.

I have to praise her when she get back if it's like this.

Anyway, a photo of Myuu's lovely figure! One more time!

.....

.....

Nn~~. Perhaps I'll have to take her back soon. We have come until really far at the upper stream, the surrounding is also filled with trees growing in abundance.

I think Myuu is advancing with clear destination in mind somehow but..... Really, why is she going upper stream until this far?

.....Oh? Myuu's legs stopped.

She is looking around restlessly. She crouched on the river bank, her head tilt.....

.....

Something came out!? From inside the river, something that looks like a child covered with scales all over its body came out!?

What is that!? UMA!?

Perhaps Myuu is in a pinch. Here I'll use Divine Existence and take Myuu——

Nn? It looks like they have amicable atmosphere. Ah, they handshake. The UMA waved and vanished into the river.

Myuu returned back in a good mood.

For some reason, it feels like I have seen something that must not be seen. Hajime once grumbled □Even though Myuu is really strange but she is easy to get liked, so I've got to pay attention at her□, now I see, perhaps he referred to something like this.

Anyway, I hid and let Myuu walked past, and then I follow behind her. It seems she is already going back to the campsite.

I feel a bit relieved. If she is going deeper inside the mountain and try to deepen her relationship further with strange living thing, as expected, that's something I cannot just only observe from afar.

Nevertheless, just what in the world □The Suiko Suu-chan□ means..... (TN: The kanji is □□. Google it if you want to see the picture. It's some kind of youkai in Japan and China.)

When I return to the campsite, Shia is shooting fish at the nearby river. Not fishing. Shooting.

Myuu happily dashed toward there. It seems Shia is flicking a fishing hook that is at the bigger side using her fingers, shot through fish inside the river, and then she pulled at the string that is tied to the hook and catches the fish. It's to top up the BBQ ingredient.

There is a lot of fishes with split open head entered into the bucket beside Shia. Blood is scattered at the surrounding.

A father and a boy are fishing at the lower stream, but for some reason they are trembling all over with pale face. It's as though they had witnessed a gruesome scene. Perhaps because they are at the lower stream, a lot of red liquid is flowing their way.

Myuu is receiving Shia's teaching while learning fishing hook shot too, so the scene is turning even more gruesome. It looks like the father and boy there didn't really catch anything.

.....Later, let's share some of the catch with them.

For now, the picture of Shia and Myuu happily shooting at the red scene 'kaclick'!

Nn. The picture is terribly cute.

When I return to the tent, Otou-sama and Kaori's papa are wailing while hugging each other. Seeing that, Shizuku's papa also looked moved and shed out tears, Shizuku's ojii-chan is nodding deeply feeling greatly impressed.

Just what in the world happened.....

As for the mama~s.....they are completely drunk. Kaori's mama is drinking straight from a 1.8 liter bottle of Japanese sake, Shizuku's mam is also drinking from what looks like a whisky bottle. There is a mountain of beer can in front of Okaa-sama (TN: Read as mother-in-law).....

Nevertheless, Okaa-sama..... She really is a person that suited to be a boss lady. Her figure sitting with one knee drawn up and a cigarette held at the corner of her mouth is

wild! Cool! Next time, let's try copying that. (TN: I don't really get the references in this paragraph, can someone check it and tell me later?)

Nn? Some kind of commotion is.....

People who seem to be university students are looking here from afar while being noisy about something.

When I follow their gaze, I see.....

Kaori is throwing vegetables. Shizuku is cutting them midair. And then, Remia catch them on a plate. By the way, one of Remia's hands is stirring the curry pot slo~wly slo~wly while doing that.

Why are they doing that kind of circus act? I don't get it but they are looking like they are having fun. That's what is most important. Click.

Surely, most likely, seeing how the men who seemed to approach to call at them are shrinking back, I think this is the method those three thought up to prepare for BBQ while also checking those men in place.

Beside the tent, Tio and Aiko are making some kind of rustling sound.

I see, it looks like they are setting up hammock.

It's a hammock type that is tied at trees, so Tio who is able to ascertain that it has been tied firmly is wiping her sweat with a really nice smile.

Oh, looks like she is quickly trying it out.



Aiko is holding the hammock in place while Tio is getting on it.....

.....The rope snapped because it cannot support the weight.

Tio is in daze while keep sitting on the ground. Click.

Aiko is getting all flustered while saying a follow up like 'Perhaps the rope is too old!' but..... At the corner of Tio's eyes, tears are..... No matter how anyone look at her, the cause of those tears isn't because of the pain from her butt hitting ground, looks like she received damage from the fact that the rope cannot endure her weight.

She sat on the floor hugging her knees and buried her face onto there.

Aiko is desperately consoling her while running her gaze restlessly around, then she dashed in a rush perhaps from finding something.

Looks like her aim is the vine twining around a tree. She take it into her hand, confirm at the surrounding with restless gaze and.....ooh, the vine is lengthening slitheringly. It looks like she lengthen the vine with the power of farmer master and make it grow thicker.

With that she reinforced the hammock and tied it up on the tree again. Furthermore, she also apply her magic on the tree to fuse the vine on it and increase the toughness thoroughly.

Aiko help Tio who is still shutting herself inside her shell to stand up while talking at her gently. The dejected Tio nodded a bit.

She is gee~ntly, gee~ntly getting up on the hammock. For some reason, even my heart is also beating fast watching it.

Do, do your best-, Tio! You can get on it if it's you! Surely you can get on the hammock!

Ah, Tio's hand slipped! She got on the hammock face down!

The vine.....

Ooh, it doesn't snap! It's perfectly supporting Tio! Aiko's face is amazingly smug!

But.....

Tio keep laying face down. She is in an amazing posture like a shrimp with her body arching backward and both her hands held up. She wriggle and squirm in the attempt to face up somehow, but it doesn't go well.....

Ah, she give up. She is unmoving on the hammock while still face down. She is really like a shrimp but, doesn't that hurt?

Aiko's smug face turned into a really complicated expression. When Aiko try to gently push, the backward shrimp Tio wavered \*pura~n pura~n\* like in a swing.

.....Yep. Let's quietly leave.

Nn? Hajime's presence is nearing. I don't know why he entered into the mountain, but it looks like he safely finished his objective.

But, what is this I wonder? There is one more presence beside Hajime.

When I stared fixedly at the direction where Hajime is going to come out from.....

Yes, the campsite panicked when they saw Hajime appeared with “that”.

Beside Hajime, there is a one-eyed bear-san that looks really grim with the three straight scars on one of its eyes. It really look like the lord of the forest.

According to Hajime, he explained that □I encountered the bear inside the forest. It impertinently attacked me so I finished him with a punch on the stomach and it got emotionally attached to me□.

I see, I completely don't get it. It seems, Hajime's reason is that even though there is no danger at the surrounding, just in case he checked inside the mountain but.....

The daughter interacted with UMA, the father made a bear that looked really like the lord of the forest into his underling.

These parent and child are really similar.

The one-eyed bear-san laid down on the ground face up, exposing its stomach as though wanting to say ‘I'm not dangerous at all!’. Myuu who returned from the fish shooting makes sparkly eyes and dive on its stomach.

The common people other than us who see that are screaming even louder.

The papa~s are in admiration, while the mama~s are cackling.

While Myuu is riding on its stomach, for some reason sparks scattered between the one-eyed bear-san and Shia.

The eyes of Shizuku and Kaori brightened at the fluffiness, while Remia is stirring the curry ro~und and ro~und while going "My my, ufufu".

Aiko is getting all flustered, and Tio keep being a backward shrimp.

Hajime is saying "Let's start the BBQ soon yeah" while glancing at the bear-san for some reason.

Bear-san shook \*Twitch-!!\*.

.....Chaos visited the campsite.

Fumu. I'll deal with the other people who come here for camping, but for now,

Click.

I get the feeling that the first memory of the Golden Week will become something really lovely.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Yue's diary. Actually I wrote one for the extra story of the fifth volume.

I'm thinking to match it with the school arc and try to insert it sometimes for idle story.

Or rather, Myuu is again with something strange.....

Just what in the world Shirakome is planning to do with Myuu? Even I myself don't know anymore.

The characters are moving as they pleased, that is really something that happen huh.

I wonder, should I just mix up legend, myth, urban legend into one big mess already to make something like□Behind Myuu, it become a swarm of Hyakki Yakkou nano!□.....

# **Arifureta After II    A World That is Relatively Finished**

It was a place of large spring, surrounded by forest of trees. There was no sound that could be heard other than the rustling leaves.

It was Kouki's question that brought the silence. In front of Kouki who was crawling on all fours at the edge of the spring while coughing, there was queen Moana making a bewildered expression.

Suddenly the sanity of the existence that they greatly respected and loved was being questioned. The question was an extremely impolite one that normally it wouldn't be strange if they snapped toward the one who asked.

In fact, the atmosphere of the people standing around the queen—six men and women with warrior appearance, and two man and woman who didn't seem like warrior but looked used with fighting. And one woman whose clothing was different with the others, her attire somehow gave the impression that she was a lady attendant—was turning into one that couldn't be said to be pleasant.

Although, not even one of them tried to reproach Kouki's impolite statement, they didn't look like "fanatic". Was that because of healthy religious faith, or else was it because

they were holding back because they were in front of the queen, the reason wasn't clear.

Kouki felt the atmosphere of the surrounding and saw the bewildered expression of Moana whose hand was still presented at him, and realized that his question was crude before he apologized in panic.

□I, I'm sorry, saying that so suddenly. I am a bit traumatized with an existence that is like a god.....□

□Tra, trauma of god? Or rather, you had met that kind of existence before?□

The words of Kouki who was once involved with a supernatural existence that was called god caused Moana and her people to make expression of being struck with admiration. Was the young man before their eyes an existence so great that was also chosen by another great existence different from Foltina, they wondered.

But, Kouki's next words turned them speechless.

□.....Yes. Though, it was when he was in a state of possessing an acquaintance. He thought nothing of human except as his pawn in a game, caused many wars, brainwashed people, and when he got bored he sent in his apostles to massacre mankind, that kind of god.□

□That's, not god. That's absolutely an evil something else right?□

A magnificent tsukkomi from the queen. Her way of talking changed. By any chance, that might be her unadorned way of talking.

Kouki smiled wryly while saying "Perhaps" and he took Moana's hand.

"Eerr. Let's see, Foltina, sama? I think you said that person was the one who summoned me but, I completely don't know anything..... But first thing first, I only wish to confirm ahead just one thing, can I return to my original place?"

From the hand of Kouki who returned a firm grip in his handshake, Moana felt the strength of someone who was similarly a fighter like her and she coughed once. She recovered her disordered mind and way of talking.

After that she lowered her eyebrows looking a bit troubled and,

"I'm sorry. But honestly, we too are currently also baffled. We have never heard the voice of Foltina-sama that clearly before, and someone like you who visit from a different world, it is like a fairy tale."

"In other words....."

"Yes. It's just as you thought, if the "original place" that you said us really in another world, then we don't have the method of how to return you back there. Or rather, you really came from another world huh?"

"Eerr, I think that's the case but....."

As a test, Kouki tried mentioning the name of the kingdom and empire but Moana and others gave no reaction. Perhaps this place was an unknown continent that was also in Tortus.....such possibility couldn't be denied, but seeing that Moana and her people had no power of summoning, in the end he had no other method except making contact with



this Foltina-sama, or searching for a method to go home by his own strength.

(Or perhaps, will that guy come here to pick me up? It feels like he might show up all of sudden with troublesome face after Shizuku and others begged him.)

Thinking of “that guy” that floated at the back of his mind——Hajime, caused Kouki to smiled wryly. If it was him who possessed both the method to cross over worlds and the method to find Kouki, then it wasn’t something impossible.

Moana and her people made a worried expression seeing Kouki’s state, they wondered whether he was cornered from feeling shock into a condition where he could do nothing but laughing.

Seeing the good character of Moana and others that somehow could be seen through from them, Kouki felt a bit relieved while smiling to show that he was fine.

□I’m sorry. Come to think of it, I haven’t introduced myself. I am called Amanogawa Kouki. ——Just a mere swordsman.□

□Swordsman.....□

Moana and her people made a bewildered expression once again, wondering why he didn’t introduce himself as the hero. But, before that bewilderment could turn into spoken out question, Kouki stood up and continued his words.

□If this is another world, a place that doesn’t know about my former world, and I cannot go home, then that can’t be helped. Can I ask you to please teach me about various things. Including the reason why I was called here, your majesty the queen?□

□Ye, yeah. That's right. It looks like you were really suddenly tossed into the spring, we will give you explanation as much as we can. Also, you also don't need to worry about any basic necessities. Even like this, I am a queen after all. There won't be a problem with just providing for a single guest.□

Moana pulled herself together and said that while winking at him with playfulness. The atmosphere of that place softened slightly and the people who seemed to be her attendant also smiled slightly.

□And also, I don't mind if you call me Moana. You are a guest that Foltina-sama entrusted to us. It should be fine if you think of your status as higher than me. That's why, it's fine to not humble yourself like that.□

□Aa~, perhaps so. But there is also the matter about me being outsider so....., please let me call you Moana-sama. As for my language.....for the moment, please let me keep using polite language as it is.□

□Mu, I see.....□

Moana's shoulders dropped in a bit of disappointment. The expression of Moana's followers looked like they had headache right after Moana said to him to not act humbly, but their expression turned grateful when they heard Kouki's reply. Seeing that, Kouki felt relieved that his response wasn't mistaken.

It appeared that this queen had a really unconventional character, as could be seen from how she was so used to battlefield to the degree that she had scars on her body.

□Then, I'll have you let me call you Kouki. That will be fine I believe?□

□Yes, of course.□

□Right. Well then Kouki. There is a bit of problem with the safety of this area, if possible I want us to be on the move quickly. If we hurry we should be able to arrive at the capital before the sun set.□

Kouki nodded showing that he had no objection, to which Moana also nodded back □Great□. And then, she moved her gaze at the woman in attendant attire beside her.

□Anneal. We cannot keep being like a drowned rat like this all the time. Please.□

□Yes, your majesty. ....I pray. For the grace of the sun and the wind——“Wind of Embrace”□

The woman who was called Anneal looked to be in her middle twenty from her appearance, a woman with slightly calm atmosphere. Her eyes were droopy, and when she replied her voice was also soft, which spurred such impression even more.

Different from the other followers, she wasn't carrying anything that looked like weapon, in exchange she was carrying a large satchel on her back and several bags that looked like shawl.

Whether it was Moana or her followers, they all were basically wearing pants and protectors above their clothes with white undertone. But it was only Anneal who was wearing something like an apron in the place of protector. That was the reason Kouki got the impression that she was like a lady attendant.

When that Anneal whispered in a faint voice, right away a part of the pattern on the back of her right hand shined

faintly.

□This is.....□

Kouki looked down on his body with a slight surprise. His clothes was swaying from receiving gentle warm wind. From the sensation of wind his skin felt, it seemed a warm wind was whirling with his body as the center. The same thing also happened with Moana and the followers that entered the water just now.

□Fumu, it seems it will also be necessary to explain about blessing art too. She is praying, or perhaps offering her wish to the power that dwell in nature—the blessing power, to have that power shared with her.□

Power was dwelling in all living things and the whole nature. Moana and others called that power as blessing power, and the technique that made use of that power by praying or vowing was named as blessing art.

The painting on their body was something that represented their prayer and vow as letters which made it possible to shorten the invocation procedure.

As for Fortina, she was thought to be the aggregation of those powers of nature, an existence that possessed will. Sometimes, there appeared people who felt “the will of the great blessing” like in the fairy tale, or heard her words.

By no means that existence could be confirmed clearly, people vaguely thought that such existence existed.

In the teaching since the ancient time, the sense of values of living while feeling gratitude to not just Foltina, but to the whole nature was planted into the people.

Therefore, rather than calling the people's feeling toward Foltina as religious faith, it should instead be called as ecological sense of values to treasure the nature.

Kouki listened to such story during the time of waiting until their clothes dried up.

(I see. Rather than faith, they are offering respect.....or perhaps gratitude, something like that.....)

Like that, his conviction that Moana and her people weren't fanatic was getting stronger inside Kouki. Although, Kouki still hadn't let go of his wariness toward Moana and others. His polite language and title of honor toward Moana displayed that.

When their clothes dried up completely, the explanation about blessing was also mostly over and Moana raised her voice.

□Now then, let's depart. We will keep talking about what we should teach to Kouki in the way. Spenser, I'll leave the vanguard post to you.□

□Understood, your majesty.□

The aging warrior that pulled up Kouki from the spring before this seemed to be called Spenser. He was the eldest among all the people here, his short black hair without any grey hair gave a youthful impression. Although, his body that was obviously trained even through his equipments and the glimpses of sharpness of a fighter deep in his eyes gave a weight that this person couldn't be underestimated by any means.

When Kouki asked, perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected, it seemed that other than Anneal, all of the

people here should be called as the most elite warriors of Synclea kingdom, they were the royal guard of Moana. And Spenser was the leader of the royal guard force.

Following Spenser's lead, they advanced through the thick forest. The temperature and humidity also didn't feel unpleasant, the pillars of light created from the light through the gaps between leaves were beautiful. Kouki narrowed his eyes pleasantly thinking 'What a verdant world'.

Kouki talked toward Moana while they were advancing with the soldiers surrounding Kouki and Moana at the center.

□The nature is really abundant here. The spring before this too, even though it was quite deep, but the water was really clear until the bottom. This is also thanks to Foltina-sama, no, to the blessing power that filled this world, right.□

□.....That's correct.□

For some reason Moana's expression turned complicated. Inside his heart Kouki felt uneasy thinking if he had said something wrong while his gaze was looking around. There, he saw everyone including Spenser and Anneal were also making a complicated expression.

Kouki wracked his mind even harder to spot what he had said wrong. Moana showed a wry smile to such Kouki.

□No, forgive me. Kouki hasn't said anything wrong. It's just, I was thinking to explain it after this but.....place abundant with nature like this, only numbered a little.□

□Eh?□

Kouki was perplexed. Moana's bitter smile deepened while she explained further.

□Outside this forest, there is a desert continuing as far as the eye can see. This place is special.□

□De, desert?□

□Yes. the blessing power is being stolen from the world. Because of those < Dark Being> .□

< Dark Being> —According to Moana, they were a grotesque race that emitted miasma, a power that neutralized the blessing power. They must be something like monster if a comparison was made with Tortus. It seemed they were called Dark Being because they were constantly enveloped in miasma that looked like black mist.

They consumed < Blessing Power> just by existing, stealing life force from all living things. They were truly the natural enemy of not just mankind, but also nature.

□We don't understand what are they, and from where they came. But, let's see, if we are asked 'what is your history?', then we ought to answer "fighting the Dark Being". That is just how long we have been fighting them since far in the past.□

It felt like inside the eyes of Moana who was having a distant look, there was deep and heavy something that couldn't be described with words dwelling inside. Kouki only stayed silent without saying anything, merely listening to what she said.

□A lot of nature lost blessing power. Because those Dark Being are making blessing power their food, they are acting prudently from exploiting the nature compared to in the past. Because if blessing power disappear from the whole world, they too won't be able to keep living. However, they

have a method so that they have no problem even while refraining from exploiting nature.□

They were raising human like livestock. The blessing power a single human possessed was in a different league compared to a single tree or a single animal. Therefore, the <Dark Being> liked to eat human.

Thanks to blessing power, the growth of plants and animals in this world was quick, and strong. But, even so the Dark Being's appetite was above that. Also, a lot of blessing power was consumed, or perhaps eaten in battle. If blessing power was lost to the degree that there was no prospect of recovery, nothing would remain in that place. The place would only become a world of sand.

The supply and demand weren't balanced, regulating their eating so that the blessing power wouldn't dry up meant that they would always be unable to obtain the feeling of full stomach.

That was why, so that it wouldn't be a problem even if the animal and plants were eaten until they ran out, the Dark Being raised human as livestock.

□This is a battle where our survival and dignity are on the line. Our great ancestors created means to oppose the miasma, diligently studied the blessing art, and like that life continue until it come to our time. ....But, perhaps that too has reached the limit already.□

Moana's vast gaze caught Kouki. The thing dwelling inside those eyes that reflected himself—Kouki gulped when he saw that.

□This world, the great mother nature, Foltina-sama is—that's why, they summoned you correct?□



Things like hope, didn't exist there. There was also no expectation. What was inside those eyes, was mortification, and then disappointment toward herself.

The personification of blessing power that should even be called as the will of the world——Foltina had made her judgment. That it was impossible to resist with just the human of this world. That was how much this world had been cornered.

The fact was, there was no other country around Synclea kingdom. There were only feudal lords in each territory, where they all answered to the kingdom. Countries that once called themselves as empire, federation, holy country, and so on, all of them were perished. Across several mountains, or at the continent across the sea, there were other countries that were still resisting, but it was unclear how long they would be able to keep at it.

'All of you is no good already', it couldn't be helped even if the world thought so about them.....

Even though there wasn't any shadow on Moana's expression, but those eyes told of Moana's feeling more eloquently than anything else. In Kouki's eyes, it looked as though the queen before his eyes was smiling while crying.

——It's fine. I swear I'll save this world!

If, he said such thing without thinking of anything, surely Moana with her personality would laugh lively while also saying □That's really reliable!□ to him. While the inside of her eyes was looking like she was going to cry just like now, while feeling disappointed at herself, while getting hurt.

Kouki was glad that he didn't say anything like that. But, however, then, what should he say instead?

It's still not over yet? There should be something that you can do?

Foltina-sama isn't disappointed or anything at you?

It's just a coincidence that I was summoned you know?

He didn't understand.

Kouki didn't understand, what was the correct thing to say.

Kouki couldn't bear to look at Moana's eyes by more than this and he averted his gaze. Moana too also moved her gaze to the front as though there was nothing and she was going to continue her story about the <Dark Being> .

But, at that moment Kouki lifted his face in surprise and he stopped walking.

□Hm? Kouki, what's the matter? Is your condition——□

□.....Err, there are a lot of presences that way. They are heading this way with really fast speed but, what is the possibility that they are your comrades?□

□-. Everyone, prepare to fight! At nine o'clock!□

Moana ignored Kouki's question and immediately raised her voice. Everyone, without a single exception and without even a moment of delay rearranged their formation to face toward the indicated direction. There was no hesitation and also no one asking for confirmation.

That movement that was without the slightest disarray was just like the group behavior that birds showed. Moana's instruction was also extremely fast, but even more than that,

the proficiency of the most elite royal guard unit was also enough of a show.

□Kouki! Do you know their number and distance?□

□-, Yes! Their number is.....16. Their distance is 80 meter—ten seconds until the contact! I believe they are large four-legged animals!□

For a moment Kouki thought whether they would understand when he spoke about the distance using the unit of meter, and so he restated it as the time until the contact with enemy.

Moana's eyes opened wide. Based from the information that Kouki brought to her, she had an idea of the existence that they could possibly encountered in this area.

But, what she was surprised about wasn't because that existence was approaching. She was shocked at the width of Kouki's detection range based that she deduced from that existence's moving speed and the time until the contact with enemy that Kouki estimated.

Although, her surprise only lasted for an instant.

□You all hear that! Assume it's the black wolf species! They will come to tear down our formation in their first attack! Neisan, Lilin, take the wind out of their sail!□

□□Understood□□

Spenser and others, the six soldiers unsheathed their sword. Their swords were single-edged sword with large curvature that looked like shamshir. The width of the sword was wide, and if seeing just from there then they could be categorized as large sword.

The man around his thirty who was called Neisan, and the woman her late teen who was called as Lilin, the two of them held their hands together in prayer behind the six soldiers. They must be art user that specialized as rear guard. Each time the prayer of the two was released to the world, a part of the patterns visible on their cheeks and nape was shining.

The monster of this unknown world finally came. Kouki was nervous and getting cold sweat while also drawing out the holy sword that was dangling from his waist. The holy sword that shined from reflecting the sunlight filtering through trees was so magnificent that everyone spontaneously wanted to let out a sigh of admiration.

Unconsciously Moana and Anneal took a second look.

It was right after that,

Violent killing intent and black miasma rapidly approached from inside the forest like a squall.

□——< Protruding Earth > □

□——< Smashing Raging Wind > □

Prayers of the casters reached the hearing at the same time. The pattern painted on Neisan's cheek until his nape shined, and at the front the earth protruded out matching the activation of that hieroglyph-like pattern. It was just like a wall of stone. The wall of stone had thickness of thirty centimeter, with width and height of two meter.

\*zushin-\*, the sound of something crashing on the stone wall rang out in succession.

Instantly, the pattern stretching from Lilin's shoulder until her neck also shined, and blowing down wind that should be

called as super localized downburst struck at the other side of the stone wall.

\*gusha-\* Graphic sound and small voices of death agony leaked out from the other side.

Neisan's voice echoed even more.

□I pray. Seeking for the crumbling earth, smash apart——< Scattering Pellet> □

The stone wall was pulverized by itself and then its fragments shot out to the front like a directed explosive.

Black smoke was bursting in one after another——no, those were black wolves clad in that black smoke with body length of a meter, several of them were turning a somersault altogether.

Seeing that, two of the vanguard soldiers rushed out.

□□I pray! This body is a sword——< Soul of Strife> !□□

That was a blessing art that raised physical ability. It wasn't just a prayer, but a vow taken toward themselves, by doing that they were strengthened by the blessing power inside their body.

The first step of the two soldiers dented the ground. With that force they slaughtered with one slash two black wolves that only just stood up again somehow from the impact of the pebbles.

Aiming at the two soldiers that stuck out from the formation, more black wolves approached them, but Lilin's wind obstructed those wolves. When the black wolves regained

their balance, the two soldiers retreated to the formation with brilliant speed.

The black wolves growled in irritation. As though to display their annoyance, they spewed out black smoke—miasma with even more thickness.

Right away, the surrounding vegetations wilted as though they lost their vitality, they dried up completely.

□Don't break formation. Keep up what are you doing.□

□We understand.□

The <Dark Being> that was called as black wolf species was a species that specialized in cooperation and melee, their attack power itself was relatively low except a part of the species. The soldiers firmly held the formation and accurately finished off the attacking wolves, while the rearguard's blessing art sniped from behind. That was the theory.

The captain of the royal guard Spenser narrowed his eyes like a hawk and when he spoke to make confirmation just in case, everyone else nodded firmly without any agitation.

(.....Their appearance is monster just as I thought. Is the difference between the two is that one emitted miasma and the other isn't? These wolves resembled the four-eyed wolf but, I don't feel as much pressure from these wolves. I can also follow their movement enough. What's left, whether they have skill like characteristic magic or not.)

Kouki calmly analyzed the battle strength of the black wolf species. Seeing that calm attitude, Moana secretly sighed in relieve.

From the sensation of Kouki's hand, his sensing ability just now, and the minimum accurate information they shared before this, she assumed that Kouki possessed a lot of battle experience, but even so she was worried that he would panic when the time came that they faced the <Dark Being> .

But, at that time, a huge shadow appeared slowly behind the black wolves surrounding them.

□Hou, so it's as I thought that the information that the queen went out of her country is true.....□

It felt like the air shook slightly. Clad in a miasma with thickness that was clearly different from the surrounding black wolves, it was a black wolf with a body built that must be more than two meter. That wolf was talking with a voice that sounded like it directly resonated inside the head.

□Eh?□

Kouki leaked out an astonished voice. His eyes opened wide.

On the other hand, Moana and her people didn't look surprised, they were glaring at the large black wolf with an expression as though they had bitten something sour. It seemed that it was something normal that the black wolf possessed intelligence and speech.

Wasn't the <Dark Being> beasts without any reasoning? Wasn't they the same like monster, a disaster that was mankind's natural enemy.....?

While Kouki was confused, Moana raised the corner of her mouth and replied back with a fearless expression.

□We also scattered fake information so that we wouldn't get found out, and we planned to move quickly with only the

minimum number though. It seems your side have an excellent observer. But, are you seriously thinking you will be able to kill us just with this number?□

□I'll take my chance. There is no way I'll hand over the achievement of taking the head of the queen to the other pack. I'll present your head to the king, and lift my name, Niebla!□

\*UOOOOOOOOON\* A howl that was even accompanied by physical shockwave burst. The black wolf that introduced itself as Niebla gushed out dreadful black miasma along with undulation of power that transmitted electrifying sensation to the skin.

The vegetations at the surrounding that were instantly enveloped by black miasma withered up one after another.

Naturally, that miasma also enveloped Kouki and others. Moana immediately snuggled close to Kouki that their skin touched. It wasn't because she was scared. It was to protect Kouki's body.

If the miasma came in contact with the blessing power of all living things—that was to say their life, Moana and others wouldn't come out unscathed. But, their state didn't look like they were enduring anything like that.

□Everyone, pay attention to the remaining capacity of the miasma stone! Lilin, scatter away the miasma while concentrate attacking Niebla!□

□Roger!□

Moana's instruction was given. Moana's hand reached out toward her chest seemingly unconsciously. There was a colorless and transparent cylinder shaped gem about five,



six centimeter long attached there. That gem——miasma stone was faintly muddy black.

□Kouki, sorry. I should have handed this to you first. Put this miasma stone on your body. It will protect us from the miasma.□

It seemed miasma stone was something like how there was magic stone inside monster, it was an organ inside the body of <Dark Being> . After extracting the miasma inside it for about ten days, it was processed and put on the body, that miasma stone would absorb miasma within its capacity range, and by wearing it one could do activity even inside miasma for a period of time without getting affected.

Moana wrapped a miasma stone pendant around Kouki's wrist. At the same time the black wolves led by Niebla attacked simultaneously.

Niebla too, he couldn't join the cooperation attack because of Lilin holding him back and could only run around outside the formation in the attempt to perturb the soldiers.

Using that chance, Neisan's blessing art was decreasing the number of the black wolves by one, and then one more, it was only little by little, but it was continuing steadily.

□Chih. You are doing well with these number. As expected from the elite unit of the queen-□

Niebla whispered with a voice filled with bitterness.

Right after that, Niebla resolved himself and howled, he charged forward without stopping even while the wind blades that Lilin released carved his body and caused blood to spray out.

□He is coming! Push him back and then kill him!□

□Don't underestimate me-□

Spenser gave his instruction, at the same time Niebla's howl surged out. Right after that, miasma gushed out explosively from the ground below two warriors who were facing Niebla.

□Guah□

□Whaatt!?!□

□Dario-. Fedri!□

The soldiers——Dario and Febri raised scream of shock and got blown away. Because Dario was considerable young even among the elite guard, unlike the veteran Fedri, he was unable to defend right away and crashed on the ground some distance away without even being able to apply ukemi.

The hole that was opened from the absent of the two was immediately closed by Spenser. He blocked the brutal claws of Niebla using his sword and he held his ground trying to halt the rush's momentum.

□Guh, you bastard-□

□You're in the way-□

Miasma converged beside Niebla and took shape. It was the shape of three huge claws.

Lilin fired <Smashing Raging Wind> , but Niebla who blew up miasma upward and neutralized it didn't pause and unleashed the three claws in a horizontal swept toward Spenser.

The other soldiers had their hand full facing the black wolves. They couldn't move right away.

□I won't let you□

It was queen Moana who cut in. She slipped into Niebla's bosom from really close to the ground as though she was crawling there, and struck her sword at his torso with a stunning slash.

Because Niebla immediately pulled back, the trajectory of the three large claws also shifted slightly. Spenser also wasted no time backing away and he got off with only his protector's surface torn.

□Chih. As expected, ordinary method won't work huh.□

Niebla spat that line out and plunged in the miasma claws. Spenser blocked that while Moana stepped toward Niebla.

But, Niebla seemed to also have predicted that movement.

□Dam——□

□First, I'll eat starting from that irritating caster!□

Niebla leaped over Moana's head and used the miasma claws he created himself as a foothold and leaped further, his sprang toward his objective——Lilin who was accurately slowing him down.

Lilin who was making prayer in order to back up Moana late to react just for a moment against Niebla's irregular movement. She wasted no time twisting her body while trying to pray for defense, but whatever the case it was impossible to completely dodge the attack.

It would be most satisfactory if she lost only an arm——she resolved herself for that but the next moment,

□——<Light Severance> -□

A light barrier that shined radiantly manifested in front of Lilin's eyes. Niebla's claws only raised unpleasant scraping sound \*gigigi\* and stopped before the light barrier.

□Wha, what!?!□

□What's this!?!□

Lilin's shocked voice and Niebla's surprised exclaim overlapped.

Niebla adroitly turned his body midair in a somersault and his legs stopped in front of the unknown technique. And then, he looked for the person that was the source of this with his atrocious beast eyes running at the surrounding.

It took a moment to specify the culprit.

□You, what the hell was that just now?□

\*gururu\* Niebla raised a growl that was brimming with killing intent and wariness while asking that.

The person his gaze was directed to was naturally

□Kouki!□

Moana's shout that was filled with shock and gratitude because he protected her comrade resounded.

But, her gaze, and then Niebla's beast eyes that were emitting killing intent were immediately narrowed in dubiousness.

Short and ragged breathing leaked out repeatedly could be heard.

Without any doubt, it was Kouki's breathing. It wasn't that he was adjusting his breathing. It even sounded like he was hyperventilating.

It was obvious even from Kouki's expression that he wasn't in a normal state.

Yes, it was something that even caused both enemy and ally to feel dubious——

Kouki's expression was pale, as though he was fearing something.

The tip of the holy sword his hand was holding was shaking a bit, while being pointed on the ground.

It wasn't——being pointed to Niebla, to the enemy in front of his gaze.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

# Arifureta After II Why, Are You a Hero?

AN: The story ain't progressing even after I wrote twelve thousand words.....

---

He didn't understand.

Was he an enemy? Was there really no middle ground to talk with each other?

He didn't understand.

Were Moana's words the truth? Was justice really on her side?

He didn't understand.

Was it the correct thing to do, to cut down an existence with its own will while he was still not really understanding anything like this?

He didn't understand.

They were the enemy seeing how they came attacking. Enemy should be defeated. That decision should be correct. ....Was it really?

He didn't understand.

He should believe Moana and her people. ....Should he really?

He didn't understand.

Was his judgment really righteous? Was what he believed in correct? Was there something that he failed to notice? Was he averting his eyes from what he should see? Was there anything that he misread? Was he really not thinking conveniently?

He didn't understand. He didn't understand. He didn't understand.

□Hah, just a coward-□

Those thoughts rushed inside Kouki head for a moment in circles. A sneering voice that seemed to see through that caused Kouki to return to his senses in surprise.

When he noticed, brutal claws were approaching before his eyes.

□-!□

□Nuh□

Even when he was taken by surprise, the piled up experience and the greatest specs moved his body by itself. The holy sword that sprang up with a terrific speed shifted Niebla's claws upward.

Seeing his attack averted so easily caused Niebla to leak out a voice of shock. He could never imagine that a trembling young man with pale expression and ragged breathing from

fear would be able to show a reaction this agile even in his wildest dream.

Although, Niebla's agitation only lasted a moment. The instant he passed Kouki by, he swung the miasma claws. He used his own body as camouflage to make the miasma claws attacked from Kouki's blind spot.

But, what resounded wasn't a scream of death agony or the graphic sound of flesh getting torn apart.

\*shaaan\* A single clear sound of scraping metals that didn't suit the battlefield. It was the sound of the miasma claws that were launched from the blind spot getting parried by Kouki's holy sword. He matched the motion of the miasma claws and averted only their trajectory.

□What-□

Niebla's agitation was clear to see this time. An impact ran through his stomach at that time.

□Gofuh!?!□

An impact that made him thought whether his internal organs were being stirred blew away his consciousness for an instant. He crashed on the ground without even any awareness of up and down. When Niebla recovered his consciousness, his gaze ran toward Kouki.

He saw Kouki's figure raising one foot there and he finally understood that he got kicked flying.

It was a terrifying technique. While his reflex toward the first attack was also amazing, but even more than that was his sensing ability toward attack from a blind spot, technique



that beautifully parried every attack instead of blocking, and then the perfect counterattack.

But, however,

(What's with that!? That man, just what's in the world is the deal with him!?)

Niebla felt more confused than scared. While this young man he was staring at possessed amazing technique like a veteran warrior, but he was still directing scared gaze toward Niebla even now.

Just a single kick pierced through Niebla's defense as though tearing through paper scrap and reduced him to a state where he still couldn't stand up right away. Just what in the world a man who could that was feeling scared at?

Or perhaps, he was merely acting? Niebla guessed, but seeing Kouki's state that was desperately stifling something inside himself, it didn't look like that at all.

That was why he didn't understand. Here was a warrior that might even surpassed Spenser, the royal guard of his sworn enemy the queen, and yet his attitude was too mismatched for someone like that, which made him unable to understand.

(Kuh, my underlings also cannot hold on for longer. Then, what I should prioritize is-)

Rather than focusing on a newcomer that he couldn't understand, he should prioritize attacking the enemy that would definitely caused collapse in the enemy side if that enemy was defeated, or even if he just wounded that enemy the enemy side would still be shaken. In that case, he would also be able to escape.

Niebla's eye glint moved away from Kouki and turned toward Moana.

□UOOOOOOOOOOOOON-!!□

It was a howl so loud that felt like the eardrum would get blown away from that. Right away, miasma with abnormal thickness and amount gushed out from Niebla's body.

The intense ejection of miasma that looked as though they would paint over the space itself like black ink was also a dangerous act for Niebla himself. Because it was an act that was equivalent with ejecting out his own life force.

But, in this battlefield where irregularity existed, the best choice was to escape with certainty. As though to show that, Niebla's ejected miasma transformed into several hundred tough claws.

□Your majesty-!□

□I pray-, this——□

□Kuh□

Anneal immediately leaped forward to protect Moana, Lilin was trying to use blessing art of protection while showing anxiety, and Moana resolved herself to intercept while sweating coldly, it was at that moment the miasma claws in the number that was absurd to even be counted attacked like a barrage.

□That's the only thing I won't let you do! ——< Heaven Severance> !□

Kouki cut in front of the tsunami of black and claws with a step-in that could be mistaken with a teleportation.

Moana called his name "Kouki-" with a voice that sounded concerned for him.

Were Moana words the truth? When he heard her voice, he couldn't imagine that she was deceiving him. This person who was worried for him when he was in danger even though they only met just now and she still hadn't ascertained his background, how could he think that she was using him or anything?

But,

(That's not it, that's not it at all. What I cannot believe is——)

His heart felt like it was being whipped and messed up inside a mixer. Even so, the feeling that he had to protect moved Kouki.

Among the skill that he could invoke swiftly, this light element defensive magic could protect at the widest range——<Heaven Severance>. This magic that could deploy several layers of shining defensive wall simultaneously blocked all the rapidly approaching miasma claws.

Inside the miasma so thick it gave hallucination that the darkness of night was descending, countless layer of radiance defensive wall flew around like the torch of hope. Such scene even looked fantastical.

The miasma was blocked with certainty, and then Kouki's holy sword swept it aside.

That figure that perfectly handled Niebla's fierce attack that caused veteran soldiers like Spenser and others to gulp caused them to comprehend it, indeed, this person was

certainly an existence that was invited by a great being. He was a magnificent warrior.

Everyone was thinking so during the dispersal of the miasma. Everyone other than Moana who was currently at Kouki's side, seeing his face that was desperately defending against the attack with an expression that looked like he was going to collapse anytime now.

□You bastard-, how far you are going to be a hindrance-!! - Tsk, next time I'll definitely bring you do——□

□There won't be any next time.□

Niebla finally recovered from the impact of Kouki's attack and he tried to slip into the miasma to retreat, but it was at that timing that Spenser broke through that miasma and rushed near.

Niebla wasted no time to swing his claws, but Spenser moved with flowing movement like water and his sword finally caught up to Niebla's torso.

□Gugah!?!□

□This is the end-□

Scream of fighting spirit surged out. Spenser's sword was enveloped in wing that possessed faint green radiance.

While Niebla's blood danced in the air, Spenser dodged the jaw attack that Niebla carried out in desperation and his beheading slash was sucked into Niebla's neck.

\*zan-\* Spenser's sword cut through. Niebla's huge body fell down. And then, Niebla's head rolled on the ground.

□The likes, of.....livestock is-□

Niebla fighting spirit didn't vanish even with his head removed, however, because of the limit of his body, he fell silent after spitting out words of resentment at the end. The miasma dispersed and light vanished from Niebla's eyes.

Spenser huffed and he sheathed his sword, and then he raised a tense voice □Situation report!□. Right away, the royal guards who in the end didn't lose even a single person reported one after another that they were all safe, that Niebla's underlings were annihilated, and that Dario wasn't seriously injured although the bone of his arm broke.

It seemed there were many small wounds, but by using blessing art to heighten their self-recovery strength, wounds until simple broken bone could be healed within a few minutes.

□Hero-dono! Thank you very much for protecting her majesty. I say, that was really as expected from the chosen warrior of Foltina-sama. Truly, that was a splendid skill.□

Spenser was facing Kouki with an expression that was filled with praise and gratitude without even a speck of malice in it. The other soldiers were also the same. Lilin and Neisan were showing him respect even while gazing at him full of curiosity. It couldn't be helped that they became curious with Kouki's magic.

□Ah, no, it's nothing really big.....□

□Hahah, to be able to say that "it's nothing big" after enduring the fierce attack of a <Dark Being> of that level when he was sacrificing his life force! How very reliable! Hero-dono, once more, please take care of us from here on too.□

Spenser looked for a handshake with a friendly smile. It seemed he was harboring impression of a likeable young man who was an outstanding warrior while also possessing humility toward Kouki.

But, even though Kouki was responding with the handshake request of such Spenser and also the soldiers who were gathering around him with similar expression like Spenser, his expression looked somewhat troubled throughout all that.

□Say, can I ask you all to call me by my name if possible? Don't call me hero. I don't mind if you call me Kouki.□

□Oo, what a happy thing to ask. Then I'll call you Kouki-dono. Only if you call me Spenser in return.□

The gaze of Spenser who perceived Kouki's words as another expression of friendliness was increasingly getting friendlier. The positivity level of the aging soldier was rising up steadily. And it seemed it was also the same with Lilin and others.

Kouki's expression was getting increasingly looked as though he was stuffing his cheeks with bitter food. However his expression was turning into one where it looked like he was desperately holding it so it wouldn't come out on his face.

□Kouki, let me also give you my words of thanks. That preeminent skill is really worthy of respect. I wish to express my gratitude with something but.....in any case, we also cannot really be carefree after receiving the attack just now. I want to depart immediately though.....□

□Ah, yes. I have no objection. It seems that the information of Moana-sama and others coming here was leaked out.

Indeed, it's better for us to hurry.□

Moana entered between his conversation with Spenser and others looking somewhat as though she was putting a damper on things. Kouki let the tension bleed out of his shoulders toward that interruption as though in relieve.

They once more advanced quickly as a party toward the edge of the forest with Spenser in the lead.

Before long they could see the border of the forest. Kouki saw multiple large silhouettes taking position in front of the border and his hand reached out toward his sheathed holy sword.

□Kouki, it's okay. Those are our mount animals.□

□.....Your mount, is it? They look like large lizard though.□

□Right. They are called Arous. Their trait is their flat torso and long neck. Their running ability is high with little shaking. They are mainly eating fruit even though they look like that. They are really taking kindly to human you know?□

From the point of view of Kouki whose common sense when speaking about a transportation method using animal would think of horse, he felt a bit bewildered of mounting a lizard more than two meter long with atrocious face.

When he got nearer, he could see something like collar and U-shaped fetter and something like a stool to sit down attached on the animal's back. He guessed that the rider could stay standing or sitting by lying heavily on the stomach on the saddle.

From a glance, their atmosphere felt like □Hyahhaa—! There is human! The food! I'm gonna eat them alive yeah!□

looking as though they were going to attack, but seeing the equipment attached on them then indeed, they certainly looked like a transportation method of this world.

(I see, they are like the monster that the devil race used as mount huh..... But, hm~m.....

For the moment Kouki accepted that they weren't dangerous existence, but this time he became bothered by something else.

There were ten Arous in total, but the Arous with the best physique and style among those ten had a large ribbon tied on top of its head. A pink ribbon. The ribbon was really pink.

Brutal looking face, eyes that shined with fierce glint, the leaked out growling voice \*guruu\*, the imposing air.....but, on its head was a pink ribbon.

What surrealism. Was this the fashion sense of this world's people? Or else, was that an indispensable equipment? No, other than this one Arous that looked like leader, the other Arous weren't wearing ribbon or anything.....

Kouki was confused.

Moana followed Kouki's gaze and she guessed what he was staring at. And then looking a bit boastful she approached the Arous with ribbon.

□Fufu, what do you think? It's cute right? This child is my personal mount. His name is Haumu. The~re there, Haumu~, your master has returned back here~. Were you lonely?□

Moana caressed Haumu's head \*rub rub, pat pat\*. 'I see' Kouki realized, it looked like this Arous wasn't just a mount.



Moana seemed to harbor a definite fondness to it. He guessed that this Arous was in a position of pet, or perhaps partner of Moana.

Both sides held trust at each other——

□Guryah□

□Ouch!?!□

Haumu's headbutt was launched. Moana's head was thrown back hard. Kouki became flustered □As I thought it's ferocious!?!□, but whether Anneal or Spenser or the others, none of them paid that any attention and they kept preparing their own mount for their departure from here.

□Fufu, what, as I thought you were lonely alone? When we got home I'll give you a lot of care okay, so~——ouch!?!□

'This cute cheeky guy!' When Moana tried to hug Haumu once more with that kind of feel, a jaw drop that was like a heel drop kick burst on the crown of Moana's head.

□.....Excuse me, are you okay?□

□Ahaha, there is no problem at all here, Kouki. Haumu is a spoiled child since a long time ago you see. He would frolic at me right away when I approached him.□

□Guryuu□

□No, that, no matter how I look at it.....□

When Moana turned her head toward Kouki, Haumu's mouth closed \*snap\* on her whole head. Moana was struggling and squirming. No matter how he looked at it, he could only think that she was being preyed on.

□Sto, stop it Haumu! Right now isn't the time for playing around! That's why, ah, it hurts! Haumu, it's a bit, no, it's really hurt here! Come on, you are a good child so let me——AA□

Moana tapped repeatedly \*peshi peshi\* at Haumu's head to say give up. Haumu was chewing on Moana as though to appeal of something, or perhaps as though to clear up a grudge of many years.

Kouki who couldn't bear to see that looked at Anneal asking for help. Anneal let out a sigh while pointing at Haumu's head with her finger motion.

Kouki fearfully approached Haumu.

□Err, Haumu?□

□Guruu□

When Kouki turned his gaze at Haumu's head, Haumu nodded as though to say □Please□. His teeth dug into Moana. Those were the teeth of a herbivore, so the teeth didn't pierce through, but it must be still hurt. A small scream □Au!?!□ came from Moana.

Kouki slowly reached out his hand and took the ribbon from Haumu's hand.

Haumu conveyed his gratitude at Kouki with his gaze, and then he did □Peh□ at Moana as though he was spitting out his spit.

□Uu, ge, geez Haumu. You're really a pampered child.□

Moana crumbled down on the ground as though she had been assaulted by hoodlum, and she wiped up her face that

was slathered with saliva. Her way of talking was changing must be because she was a little shaken. She was averting her face shyly from Kouki who was looking down at her with a really complicated expression.

□The, then Kouki. You can sit behind me——cough, I wonder if it's agreeable for you to ride behind me?□

□Ah, yes.□

Moana was still slathered with saliva, however, in order to recover the dignity of queen, Moana changed her way of talking back. Following her, Kouki climbed on Haumu's back. As expected, it seemed the standard was to ride by standing. When Moana climbed up, it felt like □Chih□ sound could be heard from Haumu but.....that must be an imagination, there was no way he could clicked his tongue.

□Hm? Eh? The ribbon is.....□

It seemed Moana noticed when he got on Haumu's back. Moana was looking around restlessly in a state seemed to say 'Where has the ribbon gone?'. The ribbon was in Kouki's hand.

Haumu turned his long neck and stared at Kouki. An earnest feeling that could be seen just from a glance was residing in those eyes. That was a feeling of, □Do something about this woman!□.

□.....Looks like it flew off somewhere just now. Moana-sama, there is also the matter about the attack, isn't it better if we depart soon rather than later?□

□I, I guess. Right, I'm sorry Kouki. That ribbon was Haumu's favorite but.....this is not the time for saying anything like that isn't it.□

It felt like killing intent was residing in Haumu's gaze. Kouki understood. Haumu's gaze was declaring "Who are you saying is pleased with that thing huh, idiottt! I'm gonna let you die someday, just you wait!".

Kouki who somehow guessed the relationship between the queen and her personal mount was——slowly entering the ribbon into his pocket. In the world, there was also things that was better to be treated as not existing.

Haumu's eyes brightened. It seemed that his positivity level toward Kouki was steadily increasing. "Guruu♪" Perhaps it was just his imagination, but Haumu was raising a growl that sounded like he was in good mood.

"Fufu, are you happy being able to run together with me? This cute cheeky guy! But, we have guest today here. So run carefully out there okay."

"Gurya!!"

Was that a simple reply, or was that a yell of denial "Ain't no way I'm happy about, that, you idiottt!", in any case with the powerful roar of Haumu as the signal, the party left the forest.

Right after they left the forest, what leaped into Kouki's sight was a sand colored world. There was the color of sand continuing until the horizon as far as his eyes could see. Moana's words that the forest behind them was something rare was certainly a fact.

□Compared with Guryuen.....this is different huh.□

That was the impression of Kouki who saw this vast desert.

A great desert existed in Tortus. It was a world of brown color. A world that was filled with the same heat and sand like this place.

But, Kouki understood. The great desert of Guryuen and this desert were decisively different. He was unable to find any words that could express what was the difference accurately but, if he had to say it——

□It's dead.□

□.....Right. It's just as you say. This is a dead world.□

Moana affirmed Kouki's words. Haumu was advancing through the sand with surprisingly little shaking and surprising speed. Above him, Moana who was holding on the U-shaped fetters while looking back across her shoulder at Kouki had eyes that were filled with grief.

□This is not just a desert. This is the result from blessing power, the power for the sake of living getting thoroughly stolen. Once, before the large scale war that occurred about a hundred years ago, it seemed that this area was also a verdant forest.□

□War.....□

About a hundred years ago, a war, no, a decisive battle of the Nth time that occurred between mankind and the <Dark Being> .

The one who stood at the front as the leader was the king of Synclea kingdom at the time. At the end of the fierce battle,

while great damage resulted for both humans and also nature, even so that king succeeded in bringing down the king of the <Dark Being> of that time.

□The honorable ancestor drove away the army of <Dark Being> . The compensation for that was nature was lost from 80% of the kingdom but.....even so nature is still left behind at the surrounding of the unaltered capital. I believe that was an amazing war result.□

□The capital wasn't relocated after that?□

He understood from seeing this desert that could only be expressed as “dying”. This was a place that human couldn't possibly live at. Eighty percent of the country territory died. He believed it was a matter of course for the capital to be relocated for the country's revival attempt.

Moana looked at faraway while opened her mouth in respond to Kouki's question.

□The king of <Dark Being> ——because he looked completely dark from the abnormal thickness of his miasma, we called him the <Dark King> , but it is said that guy lived for long as the strongest existence among the <Dark Being> who were saving strength.□

□Dark King.....□

□Do you get it? We are not talking about lineage. He is not an existence that will end after being defeated once. The <Dark King> exist in every era. Although there is variety in his strength each time though.□

Moana's gaze that was staring at far away ran through the vast desert. Kouki guessed what Moana wanted to say and he whispered.

□This place is still a battlefield isn't it? This is also the best place for it.□

□Yes. Because there is no blessing power that can be stolen from here. In this desert, those fellows can only use the miasma that they stored inside their body. The point where no blessing power cannot be obtained from the surrounding also apply to us, but even so, it's ideal that those fellow won't be able to get strengthened and destroy nature for more than now.□

That was why they didn't relocate the capital. Because the ruined territory was exactly the best battlefield there was. The soldiers of Synclea were remaining in this barren land for the sake of continuing battle. No matter how many months and years passed, Synclea kingdom was the front line battlefield.

□Of course, we are moving our people to place that still have nature remaining. We entrust the feudal lord of every area with autonomy. We are leaving the production of the main food and everything else to them.□

□What is the prospect of the enemy circling around this desert and aim at every other territory?□

Moana shook her head to answer Kouki's question.

According to her, the <Dark Being> were ruling the eastern land, the kingdom's territory was at the west with this great desert sandwiched in between. A sea was spreading at the north, and similar like a desert, in the sea there was nothing to block the sight, so if any Dark Being tried to come from there, the surveillance unit stationed at each territory would notice.

At the south there was mountain range area spreading, at the other side of the mountain area there was a large country that still remained and constructed their battlefield like Synclea, so if something happened then a notice would immediately reach them.

Therefore, it was impossible for the <Dark Being> to invade the western territory without Synclea kingdom noticing.

The desert and Synclea's capital were literally the last fortress and also the front line battlefield.

□.....How admirable.□

□Thank you.□

Kouki put his hand on his chest and said that, toward all the soldiers, and then toward the young queen who led them. Moana smiled happily and nodded at such Kouki.

Silence continued for a while. Kouki pursed his lips into a straight line and turned his gaze downward, he was turning his thought toward the soldiers who he was told about.

Moana was glancing repeatedly across her shoulder to such Kouki. And then after she showed hesitation several times, she opened her mouth.

□Kouki. Can I ask you something?□

□? What is it?□

Kouki lifted his face. Moana's gaze wandered around, looking like she was choosing her words.

□That, is.....why, are you, a hero?□

□Eh?□



It felt like something cold was entering slowly into Kouki's chest. It felt like he was asked 'isn't it presumptuous for you to call yourself that?'. It felt like Kouki's weakness that was exposed at the fight against Niebla was seen through.

Seeing Kouki who was shaken and his face complexion worsened, Moana added more of her words in hurry.

□Ah, no, that's not what I meant. It's not that I'm ridiculing you. I'm only wondering that it's a curious way of calling you.□

□Curious, is it?□

Understanding that Moana's intention was different from what he thought, Kouki let out the tension from his stiffened face and tilted his head.

□Yes. I thought it's curious. When I heard from Foltina-sama that a hero is summoned, I don't really understand what kind of person would appear. Because, don't you think so too? Hero(yuusha)—if we take the literal meaning of that word, the meaning will be “a person with courage”.□ (TN: The word yuusha is made from two kanji, the kanji of courage and person. Yuusha can mean hero, the brave, or man of valor in Japan.)

Moana threw a questioning gaze at Kouki to confirm that they were in the same page. Kouki nodded.

□If that's the case, then I can throw out my case and say with surety. That the soldiers of my country, are all “hero(yuusha)” without a single exception.□

□Ah.....□

Kouki was taken aback and leaked out a small voice. Moana looked back and stared straight at Kouki.

□If by perchance, Kouki is a man who had accomplished some great exploits, and that was why you were chosen by Foltina-sama.....then shouldn't such person be called as "hero(eiyuu)" instead?□ (TN: Eiyuu is made from kanji of 'Han' and man. In Japan it means hero, heroine, great person)

□That's.....□

□Ah, no, it's not that I wish to trouble Kouki. I'm just wondering.□

Sensing Kouki's perplexity, Moana said □Forgive me for asking something strange□ and she returned her gaze to the front.

But, Moana's words were clinging completely inside Kouki. Question was overflowing inside his mind.

Just what in the world a hero(yuusha) was.

(Thinking back now, just what is a hero? I called myself that because that's my vocation. But, still, hero—a person with courage.....that's a person's nature, it cannot be called an "occupation" that showed a person's innate ability isn't it?)

He recalled. The vocation of his comrades.

Healer. Martial artist. Swordsman. Barrier user.....

Yes, everyone had vocation that was connected to an actual occupation. It was only "hero(yuusha)" that was of a different disposition. Certainly, rather than a transcription of a work one had aptitude toward, it was a title that displayed

one's character. So to speak, it was a transcription that wasn't any different with vocation of "pessimist", "optimist", or "good person" or "bad person".

If one wanted to describe a vocation that led the people and fought powerful enemy, then it should be better to call that vocation using "commander" or even "king" instead.

(Was it because in Tortus "hero(yuusha)" is recognized as occupation? However, if it's the case of "a person that accomplished great exploits" just like Moana-sama mentioned, then it should be fine to use "hero(eiyuu)" instead. Why am I "a person with courage"? Just what am I.....)

Why did he obtain the vocation of something like hero(yuusha)?

When he looked back at the events at Tortus, even himself was harboring doubt whether he even have possessed such nature in himself.

How many times he was unable to move in the crucial times? How many times he failed without even choosing anything? How many times he acted as he pleased and dragged his comrades into trouble?

Why was someone like him a "hero"?

—Why, are you, a hero?

□.....I don't know. I really, don't know.□

That voice sounded wrung out from his throat, it sounded like it would vanish anytime.

Moana who understood that it was an answer toward her question just now looked back once more. And then, she peeked at Kouki who was looking down with a fixed stare.

□I see. ....It will be great if you understand it someday. Yep, surely the time will come when you understand the reason.□

□.....Why, do you think so?□

In respond to Moana whose manly way of talking broke down, Kouki unconsciously also asked back with his plain way of talking.

Moana smiled. Her expression looked affectionate.

□Because, aren't you still struggling? Aren't you doing your best to find the answer? The world isn't so cold that it would trample down that kind of person.□

□.....Is that so?□

□That's so.□

The world would surely smile at those who kept struggling without giving up. The one who said those words with conviction was a queen who was continuing to fight wholeheartedly in a world that was heading to ruin. For Kouki, those were words that were really heavy and really beautiful that caused him to be taken aback.

The two stared at each other. The eyes of Anneal and Lilin who were keeping pace beside them looked curious like cat. And then, the eyes of Spenser that were looking back from the front with a cold gaze.

□Nnh□

□Cough, ahem□

Moana and Kouki did something that looked like coughing or perhaps not while quietly taking distance from each other.

The lips of Anneal and Lilin crooked with the feel of □Mufuu~□. Their maiden sensor might be reacting to the scene just now.

□Ho, how long until we reach the capital.□

□Ri, right. I believe we will arrive at the evening with our current pace.□

Kouki asked an information that he already heard before this to varnish over the matter, and Moana also answered in the same attempt.

They continued to advance while inside that really delicate atmosphere for a while. Slightly elevated hills were starting to get visible here and there.

But, at that time, like a rehash of the event inside the forest, Kouki suddenly reacted to something and looked up.

□Kouki?□

Moana asked Kouki while she raised her fist and commanded the unit to stop moving.

Right after that,

□-, something is falling here! Evacuate!□

□Advance! Rush ahe——□

Moana wasted no time responding at Kouki's warning, but multiple objects freefalling and crashing at their

surrounding arrived faster than that.

\*zudon-zudon-\* What were crashing on the ground with that roaring sound that shook the ground were living things that looked like lizard, clad in thick miasma. They were wearing equipment that looked like protector, and from their bone structure it could be seen that they were mainly walking with two legs. From their appearance, they were what they called as Lizardman in RPG.

□-, scaled dragon species!? Just what in the world!?!□

Moana's confused voice resounded. Her reaction was understandable. If this was an ambush, then she would just give instruction right away to form formation and prepare to intercept. In that case there wouldn't be any hesitation whatsoever and the royal guard would finish carrying out that order in a moment just like when facing Niebla and his underlings.

But, the lizardmen called scaled dragon species that fell from the sky——six of them were already dying. Naturally the cause of them dying was the impact from their fall. If it wasn't because of the thick protector they were wearing that wasn't suited for battle and also the impact reduction from their miasma, they might have died instantly.

These enemies launched a surprise attack yet they almost get annihilated at the same time with their entrance. Moana and her people could only look at the situation like that.

They weren't knowing that the objective of this surprise attack was exactly to take advantage of that confusion.

□□GIIIIIAAAAAAAAH□□

□□GUEEEEEEEEEEEEH□□

Shrieks burst out. Those weren't screams from pain or suffering. They were the same scream like Niebla's scream. They were emitting miasma by staking their life. The six lizardmen were gushing out miasma that rivaled what Niebla did before.

□Impossible-, are they planning to suicide!?!□

□Your majesty, please escape! Lilin, your wind!□

Moana leaked out voice of shock while Spenser roared angrily.

The six lizardmen were obviously of lower status than Niebla. Yet regardless of that they were scattering miasma that rivaled Niebla was because they were literally exchanging their life for it.

It was truly a suicide attack. An ambush of suicide bombing from the sky was something outside expectation.

The miasma that exploded and dyed the surrounding area black instantly didn't grant any time for escape, for Lilin to activate her wind, or even for Kouki to respond.

Everything was swallowed by blackness and vanished.

If it was seen from slight distance away, it looked like a tornado of black flame was generated. Moana and others were inside that tornado.

At that timing, a pterosaur descended down from the sky. At its back was a scaled dragon species that was conspicuously larger than normal. He was equipped with metallic protector and his hand was holding a large spear.

□Looks like it was worth it instigating Niebla. Although the miasma stone the queen is carrying is special, but it won't be able to endure that guy's miasma and the miasma of six underlings using up all their life.□

‘Ge-ge-ge-’ The scaled dragon species raised a weird laugh.

It seemed that the leaking out of the information that Moana and her people left the capital with few number and Niebla getting hold of that information were all the scheming of this scaled dragon species.

Everything was for the sake of reducing the capacity limit of the miasma stone that was the lifeline for Moana and her people. And then, he would deal the finishing blow easily when Moana and others became unable to move.

□With this my king's——□

The scaled dragon species was standing calmly while staring in pleasure at the miasma completely ruining Moana and her people, but the voice and phenomenon that suddenly occurred caused him to swallow back his own words.

□Turn this place into sanctuary, let none of god's enemy through——< Sacred Severance> !!□

\*GOU-\* Pure white light burst up. The storm of miasma that could be mistaken as black flame ruptured from inside, and a dazzling light swelled up in half-sphere state.

Not the slightest bit of miasma existed at the inside of that light, the miasma that was blown away along with the light melted into the air and dispersed.

□Wha, what?□



At the end of the gaze of the scaled dragon species who couldn't hide his agitation, were the royal guards and Arous who collapsed at the other side of the shining barrier, and also the queen.

But, there was just one person, a man that looked unaffected at all even inside that much miasma was holding the limp Moana in his arms.

□You-, what the hell are you! How are you that calm even after getting bathed in that much miasma!?!□

The scaled dragon species that somehow pulled himself back together from his confusion readied his large spear while yelling angrily.

Kouki softly put Moana to recline on Haumu and he whispered something while ignoring the scaled dragon species's angry yell. And then, something that looked like light particles showered down on everybody including Moana and enveloped them in a gentle light.

Seeing that—Kouki unsheathed his holy sword while turning his gaze to the scaled dragon species.

Kouki showed the same reaction at the scaled dragon species just like with Niebla.

Face that turned pale. Shaking body. Ragged breathing.

But, there already wasn't anyone else here that would finish the enemy while he was holding it in.

If he ran away, Moana and others would die.

Even if he prolonged it, as expected they would still die.

If he didn't choose, they would die.

The time for choosing, had came.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry that the gloomy story is continuing.

Next chapter the fundamental problem that Kouki is holding will become clear.

If possible, I hope I can make consecutive posting next week.

Even Shirakome also want to progress the story in one go until where the tale move in a big way. After that as expected it will be like musou game isn't it. (TN: Like playing in Dynasty Warrior or Samurai Warrior game)

Although, there are important parts more than just Kouki's growth, so I'll endeavor to not cut corners.

There are opinions 'Kouki arc is just, you know~' here and there, so I thought that the number of people reading will decrease by a lot, but the number of the PV or the review after reading isn't dropping. It feels like Shirakome will melt from the kindness of Narou people.

Thank you~

# Arifureta After II A Fundamental Problem

AN: Serious-san has the principle of going home regularly.

My fingers moved by themselves.....

---

The brilliant light enveloped the collapsed Moana and others in half-sphere state.

Their miasma stones that had the function of absorbing miasma that made it possible for human to act inside miasma for a period of time were dyed muddy black. The complexion of Moana and others went straight passed white and became ashen color.

Not just Moana and her people, Haumu and the other Arous., the mounted beasts also powerlessly splayed out their four limbs where they could only repeat breathing in short gasps.

They were only barely living. The blessing power inside the body of Moana and others were holding on to their life.

But, it was obvious that it wouldn't be long before the scythe of death god would touch them. Their time limit was near.

Kouki made Moana leaned on Haumu's body, and step by step he walked toward the lizardman who was the < Dark

Being> that caused this situation. (TN: I changed the Black People into Dark Being cause it seemed those words could cause misunderstanding.)

The tip of the holy sword that was pointed to the ground was slightly trembling, and his breathing was ragged. The feeling of wanting to run away without choosing anything was clamoring inside himself like a locked beast that was trying to escape from its cage.

Kouki came to a stop after he got out and took a step away from the boundary of the highest class light element defensive magic <Sacred Severance> . An angry yell was thrown to such Kouki once more.

□You-, I'm asking what the hell are you! What's that strange light! How the hell you are able to stand!?!□

Sharp dragon eyes. Dragon scales that looked harder than even steel armor. His whole body was bulging with muscles, and his hands were readying a long and large spear.

It was clear just from confronting this Dark Being face to face like this. That he was a strong one that had achieved considerable military achievement.

Yes,

(He isn't a beast.)

This opponent was a warrior that possessed intelligence.

As though finding a ray of hope, Kouki thought of the six beings that didn't give any reaction to his <Presence Detection> and asked back instead.

□.....Weren't they, your comrade?□

□What?□

The lizardman didn't seem to understand what Kouki was asking him for a moment and he let out a voice of dubiousness. But, he immediately guessed that Kouki was speaking about his six compatriots that performed "suicide bombing" to scatter highly thick miasma by paying with their life as the compensation, and he answered with a snort.

□Obviously they were my underlings.□

□You, commanded them to die?□

□.....Just what are you asking? What are you talking about since some time ago?□

The scaled dragon specious didn't understand the intention of Kouki's question and was getting more and more suspicious.

He must never even imagined that Kouki was getting desperate in trying to find even a bit more reason to make his "choice".

Because this was a guy that abandoned his comrades, because this was a guy that made light of life without any reason.

That was why, it should be fine to kill him, just like what he did all this time when facing against monster, something like that.

Kouki's expression distorted painfully while stringing his words together.

□If, this is only what if. What are you going to do if I say you can go to another world?□

□What?□

□If you can migrate together with flora and fauna too, to a new world that is filled with blessing power, and you can live there without fighting human.....or it can also be the reverse, the human will be the one that move away. If you can live in a world without human, a world of only <Dark Being> —□

This was the last resort. Because this was a plan that completely relied on that man, it was a proposal without any positive proof. But, if there was that man's compass and crystal key, then perhaps they would be able to find an inhabited world. In addition, securing enough of the necessary blessing power would also be possible.

‘That guy is different than me, surely there is nothing impossible for him, that's why’, Kouki thought.

The long battle that passed between Moana and her people against the <Dark Being> .

Perhaps there wasn't any more ground for them to coexist together.

Perhaps there wasn't any more room to talk between them.

Then, was the only path left was where one of them conquered everything?

Was battle unavoidable, that one side had to be sunk into the abyss of despair?

Was there really no third path.....

The suggestion of “separated living” by migrating to a new world.

That was an idea that was brought about from Kouki's pondering. <Dark Being> that possessed will and would go hungry if they didn't consume blessing power, and human that couldn't endure the miasma and unable to live without blessing power everywhere around them. That idea came because Kouki couldn't find a clearly correct "choice" like in a novel or drama where good was rewarded and evil was punished.

If it was about the compensation for that man, then he was determined to pay it in any kind of shape. That was the only thing that Kouki could decided promptly right now.

But, that desperate proposal of such Kouki was,

□Hah□

Kicked to the curb in rejection by a sneer and a violent "thrust".

Kouki caught his breath, but his reaction was quick. He parried the tip of the long spear using his holy sword.  
\*gigigi\* The sound of metals scraping each other resounded along with scattered sparks.

The lizardman immediately pulled back his long spear and launched repeated thrust like surging waves. Those thrusts that were controlled with immense physical strength and flexible muscle were uncommon.

Kouki handled the attack while he raised his voice further.

□Wait, listen to me! I came from another world! The barrier behind me is the proof of that! Even without human and <Dark Being> fighting, perhaps there is a way for a future where both sides can live without annihilating the other! That's why——□

The holy sword blocked a sweep of the spear. \*gan\* Impact sound resounded and a slight numbness ran through Kouki's arm. It became a situation of sword locking contest. In that situation, the lizardman showed a scorn in his dragon eyes and said his piece.

□That's shocking-. I never thought this kind of coward still exist! Aah, I'' recognize it! You are really a human of another world. There is no way someone like you is a warrior of this country!□

\*gou\* Miasma spouted out from the lizardman. No, perhaps it should be said instead that he released the miasma. The miasma that was released to blow at Kouki became a physical impact that made Kouki's feet left the ground. When that happened, naturally Kouki got blown away to the side due to the pressure from the sword locking contest.

Kouki bounced several times on the sand before he barely performed ukemi and rearranged his balance to stand on his knee. When he returned his gaze to the dragon scaled species, he saw the figure of the enemy ignoring him while rushing toward <Sacred Severance> .

The lizardman who was ignoring Kouki struck his long spear toward the barrier with a yell of fighting spirit.

□Chih! This hardness is really something!□

The lizardman spontaneously cursed seeing the shining barrier only giving off impact sound without even a scratch.

The barrier was of the highest class. It wouldn't be broken that easily. But, the lizardman also didn't have the time to keep attacking it as he pleased.



Kouki charged forward while cloud of dust was left behind from his momentum and this time he was the one who blew away the lizardman.

Even while getting blown away, the lizardman killed the momentum by crawling on all four.

□Why are you rejecting a path where both sides might be able to survive....., why-, won't you choose the path of living!□

□Don't make me laugh-□

The lizardman easily cut down Kouki's pained appeal.

□You are telling me to recognize that the like of livestock, the like of food has the right to live freely? That's just crazy!□

You are nuts for trying to look for something that doesn't exist from us as though we are human.

Is that because you are a human of another world? That you have that kind of thinking?

The existence of other world, whether it really exist or not. Such thing doesn't matter.

I'll teach you. The truth of this world. Just what is the meaning of living!

The lizardman trampled forward hard \*don\* and stood up. He stepped firmly on the ground of sand like a large tree, and he threw out his chest without even an ounce of shame.

□Fight, steal, conquer, rule! Those are exactly the long-cherished desire of the living!□

Miasma was overflowing from the whole body of the lizardman. The thickness of the miasma was increasing in concert with his roar.

□We are turning human into livestock, to create a new world where the pain of hunger vanished! So that we, <The Being Clad in Scale Armor> can have an exceptional position! The head of the queen is indispensable!□

A pressure that was unseen by eye assaulted Kouki. That wasn't a distinctive power. It was a dominating aura, a mettle, the power of resolve that he dedicated for the future of the scaled dragon species he was looking at.

□Then, I'll reward my followers who staked their life! Listen-, you half-baked person who possessed strength beyond your position! My name is Ragal! The chief of <The Being Clad in Scale Armor> !□

'Aah', Kouki thought. His heart leaked out a sigh of admiration and also despair.

Did this person ordered his comrades to die? Perhaps, so, perhaps not. He didn't know the truth, but there was only one thing that he was certain about, those lizardmen who carried out the crazy surprise attack by freefalling from the sky and accomplished their objective with their life as the payment, they too also possessed a definite resolve. They didn't perish inside grief and despair that they couldn't oppose and defy by any means!

□I'll kill you, and take—the queen's head!□

Sand pillar blew up. That sand pillar that looked as though it was piercing the sky was the mark of Ragal's step. He wore his miasma like armor and appeared instantly before Kouki's eyes with his long spear that he also covered in miasma.

Kouki evaded the sharp thrust that pierced through the wind by moving half his body to behind. The long spear's thrust instantly transformed into a sweep that ignored the inertia.

The pressure from that attack was far greater than before. It could be clearly seen that the strength inside the attack was ascending further. Kouki immediately used his holy sword as shield, but by doing that it felt like the sword would be thrown away along with his arm.

Kouki desperately braced his legs, but suddenly the pressure vanished and he unintentionally stumbled. The next moment, his feet floated lightly. The miasma that seemed to seep into the ground unnoticed stirred up the sand below Kouki's feet.

The long spear was swung once more at Kouki who lost his balance. Kouki averted the spear by slamming his palm on the flat side of the spear tip, but then the peculiar attack of scaled dragon species assaulted him.

The rotating Ragal launched a spinning kick followed by his sweeping dragon tail.

The upper and middle area was blocked like that. Dodging was impossible.

The claws of the legs were approaching, followed by dragon tail that became like a blade with the miasma enveloping it. Terror was rushing through Kouki's whole body instinctually. He backstepped desperately and only barely managed to dodge.

But, it seemed that Ragal had read the flow of offense and defense until that far. He showed not a shred of turmoil that his attack was evaded, he smoothly formed a throwing spear

made from miasma. It was fired like a bullet from close range toward Kouki's head.

Excluding some case that was out of norm, the dynamic vision and reflexes of Kouki who boasted specs at the pinnacle had saved his life until now. When he shifted his body faster than his awareness, the miasma throwing spear passed through with only a scratch on Kouki's neck.

Kouki backstepped even further when his feet touched the ground and he widened the distance.

There was the sensation of warmth and something trickling on his neck.

Without averting his gaze from Ragal who readied his long spear once more, one of Kouki's hands slowly caressed his neck. His fingertip felt something wet, something with raw sensation.

□-□

It wasn't a fatal wound. It was only his skin that was cut. But, it was an attack toward his neck. A lump of ice slid down inside Kouki's heart.

Just now, he almost died.....

Scary.....

Death was scary.

Nothing convenient would occur. Death was right before his eyes. He wondered, how was he able to say something like □Everything is absolutely going to be okay□ before. Anyone would die when it was the time to die.

Amanogawa Kouki, could die easily.

Scary.....terrifying.....

Ragal was gradually closing the distance. He wasn't letting his guard down or getting self-conceited. He planned to kill Kouki carefully and then returned triumphantly with Moana's head. There was no turmoil or hesitation inside him.

Scary.....

Killing was scary.

Severing the life of a being that possessed will, it was something that was really terrifying.

Killing Ragal. Became the ally of Moana and her people and then killed all of the <Dark Being> to the last.

Surely doing that meant killing the hope of the <Dark Being> .

It meant crushing their dearest wish, severing their thread of life, and granting them despair.

Scary.....

It felt scary to control the survival of someone.

Someone who might be able to live a proper life would get derailed by getting involved with him. Such thing was unbearably terrifying.

Something was moving at the corner of his sight. When he sent a glance that way while slowly taking distance away from Ragal, he saw the figure of the collapsed Moana there.

She was supposedly leaning on Haumu, but it seemed she stirred and fell on the ground. Or perhaps, she was getting weaker that she was unable to even maintain her leaning position.

Scary.....

Death was scary.

Killing was scary.

Making mistake was scary.

But,

——Not being able to protect, was scarier. That was the only thing, that he couldn't endure.

So,

It was only the failure of “cannot choosing”, that he absolutely couldn't tolerate anymore, so,

That was why,

□I'll kill you□

His face looked like it was going to cry, his voice was trembling, however, he spoke his “choice” clearly.

Kouki took a step forward.

Even saying that it took an instant was still lacking to describe it. It was as though the ground was shrunk closer, his speed was literally like that when he appeared before Ragal's eyes.

□Nuh□

A diagonal slash from above that looked only like a silver flash caused Ragal to block it just barely with his long spear even while staring in astonishment. Instantly Ragal's legs were buried into the sand along with a thunderous sound that felt like an earthquake. If they were standing on a hard ground then perhaps there would even be a crater formed.

Speed and destructive power that were incomparable from before. If Ragal let his guard down, the brutal attack might split him into two together with his spear.

In that attack, there was certainly "killing intent" that was nonexistent until now filled into it.

□Don't underestimate mee-□

Ragal gushed out miasma that was accompanied with impact along with a loud scream of fighting spirit.

□——< Light Severance > -!□

Barrier of light manifested between Kouki and Ragal.

The barrier was instantly smashed from the impact it got showered with, but it accomplished enough of its objective to not let its creator got pushed back.

Toward Kouki who neutralized the miasma shockwave just as planned, Ragal used his everything, miasma of thrown spear, spear attack combo with gyration, hand claws, jaw, kick, and dragon tail to launch an offensive that was like a surging waves.

Kouki handled, dodge, repelled, and intercepted all of those.

□-, you are still-, going further up!? You bastard-, what in the world——□

The sword attack finally surpassed Ragal's martial might. Ragal was forced to switch from offensive into defensive, and this time he raised a voice that was definitely shocked and agitated.....

An upward slash. The long spear was thrown far away.

Thrown spear of miasma. It was evaded with a twirl.

The two passed each other,

□-aAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

A sword flash drew an arc along with a war cry that sounded like a scream.

Briefly, cloud of dust danced in the air.

Kouki who stayed unmoving in a position of finishing the slash of the holy sword was silent with his back toward the back of Ragal who was in a stance of swinging up his long spear halfway.

□How, can.....this be.....□

That voice was filled with feeling of shock, despair, and then resentment. Those were the last words of Ragal.

Slowly, the lizard head shifted and fell to the ground. Miasma scattered in a burst and the large body crumbled down following the falling head.

Kouki wordlessly looked up to the sky and took a deep breath. And then, he slowly turned around. In order to see the result of what he had done.

A head that threw an empty gaze at empty air. A large body that lost its head and spurted out blood. Dark red blood that



died the ground of sand.

The definite proof of a life stolen.

“tsu, oguh, geeh”

The thing that welled up even when he only killed monster that didn't possess will or intelligence overflowed this time without him being unable to hold it back. But, in the first place because he hadn't eaten anything for long, what came out was only the stomach's gastric juice.

Kouki supported his body with his holy sword while falling in one knee. In this moment he looked as though he had aged drastically. His rounded back looked as though something enormously heavy was weighing him down. His trembling back looked as though he was desperately enduring that weigh.

He desperately kept hold of his consciousness that was forcefully shutting down in order to protect his heart from the mental burden. Right now wasn't the time to faint, it wasn't the time to be absorbed with the repulsive sensation remaining in his hand, that was how he persuaded himself.

“-, guh, I have to go.....”

Even though his stamina hadn't been used up, but his body was heavy like lead. Kouki dragged himself and walked toward Moana and the others.

Looking at the condition of Spenser and the others, he could see they were still alive. Even Anneal who had the lowest battle strength was breathing faintly.

Kouki let out a sigh of relieve while also tensing his pale face right away in this situation that didn't permit letting his

guard down.

He pulled Spenser and others and also their Arous to lay them down near Moana.

□Dissolve grief, clear away the dark clouds. That thing not stained is the light of all creation. The heaven light of salvation——<Vast Sky> □

Light element intermediate level recovery magic <Vast Sky> ——a magic to recover from abnormal state.

Before this after he deployed <Sacred Severance> , Kouki applied this magic with shortened chant toward Moana and others who were ravaged by the miasma. The result was “no effect”.

Perhaps, the effect was decreased because he omitted the chanting. Thinking so, Kouki tried to invoke the magic once more but.....

□-, it's still not effective.....□

<Vast Sky> couldn't clear away the miasma invading their body.

Kouki gritted his teeth while trying out another chanting. Imagining that if Kaori was here then she would be able to display the maximum effect even without any chanting, he became a bit jealous.

□From the pure domain, the holy mother extend the hand of salvation. O those who seek, look to the sky. See the light at the end of the dark clouds. The holy mother didst not abandon thee. Descending with the halo of salvation on her back, inside the embrace of lookout arm, here the holy mother smile. ——<Holy Ceremony> □

Light element highest level recovery magic < Holy Ceremony> —it was a wide area recovery magic for army use. This time Kouki invoked it with the arrangement of limited area for further increased effect.

Brilliant light became spreading ripple that wholly enveloped Moana and others leaving no spot uncovered.

□Guh.....□

□Spenser-san!□

It seemed there was effect this time.

The one who recovered their consciousness first was as expected the one whose foundation ability was in different level. It was the captain of the royal guard Spenser.

□Kou, ki-dono? What in the world.....-, what about her majesty!?!□

□Please calm down. I cannot really say that Moana-sama is safe, but she is alive. There also no death among the others.□

□I, I see.....I'm glad. The enemy?□

Even though he sounded pained, but his voice sounded a bit clear. Kouki told Spenser about Ragal's plan, how he was defeated, and then how he was unable to purify the miasma, and how his recovery magic was effective to a degree.

□Recovery magic.....something like that is..... Nevertheless the scaled dragon species Ragal.....you have finished off another considerable big shot again.□

It seemed that Ragal was an enemy whose name was fairly well known. Spenser showed surprise at Kouki's explanation before his expression suddenly relaxed and he conveyed his gratitude through his gaze.

□To be caught inside the enemy's scheme completely.....it's pathetic. If Kouki-dono isn't here just what will happen to us then. My deepest thanks.□

□.....No. Rather than that, what is the prospect of your recovery? Is there a method to purify the miasma? Like, the miasma stone is it? .....Can we use it if we collect the stone from Ragal and his underlings?□

Kouki's complexion became somewhat bad saying that but there was still no one else other than Spenser who could talk. If nothing was done about the miasma eroding the body, then the problem wouldn't be fundamentally solved. It seemed Kouki's recovery magic was nothing more than a temporary fix.

□No. Miasma stone cannot be used right away after it get collected. It will need to be purified for about three until seven days before it become usable. Since it's come to this, Kouki-dono. Can you take her majesty and return to the capital?□

□.....Spenser-san, you are telling me to leave you all behind?□

□Yes. But, please don't misunderstand.□

Seeing Kouki's expression warped, Spenser smiled gently while adding to his words.

□Thanks to Kouki-dono's technique, it feels like my body can hold on for a while even after getting bathed in miasma. If

during that time, you can call for help together with her majesty, then there is still hope for us yet.□

□How long you feel that you will be able to endure?□

□For us the royal guards, about a day. I'm worried about Anneal, but that child too isn't her majesty's personal attendant just for show, so I believe she will be able to endure for half a day.□

□Half a day.....□

He heard that they would arrive at evening by riding Arous. From the current position of the sun, the distance could be reached if there was four hour.

Even if Kouki was carrying one person on his back, if he ran seriously he could put some serious speed even though it wouldn't be as fast as Arous. He guessed he would be able to arrive by two hours more than if he was riding Arous.

Thinking about the preparation for the rescue too, when they came back here they would use Arous so it felt like he would make it in time.

□Just in case. ....Celestial ladder illuminating the land unceasingly. That is the light of protection and healing——< Full Scope Heaven> □

□Oo, this is.....□

Light element intermediate level recovery magic < Full Scope Heaven> ——the effect was low dependent on the amount of magic power laced into it, but it was a magic that periodically invoked recovery magic.

Kouki poured magic power into it so much it felt like something was taken away wholly from inside him and he was attacked by a sense of fatigue, but in exchange for that the effect should continue for a few hours.

□This is the magic that I used just now. It will automatically heal in interval but.....does it feel like it can extend the time for all of you to hold out longer?□

□Yes. I had faint consciousness after I got bathed in miasma just now, at that time I felt the blessing power inside my body strangely revitalized. Thanks to that, I got away with only this much even after getting showered with miasma that thick.....I see, so it was Kouki's technique. ....This warm light. It's like it's Kouki-dono himself.□

□.....□

Kouki couldn't find any words to respond to Spenser's words and he kept his mouth shut. He coughed to divert his mind and asked once more how long Spenser felt they would be able to endure. His answer was that it felt like they would be able to hold out half a day longer.

□If possible, I want to move all of you away from this place where we were attacked.....□

□That is like putting the cart before the horse, a waste of time. Among the <Black Being>, their rivalry with the different race is fierce. Therefore, you can consider that Ragal won't tell about the surprise attack to other race other than Niebla who he used as sacrificial pawn.□

□.....Understood. I will call for help as fast as possible.□

□Yes. I'll leave her majesty in your hand.□

Kouki invoked < Sacred Severance > one more time to make it last for several hours, and then he stood up with Moana on his back.

And then, he dashed right away to the direction that Spenser told him.

He reinforced his body and ran on the desert as though he was gliding while putting recovery magic on Moana.

After about a hour of running, when Kouki thought to stop soon to hydrate himself, it was at that time,

□Uuh.....Kou, ki□

□Moana-sama! You are awake.□

The voice of Moana on his back reached his ear. Kouki stopped running and laid down Moana while one of hi hand was supporting her. He took out a water bag from his luggage and put it on Moana's mouth.

Moana obediently drank the water. Her throat was gulping down the water.

□Nh, thank you, Kouki.□

□No. Rather than that how do you feel? I wish to tell you about our situation.□

□No, that's unnecessary. My condition can also hold out until we reach the capital thanks to Kouki's technique.□

Kouki's eyes widened from hearing Moana's words. He thought she was completely unconscious, but it seemed that wasn't the case.

□Forgive me, but I'm worried about Spenser and others. Can I have you hurry on ahead?□

□Yes, I understand.□

Kouki carried Moana on his back once more and started running. Moana leaned her head on Kouki's shoulder limply while also adjusting her position so she could at least talk, she then revealed that actually she had been conscious all this time even if only faintly.

□Nevertheless, you aren't affected by the miasma. This is a blessing in disguise.□

□I guess. It seems in this world blessing power = life force, so perhaps that is the reason? I felt a bit weary when the miasma showered me, but I don't have blessing power so that might be why it doesn't really affect me, I think.□

□Yes, perhaps that's so.□

For Kouki, or perhaps more accurately for existence from another world that didn't rely on blessing power, perhaps the miasma of this world could be said as something like highly concentrated exhaust fumes. The miasma didn't have immediate effect to shave down his life, but it shared the point where it disturb his health and gave bad effect to his body. Perhaps he would be in danger if he was bathed in it for a long time.

After having that talk, Moana suddenly stirred her body. Her arms that were circled around Kouki's neck tightened a bit and she strengthened her hug at him.

Wondering what was it about, Kouki was about to look back across his shoulder, but before he could, Moana opened her



mouth. Her manly way of talking broke down and she spoke with what must be her original way of talking.

□.....Sorry, Kouki.□

□?□

Was she apologizing about getting carried on his back like this? Kouki tilted his head in puzzlement and then Moana said out words that made Kouki couldn't help but felt shaken in respond.

□.....That was your first time right?□

□-□

He didn't ask what did she meant. It was something he completely understood. Moana had been conscious all this time.

Then, in that case, naturally that meant she saw it.

Kouki's discord. Kouki's disgraceful behavior.

Unconsciously his breath turned ragged and his legs almost got tangled.

□I'm sorry. Surely we have made you carry a heavy burden.□

□Such, thing.....□

The words of denial that was spoken with hoarse voice melted into air and didn't resound further. It even felt like his body became lead and his gliding footsteps became disarrayed and slow.

Even though he had hesitated when fighting her sworn enemy, Moana's voice didn't sound blaming in the least, far

from that, her voice sounded apologetic and sympathizing to him.

□I heard it. —□why won't you choose the path of living□  
You said.□

□.....Sorry. Saying that to an enemy that Moana and others had fought all this time with your life in the line..... When it came to it, I still didn't understand. About the relationship between Moana's people and them. About their fundamental sense of value. That's why, I easily said such thing—□

□Kouki. I'm not blaming you. You came to this world only just now, you only heard our story and got told to kill enemy that you don't know anything about. Anyone would hesitate from that.□

Moana's put her hand clumsily on Kouki's head. And then, he softly brushed his head, as though to say that it's fine. And then,

□Kouki, is really kind huh.□

She said that. She said that toward Kouki, a person who was desperately searching for a path so that her hated enemy could survive. There was no ill will in her voice, instead there was kindness.

That was why,

□You're wrong-!!□

Kouki couldn't endure it. Such misunderstanding.

Because Kouki stopped running and his knees bent, Moana slipped down from his back and her waist lowered to sit on the ground in girl sitting posture.

Moana didn't say any protest, she stared at Kouki fixedly. While feeling that gaze, Kouki yelled with a force as though he was going to vomit blood.

□Stop it! I'm not kind or anything! I'm not some kind guy or anything-□

Usually he could control his heart and he wouldn't spit it out. But, the shock from killing a being with will for the first time was really big, and then the unforeseen kindness toward his greatly shaken heart was more than enough to break the dam of his heart.

□Even I'm being a hero is a mistake-. I'm not a hero at all! I have only ever made mistake-, I cannot see anything-, I keep hesitating——□

Kouki crumbled and meaninglessly grasped on sand tightly. \*grit grit grit\* The slight sound from sand rubbing each other sounded like the creaking sound of Kouki's heart.

□When it was at the most important time, when I was needed the most, what I did to my comrade-. Even though she was always near me-, I didn't even notice until she was that broken-. My best friend-, my childhood friends-, even though they should be important to me-, I pointed my sword at them-□

For Moana who didn't know about Kouki's past, she must be wondering what he was talking about. The discharged words only sounded incoherent to her, she wasn't clear about their meaning.

But, there was also something she understood.

That Kouki, had made some kind of big mistake.

That he regretted it very much.

That he was blaming himself all this time.

And then,

□.....Kouki. Why are you that scared? What is it that made you so scared?□

That Kouki was terribly terrified toward something.

Kouki lifted his face. His teeth were clenched, and a deep wrinkle was carved on his forehead. His eyes shook.

□.....I, what I'm scared at is.....I myself.□

He feared himself who approved of killing. Because he didn't understand whether his killing intent was right or not.

He feared that he was fighting. Because he had no resolve of getting killed.

He feared making mistake. Because he knew of reality that couldn't be undone.

He feared making choice.

The reason was,

□I, cannot trust myself.....more than anyone in this world, more than any kind of existence.□

The fundamental problem that Kouki held.

Yes, it was a "lack of self-confidence" to an extreme degree.

The problem that preceded even the question of making the resolve to kill and getting killed. The lack of the most

important thing for the sake of making choice.

Even though he doubted, distrusted himself more than anyone, how would he be able to decide his “resolve” and “choice” that would only come from self-confidence.

How would he be able to accept the praise that he was a hero?

How would he be able to affirm that said he was “kind”?

□Even so Kouki, you made your choice. We were saved by you.□

Moana said her words toward Kouki who looked as though he was being shackled hand and foot.

□.....Because I promised everyone who put their life in the line to save me. I will fight against myself. That’s why, only the failure of being unable to choose anything, that’s the only thing that I must not do anymore. That’s all, there is to it.□

He didn’t make the choice because he stepped forward courageously, or because he made his resolve, or because he was kind, such thing was even less true. He was only getting pressed by the time limit and then made his choice frantically because of that.

Kouki said that with an expression that was half-crying half-laughing for a beat of time. Before Moana could say anything, he slapped both his cheeks hard and stood up forcefully from feeling shame toward his messed up self.

And then, he presented his hand to Moana.

□Sorry. This isn't the time for something like this. Let's move ahead quickly.□

□.....You're right. No, you're correct.□

Moana's way of talking returned back to before. Kouki put her on his back once more and began to run on the desert wordlessly.

Moana also didn't say anything. Just, her gaze was poured intensely on Kouki's face from the side. Inside her eyes was mysteriously filled to the brim with clearness and tremor as though she was looking from inside water through water surface.

And, a while after Kouki started running, his < Presence Detection > reacted once more. Kouki and Moana got nervous □Uwah, enemy!?, but they felt dubious that the multiple presences that were coming with considerable speed were coming from the direction of the kingdom capital.

Kouki decided to look at the situation for the time being and he rushed to the top of a hill, there he caught the figures of a human group riding Arous dashing toward their way in the distant view.

□Thank god..... It looks like they aren't < Dark Being > .□

□Yes. Far from that, we should welcome them instead. It seems the warrior chief who remained behind caught a whiff of the danger that befell us.□

According to Moana, it seemed the group of around a hundred people advancing their way with sand cloud rolled up behind them was a force of Synclea kingdom's knight order. Seeing how they were really in a hurry, most likely

they noticed the attack plan toward the queen using some kind of method and so they traveled in a rush like that.

Moana sighed in relieve with tension leaving her shoulders. She then waved her hand in a big way, causing the soldier group to notice the two of them. The group shifted their path slightly and headed their way.

Kouki also slid down the hill in order to link up with the soldier group.

And then, when both groups finally approached each other until a distance where both sides could confirm each other's face by sight,

□ONEEEEEEEEEEEEE-CHAAAAAANNN!!□

Such young voice reverberated. Looking carefully, on the Arous running at the lead of the group, the two could see a young girl climbing up the shoulders of the rider of that Arous while waving her hand around.

Her age was perhaps around seven, eight years old? Her chocolate colored skin was wrapped in pure white clothing, her blond hair that reflected the sunlight glitteringly was tied in twin tail.

The shocked expression of the rider that got climbed really left an impression. The soldiers around the leading rider also looked like their eyes were flying out from their socket. From how they looked like, it could be seen that they were shocked that the young girl was climbing up like that, or rather that the young girl was actually here. It felt like the soldiers' voice of the heart □Why is she here!?!□ could be heard.

.....It seemed, the young girl wasn't carried to the battlefield by their own will.

And then, as though to represent the heart of those soldiers,

□Wwhaa-!? My, my cute "Koone-tan", how could she be hereeeeeee-!?!□

A voice that sounded like a shriek resounded from Kouki's back.

.....It seemed this queen-sama, was a person who called her little sister by adding "-tan".

During the time until the two joined up with the soldier group, in the middle of the desert,

——UoNeEEEE-CHYAaAAAAN-

Such yell and,

——KOoOOOONE-TAaAAAAAAN-

And such yell resounded repeatedly.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'll post chapters in succession until the point where depressing Kouki become determined Kouki!

Was how eager I was, yet I was unable to do that.

Reason: I bought complete works of Lovecraft-> against my better judgment I read fkeia-, ia-, Cthulhu, fhta——



Sorry

Setting that aside, at May 25 (at the earliest it will be around 22) the sixth volume will be in the bookstore shelves.

I'll put the detail in my activity report, so if it is good please check there.

Also, it seems the comic version is updated.

Finally it's the endgame of abyss arc huh. I was heated up w

Please take a look at that too by all means (Comic Gardo)

# Arifureta After II Koone-Tan

AN: I'm sorry, this chapter is short, and on top of that the story doesn't progress.

Recently, my head is not working.....

---

□Bieeeeeeeeeeeeh□

Such grand crying voice of a girl was echoing. It was a splendid sobbing, to the degree it made one wondered whether the dryness of the desert might be moistened because of it. The glamorous blonde hair twin tail of the girl was wilting limply as though to express the girl's emotion.

□Your highness! It's no good even if you are crying! In this dangerous time you are sneaking into a luggage of all things, just what are you thinking! This is not a problem that can be seen as merely a prank!□

The one who was saying that to scold her highness—Moana's little sister whose name was princess Koone de Shelt Synclea, was the leader of Synclea Kingdom's soldier force—Donar Sord.

He had a really serious and strict look with short grey hair on his head. His age was around the early half of his forty. In

front of his tall body that was nearly two meter and large frame that was like a bear, Koone whose height might be around 130 centimeter was like a mere speck.

The countless scars that could be seen on Donar's face and arms were making the dominating aura and pressure enveloping him to become even more fiendish, so objectively looking at him addressing Koone who was sobbing in front of him, it only looked like a man-eating bear was going to prey at a pitiful girl.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected from a princess. Even while shedding tears like a waterfall, Koone spoke her own excuse at the man-eating bear—or rather, at the soldier chief Donar.

□Because-, because Onee-chan is-□

□That is no excuse! Every time, every time, I don't know how you slip through our watch, but I wish your highness will think about the time and situation! In the first place your highness is——□

□Bieeeeeeeeeeeeh. I'm sorryyyyyyy-□

□Nuuh, please don't interrupt my remonstrations! Every single time your highness is always deceiving people by crying like that! Your highness is not really reflecting on yourself!□

□Uwaaaaaaaaaahn, I'm reflectingggggg-□

□Good grief! Please promise me that your highness won't do anything like this anymore!□

□Ueeeeeeeeeeeeeh. I'll consider it after careful ponderingggggg-□

□Your highness!? What's with that doubtful reply!?!□

Soldier chief Donar was heating up even more. The crying voice was also powering up even further.

At the surrounding there were the soldiers encircling them with hardened defense. Every single one of them were vigilantly watching the surrounding with a stern gaze, but sometimes they were sending glances at the exchange between their chief and the young princess as though wanting to say □This again□ or □Our vigilance is dampened here.....□.

□Do, Donar? Isn't it fine already with that much? Look, Koone-tan is also feeling really sorry already. Okay?□

Flustered. The one who was calling out in such state at soldier chief Donar who was continuing his preaching was Moana who somehow recovered by using new miasma stone that the soldier group was carrying.

Moana was acting timid without any dignity as queen that could be felt from her. Soldier chief Donar's eye glint flew toward such Moana with a really piercing force.

Moana unconsciously screamed □Hii!?!□ and trembled.

□Your majesty-. What do you mean by "okay?" just now! Is your highness really aware of the graveness of this matter!? In the first place, it's because your majesty is always pampering her highness no matter how much time passes that this kind of situation even occur!□

□I, I'm not really pampering or anything.....□

□In that case, please at least stop calling her highness with "Koone-tan"! Just how many times do I need to ask that until

your majesty can understand!□

□Uu.....bu, but still. Donar. Koone-ta——Koone coming along without anyone knowing about it is also the blunder of all of you.....□

Moana faced away and rebutted with pouted lips. Her way of talking was queenly, but it sounded sulky. Pulsing vein emerged on Donar's forehead in respond to that.

□.....Indeed. No matter what kind of circumstance there was, it was my blunder to fail to notice her majesty's action. I will humbly accept any punishment no matter what it is.□

□Eh? Ah, no, something like punishment is too exaggerating——□

□Even so-! That is that, this is this! This matter is concerning the safety of her highness's safety! It's a common knowledge that her highness is a mischievous tomboy! She secretly turned my lunch to be extremely spicy, she whispered many untrue things to my wife, because of that my wife won't listen to me anymore, she willfully put cute decoration on my sword, if this is only something like those then I can just laugh it off! But, for her to secretly come along into a battlefield! This lack of sense of danger cannot be overlooked! Only my words are not enough, how about your majesty also reprimand her highness as her elder sister!□

□Ah, yes. I'm sorry.....□

Before anyone knew it, the queen-sama sat on seiza posture beside the sobbing Koone while getting preached on.

What's this chaos.....? Kouki did nothing except staring at the sight before his eyes dumbfounded.

□It's always like this, so don't let it bother you. The chief is an existence that is like a father already for both her majesty and her highness.□

□Eh?□

A calm voice addressed the astonished Kouki. When Kouki turned his gaze at the voice's direction, he saw there a soldier with swept back hair of burnt brown color looking to be in his early thirty.

□I am the vice chief of the soldier force, Othar. Kouki-dono, that is your name correct?□

Among the many muscular soldiers, Othar who was relatively small statured was actually the number 2. Kouki was feeling a bit surprised of that while he nodded at Othar's question.

Othar who was emitting "gentle" atmosphere peacefully from his whole body was smiling with even more calmness and peacefulness after receiving Kouki's confirmation.

□The chief along with Spenser-sama has been watching over the two of them as though they were his own children since they were small. The king and queen of the previous generation.....the father and mother of Moana-sama and Koone-sama has passed on to the great nature five years ago, which caused the chief to be even more so like that. He is also the sword instructor for Moana-sama, so the chief isn't really holding back when treating the two of them.□

According to Othar, the parents of Moana and Koone seemed to die at the large scale battle against the <Dark Being> that happened five years ago.

At that time, the one who led the <Dark Being> was the current <Dark King>, so their strength was tremendous, all the royal family with the exception of Koone had to fight. It was the best they could do to make the enemy retreated even after they all staked their life.

Although Moana, Spenser, and Donar were seriously wounded, but they barely survived. And since then, in order to support Moana and Koone, Spenser and Donar got close to the two royalty as substitute parent. From the start the two men also received deep trust from the previous generation king, and they were also close to the two princesses as bodyguard and instructor. For Moana and Koone, the two men were just like family.

□.....So that's how it is. In that case, it cannot be helped even if Moana-sama is pampering her little sister.□

Her only remaining relative. It was only natural that Moana was pampering her little sister Koone then, Kouki thought with understanding look. Her attaching “-tan” too, yep, surely that also couldn't be helped, Kouki thought.

And then, it seemed Koone whose family passed on in the period of time when it was unclear whether she had awareness to her surrounding or not seemed to like acting mischievously, she also came along to the battlefield because she was worried for her big sister. Surely it was only natural for her to be like that if one saw it as her being lonely and feeling scared of losing her big sister.

□No, Moana-sama's “idiot big sister” act was already like that since Koone-sama was born.□

□Eh?□

□Koone-sama's tomboyish manner too, she was like that since before the previous generation king passed on to the nature.□

□Eh?□

□Whether it's in the palace or in the capital, since the two of them were little they were talked with numerous title and nickname like, □Siscon princess□ □Elusive phantom princess□ □Dual personality queen□□The always grinningly crawling princess Koone-tan□ □Stop it, Haumu will snap you know queen□ □I beg you, please don't be a nuisance to our work, princess□ □Or rather, please stop the princess, queen□ □Stop it, please stop decorating my weapon Koone-sama□ □GYAAAAAAHH, QUEEN!?!□, and so on.□

□No, those aren't title or nickname, those were just complaints aren't they!? Or rather, the last one is just a scream isn't it!?!□

If it was said with indirect expression, then it seemed the royalty sisters were really close and intimate to their vassal and people. Absolutely no one was saying that they were problem children.

Othar gently smiled at Kouki's tsukkomi. It also somehow felt like Othar was saying □There is nothing else to do but laughing right?□. This gentleness of Othar that was like Buddha might be something polished for the sake of the queen & princess duo.

□Now then, I think it will be the time soon for the relief squad to link up with Spenser-sama and others.□

Othar looked up to the sky and confirmed the passage of time from the inclination of the sun. After the soldier group joined up with Moana and Kouki, a part of the soldier group



headed toward the rescue of Spenser and others without stopping.

If they were taking it slow too much and Spenser and others caught up to them, Spenser would shout at them "What are you all doing so sluggishly! Bring her majesty to the capital right away!", Othar explained with a wry smile.

Seeing from Moana's state, it seemed that the effect of the miasma on her had mostly gone already, she looked like she had recovered enough, so under the protection of the soldier group, they should return to the safety zone that was the capital quickly even if it was just Moana.

'And so because of that', with an atmosphere that seemed to be saying that, Othar was,

"Kouki-done, if it's not a bother for you, can I ask you to please call out to the chief?"

Asking Kouki to deal with it, while she was smiling peacefully.

Kouki realized. This person, from the start he was approaching him in order to entrust the mediation of this chaos situation to him. He was a person with calm personality, but he was also a type of person that would really forcefully push a matter to other if it was a matter that could be pushed away to other.

When Kouki glanced at the direction of Moana and co, the preaching was still continuing. Perhaps lured by the crying of Koone, even Moana was getting teary eyed. It seemed she was really enduring the preaching of the soldier chief who was like father to her.

Kouki sighed deeply while replying "I'm going", and then he timidly called out to the chief.

"Excuse me, it looks like Moana-sama has recovered already, how about we depart soon?"

"Hmm?"

A sharp glint flew toward Kouki. Kouki reflexively twitched. For some reason he was reminded of Shuuzou (Shizuku's grandfather) at the time when he was training at Yaegashi dojo.

'By any chance, a preaching would also come at him.....?' Kouki prepared himself for such possibility.

"Ooh, isn't this hero-dono. How rude of me to not even greet you satisfactorily. Once again, I am the soldier chief Donar Sord. A thousand thanks for your help toward Moana-sama and my comrades in arms."

Donar's right fist hit \*don-\* on his chest and directed a gaze of gratitude without any falsehood in it toward Kouki. Perhaps he was originally a gentle person if he wasn't getting heated up to the royalty sisters.

"I am Amanogawa Kouki. Please call me Kouki. If it's word of thanks then I have received enough, so please enough with that. Rather than that, how about we depart soon? Although she has recovered, but it's better if Moana-sama can quickly take a rest, and surely it's also better for the little sister to quickly return to the capital too."

"Indeed. I had showed you something unsightly. It's my bad habit of getting too passionate when her majesty and her highness are concerned."

Donar scratched his head awkwardly while saying that. His brief glance toward Moana and Koone was filled with deep affection. Certainly, rather than something that a vassal directed to his lord, that gaze was something like what a father would direct toward his daughter.

□Onee-chan, is that person the hero-sama? Amazing! To come stopping Donar in the middle of his preaching while meeting him for the first time, he is really a hero! Koone really think that he is a hero!□

The tears pulled back instantly and Koone-tan said her definition of hero with a wide smile. It seemed she was saying that a hero was a person who was able to stop the soldier chief's preaching. Or rather than that, what happened with the loud bawling just now.....

At her side, Moana was saying □As expected from Koone-tan. What your eyes are focusing at is different from other people. Onee-chan is really in admiration!□, praising with a tension like an idiot parent who swinging from joy to nervousness from watching the announcement of their child's result in a tournament.

Donar let loose a sharp glint, but perhaps judging that the preaching was over, Koone approached Kouki with light footsteps \*tototon\* while her twin tail was shaking due to the wind blowing from somewhere.

And then, she looked up with a fixed stare at Kouki with eyes that were jade colored just like her big sister and——smiled widely.

□Nice to meet you! I'm something like a princess, Koone de Shelt Synclavia! Thank you very much for saving Onee-chan and others!□

Saying that, Koone tapped her right hand on her right chest.

It seemed that it was a gesture like bowing one's head or a salute.

Kouki was thinking that he had to ask about that gesture and other things related to that later on while for the time being her,

□What do you mean something like a princess!?□

Was both sisters were feeling some kind of reluctance in being a royalty? Kouki was thinking of such thing while spontaneously making a tsukkomi.

Midway, Kouki and others managed to link up with Spenser and others who were catching up with a momentum that was leaving behind the rescue squad while screaming □YOUR MAJESTYYYYY-□.

The angry yell □Why is her highness is here!?□ from Spenser and the crying voice □Bieeeeeenn, my Onee-chan love was overflowing desuuuuuu!□ from Koone, the lukewarm gaze of Kouki toward the queen who couldn't maintain her dignified way of talking in front of her little sister, the queen whose gaze was wandering around from receiving that gaze, and the wordless pleading □Don't shave off our tension here~□ from the soldiers, all those were entangled complicatedly and they all kept traveling in the middle of such chaos for a few hours.

Finally that came into view.

A chalk white palace was towering high right in the middle of a large oasis. Several spires were lining up symmetrically to left and right, and at the middle was a building in the shape of a quadrangular pyramid with a conspicuously large size.

Bridges made of stone were stretching to four directions from the chalk white palace that was glittering from the reflection of sunlight, and countless buildings with similar chalk white color were lining up at the outer part of the oasis.

And then, further at the outer edge of the city at that outer part was surrounded by a river around ten meter wide in donut shape. The river wasn't flowing anywhere, it was like a cycle of a flowing pool.

It seemed inside the city there was also canals that looked like stitches across the city, regardless of the city's location that was in the middle of desert, several small ships could be seen coming and going there.

——A city of water in the middle of desert.

That was the front line metropolis——Synclea's kingdom's royal capital.

□Amazing.....it's beautiful.....□

Words of praise were unconsciously leaked out from the mouth of Kouki who was staring at the capital from above a slightly elevated sand hill. From the story of a front line capital that lost the nature, Kouki held the image that the capital would be like a fortress with a rugged and devastated air.

□Fufu, isn't that right? ——Cough, don't you think so?□

□Err, Moana-sama. I don't mind even if you talk normally you know?□

□I don't really understand what is Kouki talking about.□

Moana slowly averted her sight away from Kouki's kind gaze. It seemed saying that 'I'm completely accustomed with manly way of talking~' was actually an overly optimistic evaluation toward her own readiness.

Moana was resuming walking in order to enter the capital while starting to talk a bit faster to varnish over the matter.

□Kouki. About that oasis you see, it's not just beautiful, actually it also has a barrier to not let the <Dark Being> get near.□

□Barrier, is it?□

Moana made a smug face once more as though to say 'How's that, amazing right?'.

□Yes. Actually, Kouki. The royalty of Synclea kingdom has a special power. Different from the normal blessing power that can be used by anyone as long as they have the correct prayer or vow, there is a blessing art that can only be used by those with the bloodline of the royalty—the heaven's blessing art. There is one heaven's blessing art per person of the royal family. Each one is a characteristically special and powerful art.□

□Yes yes yes-! Koone is able to use nyoki nyoki art!□ (TN: Nyoki nyoki seem to mean 'shooting up one after another' in Japan.....?)

Koone was making a smug face that was exactly like her big sister while twisting and wriggling her body around. The

heaven's blessing art that was upwardly compatible from the normal blessing art—a nyoki nyoki art. In the end, that was.....

□Koone-tan! That's so cute, Koone-tan! The formal name is pretty much <Regeneration> but, from now on let's change it to <Nyoki Nyoki Art> ——□

□Your majesty?□

□Nothing at all——cough-, it's nothing.□

According to Moana who returned to her senses after getting hit by Donar's sharp eye glint, Koone's heaven's blessing art <Regeneration> seemed to be an art that could make a place that had lost blessing power to be filled with blessing power once more. The target that was hit by this <divine protection> would have their latent power invigorated temporarily and got strengthened.

□The heaven's blessing art of an honorable ancestor of the long past is dwelling inside the oasis of Synclea kingdom in exchange of his life.□

□Is it something like, the <Dark Being> is unable to touch this water?□

□Yes. More accurately, they are unable to touch, but when they touch, even the miasma inside their body will be absorbed and dispersed. This place is right in the middle of a desert without any blessing power. Those bunches won't be able to fight if even the miasma they are retaining is stolen. Therefore, this oasis is the greatest barrier.□

Kouki harbored awe toward the royalty of that time who discarded his life in order to leave behind an art that possessed such tremendous effect for the later generation.

Just how much resolve and wish that person filled into this he wondered.

Kouki was shivering slightly when he suddenly noticed something and asked.

□You said something about in exchange of life, the heaven's blessing art's effect will increase by doing that?□

□.....Correct. Different from a blessing art, using heaven's blessing art is difficult. The user will be assailed by intense exhaustion after using it once. Their life will be lost if they overuse it. In everything, there is nothing that can be done "freely" you know.□

Moana said that jokingly, but Kouki could do nothing except returning a vague smile.

He caught sight of Koone who was staring fixedly at her big sister from below Moana. Both sisters possessed beautiful jade eyes and chocolate colored skin. Despite so, only the color of their hair was different. Moana's hair was pure white. Rather than saying that her hair was white colored from the beginning, it was like the hair originally had color that currently had faded away.....

There was no one with white hair color even amidst the soldiers around them. It was obvious that hair color wasn't a characteristic of this country's people.

Different from Koone, he was told that Moana participated in the battle five years ago. It was a fierce battle where all members of royalty were lost with the exception of these sisters. It wasn't difficult to imagine how Moana must have risked her life.



Five years ago she should be in the middle of her teens. She lost her family at such young age, she herself fought by straining her life, and protected her country and little sister through——

An indescribable feeling grew violent inside Kouki.

□Hero-sama.□

The young voice calling at him surprised Kouki. His looking down face was naturally heading toward the direction of the voice's owner.

Koone who was staring fixedly at Kouki without him noticing was making a bright smile.

□Onee-chan is amazing right? Koone think she is amazing!□

It was a praise without even a shred of shadow in it. And then, it was respect and love toward her big sister. Koone puffed up her chest as though and showed a really smug face as though it was something about herself. Kouki smiled to such Koone.

□Yes, Moana-sama is amazing.□

□That's right, that's right. In addition she is a beauty right? Koone think she is a beauty!□

□E, err, yes. That's, I think she is a really beautiful person you know?□

Beside Koone who was puffing up her chest while going 'That's right, that's right', Moana was blushing. Rather than because Kouki was praising her, she was blushing because the litter sister who was praising her was irresistibly cute!

Like that. Her breathing was getting rougher and her gaze was focused still on Koone.

□Hero-sama!□

□Err, Koone-sama? Don't call me hero, I hope you can call me Kouki.....□

□I'm sorry. I cannot call hero-sama as brother-in-law-sama!□

□No one is saying anything about that though!?□

□If you want Koone to recognize you, then I have to ask you to show me your sincerity, desu, hero-sama!□

□That's why, please stop talking with the premise that I am aiming at Moana-sama!□

□If you toy with Onee-chan, I intend to splash extremely spicy spice at your "pii-"! Koone has no mercy to Onee-sama's enemy!□

□A girl must not say "pii-"! Or rather, what terrifying thing you are saying there!□

Kouki's tsukkomi was in the peak condition. While he was at it, the eyes of Moana and the surrounding soldiers were opened wide. Donar and Spenser were looking around with angry gaze that said □Who is the one who taught word like "pii-" at her highness huh!?□.

Koone-tan——in public she was a princess who was given the recognition of □the chaos bringer□□chaos in three seconds after appearance□□when found don't get involved and contact the soldier force right away!□ as the common sense.

Even though the capital was already right before their sight, inside the atmosphere that was turned into chaos, Koone-tan who was directing an unshakable (?) gaze toward Kouki was,

□Flaky hero-sama. I won't forgive you if Onee-chan is hurt. Koone absolutely won't forgive you if that happen!□

She declared such thing with a bit of expectation and a large anxiety residing inside those eyes that were scattering smile everywhere.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

To everyone who reported 'I bought Arifureta vol 6 you know~', thank you very much.

My greatest gratitude to all of you who took the book into your hand.

By the way, that person who came out at the start of Kouki arc is the same person with the character who is the storyteller at the extra story w

Do you know if you answer the questionnaire at the new book information at Overlap-sama's homepage then you will be able to go the page of□afterword's afterword□?

Each time, I put things like inside story of Arifureta and the like there, but this time.....

A writing that will make one want to tsukkomi□You are alive!?!□ is posted.

If you like, please try to have a look for killing time.

# **Arifureta After II    At Synclea's Capital    First Part**

□Fuu.....□

Kouki naturally leaked out a deep sigh like that. Kouki was sitting down on the bed of a guest room inside the palace that was given to him while making a wry smile toward himself who was like that.

When he looked over the room, the quality of every furniture that was put in minimum there wasn't bad. At the very least, the bed he was sitting on was soft. However, it had so little decoration that it could be said to be simple, it looked inferior when compared to the guest room in Hairihi kingdom no matter how Kouki looked at it.

It showed the current pressing situation of the country, so Kouki fell backward and lied down with his expression staying complicated.

He instinctively leaked out a sigh □Fuu.....□ once more from his mouth. It seemed he was far more fatigued than he thought.

He hadn't reached the limit of his stamina at all, but the core of his body and the inside of his head felt clingingly heavy. To speak in the meaning of mental fatigue, his current condition was truly in a state of total exhaustion.

Kouki lifted one of his hands to block the sunlight shining in from the window. When he was staring at his hand in a daze, the sensation of "that time" was revived vividly.

(tsu, .....I, killed, huh.)

The sensation of cutting apart flesh. Blank gaze. Spurting out blood.....

□Uuh□

He unconsciously felt desire to vomit and he crouched on the bed.

(It should be, the correct choice. ....It was a race against time. ....In order to save Moana-sama and others. ....That's why, it's not a mistake, that's how it should be.....)

To persuade himself, to convince himself, he repeatedly, frantically muttered that the option he picked "should be the correct one" over and over.

—Even though I don't understand what is correct?

—Despite I, not trusting myself more than anyone?

Each time Kouki yelled inside his heart that he should be correct, the cold voice of himself was echoing. That voice sounded as though it was the voice of his other self that he confronted once at the □Cavern of Ice and Snow□, the figure of himself smiling coldly suddenly crossed over at the back

of his mind. Clad in black holy armor, white hair with black streaks coloring it, and then dark red eyes like monster.....

□tsu□

Kouki sat up in a flash and he shook his head. It was his bad habit since the legendary decisive battle. When he noticed his thought was falling into an endless spiral. What's more it was bad thought he was falling into.

In order to renew his feeling for the moment, Kouki recalled the events after he reached the palace.

□It was dreary but, the audience hall was really beautiful huh.□

The audience hall where Kouki was made to pass through in order to formally introduce him to the palace people was so impressive and beautiful to the degree he unconsciously leaked out such monologue.

It was a chalk white space without a single smudge. There were several pillars with beautiful and detailed engraving that would make anyone sigh in admiration. It seemed the hall was structured to make use of sunlight using mirror reflection to shine even the inner part, and because of that ventilation of light that wasn't unlike air ventilation, crisscrossing pillars of light were showering inside the audience hall regardless of the place being deep indoor.

And then, Moana when she was sitting on a chair that was made from the same chalk white stone like the building was also positioned under the crisscrossing light pillars, making a beautiful sight that would cause anyone to hold their breath.

Due to everything in the surrounding was white, her chocolate colored skin was really standing out. Her pure white full dress that was beautiful while being simple was also fitting her perfectly that it made him comprehending "I see, she is really a queen". On top of that, the white hair which was possessed only by her alone also really gave out the impression of mysticism.

At her surrounding, aides, soldier force, royal guards, and so on were standing by in rows. Because Kouki only saw Moana in her traveling clothes all this time coupled with her warrior attitude, when he was led inside the audience hall as the last one among that line up, he spontaneously stopped walking when he saw her dressing up like that.

He immediately came back to his senses and walked until his designated position, but looking from how Moana's expression became slightly bashful, she must have noticed how Kouki became fascinated.

Feeling really embarrassed that the inside of his heart was seen through by an older girl, Kouki shook his head while moving the focus of his recollection toward another point.

"Nevertheless.....as expected, everyone is having expectation huh. —toward the hero."

A gloomy feeling welled up inside him. The people inside the audience hall, regardless whether they were military or civil official, everyone were holding expectation toward the existence of "hero".

That could be said to be natural.

In the large scale battle five years ago, Synclea kingdom lost all members of the royal family with the exception of Moana



and Koone. Not only that, they naturally also lost a lot of soldiers.

The power of <Heaven's Blessing Art> the royal family possessed was tremendous. It could be said as the trump card of Synclea kingdom. They used that trump card, paid a great sacrifice, and with that the best they could do wasn't extermination but repelling back the enemy.

That was how powerful the <Dark King> of this generation was. Currently he seemed to be unable to move properly in order to heal the wound he received, but even then there wasn't any sign of the <Dark King> getting replaced, and on top of that even while being currently wounded, the Dark King had the strength that allowed him to keep reigning above the <Dark Being> still.

He was truly a monster. Most likely he was being at his most powerful ever. And then, nine out of ten cases, he the <Dark King> would surely come attacking once more with even more strength. Then, for the current Synclea kingdom that had lost many of their royal family, at that time of the rematch, would they be able to defeat that guy.....

The prospect wasn't bright.

At such time, the existence of a hero of another world appeared together with the oracle of Faltina.

If those people were told from Moana's mouth that the hero used technique of another world, that the miasma didn't affect him, and then he defeated <Dark Beings> who were quiet famous unaided and saved Moana and her people, it was impossible to tell them to not expect much from Kouki.

But, even though he understood that.....

□.....It's heavy.□

To the degree it felt like he was going to get crushed.

Once, when he was summoned to Tortus, he thought he could anything. He thought there was nothing he couldn't do. He didn't even notice the "weight" of the words save the world, rather his heart was feeling exaltation the more people were holding expectation toward him.

Right now.....those expectations were simply, simply, nothing but terrifying.

The possibility of him betraying those expectations. The possibility of failure. And also, the possibility of him making mistake.

Aaa, he wanted to run away. But, he had promised, to fight himself, and to fight his heart that wanted to avert his eyes and ran away. Because at that time, he had made a promise, with the girl who was his childhood friend, and with his best friend who came risking his life and punched him.

There was no way, he could run away.....

Aa, agonizing.

□BAA——NN!! Looking like a princess, but actually might not be a princess-!? iiit's Kooneee!!□

□Hiih, what's going on-!?!□

Serious-san was blown away along with the room's door.

Kouki who was immersed in his thought got caught by surprise and he reflexively jumped on his bed. Incidentally he was also screaming pathetically like he never before.

Koone didn't even pay attention to such Kouki and stepped on the collapsed door while entering the room. She then pointed sharply at Kouki. She even winked \*pachin-\* while she was at it.

□Hero-sama! Koone thought that perhaps you are feeling fretful, so Koone come here for you!□

□Eh, fretful? Rather, the door.....□

Kouki was wondering how did the door get blown away and his gaze glanced alternately at Koone and the door she was stepping on.

However, as expected Koone didn't pay it any attention.

□Koone will give you a tour of the capital! Now, let's go!□

□Do, don't pull at me. Or rather, Koone-sama. Have you asked permission? If you go outside as you pleased, you will get scolded by Spenser-san or Donar-san again you know?□

□Koone think, that going out mean going out of the capital! In other words, inside the capital is the same like in the palace! Koone isn't going out!□

□Tha, that's too much of a broad interpretation isn't it.....□

Koone theory was surging out. Koone's hand beckoned at the wryly smiling Kouki as though to say □It's fine so shut up already and follow Koone!□. She was really masculine.

Normally he would want to accompany her. However, currently he wasn't feeling good at all.

Kouki didn't know how much the people of the capital were aware about Kouki and the matter of hero, but he entered

the palace by going through the main street together with the soldier force and Moana. Naturally, a lot of people witnessed Kouki riding the same Arous with Moana and Koone.

If he went outside to the capital, perhaps he would be looked at with those eyes of expectation again. Above all else, his heart was awfully tired right now and he wanted to rest slowly.

And so, Kouki tried to speak "No, I....." with reservation but,

"Koone Body Attack!"

"Guheh!?"

Koone-tan was always abrupt at any time. Due to the unleashed flying body attack, Kouki was pushed down on the bed. Koone who was straddling Kouki was making a smug face. But, right after that, her expression quietly changed. Kouki held his breath toward that jade eyes that were staring at him fixedly.

"Hero-sama. No matter how much we pray at a place where there is nothing, nothing will happen you know? That's why, first we should see, hear, and feel. Koone think that those has to be done."

No good idea or anything would emerge even if he fidgeted hesitantly inside the room like this. Kouki spontaneously opened his eyes wide, feeling as though himself until just now was seen through.

In a complete change, Koone smiled brightly and,

"Koone also want to listen about the story of another world! Please teach me about the hero-sama's world while also

learning about this world! Koone want to know!□

□Ah, yes.....I guess. Then, let's go.□

Kouki kept getting toyed by the quickly changing aura and expression of Koone, however, he nodded thinking that what Koone said also had truth to it, and he requested her to give him a tour of the capital for a change of mood.

But, at that time,

□Wha, what!? The doo is-. What happened!? Kouki, are you saf—□

Moana-sama who seemed to come to visit Kouki made her entrance.

And then, the queen-sama—or rather the severe siscon saw it. The figure of the little sister she doted straddling a man on the bed. Looking closely—Kouki's excuse was that he reflexively caught in his arm Koone who jumped him so that she wouldn't be hurt, that was really what happened—Kouki's hands were holding the waist of her beloved little sister.

I see.

□Faltina-sama hath spoken. She said, kill Kouki.□

□That's a lie-. I mean, this is not what it looks like! This is misunderstanding, Moana-sama!□

Kouki who instantly guessed how Moana mistook the situation was desperately attempting to resolve the misunderstanding. But, not reading the mood in this kind of time was Koone-tan Quality.

□Onee-chan! It's amazing! Hero-sama, he is really hard!□

Kouki wished that she would attach more detail like “the abs is” or something without fail. He didn't know whether Koone aimed for that or if she was just an airhead, but in any case, Kouki now acknowledged Koone as a troublemaker.

Although, he had no leeway at all for speaking out his complaint. Moana-sama whose expression had turned into one resembling a Hannya mask was reaching toward the sword on her waist that she seemed to always carry around,

□HEAVEN'S JUDGMENTTTTTTT-□

□Hiiih, don't use real swordddddddd-□

She assaulted the scoundrel that “toyed” with her beloved little sister.

Even while screaming, Kouki wasted no time to hold Koone with one arm while moving out of the way. At the same time his other hand created a miniscule barrier on his palm and averted the sword attack. For the moment the sword was still sheathed, so he wouldn't get cut, but Moana's Hannya face made him thought of a naked blade, so Kouki was desperate.

Moana who was slashing down from a forced stance because of her agitation had her balance crumbled when her sword was parried. Like that she collapsed on top of Kouki.

Kouki erased the barrier and immediately caught Moana.

There,

□Moana-sama!? Just now, a loud voice was—□

The strongest royal guard captain who doted on the two sisters like father made his entrance.

The captain witnessed it. The scene on the bed, where the pair of sisters who he thought as his own daughters, were being embraced by a man with both his arms.

□HEAVEN's PUNISHMENTTTTTTT-□

□Hiiih, this is a misunderstandinggggggggg-□

The sorrowful scream of the hero-sama echoed once more in a corner of the palace.

By the way, Kouki caught Spenser's attack using both his feet. In doing so, Spenser flopped down and his face dove on Kouki's important part, while Kouki was fainting in agony, Kouki who was embracing Moana and Koone with both his arms while holding Spenser on his important place with his legs were seen by the people of the palace who were rushing into the room. It went without saying how screams were raised.

□Uu, that was a horrible experience.....□

The disheartened voice of Kouki echoed in the bustling shopping district of the capital. Beside him, Moana and Koone were walking with their faces hidden by wearing hood. Moana looked apologetic while Koone was laughing cheerfully.

□Koone-tan! You troubled Kouki, so reflect a bit on your action!□

The two had more or less finished apologizing to Kouki, but it was doubtful whether Koone was reflecting from her outward appearance. Moana scolded Koone, something that she rarely did.

□The flustered hero-sama was interesting I'm sorry!□

□That's amazing, Koone-tan! You are able to apologize properly!□

□No, it's doubtful that she is apologizing, or rather it feels like I'm getting dissed.....□

Kouki was staring fixedly at the elder sister who was completely pampering her little sister, and Koone who was understanding various things somehow and did what she did.

□Now now, hero-sama. Koone will let you to eat the capital's specialty food! With Onee-chan's money!□

□Leave it to me Koone-tan! Onee-chan has been saving a lot of my pocket money for this kind of time!□

An unexpected truth was shed on light. It seemed the money that queen could use for her personal use was given with pocket money system.

When Kouki was introduced in the audience hall, there was a tottering gramps that looked like he was going keel over anytime, but that gramps was actually civil official chief (a position like a prime minister), and he was introduced as the one who took charge of the financial affairs too.



The tottering gramps handing over pocket money toward Moana-sama who accepted it with a pleased face.....

Kouki imagined such scene and for some reason he felt warm and fluffy.

But, for the time being, he guessed that he should say what ought to be said.

□Moana-sama. Aren't you too weak against Koone-sama's casual coaxing?□

'Isn't she too pampering toward her little sister who actually might be black hearted in truth?' Kouki tried saying that while smiling wryly.

But, the one who objected wasn't Moana, the objection came flying from a small gangster.

□? Hero-sama wishes for an eight year old girl to pay? Is that so? The penniless and jobless hero-sama!□

□Gofuh!?!□

□Understood. The eight year old girl Koone will treat the penniless adult hero-sama! .....It's just a pocket money that Koone saved earnestly, but Koone will use it for hero-sama's sake!□

□It's fine! I get it already so please stoopp! The gaze of the surrounding is painful!□

Koone tilted her head with a wondering expression 'Is that so?'. Kouki thought. This little girl, she absolutely did what she did intentionally.

Little girl these days was terrifying. Kouki recalled the daughter of the demon king that crossed his mind, and then he also imagined the scene of that terrifying little girl who inherited her father's disposition taking the hand of this little girl before his eyes who was actually black hearted, where the two of them were getting along well with each other. His body shivered. It was truly a terrifying imagination. Just like a nightmare.

Kouki casually made an oath. 'Let's not provoke the little girl to the best of his ability', like so.

Then, at that timing Koone quietly ran off, perhaps she discovered something at the road ahead. While thinking 'she really move around abruptly huh', Kouki followed behind Moana who was chasing behind Koone in hurry.

□.....That's□

Ahead of his gaze, Koone was skillfully slipping through the crowd of people. Seeing that, Kouki unconsciously raised a voice of admiration.

It seemed no one noticed the small Koone rushing below them. Surprisingly, it seemed Koone sensed the awareness within the field of vision and gaze of people, so by avoiding that awareness she was able to take covert action that would make even an assassin to feel shocked.

□Koone has a good mind. No, perhaps I should say that she has good sense. She read the thought and feeling of people to a surprising degree. To the level that can make you think that perhaps she has a mind reading ability.□

□Sensing the thought.....□

Moana spoke while watching Koone slipping smoothly through the crowd.

□That movement that cannot be noticed by other people, it seems that it's also the application of that. Something like, by looking, hearing, and feeling carefully, she can understand what someone is focusing on.□

□Is that how she sneaked into the baggage of the soldier force before.....□

□Yeah. Amazing right!? That's my Koone-tan!□

□Tha, that's right. In a sense, it's really amazing.....□

An elder sister boasting of her little sister with a triumphant look. Certainly what she mentioned was amazing but.....

When Kouki saw Koone sneaking into the back of some fruit seller, he couldn't help but spontaneously thought that it was really a waste of talent.

In the fruit store that seemed to be ran by a married couple, colorfully juicy fruits were lined up inside, the husband was livelily raising his voice to attract customer from behind the goods' shelf.

Koone-tan was creeping up behind him. And then,

□BAA—NN!! This is the one who hallucinate to be a princess since who know when! Kooneee!!□

□GYAAAAAAH, what is this-!?!□

The husband was toppled over. Suddenly behind him an explosion reverberated, which might be caused by blessing

art, and at the same time someone appeared while raising a loud voice. There was no way he wasn't surprised.

The husband looked behind him while falling on his butt, there he found Koone who was smiling widely with both her hands going banzai and his shoulders slumped down. With a small voice "Koone-sama again huh....." his expression turned troubled.

"Uncle Geor, Koone came! Three kukuri please!"

"Thank you for your patronage. That's what I want to say, but please spare me from the surprise each time you came, Koone-sama."

It seemed that Koone was a regular customer of this store, and she was also a habitual criminal who surprised the owner while she was at it.

"Ahahahah, it doesn't matter about my husband, but Koone-sama, if you don't act in moderation then the soldier chief will scold you again."

Neglecting his husband who was still falling on his butt, the madam with large built selected the fruit for Koone quickly. Moana who chased after Koone handed over money toward the woman who was really like an auntie of the shopping district.

"I'm sorry about Koone every time. She seem to be really pleased with the fruit of this store."

"My, this is your majesty. Today both of you sisters are going out it seems. Well, please don't worry about it. No matter what he say, but my husband too is looking forward to Koone-sama's visit after all."

□Thank you for saying that.□

Kouki watched over the exchange between Moana and the married couple from a step away.

It seemed that Koone's entrance also caused the surrounding people to notice that the royal sisters were here, but affection could be seen from their expression. It wasn't excessive respect, but something that could be thought as coming from exceedingly close relationship. But, by no means the people were looking lightly at the sisters, it was obvious even just from a glance that everyone held respect and affection.

It seemed that the distance between the royal family of Synclea kingdom and the people was extremely small.

But, what made Kouki curious wasn't that. If it was about a royal family who was openhearted and friendly, he was already acquainted with princess Liliana. For Kouki this wasn't something that was that unusual.

While Kouki was staring fixedly at that point he was curious about, the married couple noticed his gaze and called out to him.

□Oh, that person there.....by any chance, is he the recently rumored hero-sama?□

□Eh? Ah, yes. I'm called like that more or less.□

□Oh my, in that case then this three kukuri is not enough, I have to give a bit of extra. Setting that aside, is something the matter with this? It seems you are keep staring at this since some time ago.□

Saying that, the madam clapped \*pon-\* on it, at the sword that she was wearing on her waist.

Yes, the married couple of the fruit store were carrying sword. When he looked really closely, not to mention the shop owner, even the shop employees at the neighboring shops who were calling at Koone, and also most of the people who were coming and going, everyone were carrying the minimum arms.

They were just a shop owner, just a person who seemed like a normal housewife, but everyone was carrying sword on their waist.

Kouki asked with a bit of bewilderment.

□Excuse me, both madam and sir are this shop's owner right? Not actually a member of the soldier force that is helping here in your off-day?□

□? Yes, yes. Both of us has been doing business here for a long time though.....□

□Err, then, why are you carrying sword?□

From the look of the madam who didn't understand why Kouki asked her that, it seemed civilian carrying sword was something really normal in the capital, it didn't look like there was any particular circumstance.

□About that hero-sama. This place is the world's front line you know? Although the soldiers are the specialist of the battlefield, but there is also no reason that fruit seller cannot fight, the <Dark Being> isn't the type of fellow that would let go of us just because we are a fruit seller right?□

□Ma, madam is fighting?□

□Yes, yes, I will fight you know. That is if this capital becomes a battlefield. Of course, I'm praying that it won't come to that. But, not doing anything, not able to do anything, and die simply, something like that, I'll have none of that. It's nothing big, I have been slapping my husband routinely everyday. One or two <Dark Being> is no concern at all.□

After saying so, the madam laughed heartily while slapping her husband who was making a pathetic expression beside her repeatedly.

Front line—Kouki felt it for real just how far the meaning those words had.

The people *remaining* in this capital, all of them had the resolve to fight when the time came. They were spending their days with the resolve for all the capital's people to be counted as war strength.

When Kouki looked at Moana beside him, her gaze dropped down with a silent expression. She was feeling down—but that wasn't really it. She was calmly, accepting their resolve, it was that kind of expression.

Koouki looked over his surrounding.

Without knowing whether it was tomorrow or some other day, the next moment they might be thrown into battle with their right to live on the line. The people were living with such resolve.

\*Drip\*, something spilled out inside his heart.

□Isn't it, scary?□

The madam's expression turned puzzled. And then, while laughing heartily she,

□That's, obviously it's scary! But see, look, the kukuri of our store, if it's for the sake of making the customers able to enjoy this then, well, I'm going to work a bit harder. Right, dear?□

□Well yeah. If we don't sell kukuri, who will then sell kukuri in the capital. As a fruit store owner, I'm not gonna allow the guys doing their best fighting to be unable to even eat a kukuri.□

The shop owner shrugged and lightly washed the kukuri his wife picked before handing it over. Kukuri was a fruit with an appearance like a yellow apple. Koone quickly nibbled at it. Her eating manner was so hearty it made him wanted to tsukkomi just in where she was a princess.

Even while chuckling, Moana also put the fruit into her mouth while urging Kouki with her gaze □Try eating it□.

Kouki felt his heart whirling from the madam's words while tried a bite of the fruit. Right away, thick sweet and sour taste spread inside his mouth, and a rich aroma tickled his nose. If he had to guess, then plum had the most similar taste with this fruit.....but, it had a good flavor that he couldn't just eat at a moment notice even in earth.

□Delicious.....□

□Right, right!? This is Koone's recommendation, so that's natural. Koone think that it's only natural!□

For some reason Koone made an awfully smug face more than the married couple fruit seller. While her mouth was smudged all over with fruit juice. The madam was laughing heartily once more while politely wiping Koone's mouth. Moana went □So, sorry to trouble you□, even though she was



the queen yet she was feeling obliged. The husband looked at such Moana and smiled.

Kouki who was staring at them took one more bite of kukuri. For this, for the sake of the people who wanted to eat this, the married couple fruit sellers would fight when the time came. He took a bite while chewing on their words.

Bright moon shined brightly at the peak of the night sky.

Kouki who was led around by Koone until the sun fell was now leaning on the railing at the guest room's veranda while staring at the moon tiredly. The capital was different from the city in earth, the brightness had completely submerged and the city looked quiet.

Even coldly the mystical moon was reflected on the oasis, making a sight where it seemed there was twin moon. It was really a great view. The sparkling water surface was also wondrously beautiful.

Kouki's gaze dropped at the moon wavering on the water surface without any particular reason while recalling Koone's tomboyish act and the easy big sister who was merely doting. A small smile emerged on his lips.

He recalled the later matter after he ate kukuri at that fruit store.

The next place he was guided toward was the best weapon shop in the capital.

When Koone made her entrance with □BAA————NN!! This is the one who make anyone challenged to reexamine the definition of princess! Kooneee!!□ from the back entrance of the shop, a boy about the same age with Kouki went □GYAAAAAAAH, Koone-sama came out againnnn!?!□and toppled over backward.

With the ferry rower to cross the oasis river that they visited next, she intentionally leaped out from underwater while saying □ZABAA————NN!! The one who won't be able to deny if asked whether she is a parasite in the palace!? Kooneee!!□ . □GYAAAAAAAH, why is it always from underwater every time!?!□ the rower uncle yelled so while toppled backward and fell into the river.....

But perhaps it was the usual thing, because the uncle returned to the ship normally with a smile while saying □Please spare me from that anymore□, and his clothes along with Koone were dried using blessing art.....

Then she circled behind the royal guard led by Spenser and the soldier force led by Donar who were actually following Kouki and others while surrounding them in all directions, made her appearance □BAA————NN!! Don't think I'll be a princess till forever! Kooneee!!□, and smashed into pieces the confidence of the royal guards and soldiers □GYAAAAAAAH, your highness!? Why is your highness over there!?!□.....

The nickname of chaos in three seconds after appearance really suited her.

But, for Kouki, Koone who was such unprecedented tomboy was not just a mere girl who loved prank anymore.

□See, hear, and feel, is it.....□

Perhaps, the people who Kouki met and exchanged words directly with today were picked by Koone. People that possessed words that could possibly influenced Kouki the most.

If not, then there was no way that Kouki's heart could be currently shaken to this degree even though they were only exchanging brief words.

□Everyone.....were really lively.□

The people he met, every single one of them possessed confidence of their way of living. They were proud of themselves.

What should he do so he could have confidence about himself like them? Could he be proud.....could he believe?

□If I fight like I'm asked in this world.....will I understand?□

But, like that, what would be different than the time when he was summoned to Tortus.....

Kouki shook his head. He was about to fall into an endless spiral of thought again. He was summoned, experienced his first kill, heard the circumstance of this world and the story of the people living here.....his heart was completely tired.

'Let's rest for today.' Deciding that, Kouki turned around.

□Good evening, this is Koone.□

□HIIIIIIIIH!? Since when!?!□

With a bright smile, Koone-tan was right behind him when he noticed. Kouki's scream echoed.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm resigned to accept the opinion of 'the story is not progressing huh'.

However, in order for Kouki to change, I want him to have a lot more encounter and experience, but then this chapter of the capital move slowly and won't progress faster like this.....

In case I write the story at the mental side, it will become long no matter what I do won't it.....

And so, for the reader the development that is a bit tedious will continue, but this development will be limited to just Kouki arc so I wonder if I can wish for mercy from you readers.

Well, just as showed in□The Gathering of the Returnees□, after a week that person will make his entrance, so the time left for Kouki was also that one week.....

However, Koone is standing out huhh.....at first it should be like this though.

When I wrote for some reason inside my head Poison-○n of [This world is a game you said~] you see..... (TN: Seem to refer to Poison-tan from Kono Sekai ga Game dato Ore dake ga Shitteiru, not really sure though. Anyone can clear up about this reference?)

Shirakome's plot always get instant death.....

# Arifureta After II    At Synclea's Capital    Last Part

□Are you okay, hero-sama?□

□I'm not okay at all! Why are you here!? Or rather since when!?□

Kouki was cowering in fear while raising his voice, his hand tightly grasping from above his clothes his heart that was jumping around inside.

He even forgot to use polite language against the royal family and made tsukkomi with his usual way of talking.

That was how scary Koone-tan who sneaked behind him with a bright grin was. It was simply a horror. He wanted to yell  
□Enough with this little girl already-□ with all his strength.

□Fu-fun! Koone's "stealthy skill" that cannot be noticed even by hero-sama is amazing right!□

□It's not in the level of amazing.....even < Presence Detection> doesn't work.....□

□H~m. Koone doesn't really understand what is this thing called < Presence Detection> about but.....hero-sama's

focus was completely directed somewhere else you know?□

Koone tilted her head. According to her, with how he was completely distracted, what's more in his exhausted state, it was comparatively easy for her to sneak at him by using her special technique and her heaven's blessing art at the same time.

□Using heaven's blessing art at the same time? If I remember correctly, Koone-sama's art is <Regeneration> isn't it.....□

□Fufuhn. It's called <Regeneration> because it can bring back greenery to the desert but, its essence is direct interference art that focus, attach, or adjust blessing power.□

Like that, by adjusting and harmonizing her own blessing power with the miniscule blessing power inside the air, her existence became harder to comprehend—to say it further she was able to “adapt”.

□It's Koone-style “Stealthy Art – Level 2”.□

□What are you using the unique ability of the royal family in full for.....□

Kouki massaged his temple repeatedly as though he was getting headache.

□Hero-sama, hero-sama. Won't you talk a bit with Koone?□

□.....No, I'm going to rest—□

Kouki whose respect toward royalty was blown away completely to somewhere easily tried to reject Koone's invitation.

But, his gaze suddenly met hers. He was suddenly at loss for words after seeing Koone's gaze.

That gaze was really deep. To the degree that he held his breath in surprise. There was earnest and pressuring feeling inside that gaze. Different from the figure of the tomboy and wild and mischievous princess, those were the eyes of someone with unknown depth.

□Won't you talk with Koone a bit?□

□.....What is it?□

Kouki's reply made Koone's mouth burst open in a smile. With rapid steps she stood beside Kouki before she gazed at the direction of the oasis—the capital.

□How was it today? The capital is a good place right? Everyone was all good people right?□

□Yes, very much so. They are really good person. While knowing the current situation where the tomorrow is unknown, yet they don't despair.....everyone choose something, and they hold pride.....that their choice is correct.□

Koone nodded. But, her expression for some reason didn't look at all like the proud expression she showed him when she gave him the tour through the capital. Rather, it was an expressionless face that looked as though it lost emotion.

Kouki who had only seen her acting innocently until now held his breath again.

□Do you now want to help us?□

□.....So, that's your aim just as I thought.□

Kouki sighed. As expected, Koone wasn't just a naïve and innocent princess.

□Yes. *That too* is one of Koone's aims. Because it seems that hero-sama has hesitation.□

It was likely that she had heard from Moana too. How Kouki felt hesitation about fighting. That he was trying to show a path where there would be no fighting to even the <Dark Being> .

Koone seemed friendly, but perhaps she actually didn't believe him at all. Thinking that should be only natural, Kouki gazed at Koone while staying silent.

□Koone *more or less* is a royalty, so I want to save the people. Koone understand that Synclea kingdom, no, the human race is already at the limit. There will be no salvation without relying on hero-sama.□

□Koone-sama?□

'But see', Koone continued, to which Kouki directed at her his dubious expression. And then, he was speechless hearing her next words.

□Based on the circumstance, or perhaps based on hero-sama's feeling, if you think that it's impossible then—please escape.□

□What, are.....□

While speaking of wanting help, while speaking of there was no future already, she told Kouki to escape by his own decision. 'I don't mind if you forsake us', 'It's fine for you to not save us', she said such unbelievable thing.



□However, at that time, please take away Onee-chan together without fail.□

After telling him to leave everything else, she asked him to allow just her big sister to survive. As expected, Kouki couldn't reply to those words. It wasn't because he was refusing the request. It was because he couldn't understand Koone's thinking.

Koone finally met her gaze with the confused Kouki.

□Hero-sama, you have a rough idea of how to return to your own world aren't you?□

□Wha-, how do you.....□

□I heard from Onee-chan. Hero-sama at first confirmed whether you can go home or not. In other words, from the beginning hero-sama's condition is to go home. But, I heard that when hero-sama was told that it's unknown, hero-sama didn't even look upset.□

In other words, he had an idea of how to go home.

□But, most likely that method isn't something that hero-sama can do by yourself. Perhaps the timing, or some kind of special phenomenon or item is necessary—possibly, someone will come to pick up hero-sama.□

□Why, do you think so?□

□Because hero-sama hate killing and fighting right? A world that ask such thing from hero-sama must be a despair. If someone in such situation is told that they cannot go home, normally they should be more despairing or upset. Hero-sama is still composed because hero-sama has the belief that you can go home.□

□.....Haha, you got me there.□

He was seen through by a little girl who wasn't even ten years old. Furthermore, she also showed an attitude of conviction that her hypothesis wasn't mistaken from Kouki's reaction. It seemed he was also led around by the nose.

Kouki couldn't help but smile wryly.

He was still composed. That was a fact.

It was clear that there was no way Shizuku and others would abandon Kouki. The fact that he was summoned to another world would surely be told to them by Liliana, and not long from now the gate would be opened. He should be able to go home without doubt, and when the time came, he could even be like that demon king, abandoning this world because this problem was unrelated with him.

He was agonizing because of his own heart, not because he was cornered.

In a sense, that was exactly the reason he was able to concentrate only at his own emotion. Yes, even more than toward the crisis of this world.

While he understood that this world was in the depths of despair, in the end, he prioritized himself.

Kouki thought. 'Aa, I'm really a coward.'

□Hero-sama isn't a coward you know?□

□Eh?□

Those words sounded as though his heart was read. Kouki opened his eyes wide in surprise and looked at Koone.

Koone made a troubled smile.

□Hero-sama, don't have any duty at all toward this world. There is no need at all for hero-sama who is a complete stranger to feel guilty. The reason is—□

—Even herself who was a royalty, was prioritizing her own feeling and told him that it was fine if he didn't save them.

□That's.....□

□Certainly, Koone love everyone in the capital, Koone want to save them. That is my true feeling without any falsehood in it. But, for Koone the most important person is Onee-chan. If Onee-chan and all the people are weighed in scale, the scale will tilt toward Onee-chan. Rather than the many that Koone loved, Koone treasure my only dear family.□

Those words were surely unbecoming for a royalty.

□Onee-chan is at her limit already. She used heaven's blessing art too much at the previous battle, now she has no power remaining anymore. She overused it to the degree it cannot recover anymore. If she has to fight that <Dark King> one more time she will die with certainty.□

□That white hair.....so it's because of that just as I thought.....□

□Yes. Koone's father and mother, big brother and uncle, all the cousins, every~one died. Donar and Spenser are like family for Koone, but even so, for Koone my true family is, the one I loved the most, is only Onee-chan now. For Koone, only losing Onee-chan is—unbearable.□

She understood that it crossed the limit of being mischievous, even so she sneaked inside the baggage of the

soldier force using her all and rushed out of the capital. This was the reason.

Evil hand was drawing near her most beloved big sister who left the capital following the oracle. If she heard such thing, she wouldn't be able to not rush off. She didn't have any leeway to consider the duty of royalty or about being nuisance to other people.

Even while she understood that what she did was the worst conclusion toward everyone, that it was an outrageously horrible betrayal, but living in a world where her big sister died was something Koone couldn't think about. If something happened to her big sister in the worst case, she was even prepared to suicide by the sword beside her corpse.

That was why, because she was such a person.....

□See? After all someone like Koone, is just “someone that is like a princess”.□

It wasn't a kind of joke. Koone herself was the one who didn't recognize Koone de Shelt Synclea as a royalty the most.

Kouki stared at Koone. He wondered just how much emotion this small girl was hiding inside that small body.

—Rather than the many that were looking for salvation, a person who was important for herself was more

What crossed Kouki's mind, was that guy's figure who once said the same thing at him.

Was it selfish?

Was it irresponsible?

Was it an “evil” that ought to be scorned?

□If I run away□

□Yes?□

□If I choose to run away while taking away Moana-sama, Koone-sama will also come along right?□

For some reason Koone looked puzzled at Kouki’s question and,

□No?□

□.....□

□For Koone, if Onee-chan is alive then it’s fine with that. If it can let Onee-chan to stay alive somewhere, then Koone will be able to do my best by that much. And so, Koone will take the baton pass as queen.□

‘Just as I thought’, Kouki thought.

If Koone was a person who could abandon everything other than her big sister, there was no way she would be liked by the capital’s people that much. There was no way she would run around with the pretext of pranking and showed out her face throughout the capital.

And then, surely this wise girl was convinced of their defeat in the future. Whether the future where many humans were caught and turned into livestock, and also the future where few humans would continue painful battle as guerilla fighter, and how she would be needed as the cornerstone to support the battle of such people, surely she had imagined it without doubt.

After all her heaven's blessing art <Regeneration> would only really shine at such devastated world, in order to support the foundation of people's living.

Kouki reflexively almost said the words "Then, all the human in this world, take them to another world somewhere", however, he gritted his teeth and held his tongue.

When he suggested it at Ragal, his heart was messed up like a library that had all its bookshelves pushed down. It was just a desperate proposal.

Now that he was calm, he couldn't speak it out so easily. The reason was that the one who could accomplish that wasn't himself. He didn't even know if he could pay the compensation. Even if he could pay, he didn't know if his suggestion would be accepted.

He couldn't say such uncertain hope.

Against Kouki whose expression distorted looking somewhat painful, Koone's opened her mouth with an atmosphere that suddenly relaxed.

"Now then, that's all Koone want to say. In conclusion, if possible Koone hope hero-sama can save the world okayyy~. Ah, but if it's impossible then super run away taking just Onee-chan with you! Leave the rest to Koone then! Like that! Koone is cool. I'm super cool is what Koone think!"

'Cool Kooone, cool Kooone!' The usual innocent Koone twirled round and round while repeatedly yelling so. Kouki's expression became speechless seeing such Koone.

When Koone stopped still her twirling cool Kooone dance, she then pointed sharply at Kouki and gave him a mischievous expression.

□Now then, let's cross the last item in the list today! Hero-sama, hero-sama. There is a peerless beauty at the terrace located in the west of the palace you know? If you go there now, you will be able to meet a sexy beauty with alcohol provided! This might be a chance to deepen relationship?□

‘Get done in by Onee-chan's charm, and like her so much you won't be able to abandon her by any means!’ Such voice of heart was resounding loudly.

Kouki tried to ask Koone somehow.

□By the way.....my right to refuse?□

Koone spoke with a bright smile.

□I'll yell you know? □Nooo—, hero-sama, what are you doinggg!? Dragging Koone into your room! Just what are you going to do with this “niice bodyy”~~~□ Koone will yell that loudly you know?□

□I'll go right away! I really want to meet with pretty woman quickly-□

Kouki answered energetically. He didn't even have the composure to make a tsukkomi how nasty she was.

Koone-tan was simply scary even without her sneaking at him. Especially her smiling face.

Kouki arrived at the place Koone taught him.

Midway, Spenser appeared from the shadow of a building and asked him threateningly "Where are you going at this time?", but when Kouki answered with dead fish eyes "It's Koone-sama's.....guidance", he conceded him the passage with similar dead fish eyes while saying ".....Is that so, I'm sorry".

This royal guard captain gave off sorrowful aura that made him thought that various things had surely happened to him too in the past.....

'Now then, where could Moana-sama be', Kouki wondered while running his gaze around.

Then,

".....Kouki?"

A voice came from above him. When he looked up, he found the figure of Moana looking down wonderingly at him from a terrace at the second floor.

With the moon that was half hidden because of the spire as the background, her appearance with her cheeks slightly red was indeed charming.

The moonlight also made her hair that was like snow to be tinged with phosphorescence, that charming figure which looked mystique made Kouki to gulp reflexively.

"What's the matter, for you to be here?"

"It's Koone-sama's guidance."

Perhaps because of his agitation, Kouki repeated that answer like a pious believer that worshipped the god Koone.



Moana looked puzzled before a beat later she couldn't endure and start chuckling.

□I see, I see. It cannot be helped if it's her guidance. Come on, get up here. Accompany me drinking for a bit.□

□Ah, yes, then.....□

Kouki who was assaulted by a strange embarrassment entered the building and climbed the stair hastily. It seemed the place where Moana was at was adjacent with the corridor, the door was left open.

At the spacious chalk white terrace, Moana was leaning on the splendidly molded handrail with one of her hands swirling a glass. Her soft smile shaken Kouki once more.

□What's the matter with you since just now? You are strangely stilted. Did something happen with Koone?□

□.....We only had a little talk.□

Kouki took advantage to blame the cause of his agitation because of Koone. She had thoroughly shocked him, so it should be allowed for him to do this much. He pulled himself together while thinking that and stood up beside Moana.

□What kind of talk?□

Moana asked him that while presenting her glass at Kouki.

Kouki hesitated at what she meant with that gesture. When he looked there was bottle placed on the handrail, but there was only one glass which was the one Moana was holding. That was only natural seeing she was drinking alone. In other words, she told him to accompany her drinking was by sharing the use of her glass together.....

In the end, was it fine to drink from the same glass with the queen.....

Looking from the expression of Moana who was pushing the glass at him, he saw how she told him to not mind it.

Kouki persuaded himself "Well, fine I guess", and put the glass on his mouth. The amber colored alcohol looked like whisky in a glance, but the taste was fruit liquor. From the fragrance and taste that he had familiarity with, he guessed that most likely this was something that used kukuri. The alcohol content was also not high, the sensation in his mouth was nice with extremely delicious taste.

Moana who saw that Kouki was pleased with the drink smiled happily while intentionally pouring a second helping.

Kouki felt obliged while answering her question.

"We talked about how the people we met today are good people."

"I see.....and do you think so?"

"Yes."

Kouki nodded. And then he hesitated a bit. Should he talk about Koone's request to him that was unbecoming for a royalty? But, he immediately shook his head and shook off that thinking. In exchange, he spoke about another matter.

"Then.....we also talk, about how you are at your limit."

"....."

Moana stiffened for a moment. And then, her expression became complicated and she took the glass from Kouki in a

flash, this time she drained up the glass empty. From the sigh 'fuu' that she breathed out, the fragrance of sweet fruit wafted out.

□It was.....a horrible battle.□

□Is it about the battle five years ago?□

□Yes. He was really a monstrous fellow. He spouted out miasma to empty air, then all of it become countless number of weapon, or become beasts. That kind of <Dark Being> , I had never seen it before.□

Her way of talking returned to casual and her gaze flew to the past. She took off the mask of the queen and spoke her words as just Moana. Kouki stayed silent and lent her his ear.

□The army's number was also dreadful, everyone without exception fought desperately. I too used my <Divine Protection> power continuously. But, no matter how much we fought desperately, everyone died. No matter how much <Divine Protection> I used, I couldn't protect them.□

With the light of blessing power from heaven's blessing art <Divine Protection> , the erosion of miasma could be blocked. That was to say, against attack type where weapon formed from the miasma used by <Dark Being> was wielded, this art also became an immense barrier.

In that hellish battle, Moana had the role to protect the soldiers.

But, in reality, she couldn't protect them to the end no matter how much power she wringed out. Just how much the sense of powerlessness felt by this girl who understood that her role was as a protector.....

□I was determined to offer up my life. I planned to use up all my strength in that fight. Because, the one who should survive isn't me, it should be my big brother.□

□That's.....□

Kouki reflexively almost interrupted, but Moana's vast eyes and the fierce regret whirling inside them stopped his words.

□Big brother's <Heaven Light> was a heaven's blessing art that excelled in killing ability. The one that used the opening father and the others created by throwing their life to deeply wound the <Dark King> was also big brother. At that time, even though if only I could just protect big brother from the last counterattack of the <Dark King> , there would still be hope for him.□

Moana's big brother—Nada de Shelt Synclea struck a sure attack at the <Dark King> with the life of his father the king and others as the price. But, the <Dark King> that bore a deep wound that was fatal unleashed an attack of all his might at the very end.

As the result, Nada who stiffened after using a big technique got taken by surprise and died, and the <Dark King> was also carried away by his subordinate and retreated. That was the conclusion.

In order to protect Nada, Moana used <Divine Protection> to the full extent of her ability, but it wasn't enough. Nada's death when Moana was just a step away from exhausting her life forcefully rescinded the <Divine Protection> .

Her regret was the thinking that perhaps if she used <Divine Protection> by pouring all her life the moment <Dark King> counterattacked, then she might be able to save her big brother.

At the time that was her full strength. That was why, it was useless to even think about it. But, she couldn't help but think it.

□<Heaven Light> is more effective for bringing down the escaped <Dark King> . And Koone's <Regeneration> is indispensable for returning the world to before after the <Dark King> is exterminated. What the world need, isn't a used up wreck like me.□

□That's speaking too far, Moana-sama.□

Moana drank one more glass of the fruit wine before speaking a self-torturing sentence. Kouki gently took away the glass from her.

Moana directed her gaze at Kouki. She stared fixedly at him while letting out a faint voice.

□Hey, Kouki. Did Koone, say to you that she wanted you to take me away and escape?□

□—tsu□

□Ahaha, sheesh that child, as I thought she asked you that huh.□

Just how was this pair of sisters could take him by surprise like this? Kouki grumbled inside his heart with the feeling of venting his anger.

□How does Moana-sama know that?□

□Of course, that's because I'm her big sister.□

□You pair of sisters are just too sharp.□

□Fufuh.□

Moana chuckled just a bit cheerfully and warned him still with that light mood.

□I'm telling you I won't run away okay? Just spare me from anything forceful.□

□.....You will still fight, even in that completely worn-out condition? Even though you understand that next time you won't be able to endure?□

□Yeah.□

She easily chose the path of death. Something inside Kouki was stirred awfully hearing those words.

□.....Why, are you that strong? Why is everyone, can easily do what I can't? You might die you know? You will have to kill someone by fighting you know? Don't you feel scared?□

□Kouki.....□

□Why? Why are you able to choose such choice without hesitation? What should I do so that I can live confidently without hesitation like that-□

Kouki's voice was rough as though he was venting his anger, he stared at Moana glaringly.

□What should I do-, so that I can make a choice that I can believe as "correct"-□

Moana closed her eyes. And then she made a troubled smile and formed her words with voice that sounded frail.

□Do you think I have no hesitation? Do you think I have no regret? There is no such thing. I'm always hesitating, and I regret a lot. Kouki is making too much of me.□

In fact, didn't she just speak one of her regrets just now. Told that, Kouki's eyes opened wide in surprise.

That's right. She couldn't protect her big brother. At that time, wasn't she able to do more? Wasn't she able to use more strength? She had spoken such doubt that was even holding herself in contempt.

Kouki looked down in shame from how he lost himself just now.

□On the contrary, I'm really a hopeless human you know? Actually, I unbearably want to hurl abuse at Kouki so much that I need to endure it desperately.□

□Eh?□

□Why is it only "now"? If you are going to save us, then why didn't you come five years ago at that day? I'm holding that kind of irrational feeling inside. I understand doing that will be just barking at the wrong tree, so I'm doing my best to not speak it loud.□

'But in the I said it', she scratched her cheek awkwardly as though to say that. Kouki was dumbfounded for a while, but then he responded with a wry smile □I'm also venting my anger unjustly just now□.

Moana's expression turned serious, and then she directed at Kouki a straightforward gaze.

□I understand Koone's feeling. I also feel responsibility as royalty. When I think how my choice hold the fate of many people, I'm scared and want to run away, even I myself don't know what is right. But see, there is also just one thing that I understand.□

□What is it?□

—Even if I escape now and stay alive, I won't be saved.

In the end of her choice to run away, even if she survived then, it wouldn't be a salvation.

□Kouki is also the same right?□

□I too?□

Kouki's expression turned suspicious because Moana's words were really unexpected for him. Perhaps Moana thought that such Kouki was amusing because she chuckled while slowly pointing her index finger.

A lot of small scar could be seen faintly, however, that finger even looked beautiful instead. It softly stroked Kouki's forehead.

□You are always making a pained face from worrying, creating wrinkle at this spot, but you never stop thinking no matter what. Even though you were called here selfishly, but you don't even complain, far from that you killed an opponent you didn't want to kill while screaming, and saved us all.□

□That's.....□

□You try to accept everything, whether the feeling of the people you meet, and also Koone's wish, and even my choice.....your words "even in that completely worn-out condition", I'll return those words to you exactly the same.□

The fingertip that gently brushed his forehead slowly drifted to Kouki's cheek. The sensation of that fingertip felt really



pleasant for some reason. Kouki unconsciously closed his eyes.

□But, you won't run away as expected aren't you? Throwing away everything and pretend to forget it, you cannot do anything like that right?□

□.....Yeah. That's the only thing that I cannot do.□

□Because, that's not a salvation isn't it?□

□Yeah.....□

□See, aren't we the same?□

□I guess.□

When he opened his eyes, Moana's face was there surprisingly close. An aroma like sweet fruit tickled his nose and her sparkling jade eyes caught Kouki's heart. He stared at Moana as though he was enthralled. For some reason, he couldn't avert his gaze away from Moana.

Gentle night wind brushed his skin, and a pleasantly silent time flowed.

□.....grit-□

□Spenser, shii~~! Right now they are in a good scene so you cannot be a nuisance! Being a nuisance is wrong, is what Koone is thinking!□

A whispering (?) voice was flowing smoo~thly.

Moana slowly and quietly took distance from Kouki. Kouki was persuading himself□Surely < Presence Detection > is taking holiday without permission.....□.

And then, when they turned their gaze toward the door with twitching expression, there they saw the royal guard captain biting on a handkerchief with a demonic look behind the door, and a black hearted little girl making a smile that felt like ‘hihii~~~’.

□Moana-sama. Thank you very much for the delicious drink and the meaningful talk. I’m thinking of taking some rest soon.□

□Ye, yes, right. Not that. Cough-. You’re right. A lot happened today and you must be tired. You can take a good rest for now.□

Bowing at Moana who coughed and smoothed up her appearance, Kouki then headed toward the door with brisk steps. Koone who seemed to not even intend to hide anymore was giving a thumb up at Kouki for some reason. Spenser was whispering□Duty.....□ or something. Anyway he ignored everything.

□Kouki!□

Just before he got out of the door, Moana called out to him. When Kouki turned around, Moana’s gaze was swimming around because of being a bit concerned about Koone and Spenser, even so right after that she then opened her mouth after fixing a straightforward gaze at Kouki.

□Kouki is, fixated with rightness.....must be because you want to save someone correct? You fear making mistake..... because you are scared that you will hurt someone right? That’s, Kouki might not Kouki like it if I say this but, I think that’s Kouki’s “kindness”. That’s why, that is why. —At the very least, that feeling that think of Kouki’s someone is “right”. I will assert that.□

□.....Moana, sama.□

Kouki felt like crying very much for some reason. However, he gritted his teeth strongly to not show his unsightly side.

And then, he squeezed out some words,

□.....Thank you very much.□

And replied so.

While expelling the sight of the little girl beside him making a black smile that said□Just as planned!□ outside of his field of vision.

Returning back in time for a bit, at the time when Kouki received the tour of the capital.

Past the front line desert area at the western land that was still lushly green, a certain feudal lord of a territory was raising a worried groan.

□What's the meaning of this? There is no mistake in this report right?□

□Yes. I also inspected it myself but, there is no mistake.□

In the office, the feudal lord was making a difficult face with the written report in one hand, before long he shook his head and made a determined expression.

□Report using a letter to her majesty. Tell the messenger to prepare. We have to ask Koone-sama to come urgently.□

□Acknowledged. Right away.□

The vassal hurriedly left the office. The feudal lord watched that while making a large sigh.

□I have a bad premonition.....□

That whisper melted into empty air and vanished.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Koone-tan whose character spontaneously stood in Kouki arc

The demon king's daughter went without saying

I suddenly thought.

Should I try revealing a little girl character at the second part of abyss lord too.....like that.

What do you all think about little girl trio...

# Arifureta After II    Heading to Unusual Phenomenon

At the north side of Synclea kingdom capital's north side, there was a mysterious space formed from a branch that stretched from the donut shaped oasis surrounding the capital. The branch was drawing a great circle that joined into the main current once more, creating sandbank between it and the main current.

If it was seen from the sky, this sandbank between the branch and main stream that could be expressed as a "lump" created from a part of the circle had the size that was about the same like the sports ground of a school.

As a matter of fact, the expression of sports ground was to the point. That spot was the training ground of the soldiers adjacent to the capital.

Actually, even the next day after the unprecedented event of hero summoning and the emergency situation where the queen was ambushed and her life fell into danger, the soldiers were still working hard like usual at the training ground.

□Put your spirit into it! Are you guys making any effort huh! The formation change is too slow-. It should be possible to do it three seconds faster! Do it again!□

The one who motivated the soldiers doing formation change training with his angry yell that sounded like thunder was the soldier chief Donar.

Chief Donar's voice resounded really clearly. It was the voice characteristic of a commander that could reach the ally clearly in the battlefield.

At a slight distance away from the formation change training, a fierce training of one against one, or possibly one against many was being carried out, but even though the people there weren't the one being yelled at, the moment they heard the angry yell of the soldier chief, their expression became stricter and their spirit surged even further.

Also, at the place nearer to the river of the oasis, the art users were performing blessing art training with similar serious expression.

□Concentrate. But not at just one point. Concentrate toward the world. Earth, wind, heat, moisture.....concentrate to everything that surround you. Your self is receiving blessing from the world, be aware of that strongly.□

Even though that voice had courteous demeanor and wasn't loud by any mean, it smoothly entered the ears and coached the art users. It was the voice of art user group's head art user—Rinden Stole.

He was a man at his forty with long rust colored hair that was tied behind. From a glance he looked like a really calm and gentlemanly attractive middle-aged man. But, perhaps it was just as expected from someone who was entrusted with a group same like Spenser and Donar. The zeal dwelling inside his eyes would make anyone instinctively gulped.

The truth was this Linden was the biological father of Lilin who was selected into the most elites of the royal guards that were led by Spenser. Both father and daughter were art user that overflowed with talent.

Ahead of Linden's gaze, the art users were joining their hands together in front of their mouth while wholeheartedly offering prayer that showed so much concentration vein emerged on their forehead. At the same time, the patterns painted somewhere on their body also shined radiantly.

Countless spears made from hardened sand protruded out from the ground like wave, whirlwind that hoisted up sand launched blades of wind and sand, sphere of light that perhaps was made from converged sunlight danced wildly, or oasis's water became whip that rampaged, all those were clearly the effects of their prayer.

Whether the soldiers or the art users, all of them possessed a definite passion.

While understanding that they couldn't be optimistic or anything about their situation by any means, even so they wouldn't draw back even by a step no matter what. Such definite passion that wouldn't even lose against the scorching desert was shown from their attitude.

□.....This is amazing.□

Kouki's leaked out whisper slipped and vanish amidst the spirited roar of the soldiers.

In the eyes of Kouki who was observing from a spot where he wouldn't be a hindrance, there was a color that could be taken as envy or pain emerging.

Suddenly the figure of the queen who said to him that she wouldn't "run away" even when she was already at her limit crossed inside his mind. At the same time, the voice of a young but earnest princess who said "It's fine even if you abandon everything, so at least just my big sister" also resounded in his mind.

If a coexistence with the <Dark Being> was unacceptable, then there was no other path to save Moana except by Kouki's assistance.

Then, would he eradicate the <Dark Being> in that case?

Even though he didn't even know if the rejection of coexistence was really the consensus of all of them or not? In the first place, was someone like him who was burdened with deep mental damage just by killing one being could possibly do such thing? He could save Moana and others, wasn't such thinking itself was just his arrogance?

Then, should he escape while taking Moana with him just like Koone wished for?

Even though what gave hope of "perhaps" in this hopeless situation was his existence, yet he would abandon the people? Would he betray their hope, their expectation? Not to mention despite how such thing ran counter to Moana's wish? Even though it was a choice that might sacrifice the young Koone instead?

Then, would he take away only Moana and Koone, and also the people who were especially close to them?

How far the scope of that would reach? Only Spenser and others? Or else the servants that supported Moana in the palace too? Or perhaps all the people of the capital? Who would decide the size of the scope of the people that would



be saved? How could someone like him could have the right to decide who would ride the Noah's ark.....

Then, should he treat everything as never happened instead?

Ignored everything where he saw nothing, heard nothing, and knew nothing, and departed in a journey to search for the way to go home? Could he ask Moana and others to just think of him as someone nonexistent right from the beginning?

He wondered just what was right. He wondered what should he do to reach the best conclusion.

Aa, again, it felt like he was drowning inside water.....

Furthermore, the drowning feeling wasn't like inside the forest spring where he was summoned, but like inside a swamp full of mud.....

□Kouki-dono. What is your thought, about the training? If there is something that bothered you, then please give us a pointer without reservation.□

A voice suddenly called toward Kouki who was staring in a daze at the training while being stuck inside a crucible of dark thought like that.

When Kouki came back to his senses in surprise and moved his gaze, there was the figure of chief Donar right beside him without him noticing.

Kouki replied somewhat in fluster.

□N, no, the likes of me giving pointer is too.....□

□You are being humble again. Kouki-dono is the hero-sama summoned by Foltina-sama. You don't need to feel even an ounce of reservation. I dare say that your advice might someday save their life.□

Kouki somehow felt gazes on him. When he directed his awareness there, several soldiers and art users were indirectly paying attention to the conversation between Donar and Kouki.

Their gazes weren't filled with anything like wariness of an outsider sticking their nose, but an expectation and curiosity toward the hero, hoping that perhaps they would be able to receive anything that could make them grow even just for a bit.

Yes, from them there was heavy feeling that was choking for the current Kouki.

While feeling conscious that he slightly leaked out strange breathing \*hyuh\*, Kouki took a breath, then replied with a wry smile.

□No, I really am unable to give any pointer or anything..... Rather, it's me who is affected by everyone's skill and zeal.□

□Oh, is that so! That is really something joyous to hear.□

Chief Donar smiled really happily hearing Kouki's words. The soldiers who seemed to be listening attentively were also vaguely showing pride from receiving the praise of the hero.

But, there, the head art user Linden who must be listening to the talk of chief Donar and Kouki asked a question with calm voice.

□Does the same opinion apply to us too?□

□Yes, of course. Or rather, in the first place I still don't really understand what blessing art is. Someone like me has no pointer or anything that I can say.□

Linden quietly narrowed his eyes toward Kouki whose wry smile deepened while answering that non-specialist like him was all the more unable to speak of anything about blessing art.

□I see, that's logical. However, I heard from my daughter that Kouki-san actually manipulated practical art for combat really skillfully. I assume that you have abundant experience of fighting, although the principle of our arts differ, but is there really nothing that you can perhaps comment about from that standpoint?□

From the eyes of Linden who was saying that while stroking his chin with one hand, a curiosity could be vaguely seen there. Perhaps he was simply interested for Kouki's advice, or rather at Kouki's impression and magic themselves.

□The blessing art is.....a magic that seem to be extremely practical for combat. The blessing art that I had seen for real was only the art that manipulated wind and earth used by two royal guards, but the cooperation with the vanguard, the deployment speed, and the choice of art to match the situation, all of them made me went wide-eyed in surprise.□

□Hou. As a father, it's really make me happy that Lilin's skill is highly assessed so much like that.□

□Ahaha..... It was really amazing. However.....that's right, if there is one thing that make me curious, it's about whether there is a blessing art that is specialized for defense or not?□

□Specialized for, defense?□

Linden went ‘h~m’ while stroking his chin with one hand. Perhaps it was his habit when he was thinking. He then opened his mouth.

□I think, it will be something like the stone wall that Neisan created..... Other than that, there are wall of squall or heat, and if the location is in this capital then the water of the oasis itself will become barrier. But, the “defense specialization” that Kouki-san talked about isn’t something like that isn’t it?□

□Yes. Because in the end something like that is “something that can also be used as defense”. For example, there is something like that among the magic I used, I also had used it in front of Lilin-san before—<Light Severance>□

Kouki whispered his chanting and materialized a shining barrier midair. Right away, the training ground became noisy. Everyone temporarily stopped their training, or rather they were made to stop from focusing their stare at the shield of light.

Chief Donar and head art user Linden who saw the magic of another world for the first time opened their eyes wide altogether. But, the next instant they spoke □Oo! This is!□ while scrambling to approach the barrier with great curiosity.

□Oo, it’s not hot or cold! Even though this should be only light yet it’s hard like this!□

□It’s similar with blessing art of sunlight but.....that art literally carry heat. But this is really only light..... Donar, please try to cut it a little.□

□Leave it to me.□

The sword of chief Donar that was swung halfheartedly was repelled back while making \*gakin\* sound. Just from that cheers of "Ooo!" were raised from the outsiders too this time.

"How about this then!?"

The soldier chief became a bit worked up. The head art user was also watching attentively with really excited look.

Chief Donar let out a slash that was sharper and heavier than before. The sword shined and drew a beautiful trail of sword slash in the air that could make someone instinctually be charmed. This time a small crack entered the Light Severance with a snap.

"Hou! Although it was done without reinforcement, I put about seventy percent of my strength into it. It's only cracked with that! What a marvelous barrier!"

"Yes, yes! It's extremely interesting! Just what kind of principle is behind it? The very light itself is possessing weight? No, however....."

The two middle-aged men were seriously excited. Even while feeling slightly creeped out against the soldier chief and head art user who were continuously approaching forcefully, Kouki answered with a troubled face.

"About the principle's detail, even I don't..... But, this is an art principle that is called magic, various phenomenon can be caused by using magic power, magic circle, and then chanting. The energy's property is different with blessing art, and the point where the very energy itself is materialized as art is different from blessing art, but I think the two's operation procedures are really similar."

□H~m, really interesting. The very blessing power itself is used as protective wall or attack..... H~m, can that be replicated? H~m—□

Linden was thinking with a difficult expression like a researcher wracking his head in front of a difficult problem. On the other hand, chief Donar's really serious appearance was now looking like a child, staring at Kouki with sparkling gaze.

For some reason, recently the positivity level of middle-aged man and animal toward Kouki was raising up excessively.

While feeling a bad premonition for some reason, Kouki asked with his gaze □What's the matter?□. Chief Donar then suggested immediately as though to say that he had been waiting for Kouki to ask.

□Kouki-dono. Let's do a mock battle!□

□Eh? What did you say?□

His heart that had no enthusiasm unconsciously caused a line like a deaf main character to appear. However, the chief Donar who seemed to have his soldier's soul lit up didn't pay any mind about that at all.

The feeling of wanting to see magic that was actually used practically in battle, and the curiosity toward Kouki's skill as swordsman that he heard from the story were coming out in his face. At the same time, 'Most thing could be understood by exchanging sword, exchanging sword is the quickest way' such feeling also showed through.

□.....Ryutaro type exist in any world huh.□

□Hm? Did you say something?□

Kouki unconsciously whispered while recalling his best friend who boasted 'Anyway, I'll surely manage somehow if we exchange blows!'. Chief Donar tilted his head.

Kouki who wasn't motivated wracked his mind to somehow avoid doing mock battle. But, Linden who seemed to come back to reality from the sea of his thought before Kouki could think of anything then smilingly dealt an additional blow.

□Indeed, a mock battle will be the fastest way to have other people to know about Kouki-san better. Kouki-san, can I please ask you to do that?□

□Eh.....yes.....□

Even though he thought that this person was a researcher type, but unexpectedly head art user Linden was also in the active people faction. His words caused Kouki to unconsciously nod against his better judgment. The mini Kouki inside his heart yelled angrily □You are swept by the flow, me!□, but it was already too late.

A spot was emptied right away while the audiences were clamoring.

His opponent of all thing was chief Donar and Linden at the same time.

□.....Excuse me, the mock battle, is against the two of you?□

□Hahahah, don't mind it!□

□Fufufuh, please don't hold back!□

The opponents were the tops of each group that must be the strongest fighting force of Synclea kingdom. Furthermore,

they had nice balance of a vanguard and rearguard.

There was no more doubt that these two middle-aged men were hobby friends with similar personality, but it seemed that it was also an undoubtable fact that they were considering the existence of Kouki as an opponent was at the level that ought to be faced by top class warriors.

Kouki spontaneously put his hand on his stomach. It felt like he was feeling throbbing pain. The surrounding was overflowing with expectation and curiosity, if he exposed something unsightly here, how much grief and disappointment would be created then.....

(.....Heavy.....)

In addition, it was a battle against people. Although it was a mock battle, for Kouki who had only experienced murder this was something that felt even harder. Hesitation and fear quickly assaulted him, it took a desperate effort for him to suppress his trembling and hyperventilation.

□? Kouki-dono? Are you not feeling well?□

It seemed even though he was hiding it, but a veteran warrior could somehow sensed Kouki's bad condition. Chief Donar asked him with a worried expression.

For a moment Kouki thought to answer □Exactly!□, wondering if it wasn't still too late for him to excuse himself from this mock battle.

(But.....if I cannot even do mock battle, then I..... Don't run, don't run me.)

He shook his head. He scolded his heart. Kouki made a small smile and answered □There is no problem□.



Chief Donar looked slightly dubious, but he accepted it for the moment and pulled out his sword. Linden took several steps back.

□Then, I'm coming you know?□

□Anytime.□

A sudden gust blew instantly. No, more accurately it wasn't wind. A pressure that felt like that attacked Kouki. It was without a doubt the pressure from Donar. It wasn't pressure that was tilting at the negative side like killing intent. If he had to say then perhaps he should call it a pure fighting spirit.

It was too stern, it was too striking. Against that pressure of fighting intent that was heightened until the utmost limit, Kouki gulped unconsciously.

The disorder of his breathing might be seen through.

When he noticed, the soldier chief was right in front of him. At the same time a silver flash that approached to split him vertically into two was reflected in the corner of his sight.

It wasn't a movement with speed like Ground Shrinker. The chief's first movement was too natural that Kouki's awareness couldn't judge that he was being approached.

□-!?!□

Even while feeling shaken against that terrifying technique, Kouki's body reflexively moved. He pulled back his right foot and shifted half his body behind while activating Ground Shrinker without going against his center of gravity that was tilting slightly behind.

The sword passed before his eyes, and next he backstepped in high speed to evade the pursuing attack that leaped at him like a living thing.

But, there,

□—<Jaw of Earth>□

A prayer resounded. The ground below the retreating Kouki's left and right flowed and the sandy land opened a large mouth.

The earth was molded and a huge thing like a bear trap was materialized, it must be a blessing art for restraining the target. Even if for example Kouki could dodge it, it was created by moving the surrounding sand so the ground below crumbled and broke his balance.

It was a plain and small scale blessing art, but it was actually unpleasantly effective.

Perhaps having anticipated that, chief Donar charged forward. He understood Linden's intention perfectly. They were truly in harmony.

Although,

□—<Light Blade>□

□Muh□

There wasn't really any problem if he cut it apart all together. The Jaw of Earth that was closing on him from left and right was bisected right into two by light element mid-level magic <Light Blade> that had its cutting power increased explosively.

Chief Donar who saw Kouki's holy sword that could even be said to be fantastically clad in light raised his voice spontaneously, but even then as expected from the soldier chief, he unleashed his attack without even the slightest pause or hesitation.

\*gakin\* A high pitched sound of clashing metals resounded. Kouki felt stunning impact spreading through his arm and the area around his eyes warped slightly.

It was a heavy attack. More than a mere physical strength.

The gaze of Kouki and chief Donar who was locking sword with each other met in very close range.

□.....?□

Chief Donar knitted his eyebrows dubiously. But, that too was only for an instant.

□—<Sword of Sandstorm>□

What was produced right after that was twelve sand disks rotating in high speed. They were deployed to surround the target and assaulted violently from every direction, at the same time chief Donar leaped back at the only path of escape that was behind him.

The encirclement of the sand disks was tight, it didn't look like it could be broken out from. It was clear to see that the back of the target would be attacked using the opening when they dealt against one disk.

And so, Kouki escaped to above.

□—<Heaven Severance>□

Five layers of shining barrier materialized. One was used as foothold, and the others became floating shields around Kouki and blocked the attack of the sandstorm disks.

Considering that Kouki leaping up to the air was convenient, the other sandstorm disks attacked. It was clear that Kouki was thought to be unable to move midair.

Of course, Kouki used <Heaven Severance> to dodge that so there was no problem.

□Oo! Amazing!□

□He's flying!□

He wasn't "flying", until the end he was only "jumping", but the movement method using barrier to consecutively leaped midair might looked like flying if seen from the side. The soldiers and art users observing the battle raised their cheers.

□Midair movement using barrier as foothold, is it..... I see, the way of using it like that is.....□

Linden also opened his eyes wide at that blindspot. However, he was still attacking fiercely with the sandstorm disks even then.

The sandstorm disks that Kouki should have evaded already returned like a Frisbee. From among the four approaching disks, Kouki blocked two using <Heaven Severance>, while cutting down the other two using his sword.

Kouki saw below him chief Donar was preparing some kind of "vow", and Linden starting to pray another blessing art further while manipulating the sandstorm disks and inside his heard he made tsukkomi □That's just too merciless!□.

And then, before he could be attacked by Linden with even more number, he directed one hand at Linden from midair and,

□—< Air Hammer> □

He fired a shockwave magic. \*dou\* Such heavy and painful sound resounded, at the same time Linden's front was blown away. Linden might got a bad premonition by the time Kouki directed his arm at him because he already entered into an evasive maneuver, so he only ended up getting blown away.

Using that opening, Kouki let flew wind blade and shot down the sandstorm disks while entrusting his body to acceleration by gravity and rapidly approached chief Donar.

□—< Soul of Strife> -□

Blessing power from vow strengthened the flesh of chief Donar.

Instantly, chief Donar whose body was faintly shining blocked the flying kick (the falling from the sky version) Kouki launched using the flat of his blade. He firmly withstood the kick even while sliding on the ground leaving behind foot track on the ground.

□Haah!!□

□-□

Along with a loud scream of fighting spirit, the sword was swung and Kouki was sent flying. Kouki adjusted his posture midair and landed. Chief Donar approached Kouki with a speed that was incomparable from before.

The sword flash that was unleashed looked blurry with many layers. That was how fast the sword was.

Kouki blocked, repelled, or parried the attacks, handling well the surging wave-like offense of the soldier chief.

(Kuh, what skill-. I can manage the speed and power somehow-. But, this skill.....he is at the same level with Meld-san!)

The deceased knight order leader who once acted like the classmates' older brother and taught him the fundamental of battle against human. In the end, Kouki was unable to match his sword skill even when he was turned into puppet.

The cheers of the soldiers became even louder. Their chief was pushing back the hero who was summoned from another world. Pride and trust uplifted their heart as a soldier.

But, on the other hand,

(Kuh, he isn't thrown off balance even when I'm using body reinforcement. What solid defense-. No, the terrifying thing might actually be his reflex speed, and the specs of his body-)

Chief Donar was also astonished against Kouki who used pure reflex and body strength to react against him no matter what kind of technique he used.

Of course, because this was a mock battle, although Donar was serious, but he wasn't using his full strength. Chief Donar was also still leaving enough spare for his body reinforcement.

But, even so, looking at Kouki who in a glance wasn't using any reinforcement, against him who was unable to land a single hit even with the reinforcement was something vexing as a warrior.

Furthermore,

□There-□

□What-□

A counterattack was unleashed toward chief Donar. The horizontal slash approaching his torso was blocked by chief Donar using his sword as shield. Donar had no intention at all of leaving opening, but it seemed that in this short time Kouki had obtained a slight “familiarity” against chief Donar's swordplay.

A stir occurred. The soldiers opened their eyes wide seeing the offense of chief Donar was stopped.

Kouki's counterattack was further—

That was how it supposed to be, but there the sword attack from the torso toward the neck became strangely dulled. Naturally, such sword attack wouldn't work against chief Donar, instead it was Kouki who received a tackle.

Seeing the opponent was instead stepping forward when his attack was midway toward the opponent's vital spot, Kouki's eyes opened wide while he leaped backward and rearranged his posture.

□Can you deal against this? —< Earth of Fury> □

Earth and rocks became an avalanche that assaulted Kouki who was distanced from chief Donar. If Kouki was a bit

further away then the scale of the attack was about five meter in length and width, but when the attack was deployed at close range it was like a giant tidal wave that covered his whole field of vision.

□tsu, this place is to be a sanctuary, god's enemy won't pass—< Sacred Severance> !□

Kouki's chanting was over at the same time when the avalanche swallowed him.

Kouki's figure became not visible and the surrounding was covered by cloud of sand.

□.....He, head art user. You overdid it.□

□Using that in mock battle is.....□

The art users were flustered. It seemed it was a powerful blessing art that wasn't really used for mock battle at least. Naturally the blessing art's force was adjusted to a degree, but perhaps although this was the hero-sama, he might get at least an injury.....the art users were sending anxious looks with such thought.

But, their concern was needless.

□Hou, even that kind of barrier! Splendid!□

Linden spontaneously spoke a praise.

Inside the cleared up cloud of sand, Kouki was standing unharmed inside a shining half-sphere barrier.

The < Sacred Severance> also vanished at the same time when the sand cloud cleared. Chief Donar tried to charge at that timing but,



□—Sky Soaring Flash!□

□Uoh□

A slash of light flew and blew up the ground below chief Donar. Chief Donar stumbled due to the impact and sand pebbles.

After staring still at the scar crated from the slash of light for a while, chief Donar showed a speechless expression. And then, he turned toward Linden who was doing the next prayer and told him to stop by making fist.

□.....Kouki-dono. Let's stop this here. I have seen enough of Kouki-dono's magic and way of fighting. No, it's truly splendid! I never thought that we won't be able to land a hit even with the two of us!□

Chief Donar sheathed his sword while laughing cheerfully. Linded nodded deeply while stopping his prayer, and then cheers were raised simultaneously from all the soldiers and art users.

It seemed everyone was excited about the splendid mock battle where they were able to see unknown magic in that short but deep battle. They all were really excited that their leaders were unable to reproach them. Many mouths were saying out praise toward Kouki's fight.

□Err.....thank you very much, for the mock battle.□

Kouki smiled wryly while sheathing his holy sword. He was a little bit puzzled because it felt like it started suddenly and also ended suddenly.

Chief Donar was conforming with the soldiers' feeling while giving order to them to train even more diligently so to not

lose with the hero-dono, and then he slowly walked toward Kouki.

And then, with an expression that looked somewhat lost, as though he was worrying of what words he should use,

□.....Kouki-dono. Kouki-dono is—□

Donar was about to say something, but he then held his tongue and looked around briefly. And then, he approached even nearer to say something in small volume.

At that moment,

□BAA———NN!! This is your good neighbour-, maybe! Kooneee!□

□Nuwah!? Your highness-!?!□

□Hihih!? Koone-sama again!?!□

The soldier chief and hero jumped up while hugging each other harmoniously.

When they dropped their gaze, below them there was a little girl standing still in banzai position with unchanging wide smile. Really, what elusiveness she had there.

Although, Koone's smile was gradually changing into a wondering expression, and finally her expression turned complicated. While Kouki and chief Donar were tilting their head wondering what she was thinking, Koone was,

□.....Koone don't have any prejudice. None at all but..... Hero-sama and Donar are a bit.....Koone feels like knowing something that cannot be known.□

Saying that, she stared alternately at Kouki and Donar with an upward gaze.

There the two noticed. The great shock caused Kouki and Donar to be still hugging each other. Both of them screamed "GYAAAAAAAH" together and jumped back. And then, they desperately appealed at Koone that she was making a terrible misunderstanding.

".....Koone understand. Yes, Koone really understand."

Koone was showing the two an expression of kindness that they had never seen from her before. Chief Donar's face became demonic. Koone instantly changed the topic.

"Hero-sama, chief, as well as the head art user, please return to the palace right away."

Koone's words that were spoken with a serious atmosphere made Kouki tilted his head while the expression of chief Donar and Linden turned grave.

They were immediately led to Moana's office right after they returned to palace.

Inside the office, other than Moana and Spenser, there was a grandpa who looked like he would croak anytime, the head civil official Bruitt Cube whose body was quaking continuously. His eyelids were mostly closed too, so it made one felt suspense that he might be falling anytime.

□Ojii-chan! I brought hero-sama and others here! Please praise Koone!□

After saying that, of all things to do Koone leaped on Bruitt's back.

Kouki raised his voice □Ah□. 'What are you going to do if he got smashed up like glasswork with that', such thinking caused a hair-rising emotion to well up from inside.

But, Bruitt who seemed to detect Koone leaping at him waved his hand slowly, right at that moment Koone rotated once midair and her momentum was nullified, without pause she then landed on the ground lightly with her feet.

(I, I have seen that before this! That's the aikido technique Nagumo used when dodging Myuu-chan's tackle(hug)!)

This time Kouki shuddered from a different meaning. It was a movement that was exactly the same like the demon king-sama when he parried with one hand Myuu who was being playful with a force that was a bit unbecoming for a little girl.

It seemed the grandpa head civil official who looked like he would croak anytime was actually an aikido master.

Perhaps it was a usual sight because no one was paying any mind to it.

□Koone-sama. If gramps remember correctly, it should be a subordinate who I sent to call them here?□

Those were scolding words that implicitly called on her repeated willful sneakiness. From the gap of the eyelids that should be mostly closed with only thin opening, dangerous eyes were peeking out with a glare.

□The matter might be a race with time! Now, let's quickly move to the main topic! Let's do that!□

Koone changed the topic with all her might. And then, she turned the brunt of the matter to her big sister with all her might.

Moana was twitching from the stare of the eyes behind Bruitt's narrow eye slits while nodding at the correctness of Koone's words. She cleared her throat.

□The reason I asked all of you to gather here lies in the letter that arrived just now, carried by the messenger from Arcnet territory.□

After saying that, she fluttered a letter with its seal opened to show them.

□Your majesty. Where is the messenger?□

Linden titled his head in puzzlement seeing that the essential messenger who brought the letter here was not in attendance. Bruitt was the one who answered.

□He entrusted the letter and then fainted after giving a simple explanation of the situation. It seemed he rushed here with almost no rest at all. I have him rest in another room. It seemed he was running the whole time until here through a distance of two and half days in just one day.□

□That's.....□

Linden hummed in amazement hearing about that extremely reckless journey. At the same time the graveness in his expression increased.

□In other words, some kind of emergency situation is happening in Arcnet?□

Chief Donar asked with a grave expression.

Arcnet territory was in the west territory where the desert cut off, it was a territory that was located the nearest to Synclea kingdom's capital. It was an important base on top of being the territory that carried food and other materials to the capital that became a battlefield, also Arcnet territory itself also possessed a vast grain-producing area. It was an important food supply center.

For a messenger to come from that Arcnet territory in emergency brought nothing but bad premonition.

Moana read aloud the content of the letter.

□According to Rothko's report, a part of the grain-producing region seem to dry up.□

□tsu, that's, however.....□

Chief Donar who almost spoke 'impossible' against his better judgment held his tongue in hurry.

In this world, when one heard the phenomenon of "dried up", they would link connect the event to the existence of miasma no matter what.

However, there should be no way for the <Dark Being> to invade at the west territory that was abundant with nature. After all monitoring force was placed at the desert area and the capital, at the northern sea and southern mountain range area to prevent that.

Message method using wind from blessing art was swift, and there was no report of any strangeness that had reached Moana yet, based from that it was difficult to think that the <Dark Being> managed to infiltrate.

But, in reality a phenomenon of crops drying out had occurred, from that it was the height of folly to discard the possibility easily.

The letter from feudal lord Rothko who was entrusted with Arcnet territory by Moana also reported that the existence of <Dark Being> wasn't confirmed.

Seeing chief Donar holding his tongue, Moana continued speaking.

□The cause is unknown. But, it seems that from some time ago there was the inclination that the growth of crops was slow, I receive the report with that gist. Thinking that perhaps the fertility of the land is decreasing, I consulted Bruitt and thought to dispatch Koone at the time when the weather change but.....□

It became an event that wasn't at the level of fertility decreasing because of growing crops too much, that was how it was.

□We have to deal with this quickly and investigate the cause. Arcnet's grain-producing region becoming no good is also a problem that we cannot shut our eyes to, but more than that, if the cause made this case grow until where we lose Arcnet itself, that will be unacceptable.□

In a manner of speaking, it was like the front line base losing its food warehouse. Of course, as an insurance there were also other multiple territories that shouldered the role as relay point of the food supply that supported the capital.

Even in the case that Arcnet was crushed, the capital wouldn't go down.

It wouldn't, but. Even so the hard blow of the region that boasted the greatest efficiency getting crushed should at least shake the capital. That "shake" would become a certain opening.

And above all else, there wasn't even a shred of reason to leave alone the people behind them that they should protect.

□Therefore, Koone.□

□Yes, Onee-chan. It will be fine if Koone go and regenerate the dried up land right? Koone will also search for the cause while I'm at it!□

□Yeah, I'll count on you, Koone-ta—cough-, Koone. Save Arcnet.□

Koone put her hands on her waist and threw out her chest with a puff as though to say to leave it to her. Moana who almost broke into a slovenly wide smile seeing that cleared her throat and maintained her queen mode. Her gaze then moved around through chief Donar and others.

□This matter require urgency. I wish to say that it's impossible, but there is still the possibility of a few number of <Dark Being> infiltrating our rear.□

□We will share the information about Arcnet to the monitoring force of every places and all the neighboring territories, other than that it's best that we also send personnel to confirm directly.□



Chief Donar and Linden nodded together at the additional comment of Bruitt. In other words, they were told to select personnel that would be dispatched to every place from the soldier force and art user force.

□What about the guard for her highness? Will it be the royal guard?□

Commander Spenser nodded at the question of chief Donar.

□Yeah, I'll send the royal guard. From how the departure of her majesty to the spring was leaked, there is no way I can leave her majesty's side, but to replace me I'll organize an escort squad with the vice commander and Lilin to command it.□

The name of the royal guard's vice commander was Spike Haim. He was the personal pupil of commander Spenser, and also his adopted child. He was blessed with talent, and while he was still at the middle of his twenty, he was an able royal guard whose sword skill was said to be approaching Spenser.

And then, it went without saying about Lilin. She had the head of art user as her father, and she was a heroic woman who was chosen to be among the most elites of the royal guard in her age of sixteen. If an escort squad was organized from the elites of the royal guard's warrior with the command entrusted to these two who were top class as vanguard and rearguard, there would be a sense of security as suited the occasion.

Although, thinking about the case where Moana was attacked before this, there was still some uneasiness.....

□In addition. Kouki. This is a personal request from me but.....can I ask you to participate in the escort squad of Koone?□

□Eh? I, am?□

Kouki reflexively pointed at himself in shock. Moana nodded briskly at him.

□I dare say that this case is a disorder in the land's blessing power and not actually because <Dark Being> is penetrating in. Even if that is actually the case, they should be few in number. I believe that they could be dealt with just by the escort squad alone.□

□Then why.....□

□In the case that few <Dark Being> possess ability beyond our anticipation or they are especially strong, Kouki's battle ability, other world magic, and then above all Kouki's special characteristic of "mostly unaffected by miasma" will be extremely reassuring. Of course, it will be dangerous compared to stay inside the protection of the capital, so I will prioritize Kouki's will in this.....what will you do?□

This was a wish from a big sister that thought of her little sister. Some degree of danger would exist no matter where he was. As for Kouki, he found it really hard to refuse, and he also didn't especially have any reason to refuse. However, what made him hesitated was whether it was right or not for him who was seen as hero to leave the capital.

To speak further, even though there was no way the soldiers and people of capital wouldn't be affected if the hero who was especially summoned left outside, but even knowing that Moana made a judgment that prioritized her little sister. Kouki felt a delicate out of place feeling about that.

Which option was right.....?

Kouki felt troubled, but chief Donar suddenly opened his mouth.

□Your majesty, while this is presumptuous of me, it seems that Kouki-dono is a bit hesitant so I wish to express something.□

□.....I don't mind.□

□Then. ....Is your majesty trying to have Kouki-dono leave this capital temporarily, for his sake?□

□.....□

Hearing chief Donar pointing that out, Moana reflexively held her tongue. Kouki went□Eh?□ and stared at Moana in surprise.

□If I'm allowed to speak my opinion that I based from the mock battle that we did just now, then indeed, perhaps it's better if Kouki-dono leave the capital temporarily.□

□Wha-. Do, Donar-san. Di, did I do something that displease you?□

□No, that's not it at all, Kouki-dono. Rather, my apologize but it's a reason of happenstance.□

Kouki titled his head in puzzlement of what Donar wanted to say. From the expression of Moana that he saw from the edge of his sight, he understood that somehow Moana seemed to have the same thinking with what chief Donar wanted to say.

Chief Donar told the bewildered Kouki.

□Kouki-dono is.....having a strong rejection toward fighting.  
Am I wrong?□

□tsu, that's.....□

Kouki was at lost for words that his innermost thought was guessed correctly.

□At first, I thought that Kouki-dono was unable to adjust your attack well because you tried to stop your strike just before it hit due to it being a mock battle, but I noticed in the middle. For Kouki-dono swinging weapon at the opponent.....is something that you reject from the bottom of your heart.□

Chief Donar's words paused for a moment was likely because what he wanted to really say was different. That was to say he wasn't going to say "reject" but□scared□.

□But, the existence of hero is already known in the capital, especially among the soldiers it is well known. The expectation toward Kouki-dono will rise whether you want it or not. ....For Kouki-dono who know about the current condition of our country, surely that must feel heavy.□

□Such.....thing is.....□

He couldn't say that it wasn't true. In fact, he felt it so heavy that he wanted to run away without worrying about his reputation or appearance.

□It seem that her majesty also has noticed already.  
Therefore, I'm thinking how about Kouki-dono temporarily leave the capital where the expectation toward you is rising regardless of your wish, and using this chance where there is a reason of guarding her highness that everyone can understand, you can look around at the safe territory at the

rear. Perhaps, her majesty also has the same thinking like me?□

Kouki looked at Moana.

Moana also looked at Kouki and she lowered her eyebrows with a troubled look. Her expression told him more eloquently than anything of what she was thinking. That the words of chief Donar was correct.

□Ko, Koone object. Hero-sama is an important person, so we should have him safely stay in the capital with its solid protection.□

Koone who wished for Kouki to take her big sister and escaped when push came to shove hated it if Kouki left Moana's side. As though to say□This is a detestable flow of event!□, she tried to have Kouki stay in the capital with a plausible official reason.

Toward such Koone, Moana talked at her with a face not as a queen, but as a big sister.

□Koone. You understand right? Kouki don't have any duty or responsibility toward this world at all. And yet with him being at the capital, how will the voice that ask him for that will reach him? Last night, Koone talked with Kouki was in order to convey to him by yourself that there is no such thing, right?□

□Tha, that's right but.....□

Koone was a blackly scheming little girl, but it seemed that she couldn't win against her big sister. Her gaze wandered around to search for words but finally she let out a sigh and said□Can't be helped□.

□Don't worry, it's only a distance of a day if you seriously dash to here. Don't think of this that seriously, Kouki, you can just observe the really amazing territory that is abundant with nature in this world that you arrived at with great pain. Rather, this is a request from me rather than my consideration to you. Kouki, take a look at our country without fail. I will lose face as a queen if you only know about the desert and the capital of my country.□

After saying such thing, Moana showed a mischievous smile.

She said thing like request, but no matter how he saw it this was her being considerate. For Kouki too, staying behind in the capital while wracking his brain so much, thinking worriedly with irresolute mind about question without answer was also something he didn't want to do.

And above all,

□Without even looking, hearing, and feeling it myself, I'm not going to find the answer huh.....□

Kouki recalled the words that Koone said to him yesterday before she gave him a tour of the capital, and he resolved himself.

□I understand. I will join the escort squad. ....I'm thinking of going to see more about other place and people of this world.□

□Yeah, please do that without fail. What kind of feeling Kouki have toward this world, and what kind of conclusion that you reach, I want you to tell me when the time come.□

□Yes, Moana-sama. ....I'm sorry, about various things. Also, to everyone too, thank you very much.□

Everyone inside the office gave a small smile at Kouki's word of thanks.

Three hours later. Thanks to the preparation that progressed with tremendous speed, Koone and her escort squad, as well as Kouki departed straight toward Arcnet territory where the strange phenomenon occurred.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Finally, from the next chapter the story will start to move.

# **Arifureta After II**

## **Darkness in the Move**

The Arquette territory that was the nearest territory to the Synclea kingdom's capital. (TN: Last chapter I wrongly used Arcnet. The correct one is Arquette.)

Due to the notification that was sent by Rothko, the feudal lord of that territory, Koone party that hurriedly arranged their preparation in the same day and departed rushed their Arous until the sun set and dashed straight toward Arquette territory.

Be that as it may, currently when the curtain of night had completely fallen, as expected they hesitated to advance through the dangerous night desert while escorting a royalty, and with the words of Spike who was charged to be the guard captain, the party camped for the night.

The night of desert had a face that was completely different from the afternoon.

In the camping ground where simple protective wall could be created using blessing art, four tents that looked simple but quite large were set up. Things like the framework and so on could be just formed from the ground using blessing art, so a tent could be created with only curtain that was excellent in heat retention despite its thinness. It was a



really comfortable space with spaciousness and moderate temperature.

At the center of those four tents was a bonfire blazing up to drive away the night darkness. The bonfire was also created using blessing art where a kettle was put on a simple cooking stove.

The dinner was also over, while a part of the guard squad was acting vigilance against the surrounding, the squad captain Spike and his vice captain Lilin, Koone and Anneal who was accompanying the group as Koone's personal lady attendant, and then Kouki, they were surrounding the bonfire.

Kouki accepted a warm drink that seemed like black tea (?) personally prepared by Anneal for after meal. He blinked when he put the drink into his mouth.

□.....This is delicious. It's bitter, but it also has a faint sweetness. Also it smell nice.□

□Fufu, thank you for the compliment, Kouki-sama. It's extracted from the leaf of a fruit called paruru. It's nutritional value is high, and it also has the effect that warm the body, so it's a necessary drink for travel that is expecting desert at night. Although Koone-sama dislike it.□

□Uu, because it's bitter. It makes Koone forget the taste of the delicious dinner. This is a medicine. Koone won't recognize paruru tea as tea. Koone declare, that Koone won't recognize it!□

Spike smiled wryly at Koone's bitter expression and insistent assertion, while Lilin was chuckling smilingly.

Koone sometimes acted mature, and actually she was really a schemer, but it seemed that her tongue was normally childish. Bitter taste and astringent taste were her natural enemy.

Drinking paruru tea was a must, so she still drank it without any rejection, but she was drinking it bit by bit while making a grimacing face. That figure of hers was indeed charming.

□.....What are you laughing at, hero-sama?□

□N, no, nothing.□

Koone glanced at Kouki with a sulky face. To that Kouki averted his face that was almost bursting into laughter. She was someone that was hard to deal with and carried out various schemes, but he couldn't hate her at all when he was showed her figure that was fitting of her age like this. Though, perhaps it was only Kouki being foolish.

Perhaps knowing that Kouki was holding his laughter, Koone was staring at him fixedly.

□Co, come to think of it, Spike-san is Spenser-san's child isn't it?□

Kouki had heard of it from Spenser already, but he didn't receive introduction of name and job before the departure from the person himself, so Kouki tried to ask for changing the topic.

Spike smiled wryly sensing Kouki was escaping using him while answering.

□Yes, we aren't related by blood though. It was a honor, or perhaps I should say a fortune, that when I was still a kid, it was discovered that I who lost my family to <Dark Being>

attack had talent for sword, and I was welcomed as an adopted son.□

□Ah, I'm sorry.....□

□No no. There is no need to feel apprehension like that. Because it's not something rare to lose relative or friend from the attack of < Dark Being > .□

Saying that, Spike smiled brightly as though telling him that he really wasn't offended.

This young man possessed brown short hair and eyes. His age was 24 years old, but his trained body and the scars carved on his body, and then the atmosphere he was clad in told Kouki that this was a first class warrior.

His features didn't resemble Spenser, but the sharpness as warrior that he could caught glances of within his eyes was exactly like his adopted father, so he could accept it if he was told that the two were parent and child.

Although Spike told him to not mind it, but Kouki's expression turned awkward due to his careless topic change where he heard that this person was an adopted child.

□Hero-sama, you don't have any delicacy! Koone think that hero-sama has no delicacy!□

□Uguuh□

□Even all of Koone's family except Onee-chan had died, Anneal's grandpa and Lilin's mother also passed away at the previous battle. Aa, it hurts! Koone and also everyone are really hurt!□

□I, I'm sorry. I have been told often how I don't have delicacy. I'm really sorry!□

□Koone is big hearted, so apology accepted. However, forgiving for "free" is just.....□

While showing her tolerance by saying that, Koone slowly held out the cup that she had drank half.

The formidable enemy of children tongue—paruru tea.

.....It seemed that her limit had came after defeating about half the content. Surely she was telling him to drink it in her place also for revenge how she was getting laughed at just now.

Guessing the intention of Koone who was holding out her cup smilingly at him, Kouki smiled wryly while accepting the cup but,

□Kouki-sama. Please don't spoil Koone-sama too much. Also, the one who doesn't has delicacy is Koone-sama.□

□Ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Annee—all, please stop stretching Koone's cheeks! Koone is whrongg! Soryyyyyy-□

Shockingly, Anneal was pinching Koone's cheeks \*mugyuu-\* with a nice smile on her face. Koone was apologizing with teary eyes while taking back the cup she was holding out.

Kouki was feeling chilly wondering whether it was okay that she laid her hands on a royalty. Lilin who was watching Anneal and Koone smilingly opened her mouth toward him.

□Anneal-san is the attendant of Moana-sama and Koone-sama since they were children, so they are practically like sisters. Anneal-san's grandpa was the art user head of the

previous generation, and he was a close aide that was heavily trusted by the previous king. My father was the direct pupil of Anneal-san's grandfather you know?□

□Linden-san was.....□

Most likely, the granddaughter of a trusted confidant was the best choice for the playing partner of sisters who were the king's daughters. The lack of reservation that Anneal sometimes showed, and the love that she directed toward Moana and Koone which was more than expected from a lady attendant must have come from that, Kouki thought.

But, there a doubt suddenly emerged. The daughter of the present art user head Linden, Lilin was as expected playing an active role as an art user. Then, why was Anneal who was the granddaughter of the previous generation art user head wasn't an art user?

Perhaps, like the combat maids that a certain demon king was placing in the side of princess Liliana to protect her while he wasn't at her side, keeping it a secret from the person herself, Anneal might be actually absurdly strong even while being a lady attendant?.....thinking that, Kouki stared at Anneal with a shivering expression.

By the way, the ten maid-san who were selected after their loyalty and ability were ascertained received special training straight from the demon king, and after that they were also getting training camp at Hauria clan's place, and their strength, inside, presence manipulation, etc. were demonically remodeled. In addition, they were armed with artifact class hidden weapons that were the demon king's quality product, if compared with the active duty knight, even alone they were at the level that could crush even enemies at battalion scale.....

Kouki who was made to realize the truth of the true state of affairs of that (or rather he was made to accompany them with training on occasion. He thought he was going to die.....) was always desperately enduring the tsukkomi that wanted to get out of his mouth when he was talking with Liliana at place like her office and so on.

‘That person who is smiling gracefully behind you right now—her inside is a hyahha person, and throughout her body is loaded with awful hidden weapons all over you know’.....such tsukkomi. ‘Their splendid conduct of diluting their presence so as to not be a distraction for their master—is actually directly taught to them by those dangerous head-reaping rabbits you know?’, he wanted to say.

Of course, if he actually said such thing then his head would go \*flop\*, so he absolutely wouldn’t say it.

Anneal who seemed to read Kouki’s question from his gaze made a wry smile while answering.

□I don’t have the talent in blessing art to the degree that I can enter the art user force.□

□I, is that so.....□

□Fufu. Your expression turn awkward again, but please don’t mind it.□

Kouki tightened his expression thinking that he had done it again. Anneal directed a kind expression to such Kouki. And then, she formed words with a gaze that was looking at a little far away.

□At the past, I also dreamed to become an art user like grandfather. One that wouldn’t falter against any kind of

harmful enemy, using that strength to repel them, protecting the royal family, my comrade, and then the people.....□

When Anneal's gaze returned to Kouki, she spoke with her cheeks reddening looking slightly embarrassed.

□For me my grandfather, was a hero.□ (TN: The word hero here in the raw doesn't use 'yuusha/the brave', but actually 'hero')

□Hero.....□

Suddenly, at the back of Kouki's mind the figure of his grandfather—Amanogawa Kanji emerged.

Kouki who was a grandpa boy idolized that person so much, he was a hero for Kouki.

He had never directly watched the figure of Kanji doing his work, but each time he came playing to his grandpa's house he asked his grandpa to tell him numerous tales of Kanji's experience as a capable lawyer.

Kanji who was a main character that done good and punished evil in his tales that was overflowing with human drama was truly the aspiration for Kouki, the "ideal image" that he someday would aim for.

□I cannot become like my grandfather, when I understood that, I was a bit, no, honestly speaking I was really down.□

□.....How, did you come to accept it in the end?□

Unable to become the self he wanted to become—he was able to imagine such shock, and the negative emotion that

welled up with it. That was exactly why he got curious. He wondered, how was she able to smile brightly right now?

□Because even though I cannot become my ideal self, life is continuing.□

Those words were calm, but nevertheless they felt powerful. In those words, there weren't resignation toward something that couldn't be helped residing in it, but an earnest will to be more positive.

Kouki was at a loss for words. For some reason he didn't know what he should say.

In the place of Kouki who had no words, Spike spoke with a gentle expression.

□I heard that Anneal-dono's ability as a lady attendant is the best. If she doesn't go outside to accompany her majesty and her highness, it's possible for her to become the head of maid even in this young age. Besides, although her blessing art's power and scale are insufficient, but it seems her detailed control is rivaling even head Linden. Her personality is also great, with a lot of people seeing Anneal-dono as the ideal woman. With you realizing your own ideal, it's very hard to catch up to you. Please, I wish that you will stop at your current charm.□

□.....Spike-dono.□

Anneal's expression became very troubled.

As though to represent her feeling,

□Spike. That's a great guts you have there to hit on Koone's Anneal in the middle of a duty! Koone think, that it's a great



guts you have there. ....Koone will report it to Spenser when we get home.□

□Wha-, Koone-sama! I, I don't have such intention!□

Spike who was starting to hastily make desperate excuse, and Koone who toyed with him half teasingly, and half seriously speaking □Koone won't hand over Anneal!□. And then, there was Anneal who was watching over that with an even more troubled look.

The occurrence of the small chaos caused the guards who were standing guard against the surrounding, preparing for tomorrow, or taking rest to watch the ruckus with half smile.

Beside Kouki who was watching while thinking 'no matter where they are, getting involved with Koone will turn into chaos huh', Lilin got closer to him and whispered into his ear in amusement.

□Vice captain Spike has a straightforward personality, perhaps because he is raised by captain Spenser. He is too straightforward that his words also came out straightforwardly, I too has thought several times before you know, is this person hitting on me? Like that.□

Kouki wondered why, he was feeling a déjà vu at this.

□He, hee.....is that so. By any chance, is there a lot of women that he do that to?□

□Right right. Exactly. Once it became a bloodbath, and at that time it finally made him became self aware that he ought to re-examine his own speech and conduct, so recently he tried to choose his words carefully, but sometimes he did this out of nowhere. Because of that, it's like the value of his needless words increased, or the vice

captain's poisonous fang toward the female who received the out of nowhere words is.....□

□That's really.....□

At the back of Kouki's mind, his ponytail childhood friend came out, pushing away his grandfather that was emerging to the surface until now. And then, that childhood friend was directing an exasperated gaze to himself.

Kouki's feeling became unable to endure that gaze for even a second longer, and unconsciously inside his heard he yelled □Right now is different! I'm properly paying attention to my action and speech! It's true!□, he repeated his justification like a little brother whose mischief got found out by the big sister. The same like Spike in front of his eyes.

□By the way, his poisonous fang is sometimes toward the male too.....□

□That way too!?□

□Kouki-sama. Please be careful okay?□

□To what!? No, I understand what you want to tell me though!□

□Currently he is still being a bit withdrawn because of his reservation toward Kouki-sama who is the hero, but vice captain's act toward male is unreserved originally, so if by any chance he is coming on to you persistently, please speak to him clearly.□

□Speaking, about what.....□

□Of course, speak your rejection. By the way as for me, if it's now I understand that he isn't actually hitting on me but, at

the time I was normally thinking "This guy is seriously annoying huh", and I spoke really harsh words to him. But vice captain only got a bit down before he immediately got back on his feet, so I wish that Kouki-sama won't mince your words, it's better if you will tell him things that you don't want to say. After all vice captain, he has a side that is a bit dull in human relationship."

Kouki shuddered in fright.

Not toward Spike's weak point (lol). But toward Lilin's words "This guy is seriously annoying huh" that came from her heart.

Lilin Stole. She was selected as royal guard's art user at sixteen, a young talented woman to the degree that she was selected to have captain status at temporary sortie. Her long brown hair that looked similar with Kouki was tied into twintail (she said it was to make it easier to feel the wind or something), her physical feature also left a bit of immaturity, so she looked younger than her age.

Her brown eyes that were attached with long eyelashes were shining powerfully with self-confidence and resolve, while she was slender, her limbs that depicted feminine curve was charming.

Looking objectively, she was a high level beauty.

That beautiful girl was saying "This guy is seriously annoying huh" while smiling brightly in amusement.....

Kouki tried to ask her with a feeling of seeing something scary.

"By the way, Lilin-san.....what did you say to Spike-san?"

Lilin who was staring in puzzlement at Kouki, without any particular shyness or intention to hide anything,

“—If you say revolting thing even more than that while we are in the middle of training, I’m going to chop up your balls you know?” was what I said though?”

“.....”

From the back of Kouki’s mind, the first wife of the demon king appeared with his ponytail childhood friend getting chased out. Her hand was in the shape of finger gun. It was beyond obvious what she was going to shoot at. After all she was the smasher who mass-produced manly woman.....

Why was it the females that Kouki were acquainted with were all totally peculiar like this he wondered.

Even his one other girl childhood friend who was supposed to be a soothing person, without noticing it when he realized she had hannya coming out on her back, and not just that when he noticed she now became able to attack at man’s vital place without any hesitation.

An unknown helplessness shook Kouki in shivers.

Lilin who seemed to perceive that shaking of Kouki to be fear, or rather from feeling creeped up toward herself then made excuse a bit impatiently.

“No, see here. I too am not someone who is normally saying something like that you know? My motto is being combat ready at all times. My hobby is training. My dream for the future is to stand in the lead of extermination battle.”

Those words that were unsuitable to be coming from a girl of her age, were words that could easily be shut out by the

current Kouki who somehow remembered of the many teaching to select his words carefully that was beaten up to him by his childhood friend.

And then that seemed to be the correct action for him to take.

Lilin proudly puffed up her chest and continued her words.

□Because, I was born for the sake of fighting. Not for being protected and also not for love, but for the sake of fighting to protect all those.□

She was born as a fighter. She was convinced of that. That was why, she didn't need words that would make teenage girl happy. If someone was going to praise her, then she wanted to be praised for the skill she had acquired, not her look. She didn't want praise for her hair and style, or her clothing or personality, but praise to her achievement of protecting something.

It depended on each person of how to feel toward those words that came from a girl in the middle of her teens. If it was people of a peaceful world, perhaps they would pity her thinking that those were sad words.

As for Kouki.....she looked dazzling to him. Of that figure that was convinced of her own existence and pushed forward undauntedly.

□Lilin-san, you are really cool.□

□Heh?□

Lilin was surprised at Kouki who gave words of praise toward herself who threatened his superior that she would chop up his balls when that superior was praising her.

Kouki praised after they were talking about Spike, so for a moment, Lilin wondered whether he was making fun of her, but looking at Kouki's expression, she immediately changed her thinking. There was envy emerging on Kouki's expression.

That was why, Lilin then,

□.....Thank you very much.□

Those were words of praise that made her happy after so long outside of the words of praise about her skill mastery and battle result from her seniors and Linden. She thanked Kouki back a bit bashfully.

□.....Hero-sama. That's a great guts you have there to make a pass on Koone's Lilin. As expected, here Koone need to report to Spenser and others that hero-sama messed around with Koone—□

□Koone-sama's possession is a lot! Or rather, I'm not making a pass to her at all! Enough with this, can I please ask you to stop speaking those words without any basis and yet can possibly become fatal to me!?!□

Koone was looking!

'While I am dealing with Spike who is making excuse, this son of a bitch is making a pass at Lilin whose age is relatively close to me and is a good friend!' That fixed stare seemed to be saying something like that!

Kouki moved his gaze at Lilin to ask for help, but Lilin was already taking a bit of distance from Kouki and she was staring at far away direction. Her secret talk to Kouki about Spike was also over, so now she hated to become a target for

that kind of talk and seemed to attempt to persist to not get dragged into it.

‘Really, there is just too many people with strong peculiarity among my female acquaintances!’ Kouki yelled that inside his heart.

But, he suddenly thought. Although Moana-sama was a siscon, a thickheaded person toward the emotion of the animal she was keeping, and some other various things, but he was able to spend warm time with her really normally.....such thought.

The positivity level inside Kouki toward Moana rose sharply.

At the same time he thought.

Toward Spike and other guards who were tilting their head saying ‘Messing around like what?’, Koone suggestively said ‘Yesterday, on the bed, with Onee-chan and Koone and Spenser at the same time, hero-sama was—’, where hearing that Spike shudderingly said ‘Not just the royal sisters, he even brought my adopted father to the bed with him!?!’. Koone was watching that with complacent smile. Kouki’s thought from seeing such Koone was,

—‘This small gangster. I’ve got to do something about her quick’

For the time being, in order to refill his paruru tea that was going to run out after a bit more, Kouki extended his hand toward the kettle hurriedly.

Next day. Just a bit before the sun reached its zenith at the sky, it came into view.

What could be seen from above a conspicuously large sand hill was a line of sand color and green color like a horizon being drawn. At the other side of the end of desert, there was a grass field spreading as far as the eye could see.

□This place is the end of desert.....□

□It's also the end of the battlefield. Fufu, hero-sama. Your eyes are opened really wide!□

World of desert—such impression was carved into Kouki's head. For such Kouki, the vast grassland where weeds were growing thickly and the verdant mountains that could be seen at far away deep in the southwest side made him couldn't help but felt moved emotionally. He was able to strongly feel it for real, that this was exactly what Moana and others were desperately protecting.

Seeing Kouki's emotional face, not just Koone, but even the guards and Anneal were letting out amused chuckles. There was even pride vaguely emerging on their expression.

Kouki who became embarrassed scratched his cheek awkwardly and asked to divert attention from him.

□Arquette is located ahead of this grassland?□

□Yes, hero-sama. At this pace we should be able to see it around noon.□

Spike's arous climbed down the sand hill in the lead.

Like that when they stepped into the grassland, Kouki felt right away as though the air changed. It was a mysterious



sensation, but it felt as though he moved from a quiet place right into the middle of a festival, a sensation of his heart boiling strongly.

Now he got it. So this was the difference between a “death land” and a “living land”.....Kouki comprehended. The mysterious sensation that felt like extending through his skin surely must be the breath of life. This was surely what it meant by a place that was overflowing with blessing power.

All the aros were also advancing with somewhat pleasant steps. They advanced in such mood for a bit less than an hour.

Just like Koone said, by the time the sun reached the zenith, they came to see a splendid protective wall that was obvious even when seen from afar.

□That’s Arcquette you know, hero-sama. The protective wall made us unable to see from here, but at the other side there is grain-producing region spreading. Right now is the time for the crop to ripen up, so Koone think that it will be really impressive to see!□

They advanced for a while listening to Koone’s information guidance. Several silhouettes came out from Arcquette’s direction. They were heading here rapidly by riding aros. It seemed the Arcquette’s side also came out to confirm and greet Koone party.

The person advancing at the lead was a female with very short blonde hair, sharp blue eyes, and domineering air. She was wearing warrior equipment and five soldiers were following behind her.

□Excuse our impoliteness in your presence. I am Arcquette’s vigilance corps captain, Ivana Borgia. We are here to

welcome your highness.□

It seemed the one who introduced herself with really clear voice was the leader of the private army of Arcquette territory. It seemed that she was a person that Koone and others were well acquainted with because Koone replied with a broad smile.

□Long time no see isn't it, Ivana! Koone came to visit!□

□Yes, it has been a long time, Koone-sama. I never thought that your arrival will be beyond fast like this, I am slightly surprised.□

Koone hopped down and greeted. Ivana also smiled gently seeing that. She gave a cold feel from her first impression, but the gaze she was looking at Koone with was very kind. She was a beauty who stole people's eye in addition with that gap too.

□There is no way we won't rush here after getting told that there is abnormality in Arcquette's land. After all Koone exist for that sake.□

□Thank you very much, Koone-sama. Now, our lord is waiting. Let's go.□

Kouki reflexively stared once more at Koone who was acting seriously. He averted his eyes when Koone looked back at him with a really nice smile while saying □Is there something?□. While feeling embarrassed from getting snickered at by Anneal and Lilin, he entered into the city of Arcquette led by the vigilance corps.

□I never dreamed that your arrival will be beyond fast like this. My greatest gratitude for this swift response, your highness.□

Koone and others were led to the reception room of the feudal lord. The people of the guard squad were standing by in another room, but only Spike, Anneal, and then Kouki were accompanying Koone.

Like that they were enjoying the tea that was served to them for a few minutes. And the first voice that came out from the mouth of the feudal lord who was rushing into the room was that.

Rothko looked like he was still at the middle of his thirty, however, he was a person that was endowed with the appearance as a feudal lord. His moderate length dark blue hair had swept back style and he was wearing a monocle. If one had to say he was slender, and from a glance one could see that he was a civil officer rather than a soldier.

Behind him there was a woman that looked lady-like, with her strong-willed eyes expression making her distinctive. Her long blonde hair was beautifully arranged, and including her bearing, elegance could be felt from her.

□Dear.....□

Rothko's arm was pulled by that woman as though to chide him. Rothko came to his sense suddenly that he was acting too impatient. He changed his expression and fell on his knee in order to perform his greeting against a royalty.

□It has been a long time isn't it, Rothko. Also Sylia. There is no need for any stiff greeting. Rather than that, please speak in detail regarding the content of your letter.□

For Kouki whose mind couldn't let go no matter what the impression of Koone's audacious behavior in the capital, as expected, he felt an intense discomfort seeing the speech and act of Koone that was really like a royalty. With a perceptiveness that was at the level of esper, Koone sent a glance at Kouki so he maintained his poker face.

Rothko smiled wryly saying "I beg your pardon" while standing up from his difficult posture. He then sat down on the sofa inside the room. Syla sat down following him.

"Hero-sama. This is Arcquette's feudal lord—Rothko Arcquette, and his wife Syla Arcquette."

"It's an honor to meet the two of you, I am called Amanogawa Kouki."

The gaze of Rothko and Syla turned toward the unfamiliar young man, so when Koone introduced him, the feudal lord couple both opened their eyes wide from hearing Koone's way of calling Kouki.

"Some time ago, there was a notification coming about the oracle that Foltina-sama summoned an existence that was called a hero but.....to think that it's true. It's an honor for me to catch sight of you, hero-dono."

It seemed that they were notified beforehand only about the possibility of the summon of an existence called hero. Rothko nodded in understanding and introduced himself politely.

In panic Kouki appealed his wish to Rothko to not act so humble toward him, and so that he called him by name.

And then, Koone told them that Kouki was accompanying her also with the objective of widening his view about this

world, and after that the talk finally touched the topic of the letter.

□Then, Rothko. The letter mentioned about the crops drying up though.....□

□Yes, your highness. We first confirmed it about a week ago when we received the report.□

According to Rothko's explanation that started after he said that, it seemed that from some time ago the growth of the crops was obviously slow. The growth of this world's plants was very fast due to blessing power. Therefore, if the growth slowed it would quickly become obvious.

Be that as it may, it was something natural, and it wasn't like there wasn't precedent of the land's fertility decreasing temporarily before. They sent report to the capital, and if they saw no improvement they would ask Koone to come, it was a problem at the level where they were allowed to deal with it leisurely like that.

But, a matter occurred a week ago where they couldn't be leisurely like that.

In an area where a gold colored carpet was spreading due to the grain plants' tip ripening, there were withering plants making it like a gaping hole was opened in the carpet of plants.....

There was no such natural phenomenon that had ever been observed until now.

It was also possible that in that place there might be < Dark Being > that was clad in miasma which caused that, but in that case there should be a track—track like a path of plants dried up without any vitality—of the perpetrator's intrusion

stretching until the center of the grain-producing region, however, such trace was nonexistent.

If it was possible, there was only the possibility of the perpetrator dropping from the sky, but in that case where was the falling <Dark Being> going to then?

Naturally, there was no trace of intrusion moving in toward the grain-producing region, so there was also no trace of the intruder going out.

Just in case, the vigilance corps searched the surrounding in full force, but they didn't find even a speck of shadow of the <Dark Being> .

While they were doing that, the dried up land was increasing bit by bit.

Because of that, if the cause of that wasn't <Dark Being> , they judged that this must be an abnormality in the blessing power, something that they weren't able to manage by themselves anymore, and Rothko reported it to the royal family and asked for help.

□I see, Koone don't get it at all!□

□Yo, your highnessss□

For some reason Koone decisively said such thing with a smug look. Rothko's eyebrows hung down dejectedly at that. Sylas's expression also turned troubled.

Koone added on her speech as though to calm down the feudal lord spouses who were like that.

□There is no precedent of such phenomenon, so Koone doesn't understand of the cause just from listening to it.

Going to the scene a hundred times! Investigating by foot!  
The matter about land can just be asked right from the land!  
And it's not like the cause really have to be known, the  
research of the cause can be postponed for later and it's fine  
if Koone just regenerate the land's blessing power for now.□

□It will be great if the land can be regenerated but.....□

'The incident doesn't occur inside this room, it's occurring in  
the actual scene!' saying that, Koone swiftly stood up and  
demanded for guide to the location. Seeing that shocking  
lightness of footwork, the feudal lord spouses, and even  
Anneal and others who should be used to Koone's attitude  
were making a really speechless expression.

As for Kouki, in his own way he secretly made tsukkomi □Are  
you a self-made detective huh!□ inside his heart. Recently,  
he felt like he had become a remarkable straight-man  
character but.....

Kouki chose to not think deeply of that.

The grain-producing region spreading at the west of  
Arquette city was turned into a really splendid gold colored  
carpet. Perhaps it was wheat or a plant that was similar with  
that. The plentifully ripe plant tip was rustling from the  
wind, the scenery of the whole area swaying rustlingly gave  
anyone watching a feeling that couldn't be described.

At place like □Ur City□, it was also near □Nort Mountain  
Range Area□, so Kouki often visited the place for monster

extermination. There was vast rice cultivation area nearby that city, so this was a scenery that he was familiar with but.....

Rather, it was that point of familiarity that was giving permeating feeling into Kouki's heart.

That was why, Kouki's eyes were fixed excessively at what he saw.

At the existences of gaping wide hole of withering crops everywhere, as though there were insect swarm chewing at those spots, or perhaps like failed work of crop circles.

The figure of the crops that lost their golden shine, rotting on the ground with discoloration caused him a melancholy that was comparable with the deep emotion that he felt before.

Kouki and others arrived at a spot that was withering in consciously larger size. At the center of dried ground in circle shape with diameter about 5 meter.

□Your highness, how is it?□

Rothko asked with a grave expression. Koone didn't answer right away, she was staring at the ground with an expression so serious that Kouki had never seen from her before. And then, she suddenly went down on her knees, and her hand softly caressed the ground as though in sympathy.

□.....Certainly, blessing power is gone from this place. It's in the verge of turning into desert. There is blessing power from the surrounding land, so even now the blessing power is flowing in bit by bit to recover the land.□



□That's.....then, it will go back to before someday even if we left it alone?□

□Yes. Koone think so.□

Rothko and Syla, and then Ivana and others, the vigilance corps members who were accompanying them sighed in relief and tension left their soldiers. Syla timidly asked.

□Does your highness understand the cause?□

Koone slowly shook her head to the side still with a difficult expression. It seemed she was saying that the cause was unknown. And then, as though choosing her words carefully, she opened her mouth.

□This way of drying up, the way the blessing power is lost. ....It's really similar when miasma poured down, and <Dark Being> absorbed the blessing power. Koone think, that it's similar.□

□However.....your highness. If this is the doing of <Dark Being> .....□

There was not a single trace of <Dark Being> being here except of the dried land phenomenon. It was as though the perpetrator suddenly appeared in that spot like a ghost before suddenly vanishing, but.....

No one had ever seen or heard about such phenomenon.

Certainly, surveillance and security were carried out at night, but this was a vast grain producing region. It was impossible to illuminate everywhere with light, because of that even if for example <Dark Being> , or perhaps something else was materializing at that spot in midnight, there was high possibility that no one would notice.

But, in that case then why was that intruder appeared and then vanished without causing anything.....

How did the intruder vanish.....

As expected, it was natural to think of this as the land's abnormality.....

Koone also nodded again at Rothko's thinking.

□For the time being, Koone will try <Regeneration> .□

If perhaps the cause that made blessing power was lost from here was alive, then the land would dry up again even after the regeneration, or perhaps Koone's regeneration power would be neutralized.

In that case, there was also the possibility of understanding something by observing that process of event.

The ceremony of Koone's heaven's blessing art <Regeneration> started with such intention.

□Those who pour old blood, Koone de Shelt Synclea pray—□

With her small body, she slowly spread out both her hands as though trying to embrace the world. Her jade eyes that were half closed and peeked out slightly seemed to stare at one point, however, her eyes also looked like they weren't looking at anywhere.

The pattern that was painted on Koone's body was increasing in brightness each time she spoke the scripture that wished for good harvest.

□—Oh great will, oh our mother. Your child offer her life.□

Gently, Koone's golden twin tail fluttered. Not because of wind, but an invisible power was whirling around her.

That power could be felt flowing into the land with Koone as the center.

□Abundant crop to the land, healing to the water, ripening to the wind, will to the fire—□

The land shined. Particles that could be mistaken as spark of golden fire rose up. The boisterously dancing particles looked as though the land was displaying its delight.

□Right now one more time, to the dead world—the power of living□

Koone's wholehearted prayer and wish revived the dying land. From below the rotting crops, a new life was budding. It was not a crops but a mere grass, but without doubt nature was returning to a place that almost turned into desert.

□Amazing.....□

Kouki reflexively whispered that. Different from simple magic or blessing art, it felt like there was something sacred from Koone's art. The age of god magic his childhood friend specialized at must be able to the same thing too, but even so, the art of the small Koone who was praying wholeheartedly was something that really compelled on his heart for some reason.

□Fufuhn, isn't that right, isn't that right! Koone is amazing!□

Kouki who was in a trance came back to his senses with 'hah' when he heard that voice that sounded so smug it sounded odious.

As expected, he saw a little girl with tremendously smug face there. She was puffing up her chest so much he wondered whether she would fall behind.

The solemn and scared atmosphere was instantly dispersed.

Kouki answered with a really complicated expression.

□Haha.....yes, it's amazing. Koone-sama is really amazing.□

□Hnfufuh. It's fine you know? It's fine to praise Koone more you know? Rather Koone won't mind even if you worship Koone! Koone won't, mind it at all!□

The princess-sama was really getting on high horse.

Kouki was feeling somewhat wanting to hit her, but seeing Koone who seemed to concentrate of the regenerated land even while getting on her high horse, he decided to praise her more for now.

Koone looked terribly in a good mood, however, her expression immediately turned serious and,

□Rothko. It looks like the land has returned to before. There is no sign of blessing power vanishing. This place need observation for a little bit more but.....□

□Is, that so..... Hmmm, just what in the world cause this..... How eerie. Although, we now understand that your highness's power can recover it. For the investigation of the cause, we will examine the land around Arquette too, but for now we can have a peace of mind. Your highness, I'm really thankful for your help in this!□

□This is Koone's role. But, there is no way we can leave alone a bizarre phenomenon of a part of land suddenly drying up,

so Koone is thinking of staying in Arquette for a while to investigate. Rothko, is there a problem with that?□

Different from with Kouki, Koone interacted with Rothko seriously without any smugness.

□It doesn't matter, I'm just a mere swordsman anyway..... the other party is a feudal lord-sama after all, there is nothing wrong at all□ Kouki consoled himself inside his heart.

□That's the best I can ask for, your highness. By any means, please stay in my mansion.□

Saying that, Rothko nodded happily.

After that, Kouki and others were treated with late lunch.

At the seat of the lunch, the son of the feudal lord spouses—Rondo Arquette (ten years old) was introduced. He was an intelligent boy with dark blue hair the same like his father, and a strong willed eyes he inherited from his mother. He had a serious personality for his age.

Although, he also had a side that was appropriate for his age. Spike and Lilin told him various heroic deeds like how Kouki was an existence that was called a hero, how using the magic of another world, in the first day he was summoned he crushed named <Dark Beings> by himself, how he fought the tag team of the soldier chief and art user head by himself and won, and so on. Hearing those stories, the eyes

that he directed toward Kouki were already sparkling, causing Kouki to plainly bear damage to his heart.

And then, perhaps seeing through the inside of Kouki's heart that was like that, Koone blabbered about things that were true and things that were false, or rather most of what she blabbered was false, and in the end, she even told Rondo about the incident on the bed, and the incident of secret midnight meeting that were already nothing but scandal, so the feudal lord spouses' expression convulsed, and Kouki desperately made excuse.....

What was the most chaotic above all, was how Rondo lad was gradually starting to look enviously at the exchange between Kouki who was turned into tsukkomi machine and Koone who was fabricating incidents looking like she was absurdly enjoying it.

No, if it had to be said without any indirect expression, wasn't that already jealousy despite his young age.....

In the end, was that jealousy directed to the princess who was getting along well with the hero,

Or else, was it something directed to the hero who was getting along well with the princess,

Thinking if it was the case of the latter, Kouki yelled with all his strength inside his heart toward the Rondo lad.

'For that kind of future, you gonna need resolve for it not just about status or position, but in various meaning y'know!' Like that.

He must not be called a good for nothing for not speaking it out loud. It was Koone-tan that was scary.....

The recovery of the land was finished for the moment, and in the preparation for the investigation that would be carried out seriously from tomorrow, Kouki and others rested their body in the feudal lord's mansion.

The time was evening.

The blazing red sun was about to sink at the west's ground. The shadow was greatly stretching to the east, the world was being dyed red.

The golden grain producing region was tinged with red color, producing superb contrast with the deepening shadow, the vibrant hue that was different from afternoon also created picturesque scenery.

There was watchtower built inside the protective wall of Arquette. Two young vigilance corps member that were charged to keep watch were looking fondly at the scenery that was always familiar, yet they never got bored to look at.

□Hey. Did you see hero-sama?□

□Ou, I saw I saw.□

□What do you think about him?□

To confirm once more that there wasn't anything unusual, even while staring at the nature's picturesque scene one of the guard devoted himself to run his gaze vigilantly around while asking that casually. The other guard showed a thinking posture for a bit before answering.

□I thought that he looked somewhat normal.□

□What an impolite guy. Should I report this to the captain.....□

□You are the one asking me. But, you also thought so right?□

□Well, he is different from my image. I thought he would be something like, someone that is more majestic or like domineering, when someone see him they are going to get  
□This person ain't ordinary!□ right away, like that.□

□Right right, from what I heard he is really strong but..... somehow he doesn't look like soldier huh.□

The two guards talked to each other about their impression that if Kouki heard them, he might reflexively shouted  
□Cannot deny that-□ with his hand pressing on his chest and his body fell on all four.

But, at that time, one of the guards raised his hand to stop his partner who was opening his mouth to say some more thing, and his eyes narrowed.

□What's wrong?□

□.....Oi, over there. I cannot see well because of the shadow, but is there something there?□

□Ah? Where?□



Both of them focused their sight.

There.

Something was there. Something black, clad in mist, a figure's—

“tsu, this must be a joke! Why here-”

“Sound the warning bell-”

The true identity that the guards saw through was an existence that shouldn't be here. Yes, something like an existence that was clad in black mist, there was only one such existence in this world.

The guard who took into his hand the hammer to ring the bell set up in the watchtower thought that in any case, he had to sound the alarm. While staring fixedly at that existence—the <Dark Being>, his hand was swung.....

“What, the.....what the hell is going on!”

The impossible sight made him stopped his arm reflexively.

Perhaps that was something that couldn't be helped.

After all, ahead of his gaze, they were appearing one after another. Like black ink that was sprinkled on the grain-producing region, spheres of miasma were suddenly materializing from empty air.

\*bo-bo-bo-\*, Deep darkness color even deeper than the shadow created by the sunset was increasing with terrific momentum everywhere in the grain-producing region. Those spheres of darkness vanished a beat later like cocoon that was shattered from inside.

What was left behind was human shaped < Dark Being> clad in thick miasma.

It wasn't just one or two. In the blink of eye, the number was increasing into a corps, no, an army scale.

□-, -!? Ring the bell quickly!!□

□tsu!!□

The guard who forgot himself recovered his senses from his partner's yell. He immediately struck the warning bell strongly as though to shake off his fear.

Their colleague rushed toward the bottom of the watchtower to inquire what was going on. The two guards entrusted their colleague to immediately close the gate, and then to inform the feudal lord.

Even during that little bit of time, the grain producing region was invaded by beings clad in miasma.....

□Aa, Foltina-sama-□

They spontaneously implored to a great existence. Their body was petrified as though they were being bound hand and foot.

That was how much their despair was.

The golden color that Arquette's grain producing region boasted of, was currently painted over with darkness color by an army of < Dark Being> .

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The story finally started to move.

Around the next chapter, I'm finally going to write combat scene.

Putting that aside, the comic version's latest chapter is published.

Oh man, Hajime-san is seriously suffering when it's turned into comic.

Who is it, who is the one that make Hajime-san suffer like that!?

Well, it's Shirakome though.....

This time the comic is also really impactful. Please read it by all means if you have interest,

Please go look at Comic Galdo in Overlap-sama's homepage!

# **Arifureta After II    The Human Called Amanogawa Kouki**

Grieve and despair, and then unease were filling Arquette territory to the brim.

Inside the city that was surrounded by defensive wall, all the members of the vigilance corps were running around to evacuate the people as well as preparing the city defense.

The chaos was deepening with accelerated speed.

But that was only reasonable.

After all this was a situation that was without precedent even through the long history—the army of <Dark Being> passed through the front line of the desert area and appeared in penetration into the rear territory, such situation was visiting this place.

The trust toward the capital, the safety of the rear territory, and then even in the case that the front line was actually breached, at the very least there would be notification that gave time for evacuation at minimum. The terror of seeing those common senses overturned like this was immeasurable.

The distorted expression of terror from the mass that were running about in pandemonium told the emotion they felt more eloquently than anything.

And then, the feudal lord mansion was similarly amidst such chaos, no, because they were grasping the situation more accurately than the mass, their state of being was even more terrible.

□Shit-, just what the hell this happen-□

□Isn't this some kind of illusion!? No matter what this is just strange!□

□How is the state of the defensive readiness progressing!? We won't hold with just the protective wall! Is the reinforcement by the art users not done yet!?□

□Is it possible to retreat!? Even if it's just her majesty we have to get her to escape.....□

□Rather than that what is the capital is doing!? Don't they notice that the enemy has circled to the rear!?□

□The enemy ain't coming here by walking don't you see□It's too optimistic thinking that the capital noticed!□

It was a wild uproar. The excellent civil officers and vigilance corps members were raising angry yell to divert their mind from the negative emotions of despair and fear.

But, at that time,

□Don't get flustered!□

An overwhelming angry yell that excelled theirs resounded.

They who returned to their senses while going ‘hah’ moved their gaze. Over there they found the figure of the feudal lord Rothko. Although his expression was grim, but his posture was calm.

As though that was the signal, the next moment, the door of the temporary countermeasure room was opened with a sound \*BAM\*. The ones who entered were Koone, Anneal, Kouki, and then several members of the guard squad.

□Rothko. Koone sent several people from Koone’s guards, especially Spike and Lilin to help with the defense preparation. The reinforcement of the defensive wall is being done by the blessing art users, you don’t mind aren’t you?□

□OF course. How is the understanding of the situation?□

□An army appeared and is surrounding us, that’s all.□

Rothko nodded.

□From the report just now, the total number of enemy is five thousand. Even now the number is still increasing. We are completely surrounded from four directions. The method of their appearance is unknown. It seems they are a mix of cow head species, scaled dragon species, eccentric species. Flying species and giant species aren’t sighted.□

□.....Calling it a small mercy, is impossible huh.□

All the <Dark Being> that Rothko reported were <Dark Being> that didn’t cross two meter. The height of Arquette’s defensive wall was around ten meter, but it wouldn’t be able to prevent the invasion of <Dark Being> that could fly of giant type <Dark Being> .

Therefore, they were able to avoid a situation where they would receive swift attack that penetrated to inside, however, the number of the enemy was too absurd to call it a small mercy.

Until the end Arquette was a material accumulation area in the rear. It more or less had protective wall and so on to be a temporary place for safe escape in the worst case that the capital was fallen.

But, in the first place the people of Synvlea wouldn't have a future by the point of time the capital was fallen. Therefore, there was no way that the existence of soldier force would exist when there was not even a mechanism like the oasis that weakened the <Dark Being> . Until the end this place only had "vigilance corps" that consisted from the common people.

To the end their role was to deal with dispute inside the territory, dealt with wild animal, and so on. So to speak their role was like police, their number also didn't reach a hundred.

Soldiers and art users who were really excellent went to the capital or the surrounding monitoring base that doubled as town, so it could be said to be only natural.

In other words, by the point of time they were surrounded by an army, there was no way to save Arquette.

Rothko spoke with a pained face.

□My deepest apology-, your highness. To invite you to this kind of mortal peril-□

□No one is able to predict this kind of situation. Rothko. Your decision from the beginning until the end is decisive and

accurate. There is no need for you to feel responsible toward Koone.□

□Your highness.....□

Perhaps it should be said, as expected from a royalty. Even in this kind of despairing situation, Koone wasn't shaken. The fortitude of this young girl who wasn't even ten years old yet made the people inside the room who were reeling to get a hold of themselves. Their expression became resolved one after another.

□Koone wish that the people can escape somehow but.....□

Koone's grim expression conveyed how she was denying her own wish with her own prediction.

In respond to that Rothko's reply was also really concise.

□It's too late for that.□

Koone quietly nodded saying □Isn't that right□.

□Then, the biggest problem right now, is whether the capital is noticing this abnormal situation or not.□

□Right. The underground vault of Arquette is tough. Right now goods are carried out from there in hurry. As soon as that's finished, we will evacuate the people inside. If we count the defensive wall, perhaps we will be able to hold out for about two days.□

□If the capital already know about this situation and they are already moving.....at the fastest it will be one day. If that's not the case and we send out messenger.....it will be about two and a half day. It will be just barely.□



In any case, they had to send messenger. The information that the <Dark Being> might be able to ignore the front line and appeared anywhere couldn't be let to stay "unknown" even in the worst case.

Even more important than calling for reinforcement, Moana absolutely had to be told about this fact.

While Koone and Rothko were discussing and deciding what they had to accomplish *at the end*, the inside of Kouki's heart who was watching that was raging.

If it was himself from a bit of time ago, they he would surely go and slaughter the enemy in high spirits. He wouldn't believe even the smallest possibility that he might die, that if it him then it was surely possible without doubt, any other circumstances was rubbish in front of the "rightness" that protected the people. Such blind belief.

(Am I, am I going to kill again? Even when with Ragar, I was like that..... This time it will be several hundred, several thousand lives? Even though they too are also just trying to live? That kind of thinking is "mistaken". No, they are seeing human as livestock. ....Then, are they evil?)

He didn't understand, the correct choice-.

Kouki looked at his own hand. His hand was trembling was because he got a hunch of his own death. Because death was terrifying.

There was no strong soldier force here. As expected, he didn't have any confidence of surviving after taking on alone an army that surpassed five thousand strong. He didn't have any convenient principle in him. He understood that he would die when it was his time to die.

At the same time, he recalled the sensation of that time.

That vivid sensation that was more than “cutting flesh”, the sensation of “cutting down life”. A single life, a path of living, that will, he destroyed it with his hand and ended it.

How terrifying. He got the flashback of those eyes of Ragar that looked empty, yet made him felt his resentment. He was assaulted by an intense urge to vomit.

(If there is an ideal method where both sides won't die, where everyone is saved.....shit-, this thinking is no good-. I'm not going to be able to choose again! The result of that, I should know it already!)

Before he realized it he gritted his teeth audibly \*grit\*.

□Kouki-sama, are you okay? Your complexion look bad.....□

The soft voice addressing him made him came back to his senses and when he turned toward that voice, there was the figure of Anneal looking worriedly at him there. When he looked even more carefully, Lilin and others had returned without him noticing. They were reporting with exhausted expression that must came from working their blessing art really hard.

It seemed the appearance of the <Dark Being> finally stopped. In the end, the total number swelled up until around ten thousand. It was already at the point where it wouldn't be strange if they started advancing anytime.

Right now everyone were discussing with each other about how to make the messenger to escape to the capital.

Koone was a royalty. What's more if Moana who had lost most of her power was excluded, she was the last royalty of

Synclea kingdom who had power left. Also looking from how <Regeneration> was an art that displayed its true ability for the revival post war, she had to survive no matter what.

Therefore, Koone had to survive no matter what happened. The messenger had to be Koone and her guard squad—that was the claim of Rothko's side.

In contrast Koone was,

□No, Rothko. Koone will be nothing more than a burden when breaking through the encirclement net. If thinking about a method of breaking through with more certainty, then the conspicuous Koone will gather attention while hero-sama and several people as guards are breaking through is the most suitable way.□

Kouki was taken aback hearing those words. Indeed, Kouki had the strength to breakthrough, and above all else miasma didn't affect him. If Koone was among the messenger party, then the group couldn't only use all their strength to breakthrough the encirclement net, they also had to spare their strength to protect Koone.

Koone's suggestion was really rational. Except the point where she made light of the preciousness of herself a bit too much.

That was why, Kouki noticed. The meaning of the resolve dwelling at Koone's side face, in that young look.

She wanted him to take away her big sister and escape—she wanted him to grant that wish, that was what Koone was saying.

Most likely, the clever Koone understood. Seeing the <Dark Being> appearing through the distance of space, the

balanced situation between the <Dark Being> and human had crumbled.

A pinpoint attack at the rear territory.

With this the soldier force of the capital would be made to send reinforcement, and their battle strength would be divided by doing that, however like that they wouldn't be able to protect what they ought to protect—like that Synclea kingdom would collapse.

Surely she was looking at such future.

Koone was currently giving up everything as hopeless, including her own life.

That was why, Koone didn't say it. In this situation, she didn't say to Kouki "fight for the sake of the people".

That was why, Koone instead said this. She said to Kouki that she "wanted him to escape". And then, if he was going to escape, please at least took her big sisters with him, so she said.

Looking at the little girl who was betting her own life to make the choice that he couldn't possibly do, Kouki was trembling in fear, at the same time he was harboring respect, and also hopelessly envious feeling toward her.

(Aa, no good. It's no good, if this girl doesn't survive. It's no good if she die in this kind of place-)

Therefore, he naturally thought like that. That was why,

□I can breakthrough the encirclement net while carrying Koone-sama.□

When he noticed, his mouth said that.

Rothko hung on that statement, Koone coldly rejected it, while the people at the surrounding directed surprised expression at Kouki altogether.

□If it's with my maximum firepower, I can cut open a path that break the encirclement net. If Arous's fastest running speed can break through the encirclement, we can breakthrough. If I also put up barrier continuously, at the very least I can protect Koone-sama while at the same time not needing to do battle to breakthrough the encirclement.□

□Oo, ooh, is that really true!?□

□He, hero-sama?□

Rothko looked delighted while Koone looked bewildered at Kouki's assertion.

Vigilance corps captain Ivana asked with a slightly hopeful expression.

□Excuse me, hero-dono. Perhaps, if that power is used toward the army—□

□.....Forgive me. To annihilate an army that is more than ten thousand, my magic power is..... The enemy will overcome me by number. Smashing the encirclement to let a few people escape is my limit.□

□Is, that so.....□

Not just Ivana, other people who thought of that “what if” scenario also got dejected and hung down their head. However, even that only passed for a moment, they

immediately recovered their former resolved expression and began to accomplish their role.

□Then, Kouki-dono. Let's quickly do the escape preparation. Your highness Koone, please take care.□

□If it's the preparation, it's already finished. We will surely report Arquette's crisis to her majesty.□

Spike nodded deeply. It seemed that he already finished the escape preparation. Perhaps he was planning to take away Koone even if he had to ignore Koone's will and brought her to escape even at the cost of his life.

□Pl, please wait! There is no way Koone can escape! If a royalty turn their back to the enemy and abandon the people, the "faith" of the whole Synclea will collapse! If that kind of precedence is created even if just one, the morale of the people won't be able to be upheld!□

Seeing the flow of event where her escape look as though it was a done deal, Koone jumped up and down \*pyon pyon\* while making objection with her all.

Indeed, the people of Arquette might despair. The royalty abandoned them and escaped by themselves. In the current chaotic situation, there was no way they would be able to calmly understand that it was for the sake to call reinforcement, for the sake of the future.

And then, if the information that only Koone and her people escaped along with the fall of Arquette was spreading, then certainly there was a possibility that morale would be affected at the battle ahead from here on.

Rothko kneeled down on one knee, and he formed words to persuade Koone.

□Your highness. In this situation, your survival is exactly the hope of us human. Indeed, perhaps this would be thought as abandoning the people of Arquette. The people of other territory might also think like that. But, I'll dare to say this instead. —That's a trivial matter.□

□.....□

□If it's the clever your highness then you should understand. The trend is already tilting. It's impossible to protect everything. Your highness, has to survive together with her majesty under the new flame of war. Who will you protect, and who will you abandon. Even if it will be but a scant of number, for the sake of "the battle so that mankind won't extinct", your highness must survive!□

□tsu□

Koone's distorted expression told with certainty how she herself understood that.

Koone lost all words.

But, at that time, one vigilance corps member rushed in.

□Report-. Enemy army, is starting to advance!□

Right after that, tremendous thunderous sound reverberated. It didn't even need any confirmation, it was clear that it was the offensive toward the defensive wall. The resounding thunderous sound that continued in succession without pause reverberated from all directions, stirring up the fear of the people whether they wanted it or not.

After a brief time of closing her eyes, Koone gritted her teeth \*grit\* and lifted her face.

□Rothko. Koone is escaping. However, please choose Rondo and two more people.□

□Your majesty, that's.....□

□If it's Koone's arous then three more people can ride it. If the protection target is children, then one or four won't change anything.□

When Koone gazed at Spike, Spike thought for a bit before nodding briskly to confirm Koone's words.

□Choose the hope of the next generation, Rothko.□

□-. Your highness is talking about something difficult. .... But, my thanks, for this kindness. I'll bring them right away, that's why, your highness please prepare.□

□Yes. ....Rothko, may the protection of Fortuna-sama be with you, and all your subordinates. Koone won't forget, the resolve and courage of all of you. Koone won't forget it, no matter what!□

□Haha, is that a farewell between us in this life? Your highness, we aren't going to get done it that easily you know?□

There was no path of survival for Arquette that didn't possess soldier force. The fastest reinforcement would come would be in two and a half day. If thinking that the reinforcement might be coming in three days, then the reinforcement wouldn't make in time without doubt as long as there was no miracle.

But, Rothko said that sentence. His subordinates were also making the same expression.



To their noble figure, Koone proudly nodded with clenched teeth.

Kouki's heart—creaked.

Was he going to abandon these people.....

Or would he murder several hundred, several thousand <Dark Being> instead?

Those questions crossed repeatedly inside him since some time ago. His thinking was going in circle and came to a standstill in the same place time and time again.

(Both human, and also the <Dark Being> , are only trying to live. Fighting, is the way of living of this world. For someone unrelated like me to interfere, surely that must be what is truly mistaken-. In the first place, against ten thousand enemy, there is no way I can win just by fighting seriously. My magic power won't hold. Even I, don't want to die. I'm not going to be able to meet with everyone like that, I absolutely don't want something like that-)

In this cornered situation, his true feeling without falsehood raged inside his heart.

Because he didn't want to kill any side, he wanted to escape without getting involved.

He didn't want to die, so he wanted to escape.

His family, childhood friends, friends, comrades, and even "that guy" who he was still feeling lost on how he should thought about him—he wanted to meet them-. Dying in another world like this and became unable to meet them agains, he absolutely didn't want that, he wanted to run-.

□Kouki-dono, Kouki-dono-□

□tsu, eh, ah, Spike-san?□

Kouki went ‘hah’ at Spike’s call and he came back to his senses.

When he noticed, he was in front of the barn where all the arows were kept. It seemed that he was unconsciously following Koone and others while getting trapped in his mind and arrived until the barn.

□Are you okay, Kouki-dono?□

□Ye, yes, I’m fine. And, how is it going?□

Kouki did his best to pretend composure and replied at Spike who was looking dubiously at him. He became expressionless from trying to do that instead and made Spike and others became even more worried, but the current Kouki had no leeway to guess that.

After all, right now for the first time Kouki was trying to do an act of “abandoning”.

The reason why he once reproached “that guy” by that much, and now, he himself was going to do it.

—\*creak\*, a creaking voice came from inside Kouki.

□.....I wish to ask Kouki-dono about the detail of the attack of maximum firepower that Kouki-dono mentioned.□

□Ah, about that. ....If I have to say it, it’s a bombardment. It release a high powered bombardment in a straight line. If I seriously attack with full strength, I should be able to create a path that pierce the encirclement.□

Kouki was half-convinced from his battle against Niebla and Ragar. His conviction must be conveyed to others. Spike nodded.

□However, it need a bit of time to activate it. It will be ideal to fire it at the same time with the gate's opening, so it will help if the gate can be opened at the same time with my signal.□

□Understood. I will relay it to the gatekeeper. Kouki-dono, we will entrust our fate to you.□

□.....Yes.□

Spike sent a messenger. In preparation of the worst case, Kouki carved the magic circle of on the saddle of all the aros so that □Divine Severance□ could be activated continuously even if he didn't continue his control, and there he poured magic power and activated it.

He poured in tremendous amount of magic power so that it could hold until the capital as much as possible. Kouki took out three tubes from the pouch on his waist. That was the last magic power recovery medicine that he brought to this world.

He returned two of them back into the pouch, and drunk one after he finished pouring magic power into all the magic circles.

And then, all the aros were taken outside the barn at the same time when he finished. Kouki and others also got out.

Thunderous sounds resounded several times, the angry yells of the vigilance corps and the trembling voices of the fearful mass pierced their ears.

—\*creak creak\*, sounds rang from inside Kouki's chest.

People came running. The son of the feudal lord—Rondo.  
Also two children he didn't knew. A girl and a boy.

Rondo listened to Rothko's words. With a serious gaze and a face that understood what was entrusted to him right now, he gritted his teeth and endured his tears from falling. Syla couldn't hold it in and embraced her son tightly. She strongly, strongly embraced tightly.

The chosen boy and girl also did their farewell with their family similarly while clenching their teeth.

It could be easily imagined that if other people witnessed this, they would come pleading "please save our family too". That was why, this farewell was carried out secretly in the cover of the barn. The crying voice of the girl echoed awfully inside Kouki's ears.

—Kouki felt his chest rumbling. He wanted to scratch and pluck his heart.

They moved the arous to nearby the east gate that would connect to the capital. They did it secretly so the eyes of the people wouldn't catch sight of them.

□.....□

The princess(Koone) who should be naïve and full of energy didn't say anything. Her expression stiffened as though she was paralyzed.

□Is the moving of the goods not over yet-□

□The vault only just got filled! Carrying all of them out takes time!□

□Move your hand if you've got anytime for talking! Get them in even if just one more people!□

Angry yells could be heard. It seemed the moving out of the goods from the underground vault was not finished yet. Naturally the people were also unable to be evacuated into the most solid place of the city.

There was also other tough buildings, and people also escaped to there too, but the street was jammed with people who were impatiently waiting for the underground vault to be emptied.

The tense atmosphere of the adult and the continuously ringing thunderous sounds, the children were screaming and crying.

—It hurt. His chest hurt. The creaking sound didn't stop.

All the arous were standing by at the cover of building. Koone and the children, and then Spike and others, the members of guard squad were also already riding on the arous's back and put their preparation in order. With Kouki's chanting, barriers of light were deployed and enveloped each arous.

Rothko and others backed away and vigilance corps members were standing by with tense expression.

A bombardment would be fired at the same time with the opening of the gate, and the <Dark Being> running rampant at the other side of the east gate would be blown away. Kouki would then jump at the running out arous and rode it, then broke through the encirclement net in one go.

The tactic's preparation was all done.

Kouki who was walking toward the front of the east gate was whispering in small voice when he realized.

‘There is no other way’, he said.

‘Even I don’t want to die’, he said.

‘I will scatter a lot of life after this, please forgive me’, he said.

‘I’m sorry for abandoning the people who are trembling in fear’, he said.

As though making excuses,

‘What I choose, is always mistaken every time.

Surely, I’m making a mistake again,

It will result in something that I cannot taken back, so.....

I’m.....

That’s why,

That’s why, even I.....

Rather than “the many whose face I don’t even know”, it should be fine for me to choose “people who are important for me” instead.

That’s why,’

□Help-□

□-!?!□

Electric jolt ran through his whole body. When Kouki noticed, he was in the middle of the street that was directly in a straight line toward the east gate. And then, his hand that was dangling down powerlessly, was pulled at repeatedly.

When Kouki's gaze moved at that direction, there was a figure of a small boy about the age of three, four years old.

□Help otou-san-□

The boy was pulling on Kouki's arm desperately. Sometimes the boy's gaze moved toward the direction of the west gate. Looking there, large dust clouds were rising up from the west side. When he focused his eyes, he could see miasma and black silhouette on top of the defensive wall.

The dust clouds might come from someone using blessing art, or perhaps the reinforcement outer wall of the protective wall—an emergency reinforcement using blessing art to make earth protrusions that were stuck on the defensive wall—was pulverized.

And then, that dark shadow that a vigilance corps member was only barely pushing off must be a <Dark Being> . Perhaps it used its comrade as stepping stool, or perhaps it crawled up using its physical strength. Kouki didn't understand, but it seemed that the defensive wall was almost climbed over.

Most likely, the father of this boy was a vigilance corps member that was assigned at the west gate. Looking at the rising up cloud dusts and <Dark Being> , the boy thought that his father was in a dire strait.

□Why, why are you asking me.....□

It was awfully hard to breath. While thinking that, Kouki asked with a scratchy voice.

□Because, Onii-chan is “hero-sama” right!?!□

□tsu, I, I’m.....not a hero.....□

□Otouto-san told me! A great person is coming to this city he said! If that person is here, surely those <Dark Being> will be no threat! Please, hero-sama! Help otouto-san-□

It was a selfish request.

A request that didn’t think of the feeling of the other person.

This boy didn’t know how just painful that expectation felt for him.

The inside of Kouki’s heart was overflowing with swearing that was him venting his anger.

A civil officer he remembered seeing before ran this way. Because this officer knew about Kouki’s role, he pulled and tore away the boy from Kouki with an impatient expression. Soon the boy’s mother also rushed toward the boy, she apologized at the civil officer while trying to take away the boy.

□Hero-sama! Help-□

The boy reached out his hand. He was asking for help from Kouki.

‘Aa, really.....’

□Hey, Nagumo. Perhaps, I really cannot change just as expected. Even though I understand just how stupid this is, I just cannot be like you.□



He whispered such thing with a voice that sounded giving up.....

□Reject all hostility and ill will-!! The absolute protection to the children of god! Here is the sanctuary, no enemy of god shall pass! —□Divine Severance□-!!□

A scream-like incantation thundered.

That was an absolute protection. The brilliantly shining proof of safeguarding.

Gleaming dome of light spread with Kouki as the center. It was spreading in a scale that was never seen before!

It penetrated through building, penetrated through people, however, it pushed back only the <Dark Beings> , a super large scale barrier was deployed that covered the whole city.

Suddenly, a dome of light that covered the sky materialized, people were looking up above their head dumbfounded. The crying voice of the children stopped still, and even the vigilance corps members stopped their hands and looked up to the sky.

The thunderous sounds attacking the defensive wall inevitably stopped. Even the great noises from the <Dark Beings> that shouldn't be damaged or anything also stopped. Perhaps that was also because of them being dumbfounded as expected.

□I'll protect them.□

□Eh.....□

It was unclear whose response was that. The boy, the boy's mother, and then the male civil officer who came to stop the

boy returned their gaze to Kouki.

Kouki looked at the boy, and then he spoke one more time.

□I will, protect everyone. That's why, it will be fine.□

□Hero, sama.....□

The boy couldn't say his words of thanks. Because the hero who said that he would protect everyone, was making an expression that looked smiling while crying.

Kouki returned his gaze to the east gate, and then he unsheathed his holy sword with \*shan-\* sound.

And then, he sent his words to Koone and others who looked befuddled at the unplanned deployment of the large scale barrier.

□Koone-sama. I'm sorry. I will stay here. I'll cut open the path, so please run through.□

□What are you saying, hero-sama!?□

Koone raised a voice that was pregnant with shock and unease. She reflexively almost jumped down from her aroud although Anneal stopped her.

□Isn't it hero-sama yourself who said that you cannot defeat this many!? Are you planning to die!?□

□.....Sorry. The truth is, I think that protecting you and delivering you until the capital safely is the "correct choice".□

□That's not what Koone is talking about-□

□Yes, but, as I thought I'm no good.□

□No good you say—□

In the middle, Kouki's way of talking became his usual casual way of talking. Noticing that, Koone's feeling was growing indescribable while she said everything she could to change Kouki's mind. But,

□As I thought, I cannot abandon people who ask me for help.□

It wasn't like he wanted to become a hero.

He didn't want, to die.

But it was impossible. Even if he was told to save the mankind, the feeling that it was real didn't really well up from inside him. When he weighed mankind and <Dark Being> on a scale, he didn't understand at all the correct side the scale should tilt toward.

However, even so.....

When someone reached out their hand asking for help in front of his eyes, calling at him with a grieving voice, it finally became impossible for him.

□I won't take no for answer. You go, Koone. ....I'll be waiting for quick reinforcement okay.□

□Hero-sa—□

Kouki glanced back across his shoulder with an expression of crying and smiling. It was filled to the brim with fear and pain, even so he couldn't draw back, wouldn't draw back.....

Before Koone could say anything,

□O god's will-, please bring about the light that annihilate all evil!□

Kouki's incantation resounded. The lifted up holy sword emitted fierce light, the people who were dumfounded from the □Divine Severance□ moved their gaze toward Kouki.

□O breath of god-, drive away all dark clouds, please fill this world with holy purification!□

A spiral of light was generated with Kouki as the center. The shining torrent that rose up as though to stab the sky made the people closed their eyes.

□O god's mercy-, with this one attack please forgive all crime!□

The light converged into the holy sword as though it was being sucked in. The noisy sounds of <Dark Beings> could be heard from the other side of the gate. They too might be perplexed from the abnormal situation.

Kouki moved his gaze toward Spike. Beside Anneal who was holding back Koone who tried to jump down even now, Spike returned a powerful gaze at Kouki and he nodded briskly.

And then, Kouki's gaze moved toward the gatekeepers. The two gatekeepers opened the gate to left and right with determination.

Multitude black shadows squirmed at the other side.

To there,

□—□Heaven's Might□-!!!□

The world was overwritten with pure white.

It was a striking torrent of light to the degree that gave such hallucination.

At the same time, the flash of light that left behind sound advanced passed through the barrier of "Divine Severance" and pierced the army of <Dark Beings> .

There was no time for them to put up defense or anything. No, even defense itself was meaningless.

The bombardment of "Heaven's Might" that was truly ought to be called the manifestation of god's will easily gouged the encirclement net like a hot knife going through butter, piercing out until the far away distance.

Before long the world that was dyed white returned back to normal, sound was revived, and while white flash was melting into empty air and vanished, seeing the path that was opened by annihilating <Dark Beings> , Kouki who trembled with his throat choked from what he had done was,

"-, GO-!!"

He yelled.

With Spike in the lead, all the arows started running with fierce momentum.

Beside Kouki who slumped down on his knee from the great expenditure of magic power, Spike, Lilin, the members of guard squad, and Anneal rushed through while saluting with tense expression.

"Hero-sama! If you die, Koone will kill you! If you don't absolutely stay alive-, Koone will make you meet terrible experience-!! Koone is-, a woman who will do what she say she is going to doo!!"

Koone left behind those words with desperate voice even after passing through him. Kouki made a wry smile at such Koone.

When push came to shove, Kouki thought of sniping the <Dark Beings> that would try to chase after the escaping party from above the defensive wall, but it seemed that the stunned state of the enemies from witnessing the unfairness of "Divine Severance" and "Heaven's Might" hadn't loosened up.

When Koone and others slipped through the last line of the encirclement net, dark being that tried to chase after them finally appeared, but at that time a distance had been opened until a range where they could shake off pursuer.

While feeling relieved that they were able to escape, Kouki took out the second magic power recovery medicine from the pouch on his waist.

One medicine remained.

This was the lifeline for Kouki, no, for Arquette during this two and a half days until three days ahead.

Kouki who stood up waved his hand to stop the gatekeepers who came back to their senses and moved to close the gate.

And then, step by step, he walked toward the other side of the gate.

"Kouki-dono! What in the world.....why are you....."

It was Rothko who called out to him. The figures of Syla and Ivana were also beside him.

□Rothko-san. This barrier, the more it receive attack the more it will become exhausted and the deployment time become shorter. With an unceasing attack from an army that surpass ten thousand, as expected it won't hold out until the reinforcement come.□

□Ko, Kouki-dono?□

□I'm going outside in order to reduce their.....no, the "enemy" as much as possible. Because even if they only concentrate their battle strength to me, the burden to the barrier will decrease. With the time I buy, please expand and strengthen the defensive wall and underground vault, and evacuate the people as much as possible even if just one person more. After that, tell Moana-sama and Koone-sama—□

□Kouki-dono!!□

It sounded like a last will. Rothko who thought so immediately cut in Kouki's talk.

□Don't, don't speak absurd. Are you planning to fight alone? Such thing is no different than suicide.□

□Certainly I'm heavily outnumbered. But, what if there is only one entrance into a city that is protected by a barrier? What if that entrance become a passage, where its width at best only allow two units that can enter and fight?□

After saying that Kouki thrust out his hand, and in front of the <Dark Beings> who began coming back to their senses, a part of the barrier in front of the east gate changed shape and became like a passage. Its width was around two meter, with length of seven, eight meter.

That unexpected action caused Rothko, no, all the people at that place gulped with shudder.

□I will be overrun right away in a fight of one versus ten thousand. But, what if it's one versus one for ten thousand times? .....I should be able to buy quite a lot of time with that.□

Kouki spoke to Rothko and others who was speechless.

□If the reinforcement come and I'm already hopeless at that time, please tell Moana-sama and Koone-sama this, □Before long the demon king might arrive. There will be salvation if there is suitable compensation for him□.□

□Why, why are you going that far.....□

Rothko noticed. That the hands of Kouki who said he was going to fight were trembling. Kouki's expression that was pretending calm appearance honestly conveyed to him that the trembling wasn't trembling from excitement or anything else.

That was why he asked that, but Kouki's answer to that was,

□.....Because, I'm a great stupid idiot, I think.□

Saying that, he walked out while smiling wryly. Rothko and others had no word to stop him.

While walking, Kouki confirmed that ahead of his gaze the <Dark Beings> were resuming their offence trying to smash the barrier. The □Heaven's Might□ just now annihilated several hundred <Dark Beings>, but if someone was looking from outside how the split sea was filled to the brim and returning back to normal, it felt only like a miniscule effort.



(.....The key is how long the Divine Severance can hold out. Rather than annihilating power, stamina for long battle is more important. In that case, it's best to refrain from using magic and only use sword skill. Even if I use magic, I should use recovery magic and not attack magic.)

He still had hesitation. Despite so, after this he was going to kill species that was trying to live. He felt disappointment from the bottom of his heart toward himself who could only choose that kind of path.

This would become a battle where he was greatly limited. If he used attack magic it was inevitable that he would run out of strength first, If he didn't use attack magic, then painful battle would continue several hundred, several thousand times.

Perhaps, he would die. It was terrifying, terrifying, that his hands wouldn't stop trembling. \*clack clack\* The ringing sound was the sound of terror that his teeth were playing.

But, his feet didn't stop.

His mouth said "protect" naturally.

His body headed toward the battlefield, as though he was being controlled. Behind him were people with no strength to fight.

Even though the inside of his head was messed up, only the will of "have to protect" was resounding strongly inside him.

Going out into a battlefield without even any clear resolve, just how many times he had failed because of that? Just how many mistakes he had made because of that? Kouki's calm part was yelling at him if he was going to repeat the same mistake again.

□.....Surely, I'm going to regret this.□

The same like all the time until now.

□.....But□

But, there was only one thing that was different from everything until now.

□.....I'm risking my life. I'm not running away.□

Staring straight ahead, he crossed the gate. One step short from the □Divine Severance□. Enemy already entered the passage. Kouki signaled the gatekeepers to close the gate. The gatekeepers saluted with face that almost burst into tear before they started closing the door.

□.....This is scary. I don't wanna.....□

But, he didn't hesitate. He didn't know if stealing the life of a lot of <Dark Beings> was the correct thing, but at the very least, the human called Amanogawa Kouki, wasn't able to brush off the hand of a children asking for help, so.....

That was the only thing that he was absolutely unable to do.

Kouki dispelled a part of the barrier that connected to the passage that was created from □Divine Severance□. He instantly stepped in using "Ground Shrinker", and without even letting it react, he diagonally slashed the <Dark Being> at the front.

A vivid sensation was conveyed to his hand, urge to vomit rose up, and the inside of his chest felt sharp pain.

He forcefully repressed all those, and toward the discomposed <Dark Beings> , Kouki was.....

He took a deep breath, and with a voice that could reach all the enemy surrounding him—he howled.

□Your enemy is right here-!! If you want Arquette-, try to kill me-!!!□

In order to gather attention and raise the curtain, Kouki's last favorite technique that might be appearing for the first time in this battle—□Heaven Soaring Flash□'s shining slash bisected the enemy inside the passage while piercing through until the rear.

Kouki who was walking until the middle of the corridor made his holy sword shined while readying it in front of his eyes.

A beat later.

The <Dark Beings> rushed all at once toward the person who was overreaching by trying to face an army alone.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Serious's turn is continuing.

I want to run away-, I want to make merry and forget my trouble-, I want to throw in outrageous scene one after another-

But, the serious will continue for a bit more.

Sorry 'kay!

Also recently, the chapter continuously is more than ten thousand characters.

I'm thinking to curb it to 6000~8000 as much as possible but it's not really going well.....

Everyone, please rest your eyes properly.

You see, Shirakome eye recently keep twitching \*piku piku\*.....

Next chapter's title, In the Point between Life and Death

# Arifureta After II In the Point Between Life and Death

Just how long he had been fighting already?

He had no sensation of time. The sun had sunk really deeply ahead. The radiance of [Divine Severance] was illuminating the surrounding of Arquette, but deep inside the grassland where light didn't reach was completely dark.

\*rustle rustle\* Great number of presences could be felt from the surrounding. In addition, the consumption speed of [Divine Severance] was decreasing quite much. It seemed that it went as he expected, rather than attacking the barrier, the <Dark Beings> were more eager to remove the culprit that was deploying and maintaining that barrier.

While thinking about things like whether this raised the survival rate of Arquette even by a little, Kouki tried to recall the expression showed at the end by Koone and others who might be rushing toward the capital with their all even now—

[Just die alreadyyy-!!]

[tsu!?

The angry yell that sounded like curse made Kouki returned to his senses right away. It seemed his concentration was cut off for a moment.

In front of his eyes was a bull headed <Dark Being> that boasted super large build of two meter. Above its head there were two horns that looked like could kill human using just them, the Dark Being's blood colored eyes were shining glaringly, while its hand was holding a large sword that looked like thick Chinese cleaver.

That weapon was swung down along with a violent wind.

The holy sword that was raised without delay produced \*ZUGAN-\* sound that was impossible to be produced from the sword attack between fellow normal humans.

Although Kouki let go of the impact through his arm and knee, he held his breath □guh□ reflexively, however, at the next moment he sent a kick at the knee of the bull head species, snapping the knee into ' < ' shape and broke his balance.

The created opening was fatal.

When the bull head species resisted from screaming and tried to retake his balance, the holy sword was already drawing an arc and got sucked into his neck.

Without even minding the neck that flew away like a joke, skeleton soldiers that were of eccentric species—the so called Skeleton—leaped out from the left and right of the bull head species.

The Skeletons' weapon was their very body that was formed from bones. Both of their hands were abnormally long, and their fingers were sharp like claw. The bone starting from

their arm until their pinky grew thin and became a splendid sword hand when it was swung.

□You monster-□

□Perish!□

Kouki had never even imagined that a day would come when he got cursed at by Skeletons as a “monster”.

Kouki pulled back his body slightly while knocking down altogether the sword hands that were thrust at him from both sides. The other hand of the Skeletons sprang up as though they had predicted that.

They unleashed simultaneous attack with matched breathing as though they were mirror reflection of each other, however, Kouki whose reflexes was superior smoothly dodged and unleashed two consecutive attacks as counter.

The heads of the Skeletons danced in the air.

□Got you-□

A strong spear was thrust through the gap between the bones of the collapsing skeleton. It came from a scaled dragon species behind the skeleton. The sharp thrust that although didn't match Ragar but it was by no means inferior, was stopped by the grip of Kouki's hand.

□Wha-□

Ignoring the voice of shock, when Kouki pulled the spear strongly toward himself, the scaled dragon species instinctively tried to hold his ground. However, Kouki's physical strength didn't allow that. The Dark Being was

unable to stand firm and stumbled forward, and the holy sword was thrust into his throat.

Along with a vivid sensation, a hard to describe groan "Gube!?" prickled Kouki's ears. At the same time, the overflowing blood splattered dirtily on Kouki's shoulder stickily.

Although, it was meaningless to pay attention to that. After all Kouki's whole body was already dirtied by blood spurt from enemies. His state looked tragic.

The number he had defeated wasn't just several hundred. The <Dark Beings> he had defeated might already reach a thousand. The defeated <Dark Beings> were thrown away to the back by the hands of other <Dark Beings> themselves as though to say that they were in the way.

It seemed that <Dark Beings> almost held no sympathy to other species except to their own underling, so there were also several scenes of falling out between Dark Beings because the other treated their underling's corpse rudely but.....

Currently, it seemed that their head was filled to the brim of who would be the one to defeat the abnormal warrior that couldn't be defeated at all no matter how long the battle was continuing.

Both Ragal and Niebla put importance at achieving meritorious deed.

At the era after <Dark Being> ruled over the world, meritorious deed was necessary in order to make the status of their own faction a firm one. For them who were carrying out the principle of supremacy of strength and the survival of the fittest for real, the meritorious deed of defeating the



warrior with strength that could protect Arquette continuously by his lonesome must be exactly the same like “pillaging great treasure”.

Kouki thought. He thought that it was something he was thankful of. Because the more they focused on himself like this, the more the burden to the barrier decreased and as long as Kouki’s magic power was holding, then the protection toward Arquette was a sure thing, he thought.

Intense pain ran through his ankle sharply.

□I, caught you-□

One of the skeletons before this moved his hand even after losing his head and his claw was digging into Kouki’s ankle. Looking at the thick miasma flowing from his head and coiled around his body, most likely he was moving his body remotely even now when his head was sent flying.

Seeing how the red light was almost vanishing from the skeleton’s eye sockets, perhaps this was his very last act that he unleashed with all his strength.

Right after that, Kouki’s field of vision was blanketed by barrage of miasma swords.

He swung the holy sword and deflected, deflected deflected deflected deflected!

□tsu, kuh, aAAAAAAAAAAAH□

The tremendous amount caused Kouki to raise a roar when he noticed. He swung the holy sword with all his strength and slipped through the barrage of death. The last act of the Skeleton was certainly effective. His wound dulled his

footwork, and Kouki was forced to focus his undivided attention into defense using his sword skill by necessity.

The miasma sword that he couldn't handle, or he purposefully neglected in order to avoid lethal wound created countless small wounds all over Kouki's body. Small sharp pains stimulated Kouki's consciousness from throughout his body, as though his body was giving alert messages.

The barrage that he thought might be continuing for eternity stopped still.

He shook off the claw that was still grasping his foot and then he tried to chant recovery magic, but <Dark Beings> pushed and shoved each other and charged toward him.

□He is wounded see-, now-□

□Kill-, Kill-, Kill-!!□

□tsu, shit-□

Even while swearing out, Kouki desperately slashed his holy sword and cut down the enemies.

What entered his ears were only words that wished for his death, or vilification, or voice of resentment that even resembled curse.

That was natural. Just how many <Dark Being> he had killed already. Right now he was a sworn enemy for them, a bitter enemy that had to be killed no matter what.

Even though he understood that, even though he understood that he had not the slightest qualification to think about such thing, but his heart was growing cold. It

felt like his heart was getting torn from his body as much as he killed, as much as he almost got killed.

The sensation of cutting flesh, the feedback of bone severed, the blood spurt showering him, the more he got used to them, it felt like he was getting farther from being human—becoming a “monster” just like what they screamed at him.

□ZEAAAAAAAAH!!□

□Gaah!?!□

A loud scream of fighting spirit burst. Right at the next moment after that, he felt heat on his flank.

Although he barely dodged instinctually, his side was lightly gouged. If he was late in evading just by a moment more, it would be a fatal wound. Cold sweat trickled while he pierced the enemy’s heart with a returning slash.

The sensation of the shadow of death steadily creeping near was invading Kouki’s heart.

From before this there was moment when his concentration cut off and his thought was diverted. It was the proof of exhaustion. Mental exhaustion was accelerating the physical exhaustion.

Honestly speaking, the time was already past late at night. It was enough to call his stamina as unworldly.

But, even so, the time limit was approaching him.

Kouki scolded himself, that it was too early. He wasn’t holding out for even half a day yet. If he spouted out big talk

like “protecting”, then it was still too early for him to collapse.

□—□Heav—□

□Become the offering of our species-!!□

He tried to chant recovery magic, however, he was obstructed by <Dark Beings> whose fighting spirit wasn't withering even for a bit no matter how many hundreds he was defeating.

‘This is bad’, his unease grew violent. If he shed blood, then his stamina would decrease quickly by that much.

He recalled his experience of chasing after monsters of Holy Precincts by continuously wandering for three days at □Northern Mountain Range Area□ without taking rest or meal. With the body of hero, such recklessness was possible if he at least made water to drink using magic.

But, nothing could be done if he shed too much blood. Recovery magic couldn't go as far as recovering the lost blood too, his thought would dull and his body would get exhausted easily the more blood he lost.

And, at that opening when he recalled his reckless adventure at Tortus like that, this time it was his shoulder that was lightly sliced.

Seeing his thought getting diverted again, Kouki gritted his teeth while continuing to kill one, and then one more enemy.

(Shit-, damn it-. What the hell me-, am I just this much-. You are a hero aren't you! You should be able to still go on! Don't think about unnecessary thing-. Just concentrate! You said that you are going to protect right!)

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Slashed.

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Gouged.

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Punched.

With his wounds still unhealed, his wounds were gradually increasing.

Seeing such Kouki, the expression of the <Dark Beings> who were attacking while stepping on their compatriots was showing slight ecstasy that said "We will overcome him at this rate".....

"Kouki-dono"

At the same time with such call, Kouki's body was enveloped in faint light.

When he looked back across his shoulder after sending flying one enemy in front of his eyes, Ivana and several vigilance corps members' figures were on the defensive wall of eastern gate looking like they were going to cry.

One of them was offering a prayer wholeheartedly. He must be using blessing art of healing.

Pain was receding gradually from his body. The little wounds other than his ankle, side, and shoulder were healing in visible progress even if slowly.

"Two third of the citizens had been sheltered-. In order to evacuate the rest, we are expanding the space right now"

It seemed that more than half of the citizens could be evacuated into the underground space. If he could buy more

time like this, then perhaps all the citizens could be evacuated into the tough shelter.

Kouki made a small smile.

□Please retreat for the moment! With the exception of the vigilance corps members that are essential for the evacuation, we will hold that place with all our force! At this rate-, you will-□

Ivana pleaded at him to take a rest.

But, he couldn't do what she said. Because the vigilance corps' strength was insufficient to be entrusted with this battlefield. If such thing was possible, then from the beginning he would have told them the strategy of taking turn.

The vigilance corps members weren't soldier. Even if they had the will for it, but their talent didn't permit them to fight. Just like that Anneal. They themselves should understand that.

At present, this blessing art of healing too, if this was performed by the art user of the capital, then his ankle, side, and shoulder's wound should have recovered completely already. The face of the vigilance corpse member who was using the art was distorted in frustration seeing how slow Kouki's wound was healing.

And so, that being the case, they must be trying to buy time for Kouki to rest exactly with the resolve of being annihilated to the last man.

That was why, he couldn't entrust it. He couldn't entrust this battlefield to them.

□Here is my battlefield! I won't entrust it to you all!□

□That's.....□

Ivana's expression warped in grief.

While signing the enemies to oblivion, however, the feeling of Ivana and others who tried to be his strength somehow saved Kouki's heart.

□Haah!!□

□Guah!?!□

□This guy-, still!?!□

An attack with all his strength blown away two enemies altogether.

Using that opening, Kouki filled his voice with dominating aura and sent out his words.

□I can still fight! That's why—please back me up. Even if just healing me continuously help me a lot! When I give the signal, arrow or blessing art or anything is fine so attack the front line at that time!□

If he could make an opening even if just a little, he could heal large wound at that time. He could also create water ball using magic and replenish his rehydration. With the blessing art's healing, he would be able to not get bothered from small wounds.

Although Ivana and others were stunned for a moment from Kouki's words, they immediately made a determined expression. Even they had something they could do, they

could be useful for the protector who was standing alone in the battlefield. Those facts encouraged their heart.

□Leave it to us-□

The voice of the trembling Ivana resounded.

Kouki roared while staring at the endless attacks.

□I won't withdraw no matter what-□

He wondered how much time had passed since the vigilance corps were starting to back him up.

Kouki who was continuing to fight determinedly didn't notice that the backup had stopped abruptly before he knew it.

He already had no composure to look back, his consciousness was half hazy. Therefore, he couldn't even confirm that Ivana and others were already spending their strength from using art until their life was at risk.



Also, the matter when Rothko and others tried to make Kouki retreat to the shelter which he then refused was also already far beyond at the corner of his memory.

Rothko and others persuaded Kouki that if they bought time using the defensive wall and the underground warehouse, then Kouki would also be able to rest enough, but Kouki judged that doing that was impossible.

The defensive wall could be climbed over by the <Dark Beings> physical capabilities and by using each other as stepping stone as had been proved at the beginning. If someone was overcome by the creeping up <Dark Being> then they wouldn't be able to buy enough time.

And above all else, if he went into rest right now.....

Kouki had no confidence at all that he could stand back up again before the underground warehouse was destroyed. With his extreme exhaustion, once his tension and fighting spirit were loosened up, they wouldn't come back to normal easily. He wasn't able to deny the possibility that he wouldn't be able to move satisfactorily or that his consciousness would keep sleeping.

He feared that above all else.

That was why, in order to not let them come toward him in order to take him back, he cut off his own path of retreat.

If they came until here, then even if Kouki created barrier behind him, the <Dark Beings> wouldn't care.

They would only kill Kouki.

They would bring certain death to this sworn enemy that was a threat that couldn't be finished off with an army even

now. Right now, rather than bringing down Arquette, removing this abnormality standing in their way was far more important.

Kouki mostly didn't even reply, he was merely showing his will using his action. Rothko and others were shedding tears while continuing to pray earnestly while lamenting that it was the only thing that they could do.

One time the "Divine Severance" almost vanished and he drank his last magic power recovery medicine, but Kouki had no remembrance at all of doing that. He used the medicine from his subconscious sense of danger.

The backup stopped, he was already at a point where taking rest would lead to death, he had also used up his recovery method. He was merely swinging his sword toward the threat before his eyes.

Before he noticed, Kouki was inside a mysterious sensation.

The resenting voice and angry yell of the enemies became unclear and muffled as though time was slowing down, every single movement of them were also slow as though they were moving underwater.

However, that didn't mean that Kouki was speeding up.

Kouki himself was also feeling heaviness coiling around his whole body as though he was underwater. Just like how the opponents were slow, he was also slow.

Inside the world where everything was slow, however, it was only his thought that was strangely getting clearer.

Everything that happened until now was passing through his mind naturally.

If there was a third person, they might say that it was a revolving lantern phenomenon, but Kouki didn't realize that and he abandoned his thought into the emerging memories.

What emerged first, was the first person he encountered in this world.

—Kouki, is really kind huh

He yelled back angrily when he was told that. When he thought back now, it felt like he had vented his anger at that beautiful and strong queen a lot.

For some reason he easily exposed the deep part of his heart that he normally repressed to her. For some reason every single word of hers resounded in his heart and he became unable to keep up his façade.

—At the very least, that feeling of yours that think about other is “right”. I will assert that

Even though he only came in contact with her for a short time, she was always giving affirmation to Kouki. Even though he actually had weakness and complex, the words that she gave to Kouki at the end were always kind.

(The feeling of wanting to save, wanting to protect—is right. If you assert that, then is it okay for me to think that the fight I'm doing right now is “right”?)

He pierced the heart of the bull head species in front of him, then using the holy sword that he pulled out while turning around, he lopped off the head of the scaled dragon species beside him. While bathed in blood spurt, the next memory that emerged was the little sister princess with strong peculiarity.

—Rather than the many that Koone loved, Koone treasure my only dear family

Just like “that guy”, rather than the many people with unknown face, she would pick the person that was important to her. While condemning herself that she had no qualification to introduce herself as a royalty, even so she yelled that she wouldn’t yield.

Even though she was in a position that was far more significant than himself, but that way of living that spoke of such thought without hesitation, he harbored much envy toward it.

(Surely, as a royalty.....that is “mistaken”. Picking a choice of not making use of me is a “mistake”.)

Then, was that girl “evil”?

Kouki didn’t think so. Because, that child, wasn’t she resolved to die?, he thought. In exchange of making her big sister as priority, wasn’t she resolved to receive everything by herself?, he thought.

Then, in the first place, just what was a “mistaken choice” then.

As though to pierce the emerging question, a conspicuously large Skeleton lunged with a sharp hand sword and lightly gouged Kouki’s cheek. Without even minding that, Kouki

grasped tight the Skeleton's head in an eagle grasp and smashed it into the ground, he then pulverized the head further with a step of his foot while diagonally slashing a second bull head species.

In the interval of blood splash, the people of the capital were floating like illusion.

—There were husband and wife who fought in order to let anyone ate kukuri.

—There was a young man of the weapon shop who spoke of his dream that the weapon he made would help the soldiers.

—There was a ferryman who would rush around the battlefield transporting soldier in emergency.

Everyone wasn't thinking things like "no matter what we do, it's already impossible anyway" in the slightest.

That wasn't optimism, but a determination to accomplish the resolve of opposition. If the path that they picked rolled to a bad direction, wouldn't that decision make their important people unhappy.....such unease, it didn't look like they were harboring such feeling in the slightest.

At the very least, they weren't people who would stop walking because of that.

(When I asked if they feel scared, everyone said the same thing—that they are scared. And yet, everyone smiled when saying that. Because that's something that they decide themselves they said.)

A huge spear made from miasma was flying near clad in wind of miasma like a tornado. When he tried to knock it down forcefully, Kouki's foot slipped. He couldn't raise his

blade, and even though he knocked down the spear, it caused pain on his wrist.

He became unable to stand his ground. The hand that swung his sword was starting to shake from a reason other than fear—exhaustion. He felt something that chilled his heart from death that was approaching him one step closer.

—Because, I was born for the sake of fighting

A younger girl who declared the meaning of her birth with pride in her heart.

Her way of living that believed there was no mistake in her path, he felt much envy toward that.

—For me my grandfather, was a hero

Becoming like the idolized hero, having things went ideally.....was impossible, such fact was thrust before her, however, she said □Even so life is continuing□ with a smile. She found what she could do, and built up herself to be more than top-notch.

(Aa, come to think of it, I thought of Jii-chan for the first time in a while huh)

Finally, the holy sword was deflected. Until now, Kouki's attack that finished off most of the enemy in one swing finally defeated the enemy after two, three slashes.

Enemies that were observing Kouki's movement at the rear must also be starting to get used to Kouki's movement. But, more than that, his pure strength and speed were decreasing.

The dragon scaled species that he sent flying raised a warbled cry and stood back up. Beside it, this time the illusion of his grandfather—Amanogawa Kanji appeared.

—Kouki can become anything, you can do anything

That was Kanji's answer toward young Kouki who was asking him 'Can I perhaps become like Jii-chan?'.

'Really?' When Kouki asked that,

—Really, I told you. That's why you are named Kouki (TN: Kouki means brightness or splendor)

Name is the representation of body. That's why,

(The path that Kouki decide and advance through by yourself, will surely shine bright..... I have forgotten that all this time huh. Jii-chan's words) (TN: The word shine bright here use the exact same kanji like Kouki's name)

\*GON\*, graphic sound of bone breaking resounded from Kouki's body. The tail of a scaled dragon species sunk into his side. Without even being conscious of it, Kouki breathed out \*kahah\* while letting out a thrust at the nape of the scaled dragon species.

At last he received a damage that was hard to be overlooked. Even Kouki whose natural recovery rate was high couldn't immediately heal broken bone without magic.

Perhaps seeing the limit of strength of Kouki whose body was staggering, the <Dark Beings> showed expression of wild joy.

But, in contrast to the fierceness in the outside world, Kouki's inside was really calm. Quietly, but surely,

something was connecting inside Kouki.

The many encounters, his experiences until now, the many worries, all of them were connecting in the middle of this extreme situation.

The girl childhood friend who brought him back even by hitting him yelled at the back of his mind.

—It shouldn't be like this? Something like that is obvious! There is no such thing like a life that will go as you want! Everyone, they gritted their teeth and endured, they held their head in worry, but they will say “even so” and then keep at it!

That's right huh, exactly like that. Even the people of this world, everyone is the same.

—If your path is mistaken, then punching and stopping you is the role of best friend right?

Aah, that's right. Just what is it I'm scared about? If I'm mistaken, you will punch and stop me, and yet

—Liar

Aa, Eri. It's exactly like you said. I'm a liar.

At that day, at that time, at that place, I indeed told you “I'll protect Eri”, and yet.

I believed that by making the choice of “protecting”, it was over just with that.

I believed that I had saved you just by stopping you from jumping down.



Even though there is no such thing like a life that will go as one wanted.

Even though life will continue even then.

Even though you were still going mad, and kept asking for help the whole time.

That's right.

I was always, finishing with just "choosing".

Even though what is truly important, is the "after choosing".

That's all there is to it.

Whether that choice is right, or mistaken, there is no way to understand because we cannot see the future.

I was frightened against such trivial thing, said thing like "I cannot believe myself", and in the end, I hesitated in even choosing.....

\*GOU\* The atmosphere roared.

Kouki went 'hah' and his consciousness returned from the mysterious world of thought back to reality, and he became aware of the huge bull approaching before his eyes. The combat bull created from muddy black miasma was so big it filled the whole path with its body.

If it was Kouki who still had spare strength, he would be able to thrust his holy sword and destroy it.

But, his flesh that already welcomed the limit had insufficient strength to meet that charge.

□Gahah!?!□

Although he barely evaded just the combat bull's horn, his torso got hit by the headbutt and he was sent flying. The impact that made his body felt like it would come apart shook his consciousness. Air was forcefully expelled from his lung and he couldn't breath.

He wrung out his willpower, thrust down the holy sword and defeated the combat bull, but he couldn't stop from falling on his knee.

Thinking that this time was the end for sure, the <Dark Beings> rushed forward like a flood in order to raise distinguished service.

The eyes of Kouki who raised his face weren't focused as though his mind was hazy. His blurry sight could see the approaching <Dark Beings> raising war cry in slow motion.

(Is it the end.....in this kind of place.....)

Even though, I found the answer.....

He finally understood.

In feeling, wish, prayer, there was no such thing like mistake.

If one was serious, then everything was the real deal, what was important was sincerity.

After choosing, one must not run away from that feeling. One must not avert their eyes from the wish. One must not give up praying. That was the true battle.

Even though he finally understood.

(Will it end, without me unable to protect?)

‘I’ll protect everyone’, he said. Toward the young boy, toward the feudal lord who thought about his people, toward everyone of the vigilance corps.

(Will I, lie again?)

Because, I have done my best? Because I risked my life? That’s why, it’s fine even if I give up already right?

(Don’t-, screw around-!!)

□aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

□tsu!? You bastard-!□

The large sword that was swung down by a bull head species was deflected back by the holy sword of Kouki who was screaming as though his throat was going to burst.

‘Just where in the hell such strength is coming from’, the expression of the bull head species was cramping with such meaning that could easily be understand despite his grotesque feature.

(Fight-, fight-, fight!! You want to protect even if you have to kill them aren't you! You chose that right! Then fight-)

He scolded himself.

Something snapped inside Kouki. It was a feeling that he had tasted several times, however, Kouki had no leeway to pay that any mind.

But, if he could see his status plate, then he would surely notice that there was one addition of derivative skill there.

—Limit Break's special derivation War Demon

Originally, Limit Break raised up the whole specs by several times along with the increase of magic power, but this <War Demon> didn't have magic power increase. His specs also didn't increase. However, no matter how broken up the body was, the magic power inside the body would be used to reinforce the body as though it was replacement for plaster cast, and the user would only continue to fight intently with this special derivative skill.

Because it was almost like a self-destructing technique, almost nobody was awakened to this skill.

This was the crystallization of feeling that bloomed exactly because Kouki's heart shouted in this extreme situation.

That scream was,

—Fight! Fight! To the end of that choice, following your wish, fight until this body become trash!

□oOOOOOOOOO-!!□

□Thi, this monster-□

For the first time since the beginning until now, the < Dark Beings> were backing away. The loud pressuring scream and fighting spirit that could only be described as ghastly almost swallowed them up.

(My body, is moving-. I can still, fight-)

He didn't understand why his body was moving.

But, such thing didn't matter.

(Step in, more. Look at the whole. As long as they aren't a beast, the movement of human body is mostly decided!)

More efficiently. To the necessary place, at the necessary time, using the necessary strength, accurately.

'That was what you were taught right', he told himself.

(.....Aa, so I forgot even this kind of thing)

His memories of until now that flowed in like revolving lantern. The things that he forgot, that he lost sight of were resurrected.

He learned the sword style of knight because he was the hero of the kingdom. However, there was the sword that he learned side by side with his childhood friend farther in the past. Caught by his position as hero and his mistaken impression, or perhaps because of his guilt of betrayal, he buried it at the bottom of his heart all this time.

A bull head species swung down a large sword.

If it was the him so far until now, he would use his specs as hero and deflected back the attack. But, he already didn't have the spare strength for that so.....

The moment he received the opponent's sword, he averted the sword attack using the shift of his wrist, and at the same time he changed the hand holding the sword to his other hand and cut up.

—Yaegashi-style sword art Otoha Nagashi (TN: Sound Blade Flow)

The name was because the moment the sword attack was averted, two swords scraping against each other produced a clear tone.

The bull head species didn't feel any recoil from his sword, and when he noticed himself was already cut with his life ended, his eyes opened still.

A scaled dragon species unleashed a mowing down attack using a huge spear.

If it was before, he would knock down the attack or dodge.

Now he kept the point of his sword pointed straight while shifting his upper body, however, he didn't retreat but stepped forward and thrust the sword.

—Yaegashi-style sword art Kasumiugachi (TN: Haze Pierce)

By shifting the distance perception using the upper body's back and forth movement and shoulder's motion, the huge spear's horizontal mow ended up striking empty air. The scaled dragon species whose eyes were opened wide lost his life with his last sight being an attack that looked like three thrust unleashed at the same time.

A Skeleton came lunging using his sword hand.

If it was before Kouki would meet the attack using his holy sword.

He grasped the sword hilt with one hand and made the skeleton floated in the air using a twisting throw and body movement.

—Yaegashi style martial art Kyourai (TN: Mirror Lightning)

This technique threw the opponent using Aikido move and then attacked while the opponent was midair. But, this time it was used to hold back a second Skeleton, and the moment the two Skeletons collided, he mowed down the two altogether using his holy sword.

The kingdom's knight sword art wasn't bad by any means. Rather, a transcendent ability and the knight sword art—especially the strong sword style of Meld Logins had good compatibility.

But, for his current self whose specs were degrading.....the ancient martial arts of Yaegashi-style that he learned for a long time, a style for the sake of “the weak overthrowing the strong” was the most optimum.

Not relying on physical strength to the utmost of his ability, not burdening his body, while getting the better of the enemy using technique.

Because of the strange movement that was different from before, the <Dark Beings> could be seen clearly that they were perplexed.

(Although, it's hard doing it with western sword. How long I can fight while being conscious? Can my consciousness last—)

Kouki was concerned with the feeling of discrepancy that came from using Yaegashi-style with a weapon that wasn't katana, but.....

At that moment, the holy sword was enveloped in faint light.

The <Dark Beings> were on guard wondering what Kouki was planning, but Kouki's feeling of amazement was more than what they were feeling.

Kouki reflexively closed his eyes toward the holy sword that was enveloped in light despite him not doing anything. He couldn't even see the sword blade because of the light.

If the time was counted it was only several seconds.

Before long the light settled down. And there,

□Ka, katana.....□

Yes, the holy sword changed shape. Although there wasn't wave pattern on the sword blade, but what was there was certainly a katana with single edge and curving shape. Looking closely, when he noticed even the sheath had changed shape.

□Ha, hahah□

A smile emerged on his mouth unconsciously. The figure that was bathed in blood spurt and yet looked smiling looked gruesome that even the <Dark Beings> looked backing away.

But, Kouki didn't even pay attention to that.

(Come to think of it, no matter what happen you keep lending me your strength huh)



Even if he let go of it, it would come flying if he raised his hand. Even when he tried to return it, it flew to him by its own will. Even when he got carried away, even when he was a betrayer, even when he was lost, it never forsook him and continued to choose him as its wielder.

And then, now it even changed shape to respond to Kouki's wish.

'Aah', he thought.

His consciousness was still hazy, and everywhere in his body was screaming, however.....

□There is a holy sword(partner) in my hand. Then, there is no way, I'll lose□

If he was defeated, his holy sword(partner) might fall into enemy's hand. Only that he wouldn't allow.

He found one more reason to fight.

He suddenly noticed. Without him knowing, there was a sun ray alighting down from the sky. From the gap of the cloudy sky, the sunlight looked like a stair that was continuing to heaven—it was likely that the morning sun was shining in.

The night, had ended.

Seeing that, Kouki's smile deepened further and,

□If you choose the path of survival then I won't pursue. But, if you choose to fight—□

Slowly he put the holy sword into the sheath, and he lowered his waist. His hand, was still touching the handle loosely.

□I won't ask for forgiveness. I will.....kill you all until I perish.□

A tranquil fighting spirit, and grand words of resolve, spread through the battlefield.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This might be, a story where the heroine is the holy sword.....

Next time, the reinforcement arrives. What they will see there is

PS

It seems that comic version of Arifureta entered the Top 30 of Nikoniko's first half of the year ranking.

This too is thanks to everyone who read it! And then thanks to RoGa-sensei!

Really thank you very much. Please take care of me from now on too!

Nevertheless, this year too, half a year has passed huh.....  
haee

# **Arifureta After II**

## **Reinforcement Army Corps**

□What's the status with the sortie preparation-□

The harsh voice of Moana who was wrapped in battle outfit was reverberating in the palace's corridor. She was walking fast with her footsteps making clapping sound as though to express her impatient feeling. Beside her, her close aides with Spenser, Donar, and Linden in the lead were accompanying her.

Spenser replied to Moana's question with a stern expression.

□It's possible for three thousand to sortie in our state. However, the number of arous is insufficient, we are also mobilizing soldiers from the neighboring monitoring base, but we will need at the very least one day to reach the expected number.□

□That's no good. Too slow. Three thousand is fine. We are departing right away.□

□Don't speak unreasonably.□

When Spenser said that chidingly, Moana stopped walking and turned her gaze.

□There is no other way than pushing through recklessly. Right now, even in this very moment Arquette is in the verge of being annihilated!□

That voice contained grief. It was something rare to come from Moana who always endeavored to be composed no matter the time. That was just how abnormal and dangerous the situation was, but for Spenser who had been at Moana's side since she was born, he could guess that wasn't all.

Koone and others who should have departed from the capital at noon the day before yesterday to head toward Arquette returned back at the forenoon today in a desperate state even while being exhausted. Thinking about the distance between the capital and Arquette, their return was too early even if they were taking day trip. Most likely they were rushing back through the night without resting.

Koone and others who returned back looked like they were going to collapse. When they asked Koone and others just what in the world was going on that caused their state to be abnormal like that, the answer they were given was about a situation that was hard to believe.

After making Koone and others rest, Moana naturally wasted no time to assemble her close aides in hurry and instructed them for sortie preparation to reinforce Arquette.

But, there were two problems regarding the sortie preparation.

First was the number of the enemy that was a large army of ten thousand.

The other problem was that they were fighting against time.

The battle strength that was permanently stationed in the capital was twenty thousand in total. The total battle strength from the citizens of the capital was less than thirty thousand. There were several cities set up at the boundary line between the desert and grassland and along the coastline. These cities doubled as surveillance base. If all the soldier force in those cities were mobilized, their number would barely reach a hundred thousand.

It looked enough for a battle force, but the matter wasn't that simple.

After all, the situation this time was a completely abnormal situation. The <Dark Being> had obtained a method to attack the rear while ignoring the front line.

In that case, there was no way they could left the capital unguarded. In this situation where the early detection of enemy using the unobstructed view of the desert was rendered meaningless, enough battle force had to be left behind in the capital no matter what.

In addition, seeing how it would be meaningless unless they reinforced Arquette before the city fell, they had to mobilize using aros no matter what. Because they definitely wouldn't make it in time if the soldier walked by foot to go there.

But, naturally the number of aros available was fewer than the number of soldier.

With aros that were trained to not fear battle, and including the aros that were collected from the capital's citizens, and by also further preparing not to carry any luggage as much as possible, and even after using method where multiple people would ride one aros in place of the luggage, they

still couldn't secure arous in the number that could transport ten thousand soldiers.

Even the number three thousand that Spenser said was already an amazing response to be able to prepare that many in this short time.

Nevertheless, challenging ten thousand enemies with three thousand was still too rash.

Spenser had to admonish that action as the royal guard captain.

□Your majesty. However, speaking realistically, we cannot challenge an army of ten thousand with three thousand.□

□Spenser. Certainly I think that's reckless. But, I'm not merely saying that without making any calculation at all.□

Moana started walking again while speaking her thought.

□If Arquette's defensive wall is functioning, it will be possible for us charge through the enemy and enter the city. After that we will hole up there while waiting for the infantry and soldiers from the surveillance bases to arrive, before launching pincer attack from outside and inside the city.□

It was a strategy that was riddled with problem.

Certainly, if they could enter Arquette and then holing up inside, it would be possible for them to endure until the soldier force that was the combination from every area arrived. If it was the art users of the capital, they could easily reinforce and repair the defensive wall, while it would be easy for the soldiers to defeat the <Dark Beings> that sporadically crossed the defensive wall.

The greatest bottleneck of being in the defensive side of a siege that was the food supply was also not a problem seeing that Arquette was a city where harvest was accumulated in there.

But,

□The gate must be closed right now. How are we going to go in?□

□We can use art to send notification for them to open the gate by matching our timing, or we can even use art to create a huge slope to cross the defensive wall. There are many ways that can be used.□

□If we lagged even just for a bit, we will get surrounded and then annihilated. It's a gamble that is really bad for heart. Even if for example we managed that.....the plan can only work assuming they are still outside the wall you know? What are we going to do in the case the city has fallen?□

□.....If that's the case, we will retreat. We will wait until the infantry and soldiers from every area link up with us.□

Spenser nodded while saying □Hmm□. If she was able to choose the option of retreat there, then he guessed that she was still calm.

But, that too was undoubtedly also a gamble. It was doubtful whether they could really retreat after approaching the enemy until the range where they came into view. There wasn't any guarantee that the enemy wouldn't lying in ambush for their arrival after taking down Arquette.

Not to mention the <Dark Beings> should have realized that some people had escaped.

Honestly speaking, Spenser had judged that Arquette's situation was "despairing". It was a rear base with only defensive wall without even any decent soldier. It was impossible for the city to hold out for several days under the attack of a large army of ten thousand.

In that case, even if taking back the city was something they inevitable had to do, the royal guard captain, Spenser ought to think about the safety of the queen. A decision where they should refrain from departing until they could secure enough force had to be made.

However, he also understood Moana's feeling really well. For Spenser, knowing that the people they had to protect was in a crisis made him unable to be calm. Rather, he felt his stomach getting churned up when thinking that even now Arquette was being trampled.

Perhaps perceiving that indecision of Spenser, Moana added her words with a heavy and compelling voice.

□We have to depart right now. Am I wrong, Spenser?□

□.....It's about Kouki-dono, isn't it?□

□Yeah.□

'As I thought', Spenser thought while closing his eyes.

□I understand your worry. You are wondering whether I'm getting rash, or that I'm losing my calm because of Kouki, right?□

□.....Yes.□

Moana nodded while smiling bitterly.



□Certainly, my personal feeling is wanting to go to help Kouki. He is weak even though he is that strong, he torment himself, causing him to be unable to make his decision, but even so he desperately wished to advance forward and keep struggling.....I want to help him. I want to become his aid.□

That mysterious young man who was imprisoned by his own mysterious feeling. Even though she had known him only for a few days, but he strangely left impression in her memory, as a person with broken heart.

□Something must had happened in his past. I don't know much about him. Just what happened that he is tormenting himself so much like that? That he can be so disappointed with himself like that?□

Kouki sometimes spoke out his feeling as though he was venting his anger. She could make a guess from that, but Moana instead didn't think too deep about it. Because she wanted to hear it from his own mouth someday, when he wanted to talk to her about it.

□He avoided killing, he is scared of getting killed, he is unable to believe his own decision.....however, even though he might not notice it himself, but in the end, he cannot help but saving the people beside him. Because, he is kind.□

Perhaps, that was exactly why he was called as hero. She thought like that.

□Hey, Spenser. When someone who surely ought to be the person who is the most unrelated to fighting said that he will remain behind in an extremely dangerous place, just what is that person actually thinking?□

□.....I am a soldier. I don't know the answer. But.....I understand the degree of his resolve. I think that he is an

owner of resolve that is worthy of respect.□

Moana nodded in agreement.

□That's right. Then we have to meet his expectation.□

Her personal feeling affected her decision. But, her feeling as queen also affected that decision to the same degree.

□An unrelated man without any obligation or duty is risking his life for the sake of our people by himself alone. He is fighting while believing that we are rushing there as reinforcement.□

Not only Spenser, the complexion of all the close aides who were thinking of remonstrating Moana changed.

□This isn't about logic. Am I wrong?□

It was dangerous to go with small force. The safety of the queen had to be prioritized. Arquette's situation was already hopeless. One ought to be rational in front of real problem.

Indeed, all those reasons could just eat shit.

□Indeed. Anything other than that will rot our warrior's soul.□

Spenser smiled while nodding. He had said what he should said as a royal guard. But the queen that he loved and respected still gave her command even then. In that case, taking action by following his soul wasn't something to be sad about. His smile naturally changed into a fearless smile.

□We will depart with three thousand. We will force ourselves to push through. However, we won't do anything

thoughtless. Entrust the warrior soul of all of you to me.  
Spenser, spread my command!□

□By your will-□

Spenser gave his greatest salute to Moana before dashing away.

□The title as soldier chief is a troubling thing in this kind of time. I'm envious toward Spenser.□

□It's just as you said.□

Soldier chief Donar and head art user Linden breathed out a sigh simultaneously. They would stay behind to guard the capital and organized the following force. But, they themselves also wanted to rush out right now without delay.

□Don't say that. It's because you two are staying behind that we can depart without any worry about the future. Besides, the new threat of the <Dark Being> .....it's likely that in the battle from now on, base defense will become meaningless. I'll have all of you rush around to my heart's content too.□

□Hahah, we are looking forward to that. However.....sudden appearance from empty air, is it.....□

Soldier chief Donar groaned with a grim expression. That expression looked as though it was directed toward different matter rather than that threatening phenomenon itself.

Moana who sensed that nodded with a loathing expression.

□.....Only "that guy" can do such thing.□

Linden continued after her.

□It must be the < Dark King> . Making miasma materialize at far away distance. It also happened at the battle five years ago. But, he should be able to do it within only fifty meter at best. Also even though he was able to manipulate miasma, he shouldn't have the ability to teleport other < Dark Being> .□

□It looks like all this time he isn't just healing his wound.□

Moana's loathing expression changed into an even more bitter expression. But, she shook her head and showed a determined face,

□From here on a war even fiercer than five years ago will start. This time for sure, one side will win and gain the right of survival, whether it's mankind or the < Dark Being> . It will become a war to decide that. All of you, take care of Koone.□

□.....Your will.□

□.....As your majesty will it.□

Both Donar and Linden also closed their eyes after a brief silence. They reflected upon Moana's resolve and wish.

She commanded them to prioritize her little sister rather than herself who had lost most of her strength.

They silently accepted the resolve of her who had already like their own daughter, who at the same time had also splendidly grown to become a respectful king.

The outer edge part of the oasis river of Synclea royal capital. Three thousand soldiers were standing by there while mounting arous.

In order to stand in front of them, Moana also approached toward her personal mount Haumu who was made to stand by in front of the stable. The old man who was taking care of Haumu bowed his head reverently and handed over the rein.

Moana said her thanks to the old man and he gently stroked Haumu's nose tip. Even Haumu who usually would frolic(bite) at her currently was only staring still at Moana without showing any reluctant behavior.

□Even Haumu somehow understand it huh.....□

Moana whispered while narrowing her eyes with her way of speaking turning casual. She pressed her forehead on Haumu's nose tip and closed her eyes.

□You are my mount. Most likely the time of your death will be the same like me. And then, that time is already nearing. No doubt about that.□

□Fuhn□

Haumu let out a huff, the glint of his eyes showering down Moana as though to say 'so what'. He was the one and only mount of the king. He didn't fear death or anything, such dominating aura was conveyed even without any spoken words.

Moana smiled widely toward such Haumu. And then, in order to bestow a worthy accessory for the mount of king, she took out a ribbon from her pocket—

□Onee-chan!□

□Koone?□

When she turned around, Koone was there. Not only Koone, Spike, Lilin, and others, the members who followed Koone to Arquette were all there.

Moana who somehow guessed what Koone was going to say opened her mouth before Koone could say anything.

□You must not, Koone. You stay here.□

□But—□

□There is no way it can be allowed that not a single royalty is staying at the capital in this situation. You understand right?□

She understood. Even Koone understood something like that. However, it was exactly because it was this kind of situation that her heart couldn't allow her big sister to go to a battlefield where she might die. Fierce unease and feeling of despair where it felt like the ground under her was crumbling attacked Koone.

And then, unexpectedly even for herself, she wanted to obtain the confirmation as quickly as possible with a feeling that was as strong as her concern toward her big sister. The confirmation of Kouki's safety.

□Onee-chan, Koone is—□

Koone tried to vehemently argue further, but as expected her words were interrupted, by the index finger of her big sister that touched her lips softly.

□Koone, be reasonable. Both I and Koone has duty as royalty. As your onee-chan, I am really happy with Koone's feeling.

But—I will accomplish what I ought to fulfill. Until that time when I used up this life.□

□tsu□

Moana's words weren't the usual kind and pampering words. She didn't say "It will be fine" or "Onee-chan won't leave Koone".

Fulfilling one's duty. She would do that. You too do that. Those were the words of queen. The time where she could just be the kind onee-chan for Koone was over.

□You understand right? After all Koone is the little sister I'm proud of.□

□tsu, tsu.....under, stand. Koone, understand-□

Perhaps, this would be their last meeting in this life. Koone nodded while desperately holding back her tear duct from bursting.

Moana strongly hugged Koone whose expression distorted from holding back from crying as though she was hugging a treasure. Koone too also hugged back tightly, really tightly.

□I'll leave the capital in your hand, Koone.□

□Yes, Onee-cha—your majesty. May luck be with you.□

Hearing her beloved little sister changing how she was calling her, Moana was feeling like she was going to cry despite it was herself who was causing Koone to do that.

Moana made a smile so that Koone wouldn't notice that, but seeing Koone's faint smile and gaze, it seemed that she had

been seen through. “As expected from my Koone-tan”, she used that way of calling only inside her heart.

□Your majesty, we—□

Spike who was at a loss for word from seeing the exchange between Moana and Koone asked hesitantly.

□Of course, all of you stay behind. With how Spenser is accompanying me, the leader of the royal guard in the capital is now Spike. Protect Koone.□

□tsu, by your will.□

Actually, he wanted to turn around and returned to Arquette. Even while biting his lips, Spike returned a salute in order to accomplish his role.

It seemed that all the members of Koone’s escort party shared that feeling. Every single one of them was making the same expression.

Especially Lilin, the expression of the girl who was boasting □I was born for the sake of fighting□ was filled to the brim with shame because of turning her back toward the enemy regardless of how she managed to accomplish her role of protecting Koone.

Even so she didn’t say anything the same like Spike. That was why, Koone opened her mouth in their place.

□Onee-cha—your majesty. Can you allow to let at least Lilin to accompany you?□

□Hm? Lilin?□



Not just Moana, even Lilin was gazing in wonderment at Koone's suggestion.

□Yes. Lilin is Spenser's direct subordinate in the first place. She joined Koone's escort squad in case of unexpected situation. And most of all, Koone think that it's better that someone who know about Arquette's current situation to accompany your majesty just in case.□

It was a reasonable suggestion. And above all else, Koone's feeling behind her words that wanted Moana to bring at least one person from her escort squad into the battle could be really felt.

Moana said □I see□ and nodded, then

□How is your exhaustion? You will be going back to Arquette non-stop without even a wink of sleep. You also lent your strength for Arquette's defense correct?□

□There is no problem. Your majesty, I beg you to take me into the battlefield. Please give me the chance to slaughter the enemy in the front line.□

The words of Lilin who were bowing her head made Moana smiled wryly reflexively. Spike and others also seemed to feel the same. They made wry smile toward vigorous fighting spirit of the youngest girl of the escort squad.

□Fine then. Lilin, return to your home unit for now. I'm looking forward to your performance in battle.□

□I thank your majesty. I will display my wind for your majesty to see, carving apart the enemies that got away from hero-sama no matter how many they are.□

Spike and others called at Lilin "Kill a lot for our part too".  
Beside them, Koone spoke to Moana.

"Can Koone ask your majesty to give message to hero-sa—to Kouki-sama?"

".....Yeah."

"—Tell him, "How dare you did as you please without even asking Koone for permission! You better prepare yourself!"

"Fuh, fufufuh, go, got it. I will convey the message without fail."

Kouki was surely alive. The message with a content that was based on such premise caused Moana to be unable to hold her laughter down while thinking that it would surely be hell for Kouki even if he was alive.

Like that, not even thirty minute after that, the soldier force led by Moana departed for Arquette.

Less than two days since the force departed from the capital.

Perhaps it should be said as expected, almost three days had passed since Koone and others escaped from Arquette.

The aros were running with everything they had, even so they are putting up with sprinting while carrying two or three adult men who were fully equipped, so they needed rest no matter what. In addition, as expected marching with three thousand troops even by riding aros lowered their speed compared to marching with only several dozen troops.

The time was several minutes passed the noon. It was about the afternoon of the sixth day since the day Kouki was summoned.

For an army with number of more than a thousand to be able to cross the distance that normally would take one day and a half in that time could be said to be fast enough already.

The army already entered the grassland area and all the aros became animated and increased their speed even further.

□Lilin. If I remember correctly, Kouki deployed a barrier of light that covered the whole Arquette right?□

Moana asked while repressing her impatient feeling.

□Yes, Moana-sama. ....It was a solemn and mystical barrier, not letting the whole army of ten thousand to pass. It was an amazing sight.□

Lilin answered while her eye glint glittered with fighting spirit toward the nearing battlefield. Spenser who was riding at Moana's side shook his head and opened his mouth.

□At that time when we were attacked by Ragar, we were also covered by shining half sphere barrier. It's likely to be the same technique. It had toughness that wouldn't twitch even with the full strength attack of Ragar but.....for the same

technique to cover the whole city.....it's hard to even imagine, a truly miraculous work.□

Spenser's expression seemed to want to say □What an unbelievable power□.

□Light of protection.....then, we should be able to see it from afar before long. Spenser, what about the lookout at the surrounding?□

□There is no gap in our lookout. I have already sent out scouts to every directions. It should be about time for them to return temporarily.....□

Before Spenser could finish speaking, one scout showed itself crossing a small hill and joined up into the rank.

Spenser's eyes were scrutinizing the scout's conspicuous act of crossing the hill. The scout was a young soldier who had returned from confirming the situation of Arquette. He was approaching Spenser's position.

Spenser was thinking whether he should scold the scout's rash act, also for focusing everyone's mind, but he stopped from speaking after seeing the scout's eyes that were wavering in bewilderment.

□Commander. Re, reporting□

□Muh, from your look, is there something ahead? Let's hear it.□

The scout resolved himself and opened his mouth while Moana and others were also listening carefully.

□Yes-. Regarding the barrier of light that we heard beforehand.....I couldn't confirm it's existence.□

\*hyuh\* The sound of breath caught in the throat rang out. It came from Moana. Her complexion turned pale. Beside her Lilin was gritting her teeth audibly and her expression warped in vexation.

There was no barrier of light. That was to say, it was the proof that the person who casted the barrier had ran out of strength.

Holding back Moana from reflexively trying to ask for reconfirmation, Spenser told the scout to continue his report. The most important information was the approximate amount of enemy's current number and whether Arquette had fallen or not—putting it another way, it was the evaluation standard to decide whether they should withdraw the army or kept advancing.

□.....Is Arquette fallen?□

□That's.....that.....I don't know.□

□What?□

Spenser didn't understand what the scout meant. The scout should have seen Arquette's situation from afar. The scout should be able to see how many <Dark Being> was surrounding Arquette, and whether the gate was already destroyed or not. Spenser's eyes narrowed like a hawk that was fixed toward the scout, asking what he meant.

The scout gulped, and then he continued speaking a bit rapidly to convey the situation that he witnessed as it was.

□It looks like the gate was destroyed! However, around Arquette, there are only a great number of Dark Beings' corpses, I practically cannot catch sight of any moving thing! The number of the corpses, I didn't confirm it from

every directions, but at the very least in the east side there were—

“What, say it clearly! Was it several hundred?”

If that was the case, then the possibility was that the large army of <Dark Being> had already subdued Arquette and occupied the city and right now they were hiding inside, or they were advancing toward the neighboring territory, or perhaps they were standing by somewhere in order to launch ambush.

But, as though to blow away that doubt of Spenser, a shocking report with content that was indeed worthy to bewilder the scout was given.

“Sir-, based from my observation, it was roughly—around six thousand, I think.”

“.....Ha?”

Spenser unconsciously leaked out a stupid sounding voice. But not just him, even Moana and others also showed an expression that wanted to ask just what this person was saying.

“It, it’s true. There is really a great number of corpses lying around, even I myself don’t know just what is.....”

“.....Calm down. Were the corpses really the corpse of those guys? What about the possibility of some kind of fake body?”

“Still, I didn’t mistake fake corpses as the real thing. All those are certainly dead <Dark Beings>. Even corpses just from species that we knew like bull head species, scaled dragon species, eccentric species.....all those are.....”

Spenser said "Good work" and told the scout to withdraw, and then he looked back at Moana.

"What do you think, your majesty?"

".....Do you think Kouki did that?"

".....I don't know. It's hard to believe that so suddenly. In Koone-sama's report, Kouki-dono himself said that he would run out of strength first against such number. Currently there is no barrier and the gate is opened. Frankly, it's impossible to decide with this unexpected situation. Perhaps we should think that this is some kind of trap by the enemy."

Certainly it was just as Spenser said. Moana nodded at Spenser's concern and she closed her eyes for a while.

And then she put her thought in order and opened her eyes.

"We are advancing. If there is no enemy and Arquette's gate is opened, then it's fortuitous. We have to make sure of the city's situation."

".....By your will. We will increase the lookout to the surrounding."

Regardless of the enemy's nonexistence, there was no way they could withdraw without ascertaining the safety of the citizens. Spenser also agreed with that decision.

The army fastened their pace while being on guard and hurried toward Arquette.

Before long Arquette's state came into view. Moana and the others held their breath.

Just as the scout said, a great number of < Dark Beings> were lying down nearby the east gate. It was clear even from afar that they were dead with lack of body part or severed into two. The cause was undoubtedly from slash attack. It seemed that the cause of the < Dark Beings> ' death wasn't from unforeseen circumstance.

□We are continuing ahead.□

The army rushed through the corpses on Moana's order. The corpses were lying on top of each other so much that there was no empty place to step on.

□The blood trace, the position of loss body part, the way they fell.....your majesty. It seems these guys were thrown away after getting cut down around the gate.□

□.....The north part and southern part looks clean.□

□From the scout's report, it looks like that the west part only have the grain farm area getting ruined but there is mostly no trace of fighting there.□

Moana and others approached quite near the gate before long.

There were also traces of fierce fighting around there too. Everywhere there were the expired bodies of < Dark Being> .

But, at that time, their ears suddenly caught sound of tumult.

□tsu, let's go-□

They passed through the gate. The sound of tumult was getting louder. While the army was spreading through the



city with Spenser's instruction, the main force was running toward the tumult following Moana's order.

Houses were destroyed into a tragic state that was clear even just from a glance. The street was messed up as though the ground had been plowed through. And then there were the countless expired <Dark Beings> .

But, they still hadn't found even a single corpse of human.

□Moana-sama! The underground vault is ahead from here! It's at the other side of that big warehouse!□

□I know!□

Moana nodded at Lilin's report. The tumultuous sound was gradually getting louder. The number of expired <Dark Being> was also getting more numerous. The number might reach a thousand even just inside the city.

□The direction ahead! Enemy sighted! Vanguard, charge!□

The moment they turned around the corner from the street that stretched straight from the east gate, they caught sight of countless <Dark Beings> . Although, it appeared that they weren't taking position in order to meet the advance of Moana and the others.

The <Dark Beings> were crowding the street, they were even spreading on the buildings' rooftop. All of them were facing toward a single direction. They only finally noticed Moana and others at the same time when they came into view.

Moana and others felt question seeing that. Even so, there was no need to hesitate with enemy in front of their eyes.

They charged the < Dark Beings> from behind and routed the enemy. A squad climbed to the rooftops following Spenser's instruction and they opened combat against the enemies on the rooftops.

It was hard to use large force inside a limited space. Moana's main force divided further into small units, spreading into alleys and streets like water pervading into countless ditches.

The < Dark Beings> fought back, but the momentum of the soldiers who were driven by rage was tremendous and the enemies were routed one after another. The reinforcement army was advancing forward and forward.

The army didn't hesitate in their path.

Because they could just charge forward toward the direction where the several thousand < Dark Beings> were crowding into.

Like that Moana and others advanced for a while.

Before long, Moana and others arrived at the center of the tumult, they came out at the other side of the large building—the large warehouse that still had its walls standing strong despite having its roof destroyed. There they saw it.

A place that became a mountain of rubble, where most of the surrounding buildings were collapsed.

At that place that was becoming like a large plaza, there were several hundred < Dark Beings> who were tightly forming a round besiegement, and about the same number of expired < Dark Beings> at the surrounding.

And then, at the center, was him.

Surrounded by enemy from all directions, assaulted continuously without any pause.....

It was difficult to search any spot on his body that was safe. He had literally become wounded all over his body.....

However, under his feet there was a solid looking door made from metal.....

—Aa

That was a sigh that was leaked out by someone.

Determination.

That figure which was the embodiment of that word shook the soul of the warriors.

And then, the <Dark Beings> who were only concentrating at the enemy before their eyes finally noticed the existence of Moana and others.

They all stiffened for a moment.

The one who moved first was her majesty the queen whose soul was shaken.

□tsu, Roar-, oh warriors! Annihilate the enemy! Save him—Save Kouki!!□

—oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!!

The war cry of the warriors' soul shook Arquette.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Sorry that this chapter feel half-baked. It feels like I will receive scolding 'Isn't this only barely fulfilling the advance notice of previous chapter, or rather it hasn't reached even that', but I'm thinking of splitting the chapter because of the word number, I'm sorry (sweat)

Forgive Shirakome who is generally unable to follow the plan

Also, regarding the descend of that guy, I'm thinking of lengthening the number of day of Liliana's speech by two, three days.

It's inexcusable toward those who is looking forward to it, but as expected I want to make Kouki do it until the end here.

PS:

At Comic Galdo, a spinoff called □Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou□was starting serialization.

It can be seen at Overlap-sama's homepage, so please have a look if it pleases you.

The view point is the serious Yue, but the key point was from Shirakome's pov lol

# Arifureta After II    The Fight is Over

Looking at the number, both sides were about equal. The battle strength between the kingdom army and the <Dark Being> army should be in balance against each other.

But, in reality it wasn't like that at all.

It was just like a clump of weed getting swallowed by muddy stream.

That could only be said to be natural. After all in this place, everything in every senses were working in the kingdom army's favor.

First, thanks to almost all the <Dark Beings> congregated at the surrounding of Arquette's underground vault, it was possible to surround them despite the location being in the middle of city.

Second, the kingdom army had the geographical advantage that was urban warfare.

Third, there was already no more blessing power that could be eaten at the surrounding, although only for a bit but the <Dark Beings> looked exhausted.

Fourth, it was only within a part of the <Dark Beings> , but because they had been continuously losing fighting against only one person, fear against human was starting to grow in them.

And then, above all else, the bloodcurdling fighting spirit of the kingdom army soldiers were increasing without any end in sight, the pressure from that beaten down the moral of the enemies. Without doubt that was the greatest cause of the curbstomp.

The righteous indignation of Arquette getting attacked. The vindication of honor for five years ago. Hatred toward the very race of <Dark Being> itself.

Just one person—

Even though he bore no duty or responsibility whatsoever, he continued to fight for three whole days while getting worn out. The soldiers' feeling toward that person couldn't be expressed with words.

For a soldier, after witnessing such an exalted gallant figure, there was no way they couldn't be shaken. There was no way they could stop their soul from roaring.

Fierce.

A fighting spirit where there was no need for hesitation to use that word to represent it was exterminating the <Dark Beings> one after another.

□Re, Retreat-! Retreat-□

Someone unknown among the <Dark Being> yelled that.

If their opponent was only one person, their obstinacy could hold on. If they were against one man who looked like he would collapse anytime now, they could passionately rage and fought, thinking that the next attack for sure would finish the fight, that they would be the one who would bring down the enemy who caused this much damage toward them.

They were like gambler who felt that the jackpot would come out at the next one for sure and lost sight of when to quit.

□Rout them! Chase any that run away and kill them!  
Prioritize pulling them away from Kouki's nearby!□

Moana's command thundered. The soldiers chased and routed the enemies one after another.

Seeing that, perhaps deciding that the battle had been decided, the <Dark Beings> were running away from Kouki's surrounding altogether.

Among them, there were also <Dark Beings> who realized that they were already unable to escape and launched suicide attack at Kouki, but before Moana and others could even say □Ah□, Kouki who were swaying in place cut them down with a single stroke of katana.

It was sword skill that would make anyone shudder seeing it. Heads were flying like a joke.

The veteran Spenser who was watching felt as though he couldn't recognize the moment when the katana was swung, and the process of cutting the head. When he noticed it was already over.



Kouki kept standing imposingly, his head looking down with both his hands dangling down. His expression couldn't be seen, but even though Moana had been calling at him many times since a while ago, he showed no reaction in response.

His state was uncommon.

And yet despite so, with that state where he wasn't even taking stance, he was swaying back and fro while slaughtering <Dark Beings> that leaped at him with sword attack that couldn't be perceived.

□The sword's.....summit—sword saint□

Spenser whispered with a hoarse voice. It was a legend that his father told him when he was but a child.

An unseen and unavoidable sword strike. One of the summits that a swordsman ought to aim for.

In the far past, that technique was considered as the king's sword, the character of the legend was extolled and people were calling him <Sword Saint> .

The current Kouki, he looked just like the second coming of the legend.

□Kouki!□

When Spenser went 'hah' and came back to his senses, there weren't any more figure of <Dark Being> at the surrounding. The tumultuous sound of the soldiers fighting could be heard from the direction of the west gate.

And then, Moana took the healing art users with her and rushed toward Kouki.

She was rushing toward Kouki with great momentum, just like what the <Dark Beings> doing before this.

□Don't-, your majesty! Back away-□

□Eh?□

Kouki who was still standing silently with both his hands dangling down and his face looking down was swaying.

Moana who heard Spenser's voice and looked back—was already in Kouki's range.

□-!!!□

□Gua!?□

A hair's breadth. Lilin pulled Moana back. The two fell behind and rolled around. □What are you doing□ Moana said while her voice was stifled from the impact of falling. In the field of vision of Moana who lifted her face, white strings were fluttering down in the air.....

□Eh?□

□Are you safe, Moana-sama!?□

□Your majesty-, are you injured!?□

Lilin asked with a pale expression while Spenser called with an impatient expression, but the astonished Moana didn't pay them any attention.

The fluttering down white strings.

Those were—her hair.

The tips of Moana's white hair were slightly cut and fluttered in the air.

Who cut those hairs?

That was obvious.

□Kouki?□

There was no answer to her call.

Kouki were standing still on his original position—above the door of the underground vault.

Thanks to rolling down on the ground, Moana finally could see the face of Kouki that was looking down. At the same time, she noticed the abnormality.

□Kou, ki.....□

There was no light in those half closed eyes. Those eyes were empty, they weren't looking at anywhere.

□It looks like.....he is alive. But, he is unconscious. What the.....□

□Unbelievable.....□

Both Spenser and Lilin lost their words. Moana too also the same.

That was understandable.

Just who in the world could possibly imagine *someone fighting while being unconscious*.

Looking at him once more, Kouki's state was really atrocious.

There was all kind of sizes of wounds throughout his body. Few places were unharmed. He was blood drenched all over his body, his brown hair was dyed dark red by his own blood and enemy's blood. His breathing was shallow and faint, it sounded like it would stop anytime now. His side that could be seen from the gap of his torn clothes was warped, perhaps it was because his ribcage was broken and changed shape.....

The sword that changed shape was gripped in only one hand, because his other arm was broken all over from the shoulder until the fist.

Looking closer, the hand that was grasping the sword was wrapped in several layer of cloth scraps, so that even if the hand lost gripping strength, the sword wouldn't slip down.

\*jijiji-, jijiji-\* The holy sword was flickering with light like a lamp that was almost cut off from electricity, as though expressing the light of Kouki's life as it was.

Just how long he had been fighting continuously in this state?

His figure that was continuing to fight even when he was unconscious.

Moana sent his gaze toward the spot where Kouki was standing. The entrance of the underground vault.

She understood just from seeing that.

—I won't let anyone touch even a single hair of them

An emotion that couldn't possibly be expressed with words became tear and overflowed.

□You are, you are protecting them until you become like that.....you are protecting them until the end aren't you, Kouki.....□

Moana stood up. Spenser and Lilin tried to stop her, but Moana told them no need with a smile.

Spenser and Lilin tried to say that it was dangerous to get near the current Kouki who would remove anyone who approached. However, they became unable to say anything seeing that smile. Both of them were also unable to stop the trembling inside their chest from seeing Kouki's figure.

The two of them were watching attentively in silent. No, it wasn't just the two of them, before they realized they were surrounded by soldiers who were watching attentively with the same expression on their faces. Moana advanced under their gaze.

Two meter left until Kouki's sword boundary.

□Kouki. Kouki, it's me. It's Moana you see. I'm coming toward you now. I'm sorry that I'm late okay?□

One meter remaining.

□Everything is all right already. Because you have protected to the very end. There is no more enemy here.□

Thirty centimeter remaining.

Kouki reacted with swaying.

Spenser was about to move, but Lilin caught his arm and she shook her head. Her gaze was directed straight at Kouki. Trust at the utmost filled that gaze. Spenser also relaxed his body.

□That's why, you can rest already. It's okay to not fight.....  
that's why-□

Remaining distance—zero.

The holy sword vanished. That was how the unseen sword strike looked like when it approached Moana's neck—when it stopped still right above the skin.

Even if he was unconscious, but if someone called at him wholeheartedly, the kind him would surely respond without fail.

If “I'm right here” was conveyed to him, he absolutely wouldn't harm someone who wished to protect.

Moana who was convinced of that gently embraced Kouki without even a shred of discomposure.

□Kouki.....□

□.....u.....a?□

A faint groan. When Moana peered into Kouki's face while supporting him, there was his eyes there that were reflecting Moana's face. Those eyes were faintly like lamp with light returning in it.

□.....Mo.....a.....□

□Yes, it's me right here, Kouki.□

□.....I have.....to.....protect□

It was a hoarse voice that almost couldn't be heard. Moana gently whispered with her tears overflowing once more.

□It's all right. It's over already. Everyone is safe. You protected them. That's why, it's all right already.□

□.....I.....pro, tected?□

Kouki's eyes were slightly opened wide, it was like he wanted to say □Unbelievable□ even though it was something that he did himself.

That was why, Moana stared straight into Kouki's eyes with a strong gaze while telling him.

□Yes, you protected them. Thank yo□u, Kouki. Everyone, is saved by you.□

Kouki who received those words was.....

□.....I'm.....glad□

Saying that, he smiled slightly and closed his eyes.

The body slumped and lost strength. The holy sword lose even its faint light as though to say that its role was over. Moana who was glued closely to Kouki understood, that something unseen but important was dispersing from Kouki's body.

That figure that was quietly losing strength, was as though.....

□Quick-, heal him! Hurry! This person absolutely must not be let to die!□

A command that sounded like scream was yelled. The art users who stiffened from Kouki's heroic state assembled altogether and began applying their art.

The expression of the art users of the capital who excelled in healing grew worse with impatience. That told the reality of the precariousness of the current Kouki.

□Please, I beg you don't die.....Kouki.....□

Moana's prayer resounded among the sound of fighting that still reverberated from afar, and between the soldiers who were moving around in order to get the people of Arquette out from the underground vault.

He felt a sensation as though he was floating from the bottom of dark water.

It was as though something terribly heavy was coiling around him. His vision was pitch dark and couldn't see anything. His voice too, his throat stung and couldn't really make voice.

(What.....the world after death is really simple huh.....)

If place like hell or heaven really existed, he must be heading toward hell without doubt. If he waited here, before long even king Yama might come to judge him.

This time for sure, there would be no one that could chase after him like that time in the □Holy Precincts□.

(Even though Shizuku and others had saved me after much trouble.....even though I finally found my answer.....even though it finally felt like I can live by facing forward.....how unfortunate)



Loneliness, sadness, frustration.

When he thought that he wouldn't be able to meet his family and friends anymore, those feelings welled up like flood.

At the same time, he thought of that girl who he felt like he was seeing at the very end like a miracle.

(Moana, sama. ....Was that an illusion? I don't remember how long I was fighting but.....I wonder if I was able to protect everyone?)

He protected them. That was how he felt. He had no basis for thinking so, but deep inside Kouki he was convinced of that. That he surely achieved that.

(Though, I killed as many as I protected)

It was impossible to save "both sides". However, if he pursued for "one side" and didn't fail in doing that.....then as he thought, it must be one answer.

Thinking that he had scattered a great number of lives, then without doubt he would be going to hell. Was king Yama not here yet? Getting kept in suspense like this was.....honestly felt scary, so he wished that he would quickly come.

While thinking of such uncontrollable imagination, what surfaced at the back of Kouki's mind was about "that guy".

(If it's "that guy", surely he will point his gun even to king Yama and asked □Are you enemy, or ally□ instead. If the answer to that is enemy, he will surely pull the trigger.)

What a really simple evaluation standard.

As expected it was a way of living that he couldn't possibly do.

Thinking that, for some reason Kouki found it extremely funny that he spontaneously almost laughed.

He almost laughed but,

(Nnn!? It hurts!? For some reason my whole body feel so painful it feels like I'm gonna dieeeeeee!?)

'Why is there still flesh pain even after death huh!' When he directed such unreasonable outburst of anger to the king Yama in his heart, for some reason he felt a sensation as though his consciousness was surfacing.

Furthermore, inside the pitch black darkness was even starting to be shined with faint light.

(Eh? Don't tell me, I'm.....)

Thinking that it was impossible, Kouki opened his eyes—

The field of vision of Kouki who opened his eyes in reality was completely filled with the close-up face of a middle aged man. It was at a very close range where their nose almost touched each other.

□Hih, -a!? Ngih, it hurt-, scary-!? Scary hurt!?!□

□Oo!? Kouki-dono! You woke up!□

A stern middle-aged man. The look of his eyes was that of a veteran warrior. The criminal of the close-up face at the waking up was Spenser.

In addition, when his body jerked from surprise, intense pain instantly assaulted his whole body.

This was the worst waking up.

Spenser said "I will call her majesty here immediately! Please wait for a second!" and dashed out of the room.

For the time being the "scary" thing left, so Kouki calmed down and looked at his surrounding with teary eyes from pain.

He had recollection of the room's make up. It was really similar with the guest room in the feudal lord's mansion that he was guided into when he first arrived at Arquette. Or rather, it was exactly that guest room. When he focused his hearing, he could hear the hustle and bustle of people outside the window.

"I'm, alive? I'm, still alive....."

Bit by bit, that fact seeped into him. Unconsciously his tear duct loosened and tears spilled out emotionally. He really thought that his life was lost as the compensation of his wish and the atonement of his crime.

He thought, that he wouldn't be able to meet anyone else anymore.

It was scary. It was painful.

However, he was alive.

What he did, what he accomplished, and then how he was alive right now.

All of that pressed on his heart. Kouki simply cried.

\*zudadadadada-\* The terrific sound of footsteps resounded in the ears of such Kouki.

Recalling that just now Spenser said "I will call her majesty", Kouki guessed that it was Moana coming his way. He wiped his tears in hurry. Somehow, he didn't want to show her his pathetic side even more than this.

Right after he finished wiping up his eyes, \*BAA————NN!!\* the door was blown off and Moana arrived.

Why was it he wondered. Kouki felt an immense feeling of déjà vu. He wondered if these two sisters similarly held some kind of grudge toward door.

"Kouki."

"Moana, sama.....as I thought it wasn't some kind of illusion then."

Moana who was amazed seeing the awakened Kouki let out tears seeping out from hearing those words of Kouki, she then ran toward him with small steps and without pause she sat down snugly on the bed.

She sat down with her back facing Kouki, and with her long hair acting as veil he also couldn't see her face from the side.

"Excuse me, Moana-sama? What about the people of Arquette? How long it has been since then?"

"....."

Kouki felt a bit anxious seeing the silent Moana. He wondered if something happened, something that wasn't good.

But, before he could speak out his anxiety, Moana slowly tilted her body toward Kouki. Without pause she embraced

Kouki's body as though she was covering him, gently so that it wouldn't affect Kouki's wounds.

□Mo, Mo Mo Mo, Moana-sama!?□

Sweet fragrance like kukuri fruit tickled Kouki's nose. A sensation that was clearly soft even through the sheet covering his body caused him to feel agitated against his wish.

□.....The people of Arquette are all safe. I told you right? You protected everyone.□

□Ah.....yes.□

There was Moana's face right beside his own face as though she was burying her face on his body. Her voice was slightly shaking from the various emotions filling it, reaching his ear along with her breath.

□It has only been a day since then. Really, just what kind of body you have to be able to wake up even though you almost died.□

□Ahaha.....that's because of the hero's specs.□

Influenced by Moana who was talking in a casual way, Kouki also responded to her with a casual way of talking.

Moana lifted her face, and then she stared at Kouki with her nose tip kept close to him.

□But, you will die when it's time to die.□

□.....You're right.□

□Even your healing, several times it looked hopeless in the middle of it.□

□.....I too, thought that this is it many times.□

If it wasn't Kouki then surely it would be beyond any help. The life force that was vitalized by blessing art, magic power that would recover when resting, and skill that elevated healing power as long as there was magic power. And then, the art users who continuously used healing art until they collapsed.

All those barely saved Kouki's life.

□Just, why are you making that kind of eyes?□

There were a lot, really a lot of things she wanted to say. She wanted to say that she didn't ask him for dedication to the degree he would throw away his life. She wanted to ask why he didn't come back together with Koone. She wanted to ask him just what was he thought about his own life. There were a lot that she wanted to say as worried as she was.

However, seeing Kouki's clear gaze, Moana became unable to say anything.

Kouki made a small smile and spoke.

□I found, my answer.□

Kouki who wavered about his way of living. He held distrust toward himself and was unable to choose anything. He was wandering, looking for what was right, which was right, "the right choice".

He said that he found the answer, within the verge of death.

It was something that one ought to be happy about but..... Moana's expression turned complicated.

□Then with that, you won't hesitate anymore? You can live without feeling suffering?□

Kouki shook his head quietly.

□I will still waver from now on too, I think that it surely will be painful. Because the answer that I found, is something like that.□

He was unable to come to a clear decision like “that guy”.

Enemy and ally. Dividing the world into two such colors, that was something he couldn't do. He couldn't swing his sword while still not knowing anything.

Surely he would struggling and floundering dreaming for the ideal. If there wasn't such path, he would surely be anguished when reality was thrust toward him.

But, so what.

He would struggle. He would worry in anguish. Bring it on.

At those times, he would just make his choice, believing that it would surely lead to the best result.

Surely, nine out of ten he would regret the result, but he absolutely wouldn't give up the future that resulted after he made his choice no matter what.

If the ideal was impossible, the second best then. Even if that was also beyond him, he would continue to fight in order to haul in a future that was better even if for just a bit.

Yes, the world couldn't be divided into two colors.

Right, or wrong.

From whose point of view it was decided?

There was no such thing as the right solution.

□I idolized my grandfather. Because Jii-chan is my hero, because hero has to be right.....I, was imprisoned by the “right thing” unnoticed by myself.□

□Right now it’s different?□

□Yeah. I want to do the right thing, but I’m not imprisoned by that anymore. Because, whether it’s right or wrong, but in the end, I’m unable to slap away that hand.□

For the <Dark Being> , Kouki was unmistakably “evil”, he was in the wrong for killing them.

But, even so Kouki was unable to slap away that boy’s hand. He absolutely didn’t want to do that. No matter how much he wished for the path where both sides could live. No matter even if it became he cut down one side.

□I’ll keep worrying until the time limit. But, I will surely make my choice. Even if it won’t go as I want it at the end of my choice, I’ll continue to struggle. I cannot stop dreaming. Even if it won’t come true.□

‘In the end, I don’t really change huh’, Kouki made a wry smile.

Moana stared fixedly at Kouki’s eyes, and then she smiled gently.

□I see.....if that’s Kouki’s answer, then I’ll root for you. If it’s needed, I’ll lend you my strength as much as you need. It’s not because you have saved Arquette. It’s because I want to be your strength.□



□Moana, sama.....□

With her own nose tip, Moana poked at Kouki's nose tip chidingly so that he corrected the way he was calling her.

That adding “-sama”, was unnecessary.

Kouki also smiled quietly while feeling as though he was pulled in by Moana's eyes.

□Moana. Right now there are a lot of problem and there is also not really time but.....someday, will you hear a story about my massive failure?□

□I want to hear no matter what kind of story. Let me listen, absolutely.□

Moana nodded happily hearing Kouki's words telling her that he wanted her to know about him.

A silence that wasn't awkward in the least filled the room.

With their gazes still intertwined with each other, they became closer bit by bit—

Kouki's excellent hero ears finally caught the small, yet a lot of breathing sound that was countless.

He stiffened like rock, and then Kouki looked to the side \*gigigi\* like a machine that ran out of oil. Following that motion, Moana also moved her gaze—

At the entrance of the room that had its door blown away, she saw countless silhouette of people watching attentively while holding their breath.

With Spenser and Lilin at the forefront, a lot of soldiers, and furthermore the feudal lord Rothko and his wife Syla, the

vigilance corps captain Ivana and her subordinates, and then the civil officials.....

They were pouring their gaze with all the space packed full with people.

□—!? Eeh-eeh-ehem-! Ko, Ko Ko, Kouki seems to be fine already! I'm relieved!□

Moana stood up in a flash with her stance like a soldier's "at ease" position to cover up the situation. Seeing that, Kouki made tsukkomi inside his heart □There is no keeping up appearance anymore you know□ seeing such Moana. Moana's cheeks were bright red.

After that, Rothko and others came in with awkward expression that said □We are being nuisance in her majesty's tryst□. They spoke their joy at Kouki's safety, and then they expressed their gratitude for saving the city.

Midway, the recovered healers arrived in order to continue their treatment toward Kouki, but because the room was cramped with everyone who came wanting to say their thanks even for just a bit and caused the room to be noisy, the healers finally ran out of patience and they raged □We cannot concentrate here-□, and they kicked out everyone including Rothko. Such strange occurrence happened.

Rothko was literally kicked out despite being the feudal lord. The soldiers, including Rothko who received such treatment were all acting despondent. That sight could be said to be really surreal.

There was one more unusual occurrence, or rather an incident that caused all the soldiers who knew the girl to feel so shocked their eyeballs might leaped out from their eye sockets.

□Kouki-sama. Your figure that continued to fight even while unconscious—was mesmerizing. You are exactly a man among man, a warrior among warrior.□

Saying such thing, she—Lilin kissed Kouki's cheek.

As far as Moana, Spenser, and everyone else knew, that should be her “first” kiss.

The true feeling of the girl who then returned to her work as though nothing had happened was unknown. Or rather, everyone present wanted to leave it as something unknown for the time being.

The reason was, because her majesty's eyes were turning round and round after that.

In addition, it was only for a moment but a beastly gaze where in her heart “Right now while Kouki cannot move.....” showed through transparently was directed toward Kouki.

Kouki who was dumbfounded from Lilin's kiss twitched went □Hah, killing intent!?!□ while springing up on the spot. Seeing such Kouki, Spenser and others reached a tacit agreement between each other to do watchful waiting in regard to this case.

It seemed that even the brawny soldiers were bad against the “war of woman” that might resulted by any chance. To the degree that they averted their gaze from the savior that saved the city while offering their prayer.

Throughout all those, with Kouki's astounding recovery power and the healing of multiple excellent healers, Kouki was forced to a complete bed rest for a week at least but.....

The situation was already moving.

—Reinforcement request from the neighboring territory of Arquette

—A news from the capital with gist that a large army led by <Dark King> was confirmed marching forward

The bad news brought by messengers rushing to Arquette.

However, those news didn't enter the ear of Kouki who was sleeping once more.

No one tried to tell him.

Because if Kouki knew about it, he absolutely would move right now.

That was why, Kouki didn't notice.

That Moana and others had departed toward the battlefield.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next chapter, the demon king finally arrives...I think

# Arifureta After II The Finally Arriving Absurdity

□.....Nn□

Letting out a small groan, the sleeping Kouki opened his eyes.

He stared absentmindedly at the ceiling, it was the unchanging guest room of Arquette feudal lord's mansion.

□.....I'm glad.□

Kouki who was uneasy that perhaps that time he spent with Moana, the uproar with Rothko and others, all of those might be only a dream and he was actually dead as he thought, he leaked out that whisper and sighed in relief.

He looked around, but there was no one in the room. The door that was tragically blown away by Moana was also back just like before.

Kouki tried ascertaining his body's condition.

(-, I'm still far away from complete recovery..... My right arm and left side are in the worst condition. My bones aren't completely fixed too yet. But the small wounds are healed. As for my physical exhaustion.....perhaps, it's about forty

percent recovered? My magic power.....it's used for healing so, it's still barely at twenty percent.)

Kouki let out a large sigh in exasperation and his body sunk into the bed.

Looking at outside the window, the sun was slightly sinking. It would be evening in just a few more hours. He remembered that when he first woke up the sunlight was the same like this, so he must have been sleeping for a full day.

He stared at the sky from the window for a while.

It was really quiet.

Kouki's heart was also at ease like the silence of the room.

(Since I came to this world, this is the eight days I think? Even though it's only a week, I had spent a really deep time here. ....Nagumo too, did he feel like this when he was at the abyss? No, from what I saw at the image in the ice and snow cavern, it was worse for him. He also got his arm eaten right from the start. It's already lucky that I still have all my limbs.)

That guy was someone who he held an extremely complicated feeling against, but since he dropped out from school and traveled across Tortus, Kouki frequently thought about Hajime.

That was also the case when he decided to stay behind at Arquette.

No matter what, he couldn't help but be conscious of that man.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration even if he called him someone who changed his everything.

He wondered how he should think about him, or perhaps just like how Hajime didn't think anything—or feeling indifferent about Kouki if speaking frankly, perhaps he should also be like that and stopped worrying about it.

He had also found the answer about his feeling toward Hajime where he didn't have any conclusion about it before. No, he was finally able to recognize his feeling where he had been averting his eyes all this time.

(That guy surely doesn't give a damn at all about me but..... I absolutely will meet him one more time and talk to him.)

A small smile surfaced on his lips. It was a smile without any gloominess in it, it could even be called a fearless smile. It was a truly manly smile that Kouki had never made until now.

□At any rate.....□

He was really hungry. No, honestly speaking he was feeling abnormally hungry.

There was a water pitcher nearby filled with fruit juice that was giving off good smell, so it was likely he could replenish his body fluid and nutrition from it, but as expected his stomach seemed to demand solid food.

The moment he became conscious of it, his stomach howled \*guuo-\*.

Kouki somehow lifted his body that was wrapped in pain and terrible fatigue and sat up on the bed. He pulled off the

blanket and Kouki's body that became exposed was covered all over with bandage and gauze.

Kouki instantly felt dizziness right after he stood up, but he shook his head slightly and endured it with effort. He made a wry smile seeing his body was shaky more than he imagined before he wore the clothes that were put nearby.

His old clothes must have been disposed with how ragged they had become. It wasn't anywhere nearby, but in their place was soldier clothing with white as the base. The size fit him snugly. The smooth texture felt pleasant on his skin.

Kouki put his clothes in order for the time being before he slowly headed toward the door.

He opened the door and came out into the corridor.

□Ah□

□Ah□

His eyes met another's. Sitting on a chair placed at the corridor was—Lilin.

A memory surfaced in his mind The approaching face of the girl. And then, the soft sensation that his cheek felt. And then, an instant of beastly nature that Moana showed after that.

Kouki's body shivered all over.

That look, that look was something he had seen before. Those eyes were.....yes those eyes. Those were the same eyes with the eyes showed by the wife~s of the demon king when they were targeting their husband.



‘That’s absurd’, Kouki shook his head while thinking so.

□Kouki-sama, are you all right? It’s no good unless you rest peacefully. Now, please return to the room and lie down.□

Lilin seemed to think that Kouki’s condition was still not good seeing him shivering like that. She worriedly walked toward Kouki and gently supported his body.

□Ah, no, I’m fine already, Lilin-san. For some reason I’m feeling really hungry, so I’m wondering if I can ask for some kind of food.□

Kouki wished that she would move away a bit from him because he was really all right. Lilin was supporting Kouki with her hand naturally circling around Kouki’s waist to rest on his stomach, so her body was sticking close to him. She was a girl with slender body type, but her body had enough feminine softness in it.

However, Lilin’s sense of distance didn’t change.

□Understood. Then I will go to bring the food. That’s why, please take a rest Kouki-sama. The healers said that you absolutely must rest for a week.□

After saying that, Lilin urged him to go back into the room. Her tone was just like usual, but it somehow felt like it allowed no argument from him. Kouki obediently followed her.

□Err, Lilin-san is—□

□It’s fine to just call me Lilin. It’s also fine to not speak politely like that with me.□

□Eh? But—□

□Call me Lilin.□

□Wh, why are you suddenly—□

□Lilin□

□I, I understand. Lili—□

□Understand?□

□I, I got it already, Lilin.□

Lilin nodded in satisfaction! Kouki wilted down!

Wanting to change the atmosphere somehow, Kouki spoke the continuation of his interrupted question.

□Then Lilin, why were you in front of my room?□

□.....It's Moana-sama's order. She told me to take care of Kouki-san.□

□? Then isn't it fine if you stay normally inside the roo.....□

□I also thought the same. But Moana-sama told me □It will be problematic if a mistake happen, so you must not enter the room when Kouki is unconscious. Breach of order will be punished strictly, keep that in mind□. So it can't be helped.□

□I, I see. Then it really can't be helped!□

Speaking about a mistake that might happen when Kouki was unconscious.....

Kouki got the feeling that he must not pursue that line of thought deeper, and he expressed his agreement □Can't be helped!□ strongly.

Kouki attempted to change the topic. For some reason Lilin let out a small snigger while looking at Kouki with a sidelong glance.

□And then, about that Moana, and also Rothko-san and others, what are they doing right now?□

□.....Both of them, they are busy with various things like repairing Arquette, making contact with the capital, and so on. They are rushing around everywhere.□

□I see.....about the < Dark Being> , do they appear again since then?□

□No, everything's fine. Now, I'll go ask for food, so Kouki-san please go to sleep right away. Right now the most important thing is for you to rest. After all you really almost died.□

Lilin pushed Kouki to the bed while saying that before walking quickly to exit the room.

There, Kouki suddenly noticed.

Yes, right now the citizens could also go outside and they should be running around to repair Arquette. In this feudal lord mansion there should be civil officers and vigilance corps rushing around busily.

And yet,

(.....It's too quiet?)

He focused his hearing. There wasn't a single sound.

□.....Lilin.□

□Yes?□

Lilin who was about to go out to the corridor turned around and replied at Kouki casually.

□What's with the soundproofing?□

□—tsu□

Lilin stopped still with her gaze going stiff. Kouki didn't overlook that.

□Bull's eye huh. Is it the work of wind art?□

□.....Yes, right. It's my blessing art.□

□Why? Why are you applying soundproofing?□

□It's so Kouki-san can rest peacefully.□

Certainly, that must be the truth. Currently Lilin showed no sign of agitation. However, if that was the case then she should be able answer without getting shaken when she was asked the reason of the soundproofing.

Kouki's instinct was sounding the alarm bell that there was something, that something not good happened.

□If that's so then dispel the art for me. I'm awake already, so it's fine right? No, I also want to look at how everyone is doing, as I thought I'll go myself to ask for the meal.□

□Ple, please wait, Kouki-san. I told you already that you still need a peaceful rest for now!□

Lilin rushed back toward him looking slightly panicked and pushed down Kouki who was trying to get up from the bed.

Kouki sent a straightforward gaze toward Lilin who was putting her hands on his shoulders to make him lie back

down.

□What's going on?□

□No, nothing—□

□Lilin, tell me. Right now, what is happening? What are you hiding from me?□

□.....□

Kouki grasped Lilin's shoulders instead and pressed her with his question. Receiving the strong gaze that didn't let her to beg off the question, Lilin's eyebrows lowered down with a troubled look.

□If I tell you.....will you promise to rest quietly?□

□.....In other words, there is something going on that will make me unable to rest quietly and rush out instead?□

□Uu, please stop reading behind the line!□

Kouki's hands that were tightly grasping Lilin's shoulders became stronger. His will to not let her ran away could be seen clearly. The more time passed, the more Lilin's gaze swam around everywhere.

□If Lilin doesn't tell me, then I'll run out by myself and ask someone else.□

□Aah geez-. I'll tell you already-, so please promise to not act as you please!□

□Got it, tell me.□

Lilin's shoulders dropped in dejection, then a beat later, she began talking with a serious and grim expression.

□There was notification from the capital. Right after we sent reinforcement here, an army of <Dark Being> invaded the capital. The <Dark King> seemed to be confirmed among the army.□

□-, so he recovered.....□

Lilin nodded.

□Not just that, two territories near Arquette were also assaulted at the same time. In order to dispatch the soldiers, messenger to tell the nearest surveillance base to dispatch their soldiers were sent out, but it can be said that the situation of the defense is as dangerous as this place before.□

It seemed that other than sending request for reinforcement from the capital, the feudal lords of the two territories also sent messenger to Arquette to notify this place about the danger.

□In order to prepare for the time when Arquette is attacked again, Rothko-sama is preparing to further strengthen of the defense wall and the underground vault. By Moana-sama's command, two thousand of the soldiers are to stay here.□

□Wait. "Of the soldiers"? You mean there are still others then? What's the rest doing? And Moana?□

Even while half guessing it already, Kouki still asked while feeling uneasiness to the degree that was uncanny even for himself. A bad premonition encroached inside his heart, like an ink that dripped on a white paper and seeped in.

□Moana-sama, she led the remaining soldiers accompanied by Spenser-sama. They already set out to return back.

Because there is no way the king can be absent when facing an army that is led by the <Dark King> , she said.□

□-. I, see.....□

There was the greatest protection that was the oasis at the capital. On top of that, there were also more than ten thousand soldiers led by chief Donar and head art user Linden. There was no way they would be defeated that easily.

Even so, his bad premonition was swelling up.

For some reason, he couldn't help but had glimpses of Moana's face in his mind.

□Then, let's catch up to them right away. They left from here yesterday right? If we departed quickly, we should be able to go to the capital without getting left behind too much.□

There was soldier force staying behind at Arquette. He was also concerned with the other territories, but soldiers were already dispatched there, so right now it was the <Dark King> that was most concerning and had to be dealt with.

Thinking that, Kouki said that he would go at where Moana was even for a second faster, but Lilin shook her head toward him.

□You must not. You were told that you absolutely still have to rest for one week! Just why do you think Moana-sama left me behind here for!□

A person that could use blessing art of wind which had skill like soundproofing *for several days*, a powerful person with strength that could suppress Kouki while he was wounded,

and also a person that Kouki knew. Lilin satisfied all those conditions.

□I cannot sleep for one more week in this kind of time!□

□It's only for four more days!□

□.....Eh?□

Kouki showed a dumbfounded expression toward Lilin who seemed to say that unintentionally.

□Four more days? Wait a second. The time when I woke up once was yesterday right?□

□.....No, you are mistaken. Three whole days had passed since then. Kouki-san was sleeping the whole time until now. That's how much your body is demanding for rest. You were even staggering only just now.□

Kouki was dumbfounded without even listening at Lilin's frank opinion. He whispered □Three days.....□.

In other words, Moana and others were already in the middle of war.

The bad premonition that he was feeling from some time ago swelled up explosively.

□I've got to go, to help them.□

□There is nothing you can do in that kind of state. It was because I thought that Kouki-san will force yourself that I even applied soundproofing so that your sleep wouldn't be disturbed you know? Even if you are going to go help them, first please heal your body!□



It was a sound advice. What Lilin was saying was completely correct without any mistake.

But, if everything became too late because of that.....

When he thought that, words and reasoning—couldn't stop him.

□Lilin. Even you actually want to go right? Because, you are a fighter. The front line is exactly the place you are looking for. Isn't that right? Bring me with you too.□

□-. Wha, what titillating words in this time.....nnh□

It was a serious scene, but for some reason Lilin was writhing. Her long brown twintail was fluttering unrulily.

□I, I won't be swayed by those sweet words, so please give up.□

Just where did she find any sweet factor from his words? Kouki thought that for an instant, but right wasn't the time for that so Kouki ignored it.

□I see.....then there is no other way. As I thought I'm going to act by myself.□

□Tha, that's why I'm saying I won't let—□

Using "Ground Shrinker" from the bed! Kouki instantly went around Lilin behind her. His body was screaming but he didn't let his expression showed it at the slightest.

His hand chopped lightly \*ton-\* on Lilin's shoulder and Kouki said to Lilin who was dumbfounded while saying □Eh?□.

□Certainly I'm not fully recovered, but not so much that I can be overcome by a rearguard at this range. I cannot be held

back by Lilin just so you know.□

□Tha, that's really amazing.□

Lilin broke out in a cold sweat. When she slowly looked behind, she found a strong gaze pressuring her there.

Actually from the time when she first met him, she somehow thought of him like □What an irresolute person. Smile a bit more crisply□, but right now she couldn't catch any sight of his smile that looked as though he was enduring pain or his insecure gaze.

□I'm going. If Lilin want how about you also go with me? I think that the place I'm going to is a place that you are looking for.□

□Ye, yes-. It's Moana-sama's command after all! There is no way I can let Kouki-san leave from my sight!□

Lilin writhed even more, perhaps because Kouki's words touched her heart string. Kouki ignored her abnormal state with his all and nodded once before going out of the room.

The blessing art was dispelled and bustling sound entered his hearing. As he thought, it was a furor all over the place.

Before long he could see the figures of the civil officers. They all showed astonishment for an instant when they saw Kouki's figure, but they then immediately gave their most respectful salute before moving aside to open a path for him.

If it was Kouki from before, then on the surface he would act awkward and modest, but inside he would bask in the pleasant feeling that he was the hero. But, right now his feeling was really calm.

The person that he passed would bow silently with a moved expression. But even seeing that, his heart didn't ripple. Rather, only the feeling of solemnly accepting their respect and expectation was filling his chest.

Before long he reached the room that was used as the emergency countermeasure room. The door was left open. When he peeked inside, there were Rothko, Ivana, and others there as expected.

□Rothko-san.□

□Hm? Oo, Kouki-dono! .....Is it all right for you to stay up already?□

Rothko showed joy when he noticed Kouki, however, seeing Lilin who was close behind Kouki, he sent Kouki an inquisitive gaze.

It seemed that Rothko and others were also aware of the "Kouki's absolutely peaceful rest operation".

□I heard about the situation. Please don't blame Lilin. I was the one asking her forcefully.□

□That's.....certainly there is no way she cannot not answer if pressed by Kouki-dono.□

Rothko sent a gaze filled with some kind significance toward Lilin who wilted and looked down before his expression turned serious and he asked Kouki.

□And, what are you planning to do?□

□Of course, I will head to the capital.□

□With your current condition?□

□There is no problem.□

It was a lie, which everyone there knew. Just from a glance it was clear that his complexion was still bad. The healer who examined Kouki this morning also said that Kouki's bones were still fractured, and above all else Kouki hadn't recovered from his weakened state.

He really wasn't in a state that could fight.

□It doesn't look like I can stop you.....I'll prepare the fastest arous. Please, I beg you to take care of her majesty and the capital. Don't worry about Arquette.□

□Thank you very much. I will surely return here again.□

Rothko, Ivana, and everyone inside the room, they all partly closed their eyes as though looking at something really dazzling before they bowed reverently.

After that, the members of vigilance corps quickly prepared arous and necessary luggage. During that time Kouki stuffed his stomach to the bursting with simple meal before departing, accompanied by Lilin.

Rothko and his wife Sylia, and also Ivana and others of the vigilance corps gathered to see them off. Seeing that, the people of Arquette also stopped working and gathered one after another.

Words of gratitude that was filled with feeling that they wanted to convey as much as possible showered Kouki.

From among the gathered people, one small silhouette rushed out.

□Hero-sama!□

□Ah, you are.....□

That silhouette was the boy that at that time became the impetus that decided Kouki's path. From behind that boy, his mother and a man in vigilance corps attire—his father run after him in panic.

□Thank you, hero-sama! You save father, and everyone! Thank you!□

□tsu—□

Kouki didn't know what to call his current emotion. He didn't understand.

He scattered a lot of lives. He couldn't see it within his field of vision, but surely outside the defensive wall a lot of corpses were piled up. The weight of that was tremendous, pushing down on Kouki even now.

His creaking body and the weariness assaulting his whole body weren't only because his wound and fatigue.

But, even so,

□I'm the one thanking you.□

□Eh?□

Not just the boy, the boy's father and mother who ran after him and tried to pull him back also let out such stupid sounding voice.

Kouki kneeled down on one knee and spoke with a faint smile.

□At that time, if you didn't ask me for help, my heart would surely die. I was, actually a pathetic guy. So pathetic I

cannot walk forward without someone pushing my back. That's why.....thank you, for saying "help me".

.....I don't, really get it but.....I, was useful for hero-sama?

Kouki answered "Yeah" toward the boy who was asking him in wonder.

The boy's expression turned bright. The father and mother made a shocked expression at Kouki's confession, but their expression quickly turned gentle and kind and they said their thanks once more.

Kouki watched the boy led away by his parents while he was waving his hand at Kouki.

Lilin who was standing beside Kouki asked him expression of delight or perhaps happiness.

"You aren't denying it even when you are called hero-sama aren't you?"

.....He is still a small kid. I won't expressly do something like that.

Kouki averted his face to dodge the question. Lilin raised a chuckle seeing that. Because if it was Kouki from before, he would still deny it no matter what.

Surely that three days of battle brought a change into something important inside Kouki. For Lilin, Kouki looked like he had really changed. She would be troubled if she was asked "where", but she somehow felt that Kouki's whole strength was different.

Reliable. Lilin thought so while prompting Kouki to mount the arous.

□See you later Rothko-san. Much obliged for everything.□

□That's my line. We the people of Arquette won't forget you until the next life. We will convey our unending gratitude to the next generation too.□

Kouki nodded □Thank you□, then together with Lilin he ran past the gate.

Loud cheering resounded from behind.

Those cheers too also felt like a push on Kouki's back.

They advanced silently for a while. The borrowed arous seemed excellent with how swift it was. Kouki's feeling that was impatient from the loss of three days was also softened more or less.

□Kouki-san. How is your body? This child's running is also stable, it's fine even if you sit down in a way that is more relaxed.□

□Aah, look's like it. At the very least I need my bones to recover before we arrived in the capital.□

Lilin nodded even while thinking of how amazing Kouki's line that was saying of healing bone even while traveling in

a great hurry.

Kouki dried up his little remaining magic power and performed healing on the heavily wounded area by chanting basic recovery magic while paying meticulous attention so that he wouldn't become unable to move because of getting even more exhausted than now.

Lilin was gritting her teeth in vexation of her inability of using healing blessing art while making a dangerous oath that at the very least if enemy appeared midway she would carve them up and not let them do anything to Kouki.

Like that they advanced forward and entered the desert area. A little while after that

□Hm? Lilin, something is coming from ahead! That's.....□

□Arous? It's coming from the capital direction? That number is.....□

They could confirm multiple arous running with speed that raised up dust cloud behind.

Looking at the gradually approaching arous, the two could see the arous breathing roughly with their long neck that was usually stretching up straight was now hanging down. Those were the proof of the arous's fatigue.

Even so looking from how their speed didn't relax down at all, it could be seen that it was something so urgent to the degree that the riders didn't hesitate to use the arous until they expired.

It seemed the group also noticed Kouki and Lilin. One rider waved his hand while other riders were pointing at the



person at the center of their formation and reported something.

And then, a small silhouette that was unseen from being hidden at the shadow of the arous's neck showed up their face abruptly.

The identity of that silhouette was clear just from that.

□!? Koone!?□

Kouki let out a hysteric voice.

Yes, it was Koone who was fiercely rushing their way. When the distance between both sides had decreased considerably into a range where they could differentiate the other party's faces, Kouki and Lilin could see that the people around Koone were the members of escort squad that was led by Spike.

□Kouki-sama!□

□Koone!□

The way both of them called each other mutually changed. It seemed that Koone didn't even bother with how Kouki called her without any honorific.

Both sides' arous came to a stop with circle motion like drifting. The arous of Koone and others looked like they would faint anytime now because they had continued to dash in full speed from until just now.

□Koone, why are you here? Are you heading to Arquette?□

Koone heard about Kouki's safety and Arquette's situation from Moana, even so for a moment she held her breath

seeing Kouki's expression that was completely different from before.

However, she immediately pulled herself together and nodded in response.

□Koone, Koone was, let escape once more-□

Looking at Koone who was talking with a face that could break into tears anytime, it seemed that the battle between the army that was led by <Dark King> against the kingdom army had started.

It seemed it was a strategy where Arquette and its neighboring territories that had the role as material accumulation place would be crushed first before opening battle against the capital that would become isolated after that.

That phenomenon where <Dark Beings> suddenly appeared also seemed to be the new ability of the <Dark King>, so to speak it seemed to be a teleportation ability. It seemed that the use became rough the farther the distance was, but the ability could teleport through considerable distance.

And then, currently the capital was in a state where they could somehow fight with the barrier of the oasis, but even there it became a predicament due to the <Dark King>'s new ability.

Of all thing, the characteristic of the oasis was being nullified by the <Dark King> even though it was only bit by bit. The oasis was encroached by miasma and turned into mere water.

It seemed with the oasis in between, the teleportation couldn't work well, so that could be said as fortunate. The

ability must have been tested from quite some time ago. Different from the grain producing region of Arquette, the capital's surrounding was desert, so the attempt wasn't noticed at all because it didn't leave behind any trace.

A part of the oasis was already nullified and it seemed one group of soldier was shaken by that and they were annihilated after their opening got taken advantage of.

The total force of the enemy was seventy thousand. Even now, it seemed that even more branch force was teleported to the rear territory. It seemed that the Dark King received notice that Arquette was safe just before Koone escaped, by using messenger of <Dark Being> that was teleported, an army from the nearest territory that had been destroyed was commanded to head to Arquette. Timewise, the army was likely to arrive within today.

Currently, because of the effort of nullifying the oasis, the strength poured to dispatch branch force, and how the <Dark King> was refraining from fighting directly, the worst situation where the capital was fallen could barely be avoided but.....

Because of the teleportation of <Dark Being>'s branch force, the dispatched soldiers couldn't return and the capital couldn't hope for reinforcement.

Far from that, by having <Dark Being> teleported to other place right before the soldiers' eyes, the fact that the people in the rear territory that they ought to protect was being attacked without them being unable to do anything about it was thrust to their face. The soldiers were starting to lose spirit from despair and anxiety.....

□Like this if even the <Dark King> start moving.....the capital won't-, onee-chan won't-□

Moana who gave up the capital as hopeless had Koone escaped even if she had to pay great sacrifice for it. She told Koone, to go at where Kouki was at.

Koone refused, but by Moana's command, Spike made Koone faint and when she woke up she was already above arous.

Koone understood that she had to survive. However, she didn't want to leave no matter what. One of her reasons was of course because she simply loved her big sister.

But, there was something more than that which made Koone fearful.

□Onee-chan is planning to die-. She is planning to use her own life to end the war, and beg so the people's life is spared!□

Kouki was taken aback with realization.

He understood the true shape of the anxiety swelling up in his chest.

Koone was the same like him.

The battle was decided. Then what would Moana do in that case? That was obvious.

The <Dark Being> didn't wish to annihilate mankind at any cost. Their final objective was to raise human as livestock.

In order to give human despair, in order to crush their defiance, the <Dark Being> wouldn't hesitate to crush the capital including the nearby cities. But, if the opponent surrendered then there wasn't any need to especially kill them.

If the people there wasn't killed right now, then the chance for mankind to rise once more wouldn't vanish.

If the seed of rebellion led by Koone made good of their escape, then the hope wouldn't disappear no matter how small their number was.

Right now, in order to not let more life disappear, Moana would offer her own life as compensation.

It was the last thing she could use the life of herself who had mostly lost her strength.

Such scenario was possible enough. No, Kouki was convinced. Moana would choose that path.

□Uaa.....□

A groan leaked out from Kouki.

Was it from anxiety? From the fear of losing Moana?

No.

□Kouki-sama! Save onee-chan! Please-. Koone will do anything-, please! Save onee-chan-□

It was the same like that time, a begging voice that was pleading for help.

That was why, he despaired.

The reason was, because Kouki couldn't choose it.

□I.....□

□Kouki, sama?□

If Moana sacrificed her life, then most of the people of the capital wouldn't have their life taken away to turn them into livestock. After all, compared to the people of the rear territory, the people of the capital were there exactly because they possessed abundant blessing power that let them fought. From the viewpoint of the <Dark Being>, the capital citizen was without a doubt the sort they would want to breed and had a stable supply of.

Conversely speaking, the neighboring territories that were currently attacked, and Arquette that would be attacked once more today would be destroyed before the notification that the queen surrendered and the war was over could reach them.

Therefore, right now, the place that really needed help—wasn't the capital but the rear territories.

In addition, just as he heard it was only the <Dark King> who could use teleport. If the situation at the teleport destination could only be reported back by messenger that returned by foot, then right now it should be possible to shave the <Dark Being>'s battle force by destroying their branch forces one by one. By doing that, the people of each territory could be gathered in one place as much as possible to make it easier to protect them.....perhaps.

Therefore, who he should save wasn't his "important person", but "the many who he didn't even know their face of".

It was ideal if he could save both.

However, the reality was always shitty at any time.

If only one side could be saved, then the human called Amanogawa Kouki would—

□Sorry.....I'm sorry-, Koone. Sorry-□

□.....□

With that Koone understood. Koone too also knew, what kind of person the human called Kouki was.

In the end, he was the same like her big sister. Rather than their own life or their important people, they couldn't help but choose the many, they were that kind of human.

Koone's expression was dyed with despair.

She wondered, why her important person wouldn't be more selfish?

She wondered, why the person she thought as important would be gone?

The color of emotion slipped off from the face of the young Koone. Even so, she tried to somehow swallow Kouki's answer, she made a misshapen smile and tried to reply back, but she couldn't form any word.....

Seeing that Kouki heard the sound of a part deep inside him cracked. It was hard to breath. He felt dizzy. His chest felt like it would burst apart.

However, he couldn't abandon people. If it was between just one person against the many, he couldn't abandon the many.

He would dream. However, he wouldn't stop still by getting caught up in that dream. He decided so.

Kouki would first protect Arquette, after that he would save the rear territories as many as possible even just by one

more—he conveyed his intention to Spike and Lilin with his gaze.

They closed their eyes for a bit, then they silently accepted that conclusion. Their teeth that were gritting hard were exposing their ashamed feeling.

But, at that time, a situation that felt as though mocking even the determination of such Kouki could be seen from afar, approaching their way while raising a dust cloud.

□Do, Don't screw with me-, don't screw with me-! Why the hell!□

Kouki spontaneously spat out curses.

Ahead of his gaze, there was a crowd of <Dark Being> that was likely to be Koone's pursuer. The number was roughly about a thousand.

It was enough number to crush the current Kouki and group.

□Are you-, are you unable to stomach me that much huh-. Even though-, I decide to save people even if I have to abandon Moana-, abandon that kind person-, you are going to deny even that-!! Don't screw with meee-□

It was as though the world was baring its fang maliciously.

Kouki's roar of rage was something that was directed exactly at the world, or perhaps at something that ought to be called as fate.

□That person's beloved-, she is entrusted to me-. Don't you dare thinking to take away this child!!□

□Kouki-sama.....□



It was a rage that Kouki never showed even once until now.

Without even caring of Koone and others who were gazing at him in astonishment, without hesitation Kouki firmly moved forward and protected the other behind his back.

He wasn't in a state that could fight. Anyway right now they should make a bet sink or swim to escape. Lilin's mouth was opening to say that.

But, she was made to swallow her words.

She saw the torrent of light whirling around Kouki. That was, the proof of surpassing the limit.

□I won't let only this child to be taken away.□

As it was his magic power was already little. However, if his magic power was strengthened temporarily, there was a possibility he could annihilate the enemy by activating a high powered magic. If there was only leftover enemy after that, then Lilin and others would be able to manage somehow.

Although he wouldn't even be able to stand after the fight, but.....

In front of the absurdity that was too much, Kouki couldn't think about the aftermath to himself or anything else. If it was necessary, then he would fight again until he turned into trash! Only that fighting spirit was heightening.

Like that, Kouki was,

□Here I go—< Limit Bre—□

In trying to crush absurdity with recklessness and impulsiveness, he was going to pull the trigger that might break his body.....

\*hyuu~~~\* With such stupid sounding sound, something rained down on the approaching army right after that. The next moment terrific flame blast and shockwave that looked like the end of the world blew up everything. Such absurd scene entered Kouki's eyes.

□Eh?□

Kouki's mouth opened wide in astonishment without closing, even his chanting of Limit Break was interrupted.

While behind him the mouth of Koone and others was also gaping open in astonishment, Kouki inadvertently looked up to the sky—

He saw meteor shower.

However, there was no meteor, but missile.

Missiles were flying with orange fire trail trailing behind them along with \*pashuuuuu-\* sound.

And then impact.

The <Dark Beings> who were running about in chaos were quickly turning into mere meat scraps.

□Ha, hahahah. As I thought, you are just too absurd□

With great joy, relief, and then a bit of resentful complaint in his voice, Kouki's called out the name of him.

□Right, Nagumo?□

The demon king-sama—Hajime who fell from the sky with \*zun-\* sound snorted□Hmph□ in a bad mood with a huge weapon on his shoulder.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Ba, barely made it.

I'm intending to content myself to receive tsukkomi of 'Ain't that just a tiny bit there!'.

Next chapter is the conversation between the demon king and hero I think.....

PS

The newest chapter of manga version and [Arifureta Nichijou] were updated at Gardo Comic!

With Nichijou exactly being comedy, Shia is shining bright (lol)

Most of all the drawn male camp of Hauria is...nasty

If you have interest, then by all means please go take a look at Overlap-sama's homepage!

# Afterword of Afterword

## Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 1

### Author - Shirakome Ryou

At the time after about a week passed since the students of earth were summoned to another world Tortus.

At the training place of knights and soldiers in the Hairihi kingdom, there were the figures of the students making wondrous cane or accessories shined while activating magic, swinging around splendorous sword or spear with fairly experienced air.

The students were showing splendid skill like heroes that appeared in fairy tale in just about one week. Their vocation that bloomed by descending into this world and displayed matchless talent in its field, and the pointed support from the kingdom side, those factors were the reason why the students were growing with a speed like sponge absorbing water.

While those students were endeavoring in their training, there was the figure of a boy looking down while moaning 'hm hm' at the corner of the place.

□.....Slow.□

The young man——Nagumo Hajime was whispering with a voice that could be heard as cursing or feeling exasperated. Before his eyes there were something like a thorn? growing up limply from the ground.

Hajime was hanging his head down while moaning wasn't because he was gasping from stomachache while desperately enduring from spurting out black history from his butt, nor because he was desperately repressing the chuuni soul that was sealed in the deepest part of his heart.

He was merely using his talent the “transmutation” skill desperately. He was repeatedly testing if he could somehow grow out thorn from the ground using transmutation to attaackk! like in a certain manga, otaku style, but the result was totally limp like jelly lump no matter how many times he tried it.

Although he was at a corner, but the visibility of the place was extremely well, so naturally such figure of Hajime entered the sight. Hiyama Daisuke and his gang who came to make fun of Hajime glanced at Hajime's result and then smirked obviously.

The other classmates too, they were also emitting unfriendly air, as though they were making fun of him somewhat, or looking down at him as an existence that wasn't worthy to be taken seriously, or perhaps deciding that Hajime wasn't even worth any interest.

But, at that time, something cold poked at the cheek of Hajime who was starting to concentrate once again.....

□Uhyah□

Hajime reflexively jumped while raising a scream that sounded somewhat unbecoming for a man. A lovely chuckle

that sounded like a ringing bell reached Hajime's ear. That clear voice didn't sound malicious by any means, it sounded like someone who succeeded in their prank, or possibly an expression of happiness from seeing that rare reaction of Hajime.

□Shi, Shirasaki-san.....don't surprise me like that.□

□Fufu, I'm sorry, Nagumo-kun. For some reason it looked like you were really persevering at it, so I'm wondering that some rest might done you good. Here, it's nicely cooled already.□

Ahead of the gaze of Hajime who was turning around, there was the figure of a girl—Shirasaki Kaori presenting him with a cold drink. It seemed she came bringing drink in consideration of Hajime who was straying off course into a training without any clear prospect.

Hajime smiled wryly while saying thanks and took the glass. Inside the glass was filled with a mysterious liquid that was rainbow colored with popping bubbles. Actually it was a carbonated drink with a taste that resembled apple, and it was Hajime's favorite but.....it seemed that Kaori-san had grasped Hajime's preference before anyone knew it.

Hajime shivered a bit in a different meaning. Seeing such Hajime, Kaori said □Oh no, you are catching cold there□ and quickly approached Hajime with her misunderstanding in full throttle. And then, as expected she was fully prepared, Kaori took out a towel from somewhere and began to faithfully wipe the little sweat Hajime was perspiring.

(Ple, please be conscious, of someone's personal area, and also the TPO!) (TN: TPO = Time, Place, Occasion)

Hajime was letting out sweat further from the torture of the piercing gazes from the surrounding while taking distance away from Kaori slowly, but the more he was backing away, the more Kaori was advancing with light steps. And then, saying "Waa, you are sweating a lot", she was wiping and wiping even more.

Slowly, backing away. Step step, forward forward.

Sweat sweat, wipe wipe.

(No, no good. The eyes of Hiyama and others are looking murderous-. Ah, even the other boys are making their artifact shine-. Wai-, girls!? Isn't that the chanting for the combination magic you all just learned!?)

Hajime's state of mind was exactly like a mouse that was cornered by a cat. But, the cat-san that was really bothered by the mouse-kun that it couldn't be helped looked really worried from the bottom of her heart seeing the worsening color of mouse-san's face, that she approached closer even more insistently.

Hajime class changed from mouse into rabbit and began to seriously think to run away just like a panicky rabbit, but it was at that time that his savior finally arrived.

"Come on, Kaori. You should stop there. You are being too close. Nagumo-kun cannot rest if you are like that, see?"

"Ah, Shizuku-chan."

It was Yaegashi Shizuku who was Kaori's stopper and also best friend. It seemed Shizuku was completely grasping the current situation, so she made a troubled smile from having to look after her best friend's rampage even while nonchalantly pulling Kaori away.

The temperature of the surrounding's atmosphere was decreasing. It seemed that the voltage of the classmates was going up and down in comparison with the distance between Kaori and Hajime.

And then, Kaori who became a bit calmer similarly like the surrounding's atmosphere blushed from how close she was with Hajime and she backed away with brisk steps. And then, she gazed at Hajime shyly with brief glances and upward stare. With an upward stare!

(Kuh, as expected from Shirasaki-san, what fighting strength-. Is she a monster-)

Using such impression that was painted with impoliteness and joke material, Hajime pretended to not notice his heart that was beating like an alarm bell while sending his gratitude toward Shizuku once more. Even though Shizuku shrugged her shoulders at that, but it seemed she saw through Hajime's pretension and she didn't bother to hide her amused air.

Shizuku pulled at Kaori's hand while the corner of her mouth was twitching.

□The, then Kaori. You have finished giving the drink already, we should go back to our own training too, okay?□

□Wait, Shizuku-chan. I have something I want to ask from Nagumo-kun.□

□Something you want to ask? Come to think of it, you were really deep in talk with the maid just for asking about the drink that Nagumo-kun often asked for before this.□

While comprehending that the information source was actually from a maid, Hajime was getting a bad premonition



seeing Kaori who was looking at him with determination.

It seemed that his premonition was right on the money. The next moment, the words that Kaori fired showed how she was still in charge ahead maiden mode.

□Na, Nagumo-kun. You, you see.....Does Nagumo-kun like a girl who is wearing maid uniform I wonder!? I wonder!?□

□Just what are you saying so suddenly, Shirasaki-san!?□

Hajime was greatly shaken at this situation where he was publicly interrogated by a girl classmate about □Do you like maid?□.The eyes of the girls changed as though they were looking at trash, as for the boys.....several of them were averting their eyes.

□Because, Nagumo-kun. Your eyes often chased after the maids in the palace..... Sometimes, when you looked at the casual act of the maids, you would nod with a face like a critic somewhere.....□

□Stop-. More than this and it will be all over for me!! Shirasaki-san, you actually hate me right!? Isn't that right!?□

The life point of Hajime's heart was being shaved off greatly. But, it seemed that the word "mercy" didn't exist in the dictionary of the beautiful girl who was even praised as the two great goddess along with Shizuku in the school. Beside her, the best friend was looking at the sky with an expression that was mixed with resignation, saying □This is no good, she is completely in charge ahead mode□. Kaori didn't even notice that and launched her second blow.

□And, and also. I think the work of the palace maids must not get obstructed. Nagumo-kun is also a boy, that's why

you mustn't do anything even by mistake, that's what I think.

“Hey, Shirasaki-san. Do you notice? You said that my existence is a hindrance for the maids, you are saying cruel thing nonchalantly there you know? What's more, you said that I might assault the maids.....in my heart, right now Shirasaki-san's words are stabbing all over and over you know?”

“That's why, I reluctantly, yes, really reluctantly make this suggestion!”

“You aren't listening to me at all aren't you! Oi Yaegashi-san, your best friend is completely going wild here! Quickly stop.....wait, what's with that face that seem to say “Man can only pray to the god”? Don't give up! If you give up here, then it's the end for me!”

Shizuku made a transparent smile while starting to look at the sky far away. The figure of the pitiful boy was already not reflected in those eyes.

And then, while feeling uneasy, Hajime opened his mouth to stop Kaori somehow, but right after that, Kaori beat him to the punch by dropping the bomb.

“So that Nagumo-kun won't commit any mistake! And also for the sake of the maids too! I'll wear maid uniform for you!”

The tension of the classmates broke through the sky. Of course, to the direction of the negative.

Surely that was something that couldn't be helped. Listening objectively, in order to protect the maids from Hajime's sexually hungry gaze, Kaori would wear maid

uniform and exposed herself to Hajime's gaze in the place of those girls.....that was how it sounded like.

Hajime dashed away without glancing left or right like a rabbit on fire. In order to jump into the chest of the reliable older brother replacement of everyone—the captain of the kingdom's knight order, Meld who was not present because of some business. 'If it is that person, he should be able to protect me from my frenzied angry classmates!' That was the lifeline that Hajime was holding on to.

Behind him, beside Kaori who was holding her blushing red cheeks with closed eyes while saying □I, I said it!□, \*dododododo\* the berserkers were passing through with steps that were making tremor on the ground.

□.....I'm sorry, Nagumo-kun. Forgive this powerless me.□

Shizuku's powerless voice slipped into the breeze weakly and vanished.

After that, Kaori who noticed Hajime's escape and the classmates' misunderstanding chased after Hajime and others in panic in order to resolve the misunderstanding, what she found ahead was the sight of captain Meld who was being embraced by Hajime. She was swallowed by the vortex of misunderstanding, □I have to bring back Nagumo-kun away from that path!□ and resolved to a completely unfounded direction, and for a while she directed vigilant gaze at captain Meld in every chance and continuously troubled him, such thing happened.

And then, among the palace maids, this and that about captain Meld and the incompetent boy were whispered.....

□□Why it become like this.....□□

The strongest knight of the kingdom and the weakest boy of the summoned group whispered with overlapping disheartened voice.

## **Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 2**

**Author - Shirakome Ryou    Illustrator - Takayaki**

Afterword of afterword's limited!

Great publication of volume 2's rough illustration!

 atogaki atogaki 2

## **Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 3**

**Author - Shirakome Ryou**

When Shirakome write light novel, what came into mind first is the character.

Character come into mind, the scene I want to write come into mind, and then the story in order to reach that scene is fleshed out.....something like that.

The characters that become the origin of such tale. Famous image character is needed for those characters. The impetus for my wild delusion is generally starting when Shirakome is reading some kind of work that cause Shirakome to grin by himself w

And so, I'm thinking to introduce for just a bit of the image characters that become the basis for Arifureta characters.

First, the main heroine Yue-san—the image character for her is the great sage-sama (loli version) of Genso○ somewhere. Seeing a certain work in Niconico douga, Shirakome went □Uwaa, Yu○ri-san, totally cute□ and my delusion gave out such result.

Next, Shia. It doesn't even need to be said. You all know right. Yes, she too is based on from a former military officer rabbit-san (however, the not insane version) from that Genso○ somewhere. What's more, my delusion spread and before I realized a certain Mon○ji black rabbit-san was mixed.

For Kaori, it's from the class representative-san of a certain tokimeku diary (only love), Shizuku is from a certain magical ○dex's fallen angel maid-san (saint ponytail swordswoman-san), and Kouki is from the proto Saber-san of F○te.

And, for Tio who made her entrance at third volume.....her image character is from world's number 2 dragon god-sama of Hi○ School DxD. Yes, she is completely different isn't she? She needed loli-ness, and taciturn-ness, and also pureness. For some reason I cannot just get into goth-loli.....yosh, then, I'll rather do everything in reverse! From such idea that kind of girl was born. Shirakome himself thought it the most, how did it become like this.....like that.

Now then, this time there is also characters that I don't introduce (like the main character), it will be for the next chance someday.

Please look after [Arifureta] from here on too.

## **Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 4**

### **Author - Shirakome Ryou**

At the "Afterword of Afterword" last volume, I introduced the image characters regarding the main characters.

What about the other characters!? If there are those who are holding expectation about that, I'm sorry. This time borrowing this place, I'm thinking to introduce the image models for the artifacts Hajime created.

For example, the arms that are representative of Hajime, the two large revolvers "Donner & Schlag", the model is from Constrictor and a certain black cat's ornamental gun, the revolver of tongari(pointed) gunner, and so on.

Doing air reload using two of those revolvers with slightly peculiar design while performing Gun Kata of the movie Equilibrium.....that will be absurdly awesome!! The result of Shirakome's chuuni soul feeling itchy like that gave birth to Donner & Schlag.

For the sniper cannon "Schlagen" and gatling cannon "Metzgerei", there is no image model especially for them,

but if I'm forced to say, Metzgerei is from Black Ro○ Shooter I guess.

Rocket and missile launcher "Orkan" is from that thing of the big bro pastor from Tri○n. Puni○er-san is top ranked romance weapon even inside Shirakome.

For pile bunker, I imaged it from the thing that came out in nico douga's Azatho○ Diva(□□□□□○□□□□□). It's not exaggeration even if Shirakome said that this video series is already sacred video for me. The uploader-sama is god.

The four wheeled vehicle Breeze is from Hummer. The two wheeled Steiff is from around Goldwing F6C. The dearest wish of Shirakome that want to ride both of them someday leaked out.

And the last is Doryukken, this is from RWB○, as expected it's modeled from romance weapon that came out in Niconico. This video is heaped with romance weapons that made one writhed.

Now then, for the time being, this time let's end it until here. When the story is advancing and we come to this section once more, I'm thinking to be allowed to talk about the characters, or the romance weapons, or the behind the scene, and so on.

Well then everyone, please take care of [Arifureta] from here on too.

## **Author - Shirakome Ryou**

I'm thinking to be allowed to talk about the behind the scene of Arifureta in the "Afterword of Afterword" of this volume too.

Honestly speaking, "Arifureta", was planned by me to end at volume 4—that is to say, at the scene where Hajime and Kaori's reunion was actualized was planned to be the end of the volume. It was planned to give the readers the feeling of "Ooyah" and ended the volume with the atmosphere of "Our journey will start from here!".

If asked for the reason, the big reason is because when Shirakome started writing [Arifureta], watching the Gunda○Seed's episode of "Descending Sword", when the main character flew down from the sky and saved his comrades, the wild delusion "What the hell is this, awesome!" was overflowing out.

In other words, at the point when Hajime smashed the labyrinth ceiling and saved Kaori, I was in the state of "Shirakome, is super satisfied☆" you see.

If so then why, is the story became this long.....

That is simply because many people in [Narou] were giving support, no other reason for it. In a sense, the one who gave birth to the story of the volume 5 and the rest of it were everyone, the readers of [Narou], it's not an exaggeration even if I said that.

Because everyone is skilled in flattering, this stupid Shirakome got carried away and wrote a lot of after stories even after the conclusion of the main story. Rather, it feels like the after stories are the one that get better popularity.....



Now then, I don't know how far I will continue writing [Arifureta], but so that the extra stories and the published version after revising become even more fun work, I'm investing all my experience point to delusion power and work hard, so please take care of this work from here on too.

## **Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 6**

### **Author - Shirakome Ryou**

About the afterword of afterword this time, there is no behind the scene talk like before. If it's the behind the scene about artifact or character, there is a tiny bit, but it feels like it will end with just a few lines, so I'm thinking to do it in the next chance.

And so, this time is a bit of short story. That guy that was blown up by Hajime in the fifth volume is actually alive, I got that kind of idea at the time. And then, actually it formed this kind of connection with that child that was left behind in Erisen.....it's that kind of story.

Myself is a clone. My name is——likely, none.

Myself have heard other organisms calling I things like ancient monster, or devil of the ocean, or repulsive eater, or 'that guy won't be killed no matter what you die, he is seriously super annoying'.

Possibly, those might be mine names.

Though myself think that the last one is too long.....

Or rather, myself feel like that's already just a badmouthing.....

By the way, mine favorite is the "repulsive eater". For some reason it sound cool.

Putting that aside, myself has nice sexy body that look transparent like jelly, possess shape like a clone, truly a beautiful and great being, but recently, there was something absurd that threatened the existence of such myself.

Myself met a demon.

That guy, is seriously bad news. Really bad news.

Even like this, myself has lived for a long time. Don't mention about the race called "human", myself has been living since the time when even the race called "monster" didn't exist. However, even in that several thousands, tens of thousands of year of long life, myself had never seen that kind of brutish fiend!

After all, this demon tried to burn myself to death in our first meeting!

Even though myself only tried to eat him a bit!

What's more, the demon tried to escape into the water, so myself hurriedly chased behind, but then——myself was exploded! What a deed!

Mine body shrunk really much, mine tension also decreased a lot.

It couldn't be helped, myself filled my stomach and then myself thought to go out to the ocean to take a walk, but as though lying in ambush for myself to do that, that demon flew out from the bottom of the sea toward myself.

After that, it was already a competition of survival. Myself was desperate. Myself was also a tiny bit angry, myself won't let him escape anymore! Thinking that myself even produced a tsunami.

Thinking back now, that was a mistake. If the demon wanted to escape, then it would be fine if myself let them get away. It would be great if myself didn't get carried away thinking that it was just a bit more to gulp the demon down! like that.

But, even still. Although it's certain that some fault lie in myself who got carried away, but still.

Black sticky liquid was splashed all over inside mine body and the demon burned me from inside, and in the end myself was exploded, myself think there is something wrong with that! Myself will get bad dream of death for several thousand years after that!

Normally, will anyone do something terrifying like that!? Furthermore that demon, seeing myself writhing in agony, the demon laughed! How terrifying! Since when the race called human became that much of a fiend!?

Fortunately, in a stroke of good luck a part of mine body the size of a fingertip remained safe, and myself got away just barely alive, but myself is completely traumatized.

Myself didn't even have the strength to swim and promptly got washed away by the current, at the end myself encountered a kind hearted little girl.....her name is, what was it.....Nyuu? Muu? Yuu? Her name was something like

that. If that little girl didn't kindly look after I, surely mine mind would fall sick and myself would become fertilizer in the sea.

Human is scary. Human is bad news. That recognition of mine doesn't change, and don't even mentions eating human, myself absolutely won't even approach them, but that kindly hearted little girl, myself has to return the favor someday.

If, there is time when that little girl have a need of I, myself will always be available to rush at her side.

Oh kindly hearted little girl of sea. Please, I wish that you won't lose your kind heart till the end of time.

I wish you won't grow to become like that kind of brutish fiend.

Myself pray from the bottom of mine heart for that little girl's healthy growth!

.....There is no way, that girl has any relation with that brutish fiend right?

# Credits

Translator : [Bakapervert](#)

Epub by : [raidoukureha](#)